

# Arifureta Chapter 251

## Arifureta After II So Close That They Squabbled With Each Other? First Part

There was a spacious underground room at the underground of Nagumo residence. Of course it was a room that originally didn't exist, but after Hajime returned home from another world, he created it because it was necessary for various kind of his works.

In that personal underground workshop, the aforementioned Hajime was folding his arms while humming「Hm~~m」.

「The stage is created. The basic system is also okay. The fixing of consciousness and also the safety are cleared. What's left is the concrete story and character setting that match with it but.....no matter how the idea doesn't really come to me.」

Hajime reconfirmed the situation by speaking to himself while he raised the humming sound of his worry once more. The gaze of such Hajime was fixed at the item that was put on the work stand, something like a mechanical eye mask that was embedded with bluish white crystal.

Its appearance was like an eye mask shaped electronic massager for the area around the eyes, or perhaps like a headset for virtual reality game.....or rather, actually the item was exactly that, it was a game device that Hajime created himself. However, the technology and materials used to create it came from the mixture of earth and another world, even age of god magic was applied to make this game of full body experience.

In earth it was still at the level where human finally laid their hand on the tip of the technology of virtual world production, but when it was by the hand of the world's strongest transmutation master this completed product was easily realized.

By the way, by applying soul magic only the user's consciousness would be send to the virtual world, but actually this thing was something that was mostly close to out-of-body experience, in addition the virtual world was formed from something like an illusion that was endlessly close to reality because of the application of regeneration magic, so not only the five senses, the user could even sense other things like magic power or presence.

This item was the painstaking piece of Hajime's work that especially paid close attention to the safety mechanism. Rather, it wasn't even an exaggerated to call it his greatest masterpiece. As a gamer, and then as the son of the president of a game maker company, he made absolutely no compromise in this effort!

Now then, about the impetus of this game device's creation though.....

(.....Even though I made it painstakingly, but it will be meaningless if Myuu cannot enjoy it. The concept is pretty much "fun training" so it's settled that the game must be RPG.....what kind of RPG that a girl will like? For now, I had put in characters noncommittally for checking its operation but.....hm~~~m)

Just as could be understood from Hajime's worry, this device was created for Myuu's training use.

With Myuu pleading that she wanted to be strong like Hajime and others as the impetus, Hajime and party (other than the wife~, the classmates also joined in) educated Myuu about fighting skill.

About the actual training itself, it could be done anywhere if barrier of concealment was laid out beforehand using magic or artifact, so there was no proble. However, from Hajime's thinking that a real combat, and furthermore a real combat against stronger enemy was far better than training, then as expected there would be no place for Myuu to test her strength except if they went to Tortus.

But, crossing worlds every time for training and then preparing opponent that

was just at the right level were really troublesome. However, from Hajime's stand point, in this current time when there wasn't any emergency situation, he didn't have the slightest intention to make his beloved daughter going through severe training where "the worst case" could possibly happen, like when he tempered himself in the bottom of abyss against the monstrous opponents there.

—He wanted Myuu to annihilate stronger enemy without rushing and with some elbowroom, so she could have healthy growth.

That was the genuine parental love of a father who had a daughter.

And so, fighting virtual enemy in a virtual world was actually a method that was just right for this.

Now then, like that the creation of the game device was roughly completed, but here Hajime bumped into a wall here. He had progressed with the creation until here based on the concept of "Fighting against stronger enemy. However, doing it while having a blast", but he couldn't think of the "story" that would become the fundamental of the essential part of "having a blast".

After all, till the end this was a virtual practice for testing the result of Myuu's training. And so, for example if a goblin was put as the opening enemy befitting the standard of RPG. However, naturally Myuu would fight by freely using weapon artifacts like Donnerr and so on, it was clear that the goblins would become「Gobuu!?」at the end of their encounter with Myuu.

He didn't want to make Myuu go Ore TUEEEEE. Having said that, he didn't wasn't to see a goblin that could evade railgun by sight. A certain bugged rabbit somewhere was already enough for something like that. (TN: Ore TUEEEEE = an expression in Japan that kinda mean like I'm stronggg. Used when in a net game or fighting game when there is a player that is overwhelmingly strong compared to other players. Or to refer when in manga or LN the MC have transcendental strength)

In other words, the power level of the enemy following the scenario of the usual RPG and Myuu's strength didn't mesh with each other.

If he was going to create a content that could clear up this problem well, where Myuu could have fun advancing the story while she could constantly

fight enemy whose strength was always a bit above hers.....

「——No good. I cannot think of anything at all. Worst case, I can only set up goblin that can dodge railgun but.....before that, perhaps I should try consulting Tou-san first.」

Hajime who frowned imagining a goblin that was leaving behind a line of afterimages behind when it move roughly scratched his head that had reached the limit, he then sighed while standing up from his chair.

He exited the underground workshop, climbed the stair and entered the living room. Today was a holiday, but there was no one in the room except Shia. Shuu and Sumire were working, but he didn't know about what the other members were doing.

「Eh? Shia, what about Yue and others?」

「Fuwaa. Ah, Hajime-san. Is your work over?」

It seemed Shia was napping on the living room's sofa while pleasantly getting showered by the shining in sunlight. She asked back with a slovenly absentminded expression. She looked a bit like she was half-awake.

Hajime prepared to go outside while answering Shia even when he was writhing slightly seeing the figure of “droopy Shia” with her rabbit ears laying down limply.

「No, I reached the limit already. So I'm going to Tou-san's place. I'll bring him some supply and also try to ask him between his works whether I can receive some kind of hint.」

「Howaa, is that sooo. Have a safe trip desuu. Ah, right right, about Yue-san and others, Kaori-san will come to play so Yue-san just now is waiting in ambus——cough-, is going to pick her uppp. Tio-san and Remia-san went out shipping for Myuu-chan's clothees」

「I see. And Shizuku?」

「It looks like a self proclaimed rival of Yaegashi family was coming with declaration of challenge, so she accompanied her family even though she was really reluctant to deal with the challenger desuu. And so, she said that today

she cannot come desuu」

「.....That girl is really a busybody huh.」

Imagining Shizuku who went along with her hustling family with a tired expression, Hajime looked at far away with a really speechless expression. She shouldn't be so reserved anymore after everything so far, so he guessed that her situation wasn't that serious if she didn't contact them for reinforcement.

「Well, got it. Then, Shia. I'm going out for a bit, so tell Yue and others for me.」

「Yhee~~s, leave it to mee~~desuu~~」

Shia who was burying her face again into the soft cushion sleepily waved around her rabbit ears as reply while she switched over into “droopy Shia mode” once more. She seemed to be in a really dreamy state of mind.

“Droopy Shia” who was bathing in sunlight while her panty was in full view, her rabbit tail shaking *furin~furin~* was terribly adorable. Hajime was driven with an impulse to give her lap pillow and loved her with all his might, but with an effort he endured in order to fulfill his duty as a papa and he exited the house.

A while after that, while the sound of sleeper's breathing *suya~* of a happy rabbit was resounding in the Nagumo residence's living room, there was the sound *clack* of the entrance door opening.

「Geez-, Yue you idiot! Pervert! You rascal!」

「.....What abusive language against someone who went to pick you up. Stupid Kaori.」

「Something like that cannot be said as “picking up” you know? That's called ambushing! Furthermore you even use illusion magic to the street, you are really idiot-」

「.....Kaori screamed ‘Hyaaa~~~’. You screamed ‘Hyaaa~~~’. Pufuh」

「Yueee~~~」

Such noisy quarrel could be heard.

It seemed Kaori was ambushed by Yue when she was in the middle of going to Nagumo residence. It seemed Yue even used illusion magic to shock Kaori. Recalling back Kaori's reaction of that time caused Yue to make a smile that looked really joyful.

Whether in the past or in the future, surely there would be no one other than Kaori for whom Yue would purposefully go out of the house just to make her shocked.

In her own way, Kaori as someone in the position who received Yue's mischievousness with her body was angry, even so she didn't look like that she hated it at all. Even now her hands were reaching toward the hair of Yue who was taking off her shoes, she used a hair styling product that she took out from somewhere and fought strenuously to tailor Yue's hair into Mohican style.

Yue walked toward the living room without even paying any mind that her fluffy and soft blonde hair was fumbled around and turned into a strange shape like the trees of the witch's forest by Kaori. She then caught sight of Shia who was napping with a loose expression that looked extremely careless. She was in the same state like before Yue went out.

「Ah, Shia, she is in the middle of nap. Then, we have to be quiet.」

「.....Nn」

It was as though their quarrel just now was nonexistent. The two stopped their dispute completely and went quiet. They approached slowly toward Shia and they stared gently at Shia who was mumbling 'munya munya'.

「Munya munya.....ehehe, more than this is impossible——I cannot beat you to death more than this you knoww~~」

「「.....」」

「Nnyaa. ....Kufuu~~, then, just a bit moreee~~」

「「.....」」

It was slightly off from the template.

This rabbit-san was making a happy expression, with a leisurely atmosphere, looking like she was feeling really pleasant, while going to beat up to death

someone a bit more. Run awaaaay! That someone inside the dream! Super run awaaaay!

「.....Let's leave her quietly.」

「.....Nn. That's better.」

Yue and Kaori slo~wly slo~wly backed away. They also took distance of heart.

「Err, and, where is Hajime-kun? I heard that Myuu-chan and others aren't here, but Hajime-kun is here right?」

「.....Nn. He is shutting himself inside the workshop since last night. It's troubling that he will forget the time right away when he got absorbed.」

「He would also forget his meal and sleep when he was like that. Then, let's go call him. Are we also going to make him rest while we are at it?」

「.....He haven't taken lunch yet too, so it's just right.」

They nodded at each other and headed toward the underground workshop.

By the way, the main path to head toward the underground workshop was through the stair in the corridor, but actually the sofa in the living room could also be used to go there. The sofa would be overturned backward when someone was sitting on it, and then that person would be dropped into the underground corridor.

There was really no meaning to purposefully get dropped like that, so everyone used the stair to head there, but limited to the people of Yaegashi family who sometimes visited (excluding Shizuku) and Myuu, the instead had never used the stair even once until now. They liked getting flipped and dropped down.

「.....Nn? Hajime, not here?」

「Eh? It's true.」

The two who entered the workshop tilted their head seeing that the place's owner wasn't there.

Did he leave the house? In that case did he not leave behind any notification memo? Thinking that the two walked deeper into the room.

It seemed there wasn't any memo, but in exchange a headset that was obviously in the middle of manufacturing entered their sight.

「.....That's the artifact that Hajime is currently getting absorbed in developing.」

「Is that so. Somehow it looks similar with a headset used for seeing 3D movie isn't it?」

「.....Nn. That's not necessarily wrong.」

Yue began to talk about the specific of its function in respond of Kaori's question. Kaori was listening in admiration and she was staring at the headset shaped artifact game device for some reason.

Yue spoke a sentence toward such Kaori.

「.....Kaori you silent lecher.」

「Why!?!」

Kaori was startled at the sudden insult. Yue answered that retort which was mixed with question.

「.....The reason you are staring hard like that is only one. I saw through that you were having delusion that you would be able to experience flirting with Hajime anytime in your home if you have that. Just what in the world you are planning to do to Hajime in the virtual world? This silent lecher.」

「I'm not a silent lecher! I wasn't having any delusion like that! Or rather, it's Yue who is the silent lecher by the time you come to that conclusion!」

「.....What stupid statement. Even without having delusion, I'm always flirting with Hajime!」

「Certainly!」

There was no room for argument there. But, Kaori wished that Yue would stop already with her attempt of planting the impression of “Kaori is a silent lecher” at every available opportunity.

Kaori was able to assert. That she was leading a wholesome life! Even if she had a bit of daydreaming habit, even if she was conscious toward any kind of



things that had just gotten used by Hajime, but it was beyond doubt that she was a wholesome girl! There was no room for suspicion there! Should be!

And so, here she firmly objected at Yue.

But, Yue-sama tried to utterly destroy the objection of such Kaori head-on.

As the result, at the end it connected to the usual cat fight.

Nyaah——!! Nyaah——!! Mui-mui-! Mukiiiiih!!

Both of them pinched at each other's cheeks and rolled around on the floor of the workshop for a few minutes. The situation only looked like they were frolicking around with each other if seen from the side, however, the two who were seriously quarrelling with each other became engrossed with it against their better judgment and they completely forgot to pay attention to the surrounding.

Yes, they were at the workshop of a transmutation master where Hajime's hand-made artifacts, the artifacts created from Hajime's interest working in full throttle where there were understandable things until incomprehensible things scattered out everywhere.

*GON-* A nice sound rang out, coming from Yue who was going to stand out banging the back of her head strongly at the desk above her.

Yue reflexively raised a strange scream「Nmii!?」while Kaori was childishly making merry「Ya~i, ya~i」at such Yue, but the next moment, the headset and other minerals fell from the desk and hit the crown of her head and Kaori raised a matching scream「Nmii!?」.

While the both of them were holding their head while trembling, suddenly an ominous sound *pachi pachi* struck their ears.

「.....Ah, err, Yue? This, by any chance, is this actually bad?」

「.....This is bad degozaru.」

Cold sweats trickled down. If there was only broken item, then the two could just harmoniously prostrate dogeza in front of Hajime and apologized. But, the headset in front of them that was fiercely sparking and further flickering with magic power light and overflowing with immense magic power that made their

skin tingled only gave off ominous feeling.

Yue's speech spontaneously became strange but her thinking was calm. No matter what happened, there was no way any phenomenon that happened here could leak outside from this workshop that boasted the strongest endurance in the world. Therefore, Yue would use the ultimate skill of instant teleportation "Divine Existence" and escaped together with Kaori.

Yue who decided that in an instant leaped toward Kaori, and then they escaped right——

*Flash-* Light exploded.

There was no sound or shockwave. There was only light that painted over the workshop for a beat.

Inside the workshop that recovered its former color, there were only Yue who was hanging over Kaori as though she had pushed her down, and Kaori who was tightly hugging such Yue left behind. It seemed that the two were unconscious.

「-, Yue!? Are you okay!?!」

Kaori who was aware that her consciousness had flew away for a moment raised her body in a flash at the same time when her consciousness returned and she confirmed Yue's safety. But, she didn't hear that voice that was so pleasant to hear it was odious that usually would respond after a beat later.

She had confirmed that a moment before her consciousness was cut off, Yue was jumping toward her to cover her. That was why Kaori completely thought that Yue was on her bosom, but she didn't feel her weight there, and even when she looked around restlessly she didn't find her anywhere.

Or rather,

「Wha, what is thisss~~~~」

Kaori was in chaos!

The reason was even though before this she should be inside the workshop wearing her personal clothes, when she noticed she was inside a room that was surrounded with coarsely made wood and she was waking up above a bed. When she looked more carefully, the clothes she was wearing was also changed

into something coarse that looked like it came from the period of Europe's Middle Age. It was a one piece and loose, yes, if this was in a movie or drama then this would be the clothing of a villager girl.

Kaori was looking down on herself dumbfounded for a while, next she rushed out in hurry. She opened the thin wooden door so hard the door could come off from its hinge, ignored an aging male that was talking about something smilingly inside what seemed to be a living room, and without pause she forcefully opened the entrance door and leaped out.

「Ju, just where, is this?」

Blue sky stretched without end. Numerous houses that looked like hovel. Foreign people working busily wearing simple clothes. This place was obviously not Japan.

Still in chaos, Kaori called out to a young man who happened to pass by.

「E, excuse me. I have a bit of question.....」

「Heey, this is the village of beginning “AAAAAAAAA”.」

「The name is too noncommittal! Or rather I'm not asking that!」

Kaori was in chaos! The young man tilted his head「Oh?」at such Kaori.

「What's this, just when I thought who is it because I was called so suddenly——」

「Eh, eh? What is it?」

Seeing the young man suddenly stopped his sentence was also surprising, but the transparent floating projection display that manifested in front of Kaori's eyes right after that also made Kaori's body trembled from feeling startled.

Above the display, there was a line “Please decide your name”, and below it there was a frame with blank space, and even further below was an unfamiliar keyboard.

「This is.....could it be this place is.....」

‘Could it be I'm inside that game device that is in the middle of development?’ Kaori reached that fact. The present condition where she suddenly arrived in an

unfamiliar world, the young man that was spewing out stereotyped line, and also the display that appeared midair, they were all completely like an RPG world. Kaori's appearance must be also the setting where she likely started as a villager girl in the beginning.

「So that's how it is? Yue said that the artifact used soul magic, so the instant it was broken only my soul was sent flying inside the game, is that it? .....It doesn't feel like I'm only soul at all though.....h~m, let's worry later. For now, I have to search Yue.」

Kaori who switched over her thinking looked forward at the young man who was smiling and waiting for her, she decided for now she would obey the rule of the game and at least decided her name before searching for Yue.

「Eerr, I'll use my name, Ka-o-ri.」

She typed in her name and clicked the enter key. A confirmation screen came out so she also pressed OK at it. And then the display vanished automatically.

「——but isn't this the regrettable daughter of the village chief Kaori.」

「Who are you calling regrettable!?!」

She was suddenly insulted.

「And so what's the matter, village chief's regrettable daughter?」

「There is no meaning typing in my name isn't it!? Or rather this thing about regrettable is the default!?!」

There was not even a fragment of ill will that could be seen from the young man who was still making an amiable smile without change. Kaori silently thought 'this is a game, this is a game' to suppress her welling up dissatisfaction and she asked once more.

「Do you know Yue? Ah, I wonder if you know what I mean by Yue. She is an extraordinarily beautiful girl with blond hair.....」

「This is the village of beginning "AAAAAAAAA".」

「Ah, yes. So you don't know.」

It seemed the person would return to its first line when he was asked

something he didn't know. Kaori held the conviction that this place was a virtual reality as expected and she wracked her brain of what to do now.

But, it was at that time that the young man talked at Kaori.

「Come to think of it, village chief's regrettable daughter.」

「.....What is it?」

Resignation was crucial in the society.

「You know, it seems this morning priest-san was picking up a sister with a screw loose.」

「That must be Yue!」

If the person in question was here, surely the curtain of great battle Yue VS Kaori of who knows how many times would be opened.

Talking to the villagers, gathered information, and then determined the destination——it was truly the classic flow. Kaori who became convinced of that faithfully expressed her gratitude before she sprinted away.

The church was the tallest building in the village. Because the houses in the village were all one-story house, the tall building with a cross affixed on its top could be seen from anywhere in the village.

「Uuh, my body is heavy.....」

Although it was inside the game, in the first place the physical ability of Kaori who had obtained the flesh body of god apostle was in foul play level. Originally she was able to easily display a running in the level that would smash the heart of an Olympic sprinter into pieces.

But, the current Kaori could only display a speed that was at the level of that Olympic sprinter. She was told that this was a game for training use, so perhaps it was possible that a limitation was set up for the initial configuration.

After all, the current her was a villager girl.....Kaori was sprinting while conjecturing the reason why her body wouldn't move like she wanted. She pretended as though she couldn't hear the villagers saying things like「Ah, that's the village chief's regrettable daughter!」「Today too she is running like that..... what a regrettable girl」while pointing their finger at her.

Like that, Kaori who was dealt with delicate mental damage finally arrived nearby the church's front, it was at that time when she was about to enter inside the church.

*DOGON*- Such terrific explosive sound and fierce vibration shook the village. What's more they happened consecutively.

「Wha wha wha wha, what!? Just what in the world is going on!？」

The bewildered Kaori put her emergency break and immediately took distance from the church.

Right after that, everywhere on the building's walls was blown away one after another, the church that lost its supporting pillars tilted violently. Without pause the building helplessly creaked *gigigigi*- while tilting even more drastically, like that the building collapsed as though it was toppled sideways.

Dust clouds rose up grandly.

Ahead of the gaze of Kaori who was looking at the church's destruction in astonishment, human silhouette swayed inside the dust cloud. The silhouette had small stature. And then, it gave a presence that Kaori was familiar with.

「Yue!」

「.....Nn. Kaori, I'm glad you are fine.」

Yue who said that while showing her figure by using wind to sweep away the veil of cloud dust——was a sister-san.

She was wearing a black loose one-piece that reached until her ankle and a wimple covering her head. Different from a pretend sister, her hair was covered properly that it couldn't be seen, so instead Yue's beautiful face became emphasized, matched with her expressionless face, a solemn atmosphere could be felt from her.

She was truly looking like a pious servant of god.....

If there was no destroyed church behind her.

Kaori wanted to ask various thing including confirming their present situation, but first thing first,

「Why is the church turned like this?」

「.....I flew into rage when I was said that my brain has a screw loose. I have no regret. I can boast that I have done a good work.」

「I, I see.」

Behind Yue, a priest with gentle looking expression was standing in the middle of the wreckage and he spoke with his sooty appearance.

「With heart of valor and kindness, now, go forth. Sister with a screw loose Yue.」

The wind of the sister with a screw loose burst. The priest-san flew to the sky. It was as though he was a leaf that was toyed by the wind.

「This is your home. I will wait for your return at all times.」

The home was gone already. Or rather, that place was a sky.

While the gentle voice of the priest-san that was flying in the sky was resounding, Kaori thought about Yue who was fully exposing her displeasure and about the matter from here on, and she let out a de~~ep sigh.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The beginning seems long, but this is a short story.

It's a bit of scene of Yue and Kaori's everyday.

When this is over, I'm thinking that perhaps I should write a long arc of After.

# Arifureta Chapter 252

## Arifureta After II So Close That They Squabbled With Each Other? Middle Part

AN: For Shirakome, three chapters are “short story”.

---

「Welcome! This is the church of “AAAAAAA” village. Will you carry out a confession? Or else will you carry out a confession? I also won't mind if you want to carry out a confession you know?」

Yue finally calmed down, and while Kaori was talking with Yue in order to grasp their current situation, the priest-san was smilingly inviting a confession standing in the middle of the wreckage of the collapsed church. As expected perhaps he was holding a grudge.

Kaori was making confirmation to Yue while her cheeks were twitching at the priest-san who was earnestly throwing words confession, confession at them.

「As I thought, this place is really inside that game device isn't it?」

「.....Nn. Based on the situation there is no doubt. Furthermore, there is a big possibility that it's broken somewhere.」

「Broken?」

「.....Nn. It's indeed true that the first position we appeared at is set randomly, but the speech of the NPC shouldn't be this strange. I was taught a bit about the content and the system so there is no doubt about that.」

「I, I see, indeed. There is no way Hajime-kun will make the default setting to be “regrettable” or “screw loose” even though this is a game created for Myuu-chan's sake.」(TN: Sorry, I changed the deplorable into regrettable)

Kaori nodded in comprehension. At the same time she let out a sigh that



sounded a bit uneasy. She imagined something a little bit unpleasant, that perhaps by any chance Hajime was thinking that she was regrettable.

「.....Anyway, we should logout but.....」

「.....That function doesn't broke right?」

Kaori was feeling something ominous from Yue's voice with her gaze turning toward Yue, while Yue called out the individual information screen using a game gesture just like what she was taught before. She was whispering「Open」while her hand was waved as though stroking the empty air in front of her.

As the result a blue shining window materialized in front of Yue's eyes. A unique sound *von* resounded, and then window fragments gathered from up, down, right, and left as though it was a block game, and in the blink of eye a screen the size of a 24 inch television was completed. It was Hajime's fixation that took all night to finish.

Anyway, Yue let out a sigh of relieve that the individual information screen was opened normally, next she clicked on the button “return to home” at the right bottom of the screen while feeling a bit nervous.

——Why are you giving up here! Do your best, do your best! You can do it, you can do it!

A voice of heaven descended. It seemed they couldn't go home. It appeared that more passion and guts were necessary.

「.....」

「.....」

Yue clicked the button wordlessly once more.

——If you give up, that will be the end of your adventure! Now, dash toward that sunset!

As expected, it seemed the voice of heaven wouldn't allow returning to home. And then, what should be rising right now was the morning sun, telling them to dash toward the sunset was just...

「I, I'll give it a try.」

While Kaori's cheeks were twitching seeing Yue throwing a dreadfully scornful gaze at empty air with her usual stare having advanced until the third stage, Kaori imitated Yue and called out her individual information screen, and she clicked the button "return to home".

——You shitty maggot-. What are you doing trying to go home as you damn please-. The destination of you bastard is only to hell or to hell-. If you don't want me to "pii—\* you then return to your squad! That's your one and only home you bastard!

「Hiih!？」

Having suddenly poured with the angry yell of Hajime, Kaori spontaneously held her head with both hands and she became unable to stand up from surprise.

「.....Come to think of it, it seems that the program for Hauria use was also included separately.」

「The, the training for mass producing those berserk rabbits? Hajime-kun, how far she is planning to evolve those people?」

Yue shrugged toward Kaori who was trembling all over.

In the end their bad premonition hit the bull's eye and they couldn't logout from the game. It was unclear why when it was Yue, Hajime's voice had the tone of Matsuoka Ozo, while when it was Kaori, Hajime's voice had a tone like Sergeant Hartmao, but surely this too was the adverse effect from the broken device. (TN: Matsuoka Shuzo is a retired tennis player who is currently hosting a TV show. He is known for his energetic and passionate character)

「What will we do, Yue. How are we going home.....ah, that's right! Yue, use soul magic!」

「Mu, there is that method.」

This game device was created by applying soul magic. The highly precise sensation where there was almost no difference with reality was because of that. In that case, it could be thought that for an expert of soul magic it should be possible to logout even without relying on the system.

Yue wasted no time trying to use soul magic.

——Insufficient level

「Mu? .....Mumuh」

「Yue?」

Each time Yue persisted with something while mumbling「Mumuh」, the heavenly voice “insufficient level” descended down. At the end a hypocritically courteous words “let’s understand your standing” descended.

Kaori who somehow guessed the situation asked.

「It looks no good isn’t it?」

「Muu. Even though it absorbed us because it’s broken, but I cannot accept it at all that only this system is perfectly working.」

According to Yue, Yue herself was also participating at the creation of this bodily sensation system that applied soul magic. And then, the “binding” of the game system that was directly affecting the soul was operating effectively even at Yue herself who was a cooperator in the artifact’s creation.

If this effect was purely due to Yue’s own magic, then she would only need to break that restriction, but if Hajime’s artifact was involved there then it would be next to impossible for Yue to cancel it.

Yue who was unable to release her “binding” no matter how many times she tried dropped her shoulders dejectedly.

「.....As expected from Hajime’s artifact. And then my magic. We have done a good work.」

「This is not the time for singing your own praise, Yue.....what to do. Is there no other way to logout?」

「.....Nn. It’s not that there is none. If I remember correctly, there is a safe point at each village, we should be able to logout from there too. Myuu can go home anytime she want, but Hajime said that he won’t let Hauria to escape as they please, and he said that he picked base logout method for them.」

「Hajime-kun, he is merciless to the people of Hauria isn’t he.....」

They couldn't stop even if they wanted to stop. If they wanted to stop then they could only progress inside the game. And what's more that too surely would be a game scenario with an extraordinarily lovely hard mode, no, hell mode in Hajime style.

Thinking about the people of Hauria who someday would be thrown in here, Kaori quietly prayed for their happiness in the next world.

「And Yue. If there is save point in each village, then what about this village? Let's quickly try out that save point.」

「.....There is none in this village.」

「Eh? Why? You said just now that each village has one.」

「.....Be, because this is the village of beginning. So it's not needed.」

「.....Yue?」

Kaori quickly asked Yue about the save point of this village, but for some reason Yue was answering with her gaze subtly looking away. It felt like her tone was also subtly strange.

Kaori turned a suspicious gaze at Yue, but Yue was muttering to herself「..... Well then, we have to go to the next village now that we have decided」with a subtly strange tone as expected.

Kaori turned her gaze. Toward the direction of the priest-san who was still eloquently urging for confession in the middle of the wreckage.

「Excuse me Father. Can you please tell me where is the save point of this village?」

「.....Kaori! You doubt me? That's crue——」

「Village chief's regrettable daughter-san. You are regrettable as usual. You know don't you? It's right here in this church!」

The church, was no more.

Kaori turned her face calmly toward Yue still with a smiling face. Yue calmly turned toward the direction of the far beyond.

A time of silence flowed for a while. The gaze was also flowing from

Kaori=>Yue=>brilliantly shining sun.

A beat later.

「YUE YOU IDIOOOOOOOOOT!!」

「.....Ka, KAORI YOU STUPIID——mugyuh!?!」

Kaori's yell resounded.

Yue talked back in reflex, but her words sounded unusually frailer. In addition, her cheeks were swiftly stretched out *mugyuuuu* and her words were cut off.

「Idiot idiot idiot idiot-, Yue you idiot! Why was the first thing you do after the game started was destroying the save point!? This screw loose sister-saN-!!」

「Re, rerause——」

「Don't say because!」

「Fho, fhowefer——」

「Don't say however! Geez-, you are really-! The way of thinking of blowing away everything the first thing if there is something that you cannot stomach, I think that's completely no good! I think, that's really no good!」

Kaori preached while inflicting *mugyuuuuu* at Yue's cheeks. Perhaps she was using a lot of strength, Yue's soft cheeks were stretching and stretching and her eyes turned delicately teary.

As expected it seemed Yue recognized that she had been rash, at first she was obediently letting herself treated like that and listened meekly, but right after Yue heard「In the first place Yue is~」and she felt the atmosphere that the preaching would become long, first thing first she counterattacked. Her index fingers poked *dosu-* at both sides of Kaori's stomach.

「Hehyah!?!」

Kaori-san's body bent stra——ight backward stiffly. Seeing such Kaori, Yue-san laughed「You said 'hehyah'. It was 'hehyah'. Puh, giggle giggle」.

The outcome was obvious.

——Nyah—nyaah! Mui muih, fushaa———!!

The gong of the usual cat fight rang. Both of them scuffled with each other while rolling around on the church that was transformed into a mountain of rubble and in front of the priest whose suggestion of sin confession was becoming forceful.

But, there several villagers were passing by.

「Okaa-san, those people.....」

「Shih. You must not stare at the screw loose sister and village chief's regrettable daughter!」

When a young child pointed his finger, his mother hurriedly covered her child's eyes and they quickly left as though they had just witnessed something terrifying.

「Those two did that to the church.....the hell with them.」

「I thought that someday they would actually do it. After all, they are the village chief's regrettable daughter-san and the sister-san with a screw loose.」

A young man shouldering farming tool was looking at the destroyed church and said that pitifully, while the uncle beside him sighed while saying that.

「A really good person, has left us.」

「How sad this incident is.」

An uncle pushing a cart looked at the church with an anguished expression, and another uncle who was similarly carrying a baggage faced the church and offered words of prayer. The priest was still alive despite the destruction of the church though.....

The air of the surrounding villagers felt somewhat strange, or rather their atmosphere was dark. Yue and Kaori who were covered with dust from rolling around finally noticed. Both of them stood up feeling unable to stay there longer from being surrounded at a distance while being seen with a gaze as though they were dangerous character.

「.....Err, Yue. For now there is nothing that can be done for what is broken, about what should we do from here on.....」

「.....Nn. I am Yue. A woman who won't look back to the past.」

「How about you look back? The next time you do another destructive activity irresponsibly, I'll seriously make you eat disintegration bombardment okay?」

Yue averted her gaze from Kaori whose blood vein was emerging on her forehead still with a smiling face, and she called out her individual information screen once more.

「.....Cough-. Just like I said before, if it's save point, the next village also has it. And so, for now we should aim to go there.」

「I guess. Our body might be in the real world I think, and when Hajime-kun go home he will surely do something somehow, but if there is anything we can do then it's better to give it a try.」

「.....Nn. But, look here.」

The two easily progressed their talk so smoothly to the degree that would make anyone wonder just what was with the quarrel just now.

Yue pointed at her status screen, so Kaori got close to Yue's shoulder and peered in with her body glued close on Yue. The content that was projected there was,

=====

Name : Yue-pon  
Rank : 1 / 50 remaining until the next liberation  
Job : Apprentice Sister  
Title : Sister With a Screw Loose  
Skill : No Chant Imagination Configuration  
Magic : Flame Magic [Fireball]  
Equipment : A set of apprentice sister outfit  
Special mention : Has criminal record  
Money : 1,000

=====

Other than those there were also items at hand and also playing time

recorded, but there was no list for specs that were quantified into number like in Tortus's status plate. It was made like this with the reason so the player wouldn't misunderstand the number as their own strength in real battle and so that the player couldn't overwhelm the enemy using the difference in status amount.

HP gauge that was common for RPG also didn't exist with similar reasons. Conforming to reality, no matter how strong someone was they would get instant game over if their head was cut off, but in reverse no matter what kind of strong enemy could possibly be defeated depending on the method.

Kaori who saw Yue's status nodded and said「I see」.

「As expected you have a criminal record.」

「.....Oi, Kaori. What do you mean by as expected? I am always obeying law——」

「Nn」

Kaori replied just like Yue while her finger was pointing toward the destroyed church. A beat after Yue turned her gaze there.

「.....I'm generally obeying law in the real world.」

「You nonchalantly ranked down “always” into “generally” even in the real world there.」

Yue-sama wouldn't look back to the past! She also wouldn't accept Kaori's straight-man retort!

「.....Rather than that, the problem is this “rank” and “money”.」

「Before that, let me ask a little bit more, Yue-pon. See here, about my individual information screen, Yue-pon. In my special mention the word ‘accomplice’ is written. Yue-pon, why is this I wonder? I didn't really do anything but now I have criminal record, Yue-pon. Tell me Yue-pon. Heey, heey, Yue-pon. Yue-pon, sheesh Yue-pon-」

Very unusually Yue was covering her face with both hands and her ears were bright red for some reason while she crouched down on the spot. She whispered with a small voice「.....uu, because of a passing fancy I



unconsciously」while trembling in shame.

The expression of Kaori who was crouching down beside such Yue was truly a really wide grin. She was showing her friendly smile that always charmed the surrounding while poking Yue's cheek with her index finger. Kaori was enjoying the squishy sensation that might become a habit while intently speaking piercing words.

「Well, it doesn't matter now, Yue-pon. I still cannot accept it but, we won't finish anything like this Yue-pon. And? What is this “rank” and “money” about, Yue-pon?」

「.....Kaori, what nerve. This sister with a screw loose Yue-pon will turn the village girl into cinder for the peaceful life of the village.」

「Wawawah, calm down Yue! I'm sorry! I won't say it anymore!」

A ball of flame lit up on Yue's fingertip. Its appearance was shabby but the pressure that it gave off was a bad news. It seemed that even the most basic of elementary magic could be filled with high class power by the way one controlled the amount of magic power and the compression rate.

The sister with a screw loose Yue-pon pointed finger gun gesture at Kaori and mercilessly shot a lot of that. That magic that was shot wildly like the sweeping of a gatling gun was somehow evaded by Kaori even while her face was going pale.

In exchange, from behind Kaori countless explosions and screams were.....

「Aah!? The shoemaker Rodriguez is blown away!」

「What!? What is happening!? My house is gone!?」

「Kuu! Everyone-, I'll hold them back here! Run while you all still can!」

「Village chief! That's reckless! Your opponent is that sister-san with a screw loose you know!? Even for you that's rash!」

「Hah, don't worry about me. Even like this when I was young I did quite much as an adventurer. I'll just take her on a bit and then I'll catch up to you later.」

「Chief, someone like you is.....」

For some reason Kaori’s father was becoming the hero of the village, but seeing that the daughter of that hero was involved with the turmoil, in a sense this was like a family scandal, or even like stirring up trouble to get credit from solving it.

After that, Yue who mercilessly turned the village chief into something like a ragged cloth and destroyed Rodriguez and the shoe shop mistaken the remaining amount of her magic power that was restrained more than she imagined by the system, and she collapsed face first from her magic power running dry. Similarly, Kaori whose physical ability was restrained and now not only she couldn’t transform into apostle, she couldn’t even use magic was also ran out of stamina and collapsed face first.

「Ju, just what are, we doing, in this time of emergency.....zee, zee」

「.....Haa haa. Uu, certainly」

While feeling the intense gazes of the villagers who were surrounding the two from a distance, Yue and Kaori got up somehow and they sat down side by side.

「Le, let’s return to our talk. And, what is this “rank” and “money” about?」

「.....Nn. About this “rank”, this is the restriction level that is put on us. I cannot use anything other than fireball, and Kaori’s physical ability is low with apostle transformation and magic unusable are also because of that. By leveling up, we will get closer to our ability in the real world.」

「Is that so. Even when in not perfect state, manage it somehow with what you can do.....this concept is really like Hajime-kun.」

By the way, Kaori’s individual information screen was something like this.

=====

Name : Kaori

Rank : 1 / 50 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Villager Girl

Title : Village Chief’s Regrettable Daughter

Skill : Villager girl-style Twin Large Sword Art

Magic :

Equipment : A set of villager girl outfit

Special mention : Yue-pon's accomplice

Money : 1,000

=====

「.....Nn. Our ability is given limitation, but our individual technique is not given any limitation at all. It was because it's me that kind of elementary level magic could show such power and rapid fire. A mere villager girl could dodge all those is also the same.」

「I see. Err, is there any problem with that?」

Kaori nodded in understanding at Yue's explanation. It seemed that Kaori's father was revived at the corner of their sight. The mournful villagers applauded their village chief.

「.....Normally, we will raise our level at the surrounding area of the village of beginning while gathering money at the same time, we then will head to the next village after putting our equipment in order to a certain degree. The concrete scenario haven't been established yet, but if the enemy characters that were inserted for their behavior checking are without change, then they should be really strong.」

「Aah, I see. In other words, there is a chance we won't be able to reach the next village with our current level isn't it? Also we don't even have money to put our equipment in order.」

「.....Nn. I think that it will be fine if it's me and Kaori but.....in the case we received damage in this game that is in the verge of breaking, I don't know what kind of effect it will have to us. Based on how there is the prospect of Hajime definitely rescuing us, it's also an option to not move from here.」

「Fufufu, you aren't thinking of that at all aren't you, Yue. There is no way we will choose avoiding risk and not doing anything.」

Help would come sooner or later and so let's not do anything. In a sense it was a solid method. However, the people who got close to Hajime wouldn't

choose that option.

「.....Exactly. Besides, we also don't understand how long the current circumstance will continue. By any chance, perhaps before Hajime come home a fatal breakdown will occur and it will become a situation that cannot be recovered from.」

「You're right. Like that we also cannot leisurely level up and gather money around the village then.」

「.....Nn. We need to put our equipment in order as much as possible with the current money at our hand.」

Yue understood their problems. They needed to reach the neighboring village by struggling through quite strong enemies using only the minimum equipment while trying to not get hit even once as much as possible.

Indeed, it was a very severe situation.

But,

「Yep, I don't see any problem. Yue is here after all.」

「.....Nn. There is no problem. Kaori is here.」

That was how it was.

Yue and Kaori stood up and dusted off the dirt attached on their respective fluttering sister and villager girl clothes. The gazes of the villagers were as usual as though they were looking at dangerous characters. It was the truth that they were guilty so they couldn't bear at all to be there for longer. Even though it was a game world, wasn't the speech and conduct of the mob characters too free?

Even though it was fine even if it wasn't this realistic at this aspect.....Yue and Kaori were modestly venting their anger at Hajime's obsession while heading toward the equipment shop of the village.

Yue had magic job, so even in the worst case she wouldn't mind buying just several items for recovering magic power, but Kaori who seemed to be a user of villager girl-style twin large swords art needed weapon. If possible, she also wanted pants and tunic that were easy to move in, not her current loose one

piece clothes for villager girl.

Midway they were also exposed to intense violence of gazes.

Kaori thought, 'This is, like that'. Yes, the stares were like the stares that were directed at a lion that escaped from its cage in a zoo. She saw it some time ago, the news of multiple wild beasts including lion escaping their cage and then moved freely inside the zoo.

At that time the gazes of the people that were running away filled with trepidation were truly the same like the gazes of the villagers toward them right now.

Am I a lion.....?

Kaori was feeling complicated and she looked at Yue who was walking beside her.

Luxuriant golden hair. Flexible limbs. Unmistakably a carnivore (hidden meaning). And then, her status as the strongest.

(Yep, it fit. Here is Yue lion. Yep.

Kaori imagined Yue wearing a lion cosplay while roaring 'gao~' on all fours and she strangely comprehended it.

By the way, the lion commotion of that time was the revenge of the zoo's former worker who got fired where he was also going to steal the zoo's proceeds at the same time, he released the animals was also for diversion, but the escaping lion and other animals were then taken care by a certain couple.

Actually, it had also become a hot topic how one of the couple, a small girl easily tamed the lion and then used that lion to catch the criminal. Then, it was also a hot topic how the boyfriend knocked down with his bare arm a bear that was escaping together and then returned it into its cage.

Kaori was imagining the news of that time and Yue lion half to escape the reality while chasing away the gazes of the villagers from inside her mind, and then her gaze caught sight of the equipment shop they were searching ahead.

「Both of us combined has 2,000 yen.....can we buy anything?」

「.....I don't know the price so I cannot say anything. In the worst case, I want

to at least secure Kaori's sword.」

Kaori had inherited the combat skill of god's apostle, so she had also learned martial art to a high level. However, as expected her greatest offense was the apostle's characteristic ability and the twin large swords art. As expected there would be a large difference in Kaori's combat skill from whether she had sword or not.

Yue opened the shop's door. And right away,

「Go home! Go back home! There ain't anyone here that will sell to you two criminals! Go home right away!」

「「.....」」

The equipment shop owner with thick moustache looking very obstinate suddenly gave the two a present of angry yell. Yue and Kaori reflexively stiffened.

The two understood what the owner was saying. Kaori timidly opened her mouth with twitching expression.

「E, excuse me, I, want to buy——」

「Shut up, this damned accomplice of Yue-pon! Just get out now!」

Kaori's expression stiffened. This was the first time in her life she was treated like this by a person that she met for the first time. Kaori who was always polite and bright was often favored especially by the elders. Naturally, her endurance was low against something like this.

「Yu, Yuee~」

「.....Nn. Leave it to me. Cough-. ——Owner-san, please listen to my story. We——」

「Shut your mouth, this great sinner, priest killer! How dare you did that to a kind person like that-」

「Ah, no, that, that person is still ali——」

「Good grief, even though you are a sister but to do something so terrifying! Listen here, this shop will only deal with honest customer! Someone criminal

like you with a screw loose can just get out, now-」

A super condensed fireball materialized on the fingertip of Yue-sama. Its radiance, its heat, it was truly just like a sun!

「Don't be hasty Yueee-! Calm down! This is you reaping what you sow!」

「.....Kaori, don't worry. Not even ash will be left behind. The owner of the equipment shop just disappeared. He only left behind a farewell letter that mentioned the property of the shop is handed over to the sister.」

「That's murder! What's more it's robbery murder! Just where is this mind of obeying law you said before!?!」

「.....The sister with screw loose, doesn't understa~~~nd.」

「A child!? Are you a child!? Geez-, it doesn't matter so just toss away that fireball! Quickly toss it away!」

「.....You wish to set fire here?」

「Aaah!? As I thought don't toss it away! Extinguish it quickly! Come on, quickly!」

In deference to Kaori who was persuading with a desperate look, Yue erased the sun on her fingertip.

It seemed that a situation that often appeared in game, where they earned the hate of the villagers too much and now they got hit with the demerit had been generated.

Not only the destruction of the church, the destruction of the shoe store and the private houses surely also added to their crime. When they tried looking at the individual information screen, at Yue's special mention part, the "has criminal record" had changed into "wanted criminal (Destroyer Yue-pon)".

Kaori thought that if they were denied to use the shop by the game's system, then it couldn't be helped anymore, they should give up, and so she pulled at Yue's clothes to get out of the shop, but Yue didn't move and stood firmly in place.

「.....Kaori. It's too fast to give up.」

「Eh, but, this is the game's system isn't it? There is nothing more that we can.....」

「.....You're wrong. Just like I said before, this game's characteristic is that you can overturn the difference in strength depending on your method. It's too fast to conclude that it's impossible because it's the system. I'll prove it to you. Watch.」

「Geez, I have nothing but bad premonition here.」

Ahead of Kaori's disheartened gaze, Yue talked toward the shop owner. It seemed she was planning to find a path by negotiating.....

「No matter what you are going to say, there is nothing that I will sell to——」

「.....I beg you. Please choose, will your shop be burned, or will you hand over your goods quietly.」

It wasn't a negotiation, but a threat. With a gesture that was like a sister, both her hands clasped in front of her chest, and an expression like a pious lamb praying wholeheartedly to the god, she spoke something that would make even gang members to have cold sweat.

「.....I have faith, that you will surely understand our plight! That our heart can communicate with each other if we just talk it out! Now, let's not be stubborn and be obedient.」

‘He is not being stubborn but making the justified reaction though.....’. That was what Kaori-san thought but she didn't butt in.

「.....The god hath spoken. Child, choose equipment for the sister in front of your eyes within the range of 2,000 yen, he said. Rather, give her a discount, a lot of it! He said. If you do that, then your sin too shall be forgiven.」

Who would believe a god haggling? Or rather, the shop owner-san didn't commit any sin. Rather, the sinner here was Yue. Kaori-san just barely endured from saying those retorts.

The sun-like flame materialized once more in front of Yue.

「.....Owner-san. I really don't want to see you receiving the judgment of god. I beg you, please obediently sell to us a gre~~~atly discounted merchandises!」



That wasn't god's judgment, but a punishment from Yue personally wasn't it? What's more it was exceedingly malicious. No matter how and where one looked at it, this person was really a splendid sister with a screw loose. Kaori couldn't endure and those straight-man retorts leaked out from her mouth. Yue-sama ignored it like nothing.

The shop owner's state was strange. His gaze was turning round and round, and his head was moving up and down. Perhaps his program was bustlingly performing data processing because he encountered this unexpected situation.

Inside the shop that was wrapped in silence except the roar of the blazing flame, the shop owner's gaze finally settled down.

「Welcome to the equipment shop of “AAAAAAA” village! Today we are in a middle of a special promotion sale!」

It seemed the sister-san's sincere prayer reached the shop owner and the system.

「.....nn. Kaori, which item do you want?」

「If possible, a cheap one that can suppress my guilt even just for a little I think.」

Seeing Yue who turned toward her with a triumphant look, Kaori resolved that when they returned to reality she would train her once more about the meaning of obeying the law.

In the end, they couldn't buy anything in the equipment shop except for a single “Iron Long Sword”. In the first place, the starting price for equipment was around several tens of thousands yen, a few thousand yen could only buy things like wooden sword or stone sword. By the time “Iron Long Sword” that had a price of 70,000 yen reduced to 1,500 yen, it could be easily guessed just what had happened between the shop owner and Yue, must be.

With feeling of guilt gouging out inside the chest grindingly, after that the same thing was also done in the general store and several potions for Yue's magic power recovery were bought, and the two then headed toward the village's entrance.

But, not even ten seconds after they exited the shop.....\*kon-\*, a light impact

assaulted Kaori's shoulder. When Kaori turned her gaze in wonder of what happened, she saw among the villagers who were staring at them from a distance that had increased relatively much, there were two children sticking out a bit from the crowd preparing to throw small rock.

Kaori's expression convulsed greatly.

「These criminals! Get out from the village!」

「Get out! Get out!」

The pure anger from the pure children smashed the pure (?) heart of Kaori-san. Kaori screamed「Hauh」and she pressed on her chest while falling on all fours!

Furthermore, the children of the village were gathering bustlingly and they were throwing rocks while hurling abuse with their lisping speech. And then perhaps that became the trigger, even the adults started to join in. They were yelling things like「Get out you sister with a screw loose!」or「I have thought from long ago that the village chief's regrettable daughter will someday become criminal!」while a chorus of「Get out from the village!」was arising.

「.....They are looking for war. Very well, I'll accept the challenge. I am Yue. A woman who will buy the fight sold to me until they run out of stock!」(TN: In Japan, selling a fight is how they said picking a fight)

「Stoopp! Just be obedient already, Yueeee! If the village is obliterated with this, then I have the confidence I'll be annihilated along with my soul from guilt!」

Seeing the sister-san with a screw loose lifting the corner of her lips like a demon king with the tips of her spread out hands materializing flame, Kaori pleaded at her to not act rashly while holding her down by pinioning her from behind.

No matter how one thought about it, this was the just dessert of the overbearing Yue. The hate that had been piling up and up had reached the critical point, they weren't just ostracized anymore, a campaign to exile them from the village had started.

Yue who even in this situation was far from reflecting, she even announced

her intention really naturally to counter attack was truly the wife of the demon king. She was the avatar of being overbearing and unreasonable.

Regret? Restrain? Never heard about that! Come at me from anywhere you li~~ke!

Kaori caught the scruff of the neck of Yue who was getting spirited like that and without pause she ran toward the exit of the village while apologizing「I'm sorry! I'm really sorry for our Yue!」with one hand deflecting all the rocks flying at them using the long sword that she had unsheathed.

Seen from the side, the picture of the villager girl running around while swinging around a long sword with one hand, and the other hand dragging away a sister who was smiling fearlessly——it was truly the very picture of a village chief's regrettable daughter.

When the two got out of the village, the villagers' yell suddenly stopped completely. It seemed the commotion calmed down if they went out of the village. Kaori who was filled with trepidation that perhaps they would be kept getting chased even outside the village let out a sigh of relief and she sat down on the spot.

「.....Kaori, are you okay?」

「My guilt is not okay at all, Yue you idiot.」

For Kaori who didn't have experience of being the target of the whole village's hostility and anger, it seemed she received substantial amount of mental damage. Her atmosphere felt somehow like she was sobbing.

「Geez, how can you be that calm? Even if this is a world of game, but I believe that normally anyone will get shocked if they got rock thrown at them by children that small.....I never even dreamed that you would actually try to counter attack.」

Kaori turned an expression that looked like she was speechless, like she was blaming her, like she was in admiration at that mental of steel or rather that shameless mental, and like she was in exasperation toward Yue. Yue's expression suddenly turned gentle and she answered.

「.....Because I had experienced it already.」

「? Experience? .....aa」

For a moment Kaori didn't understand what Yue was talking about, but she guessed it after thinking for a bit. And then, her expression turned very much like「Oh no!」and she attempted to change the topic in panic but.....the time was already late.

「.....Compared to getting beaten up to near death by my trusted vassals and my uncle who was like father, having rock thrown at me by children who I don't know, what's more by something that's nothing more than a program is really nothing at all.」

「Tha, that, Yue? It's, I'm sorry.」

「.....What are you apologizing for, Kaori? I just want to say that compared to the experience of getting ganged up by people who were like family, this is only trivial. Fufu, that time really hurt. Inside that storm of magic until my automatic regeneration ran out. Fufufuh, my heart hurt that timee~~」

「Sorry Yue! I asked you something stupid! That's why return backkk!」

Seeing and hearing the empty laugh of Yue who was staring at the faraway past with eyes that looked like dead fish, Kaori embraced her with teary eyes while apologizing. She should have become unbound by the past after knowing the true motive of her uncle Denreed, but no matter the fact it still didn't change that it was an event that was hard to forget.

Yue gently patted Kaori who was clinging on her with teary eyes while she turned at her and spoke with eyes that had recovered their light.

「.....I'm fine. I who had met Hajime, traveled, knew the truth about Oji-sama, and opened my eyes to the truth, has no more blind spot now.」

「Tru, truth?」

Yue nodded shortly and she puffed up her chest with an extremely triumphant look while replying full of confidence.

「Setting aside the reason, just slaughter everyone for the time being. If there is something that bothers you, then resurrect them again at opportune time.」

「.....Everyone all liberators. Everyone's magic is completed by perhaps the

person who must not have it the most. I'm sorry.」

This is the first wife of the demon king! In front of her, life was just too light. No, surely, she was a bit more prudent in the real world, should be, Kaori was half praying while she lowered her head toward the protectors of the other world.

Kaori was crestfallen thinking that her strength had suddenly faded off even before departing to their journey, but right after that, they were visited by a situation that made them lost such composure.

*flap-*, such sound of flapping wings resounded once, twice.....it resounded inside the two's ears one after another.

When the two went 'hah' and they lifted up their face, over there were multiple beings descending down from the sky.

The beings were flapping beautiful white wings on their back, they were clad in impressive dress armor that looked beautiful, while their hand was each holding spear or sword or weapon that looked famous. The forms of the women who were emitting abnormal pressure were beautiful in contrast with that threatening atmosphere. Their beautiful look that ought to be said as god's creation was completed with dreamy silver hair that looked flowing.

Kaori couldn't even say anything. The existence and strength of these women were obviously boss class where in a game they would come out at the middle stage, no, at the latter stage.

'Aah, I see, this is an event!' Right after Kaori almost convinced herself like that, a ruthless voice of heaven descended.

——Wild Valkyries appeared!!

The women who were greatly popular even among the Norse myth carelessly appeared as though they were goblin level enemy, *jakin-* their weapons were readied with such sound. They were brimming with hostility. They were fully motivated.

Kaori briefly said.

「This kind of world, is just mistakeenn.....」

Kaori doubted her beloved person's sanity just for a bit.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Things like the setting, the information screen, or the content, currently it is still a prototype and on top of that its behaving baggily, that's the setting so please forgive the vagueness.

I plan to someday make it into the stage of a long After arc, so at that time I'll think up the detailed content.

PS

The comic version of Arifureta is updated in the homepage of Overlap-sama.

As always the illustration has impact, Yue is also cute.

Please try to have a look if you like.

# Arifureta Chapter 253

## Arifureta After II So Close That They Squabbled With Each Other? Last Part

AN: Regarding the case where everyone of Narou people has better understanding of Shirakome then Shirakome himself.

.....I have no more excuse.

---

The first attack was a swept of a splendorous sword. The speed of the eye focus couldn't follow it. One Valkyrie charged with a speed that even produced afterimages, lunging toward Yue and Kaori who was still embracing Yue.

Perhaps it was trying to bisect the two simultaneously. The sword line that drew a trajectory that almost looked like a flash was rapidly approaching at Yue's neck as though it was absorbed to there. If the target was an ordinary person, they wouldn't even have time to scream, when they noticed there was no doubt that their death would be already a certainty.

「FUWAaAAA!?!」

「Nngih」

Of course, the village chief's regrettable daughter, regardless of being a villager girl she was a regrettable girl that boasted a physical ability that was far removed from ordinary person. The sweeping attack that approached like the scythe of death god was evaded by falling backward while her arm wasted no time to circle on Yue's neck and she pulled Yue with her.

Death was passing through along with a violent wind just a millimeter above

Yue and Kaori's face who were falling backward like in a limbo dance.

Although Kaori's posture broke down with her falling backward, she somehow succeeded in evading. But a shadow appeared above her without even any time to sigh in relieve.

「WAAAA!?!」

「Higyo!?!」

Kaori put strength into the arm that she circled around Yue's neck and without pause she rolled on the ground, taking Yue with her. That appearance could be seen as a brave figure desperately trying to protect a friend.

A hair's breadth.

A spear that also looked splendidous raised a really unpleasant impact sound *zudon*- when it pierced the spot where the two collapsed at just now. A small crater was even created from the impact. It was a terrifying strength.

The Valkyries made their entrance like a common goblin, but as expected their strength wasn't in a level that should appear around the village of the beginning.

From Yue's individual information screen just now, "Automatic Regeneration" wasn't listed there. It was unclear how much the system that was an effect of soul magic was suppressing that skill which was a characteristic ability.

In such state, furthermore inside this buggy world, if they got hit with that attack that was unmistakably a one-hit kill, even if it was Yue but there was a high possibility that she wouldn't come out of it safely.

And Kaori who was separated from her apostle body was also the same.

It wasn't clear what kind of effect a damage they got in this game world would inflict at their soul, because of that they absolutely must not get hit.

Cold sweat trickled from Kaori's forehead seeing the enemy's strength and the merciless one-hit kill attacks launched toward them.

Kaori made use of her rolling momentum to somehow straighten herself while she obeyed the warning that her combat experience informed her and leaped back from that spot. Right away, the vertical slashes of the Valkyries that



launched pincer attack passed through before her eyes.

「Nngigih, gi, give-. I give!」It felt like some kind of strange voice could be heard, but right now there was no leeway to be bothered with that.

Kaori had to grasp the limitation of her lowered physical ability while during that time she had to evade the countless death approaching them!

Even if, there was the sensation of repeated tapping that felt relatively desperate on her hand that was circled around Yue's neck, but there wasn't any time to worry about that!

「It's fine! I swear I'll absolutely protect you Yue!」

「Tha, that's not-. My neeck! It's completely——」

Countless flame bullets rushed from middle range! Kaori strengthened her grip so that her friend absolutely wouldn't get separated from her while dancing the dance of death with determination!

Kaori stepped toward the swarm of flame bullets while still holding Yue. Rather than waiting for the bullets to converge at herself, she would move forward and slip through before the gaps were tightened.

Just like she planned, she slipped through the gaps in the barrage and passed through several shots, then with a rotation she evaded an attack that approached from the front. So that Yue's body wouldn't be separated from her because of the centrifugal force, she put even more strength to her arm that was holding Yue!

「Kafuu!? .....Ka, Kaori, I'll, I'll apologize, so, your arm, armmm~」

「*It's fine!* Because I'll absolutely protect you!」

「.....You, you bastarrrd~, you're planninggg——」

Yue tried to say something, but at the corner of the sight a Valkyrie archer could be seen nocking an arrow that was enveloped with some abnormal light. It caused Kaori's heart to jump.

「Look ouu~~~tt-」

「Kyupeh!?」

Kaori immediately jumped forward to get down on the ground. Flame bullets passed through overhead, further behind the sounds of explosion resounded. The impact that came assaulting within an instant caused Kaori and Yue's bodies to dance in the air like a leaf.

Kaori somehow kept her hold on Yue and she performed ukemi on the ground. There she noticed that the attacks stopped and she let out a faint exhale of relieve.

It seemed they managed to endure just barely the first wave of the attack.

The Valkyries were moving slowly. They were trying to surround Kaori and Yue. Kaori scowled at that while she talked to Yue.

「Yue. What should we do? Perhaps this is just as expected. These people are strong just as we thought. We have to break through this encirclement somehow.....Yue?」

「.....」

Just try to look. The white of her eyes is exposed and her mouth is half opened but, that's a beautiful face right? She is fainting y'know?

Such words crossed Kaori's mind. The friend in her arm, even now when the white of her eyes were exposed and her mouth was half opened, but she was still beautiful as usual.

「Who, who did something like this!? Yue! Get a hold of yourself! Just what in the world happened!?!」

Kaori shook Yue's body back and forth, but Yue was only staying limp like an octopus and she didn't react even with how rough she was shaken. 'Rather, perhaps this is because of enemy's sleep magic I wonder!?' Thinking that Kaori glared at the enemies. While her mouth was twitching as though she was enduring something.

And then, while staying vigilant against the surrounding, she straddled Yue and lifted up her hand.

Yue had to be wakened up no matter what. Even if she had to use a heartless method, but in the battlefield it wasn't the place to say naïve things!

——\*PAN-, PAN-, PAN-, BISHII-!\*

Such sounds resounded in the battlefield. Kaori-san's double slap that was thinking about her friend burst on Yue's cheeks!

「Yue! Wake up! You are going to die if you sleep here! Quickly wake up! Come on quickly!」

Kaori's palm was swung with a display of accurate consecutive hits that drew artistic trajectory and hit spot. Yue's cheeks were painted with beautiful slap sound while moving to left and to right. Kaori-san's double slap also followed vaguely rhythmically.

「Qu-ick-ly! Wake-up!」

For some reason her voice sounded lively.....

The Valkyries were looking at each other. They might be feeling bewildered.

One of the enemy they were assaulting fainted by herself when they noticed, and then the other enemy for some reason was dealing additional blows to that enemy.....perhaps that was how it looked like to them. Objectively looking. In that case, it was also natural for them to be bewildered.

But, the next moment, the wrist of Kaori who was dealing out rhythmical slaps was caught *GRAB-!!* forcefully.

「.....Good morning, Kaori. Sayonara, Kaori.」

「Eh?」

At Yue-sama's awakening *buppa*. A flame sphere the size of a pinball materialized in front of Kaori, and the next instant, it exploded grandly. It seemed that the "fireball" magic was super compressed before it was set free which produced directional shockwave.

‘FUWAAAA’ Kaori who was raising such scream while rolling around backward somehow stopped rolling in the posture of all fours. She then lifted up her face and began to let out a lot of cold sweats.

「.....Even though even Hajime has never slapped me. Kaori, is your resolve okay?」

Yue-sama's anger was in the state of piercing the heaven. She was getting so angry that behind her back it felt like there was the illusion of sound effect letters *GOGOGOGO*-.

「I, I don't understand what are you saying here, Yue. Anyway, calm down? Surely we can understand each other if we talk about it.」

「.....Hou. You are saying that you constricting my neck while wretchedly swinging me around, and in the end slapping my face on and on happily, aren't something that you did purposefully?」

「Such thing! That's misunderstanding! I was only trying to protect Yue! And yet, how can you be so cruel saying such——」

「.....If you speak honestly, Yue's best selection. Ten sexy photo of Hajime, I'll prese——」

「Being able to payback for the daily prank, it makes my feeling really refreshed. You even made noise 'higyoh', or 'kyupeh', pupuh」

A blood vein jutted out on Yue's forehead with a snap.

And then,

「.....Today is your death anniversary!」

「Wawah, don't do that! If that flame bullet hit me, I'll totally die!」

「.....Don't worry. I'll absolutely kill you!」

Countless flame bullets were fired from Yue. Every single one was hiding a power that could make anyone comprehended how it could destroy a church.

Kaori who got a bit carried away and got surprised jumped away from that spot and tried to apologize in panic but,

「.....Perish, you eternal stalker woman!」

「Who are you calling a stalker I wonder!? I wonder!?」

Kaori spontaneously talked back hearing the extremely disgracing statement. When she avoided the flame bullets while glaring at Yue, Yue snorted「Fuhn」.

「.....Just notice it already. Of your own true nature. And then, of Hajime's self-sacrificing spirit!」

「Self-sacrificing? What are you say——」

「.....Aa, Kaori who is a stalker, a yandere, and a hidden pervert is really troubling. But if I leave her alone I don't know what she might do, can't be helped, perhaps I should look after her a bit, notice already that true feeling of Hajime!」

「There is no way Hajime-kun is thinking anything like that! Yue is just saying irresponsible thing!」

「.....If that's what you think, then that's must be it. Inside Kaori that is.」

「.....Fufu, Yue. Those words are too much you know? If you apologize now, then I'll forgive you. Come now, apologize. Quickly apologize.」

「.....Eh? Why should I, yandere hidden pervert stalker-san. It's a bit scary, so can you not get nearer than that?」

*snap-* A blood vein emerged on Kaori's forehead. Even though she was showing a wide smile, but an illusion of sound effect *GOGOGOGO-* could be seen behind her.

「Right, I won't get near you at all. Who want to get near a hopeless vampire who is eternally horny. Ninety percent of the inside of your head is crammed with perverted things right? I wonder if perhaps Hajime-kun will notice it sooner or later? That this vampire princess (lol), is just a pervert. Ah, can you not get nearer to me than that? The legal wife (lol) can infect me.」

Toward Kaori who affixed (lol) even until two times at Yue's identity, Yue also smiled widely.

For some reason the Valkyries were flustered. 'What to do, it's a carnage, a carnage you know? Should we stop those two? Who will? You, go stop them already. Eh, no way, if you say that then you go there, you are a Valkyrie right? You are also a Valkyrie.' ——Perhaps they were making conversation like that.

But, the next moment their movement stopped still.

Because an extremely cold blizzard was blowing violently.

Because a dark cloud that was scattering flashes of lightning materialized.

And then,

——SHAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

——GOAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

Because behind Kaori who was smiling while sporting pulsing blood vein, a hannya-san tapping a large war sword on her shoulder materialized!

Because behind Yue who was smiling while sporting pulsing blood vein, a coiling lightning dragon raising a thunderous roar materialized!

The unthinkable supernatural phenomenon that shouldn't exist in this game system caused the Valkyries who were modeled after supernatural existence to tremble while backing away.

What reached the ears of those women was,

「.....KAORI YOU STUPIIIID-」

「.....YUE YOU UIDIOTTTTT-」

In contrast with such delicate insult and intensity, they uncouthly grappled, clawed, and pulled at each other in a delicate scuffle——rather, it was their usual cat fight.

「Fushaah——!」When Yue Punch was unleashed, Kaori growled「Muiiih」even while receiving it with her cheek and her hand pinched on Yue's cheek and pulled. When Yue pulled on Kaori's hair, Kaori would grind her finger on Yue's side, when Yue pulled Kaori's cheek in return, Kaori would throw away Yue's wimple and pulled her hair in return.

Kaori struck cat punches *poka poka* on Yue who was pushed down by the difference in body height. Yue tightly grasped on the butt of such Kaori and when she flinched from that, Yue used the opening to overturn their position and then she launched a double slap on Kaori's relatively large breast as though to say that it was payback for before.

The rolled round and round, grappled on each other, then rolled round and round again and hit each other *poka poka* repeatedly, even though the two were beautiful girl, but they were covered all over with dust with their hair all ruffled. Both Yue and Kaori were wearing one piece type of clothing, so they were in a state where their panty was fully exposed, but they didn't even

bother with that.

Just how long they were planning to do that?

The Valkyries who were somewhat dumbfounded suddenly returned back to their senses. They readied their respective weapon, making metallic sound rang to pull themselves together and galred at the two who were still entangled themselves in a quarrel. They glared.....but, as expected the two were still going 'nyaa—nyaa—'.

The Valkyries looked at each other. They had no expression, but somehow they vaguely looked like they were speaking 'like this we don't even need to surround them to fight isn't it?'.

The women nodded at each other. One woman among them quietly walked forward. It was the Valkyrie carrying a divine spear. Perhaps she was being conscious of the blind spot of the rampaging Kaori and Yue, because sometimes she would circle around in her advance.

And then, she entered the range. The next moment, she stepped forward all of a sudden. She must be trying to skewer the two simultaneously. The sure-kill thrust was unleashed at Yue's back with a terrific speed.

Kaori who was looking up because her chin was pushed from below by Yue's hand couldn't see behind Yue. Yue too, her nose was pinched by Kaori so she couldn't look behind.

Killed.

If the Valkyrie could speak, then she undoubtedly would whisper that.

——\*Bang-, roll roll-\*

The two suddenly flopped to the side and without pause they insulted at each other while rolling over. They stood up again at slight distance away and then continued quarreling as though nothing happened. The spear that should be stabbed for certain kill was wandering vainly at the place where the two were at.

Her Valkyrie comrades were watching. The Valkyrie lancer showed a gesture as though she was clearing her throat, and then she pulled herself together

before assaulting Yue and Kaori once more.

This time she wouldn't cut corner, she would bring down one person with certainty! Her aim was Yue. She would pierce the temporal region of her head——

「The yandere, is you Yue!」

The slap that struck along with such words dealt a clean hit on Yue's cheek. The lance attack passed through right beside Yue's head that was forcefully snapped away.

The Valkyrie hurriedly pulled back her spear. She didn't fail or anything. She was only testing the water a bit. That was just a practice swing. Now this is the sure thing attack! It stabbed toward Kaori's side!

「.....I'm not ill. It's only my dere that is overflowing!」(TN: Dere = affectionate)

Kaori fell from neko damashi that was continued with a tripping up. The sure kill (lol) attack passed through above her head. (TN: Neko damashi = a sumo move, where you clap your hands in front of the opponent's face to surprise them)

「That is what is called yandere! You don't know? Sometimes Shia will subtly flinch away from Yue. Yaa~i, you yandere girl who is feared by your best friend.」

「.....Shia doesn't fear me. There is no way that's true. Shia love me! Kaori yourself, you said that even though you were feared by Shizuku before this. Yaa~i, genuine yandere girl who even make Shizuku whose fortitude is maxed out to get creeped out.」

「Shi, Shizuku-chan isn't scared at me or anything! After all Shizuku-chan will accept any kind of me no matter what!」

「.....Indeed, I won't deny the depth of Shizuku's broad-mindedness. Her figure is already like everyone's mother!」

「That's right! What's more, if I have to say which then she is the type of a gutsy mother of a big family! She is everyone's beloved and reliable mother!」

Yaegashi Shizuku——an active female high school student. She was She was a



busybody who was being dissed in a sense before they knew it. Surely if she was in this place, she would resolve herself to participate in the fight from getting hit by the unexpected stray bullet.

By the way, even while these two were making this conversation, spear was wielded against them many times. The Valkyrie changed the angle of the spear, used feint, she used sweeping attack and the butt of her spear, launching attacks from every position like a surging waves.

But everything was evaded.

What's more, everything was evaded only with extremely natural movement from the scuffle.

Somehow it looked like the Valkyrie lancer was looking like she was going to burst crying anytime.

Perhaps thinking that was pitiful, her Valkyrie comrades surrounded the two and lunged. It was the beautiful friendship of Valkyries.

They wouldn't let their might getting humiliated even further than this by method that looked like gag scene. They wouldn't be ignored!

It was a perfect encirclement. There was no place to escape. It was impossible to dodge.

This time for sure, death in the shape of sword and lance assaulted from all directions toward the two who were in the middle of scuffling.

——\*SHaaAAN-\*

A clear sound resounded. It was a tone that was played by metals scraping each other. The scream of the targeted two people didn't mix there.

Rather,

「-!!!」

「a, a——」

「!？」

The wordless scream, came from the Valkyries.

The Valkyries took distance all at once. However, there were three people

who didn't retreat from there, no, they couldn't retreat. The Valkyrie lancer, and two Valkyrie saber who were carrying beautiful sword.

The reason was simple.

Because the Valkyrie lancer's lance pierced the heart of a Valkyrie who should be her ally, and Kaori's sword was digging into the neck of that Valkyrie lancer.

And then, the one other Valkyrie saber got her beautiful face—more accurately her right eye literally turned into a wind hole. It was a round wind hole that was carbonized black.

Looking closer, in the center of the Valkyries, there were the unmoving figure of Kaori with her iron long sword in an unsheathed state, and the figure of Yue laying down face up between the legs of such Kaori while her fingers were making gun shape could be seen.

The posture of the Valkyrie saber whose right eye was shot through turned limp and she was falling. Without hesitation Kaori smoothly took away that Valkyrie's sword and without pause she handled that sword casually, yet with an astonishingly elegant motion and mowed the neck of the Valkyrie lancer with that stolen sword.

Different from the iron long sword, Kaori's sword attack this time slipped through Valkyrie lancer's neck as though she was cutting butter. Blood didn't spurt out, in exchange red particles whirled while rising to the sky.

「Yep, this is a good sword as expected. Though I'd like it better if it's thicker and bigger.....」

「.....Kaori, lewd. That's why you are going to be called a hidden pervert eternally.」

「No one call me that! Or rather, I don't understand what do you mean by lewd!」

The two resumed their quarrel as though nothing happened. Yue stood up, and Kaori shrewdly stole the sword of the other Valkyrie saber and now she used two sword style. It was at that time the two defeated Valkyries also scattered red particles while disappearing.

The Valkyries were still spreading out as though they were hesitating to resume their attack.

Perhaps their battle program couldn't judge how should they attack after witnessing the offense and defense the two displayed just now.

The two's method to get through the attacks from all direction just now was simple.

Kaori who understood that she wouldn't be unscathed if she honestly fight from the front seeing her physical strength and also sword quality merged her sword with the approaching enemy's sword and twist its trajectory. As the result, the averted sword hit the sword beside it and averted that other sword's trajectory too.

Furthermore, Kaori rotated her body and used her bare hand to avert the lance and caused a friendly fire, by doing that she even evaded the third sword too.

And then, regarding the fourth sword that Kaori couldn't dealt with, it was dealt with by Yue that sniped at the weak point that was commonly shared by living thing using a super compressed flame bullet that was fired from Kaori's blind spot.

The Valkyries combat thinking rejected close combat against the two who in a glance looked like they were full of opening from being absorbed in quarreling with each other. If the visible opening wasn't actually opening, then they would make opening that coincided with their convenience.

The Valkyrie archer and Valkyrie mage launched a pincer attack!

Long range physical attack from arrows that were enveloped with light to increase its destructive power, and long range magic attack using invisible and swift wind blades became countless fangs that were like an intense rain, attacking Yue and Kaori.

Abruptly they rotated. Yue and Kaori were.

The two were facing each other and quarreling until now, but in an instant they executed their steps as though they were even dancing and stood back to back. With a matching elegant turn, golden and black hairs spread out softly like

a dream.

Kaori's swords instantly drew countless trajectories in the air instantly, cutting apart or averting all the flying arrows that were hiding terrifying power.

Countless flame bullets instantly materialized like stars that were floating in the vast night sky, they obeyed Yue's slender finger and flew out like a meteor shower and blew away all the wind blades with the impact of destructive blast.

The two who were standing back to back didn't look like they were concerned at all against any threat that might come from their back. Even without looking back, they believed without doubt that behind them was an absolutely safe area.

The attacks suddenly stopped. The arrows and magic attacks that were fired consecutively ran out.

Right after that, Yue and Kaori danced once more. The sleeves of their one piece clothing elegantly spread out at the same time with their rotation using steps that looked as though they had been arranged beforehand. The two who were dancing as though mirroring each other swung one hand as though inviting the other party for a dance.

Although, it seemed the invitation was for a world of death.

What flew out like a bullet from the swung hands were a flame bullet the size of a pinball and a beautiful sword.

The flame bullet that was hiding a destructive power that rivaled a high class magic pierced the heart of the Valkyrie archer with unerring aim, and the beautiful sword also pierced the heart of the Valkyrie mage.

「Hm~m, what's this? Just as I thought even though they are all the same Valkyrie but there is difference in their defensive power depending on their class but..... Is it just because the sword is powerful I wonder?」

「.....I think that's possible. But, no matter even if it's the enemy's weapon, I don't think that a sword thrown by the spec of a level 1 can easily pierce the armor of that close quarter combat type before. It should be seen that this one is weak against physical attack because of her mage class.」

「The flame bullet that I evaded before was deflected by the armor of the mage class wasn't it? But the flame bullet going through the archer means that even though their armors all look the same, but there is no doubt that this one's defensive power against magic is low.」

Yue and Kaori talked about their analysis result while still standing back to back. They were directing observing gaze toward the two Valkyries who were turning into particles and vanished.

The two remaining Valkyries were trying to take distance slowly.

*snap-*, Yue and Kaori's face turned toward the surviving Valkyries in a flash. It was awfully scary. As the proof, the Valkyries' body twitched seeing their gaze.

「.....Kaori. You noticed?」

「About the level up? Yep, while fighting 'pirurin!' sound rang out several times. Also, announcing sound like 'such and such is liberated!'. Though honestly, I'm wondering if there is option to erase the sound.」

「.....Certainly it's distracting. This will depend on the user's preference, so I'll suggest to Hajime if he can attach on/off function. But, for now——」

「Yep. For now——」

The Valkyries were slo~wly, slo~wly taking distance from Yue and Kaori who were conversing with each other. The moment the two's conversation cut off, the Valkyries turned their body adroitly and flew to the sky.

If it was said in game style, this must be a situation of「Valkyrie is running away!」.

A shadow loomed. On the Valkyries.

What the two Valkyries who quickly looked back saw, were the figures of the villager girl and apprentice sister who took their above with a leap that was higher than even themselves. The two readied overhead a sword that was gleaming from the sunlight and a flame bullet that was like the sun itself while looking down of the Valkyries.

「Let's try it out.」

「.....Trying out.」

They wouldn't let go of the chance to test out their liberated ability.

Yes, if it was said in game style—this is the situation of「Failed to escape from villager girl and apprentice sister!」.

There was no scream of death agony.

However, there were only beautiful red particles dancing toward the sky right outside the village of beginning.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just since when I was deluded that the subtitle of Yue – Kaori arc is one?

Next chapter, 「Welcome, I am the village chief of demon king village desu」

# Arifureta Chapter 254

## Arifureta After II Welcome, I am the Village Chief of Demon King Village

It was a highway with wind blowing gently. The grasses as high as the waist were making rustling sounds. Dusts were gently rolled up to the air by the breeze.

Silhouettes of two people could be seen at the other side of that dust.

One person was a girl with the appearance of a villager girl, while the other one was a girl with the appearance of an apprentice sister. They looked unsteady somehow. Or rather, the apprentice sister was completely carried on the back of the villager girl. Her body was limply leaning on the villager girl's back.

The villager girl too, she was carrying the apprentice sister while using a beautiful sword as replacement for cane. Her shoulders were moving much from her rough breathing「zee zee」, so much so that it sounded like it could be heard from far away. If this area wasn't the highway that connected village to village, then she would be mistaken as a victim that was lost in the middle of mountain.

Her clothing also spurred on such impression. The two of them were tattered. Although the important parts were barely protected, the fringe part of the one piece had become a really original miniskirt state, the sleeves part was also in forced state of no sleeve that if it was seen from the side, the breast part felt a little bit dangerous.

The two's white smooth skin was exposed much, and those exposed parts were dirtied by dust everywhere, the two's hair also felt unkempt.

「.....Uu. I'm really sorry for troubling you, Kaori-san.」(TN: Here Yue's speech sounded like an old woman)

「Yue-san, you promised not to say that right?」

The carried apprentice sister——the previously sister with a screw loose Yue was running on joke material even while being dead tired. The one who was fixing her grip on the slipping off Yue with 'yoisho-' while returning the joke material precisely was of course the village chief's regrettable daughter Kaori.

Now then, why were these two so ragged until they were in this state?

That was caused by all the happening since they were victorious in the battle against the wild Valkyries nearby the village of beginning "AAAAAAA" until the present time. To speak frankly,

——A wild Odin appeared!

——A wild Zeus appeared!

——A wild Susanoo appeared!

——A wild Indra appeared!

——Wild Artemis appeared in great numbers!

——A wild Zoroaster myth appeared in its entirety!

——A wild Odin took along his children and Valkyries and challenged a revenge match!

——A wild Zeus who joined up with a wild Indra appeared!

——A wild Ia! Ia! Masteerr! Fhtag——

The gist could be guessed after seeing how the lineup above was the mob enemy for the surrounding area of the village of beginning. The random pounding of mythologies was coming so extremely without any integrity. Or rather, no matter how much the game was in the operation testing stage with undecided story, the enemy setting was just too noncommittal.

Of course, the enemies' strength was in the level that didn't put shame to their name, they were boasting strength to the degree that the Valkyries looked cute. They were also properly equipped with their characteristic equipments,



Yue and Kaori would surely meet a swift end if they didn't cooperate in the same beat for real.

Regarding the difficult to describe something that came out in the end, both Yue and Kaori didn't really have the memory of their battle against it. When they tried to recall it, they would get a headache as though their instinct was trying to stop them and they couldn't recall it. However, there was only the feeling as though they destroyed it with a deathly desperation remaining inside them.

Just what in the world was that.....

And because of that, after repeating mortal combat after mortal combat, they were now in the verge of exhausting all their energy and willpower— —that was the current state of Yue and Kaori. Yue was in an extreme state of magic power drying up and all the recovery item was also used up, that now she was entrusting herself to Kaori.

After a bit more advancing through the highway with staggering footsteps toward the save point of the next village, while they were making frivolous talk running on joke material with each other to take their mind off from their exhaustion,

「.....Nn? Kaori.」

「Right, something is coming. But, this is.....」

Kaori's walk stopped when she sensed a presence approaching from behind. When she tried to look behind, she could see rising dust cloud from ahead of the highway they had passed through. For a moment Yue and Kaori thought「Another wild god!?', but that thought was immediately proved to be a needless anxiety.

「That's, a house cart.」

「.....Nn」

Just as Kaori said, what was running on the highway toward them was a cart that was pulled by two chestnut horses. The figure of a plump man sitting on the coachman stand holding the rein could be seen.

Just in case Yue got down from Kaori's back and both of them stepped back to the side of the highway to open a path.

Not long after that, the cart arrived at where Yue and Kaori were at. The man on the coachman stand noticed Yue and Kaori and his expression went「Oh?」. The man pulled his rein and decreased the speed, and the cart stopped beside the two.

「My goodness, young ladies, what are you two doing in this kind of place? Although this area is relatively safe, it's still too careless for two young girls to be here you know?」

No ill will could be felt from his voice and expression. The two heard his words which claimed that this area was safe which caused the two to doubt this man's sanity, but if that part was put aside, this man's feeling that was purely feeling strange and also worried that a villager girl and a sister were loitering alone in this highway was conveyed to the two.

Seeing that it didn't seem like a battle event, Yue and Kaori looked and nodded at each other.

「Eerr, I am “AAAAAAA” village's.....village chief's daughter, going toward the next village.」

「Oo, is that so. So you are the “AAAAAAA” village's village chief's regrettable daughter. I am a peddler Sarani Yunker. If you are going to the next village, I am also going toward there right now. If you want, you can come along with me?」  
(TN: The name Sarani here is written in katakana as though it's a foreign name. But in Japanese language 'sarani' could also mean 'even more'. This peddler's name can be read as even more Yunker)

The peddler whose surname was a name they had heard from somewhere was suggesting that kindly. Kaori was somehow feeling regrettable that even the peddler was calling her “regrettable”, but honestly she was really happy that they could travel using house cart here.

「Yue, what to do?」

「.....I think, this is perhaps a support event from the game. We can also use item to recover and change equipment by riding the back cart.」

「There is no problem then. Can we also purchase item while we are at it?」

As the result of the two's discussion, with their need to recover their stamina and mental strength and also with their lack of item, they decided to accept the suggestion of the peddler Sarani to help them. They were also taking advantage of the kind words of peddler Sarani who was smiling kindly while saying「Please, please. Get on the car behind. If there is anything that you want to buy then I'll sell it to you」.

Like that the horse cart departed. For a while the two purchased and used healing item and focused in recovering, and when their vitality returned the two sighed「Fuu~~~~」.

「I wonder if it really is over?」

「.....Nn, I think so. Or rather, I hope that's so. If not, then Hajime is just too savage.」

「Ahaha.....as expected, this cannot be helped isn't it? After all this game device is broken right? Right?」

「.....Nn. Certainly.」

Both of them doubted the sanity of their beloved just for a bit, but they concluded they had reached a checkpoint and they relaxed. And then, Yue who finished purchasing recovery item rummaged around the cart and discovered clothing.

Among the items that were being sold, as expected the clothing that the two could equip was only the sister outfit and villager girl outfit, but it was still a league better compared to their clothing that was in half undressed state. They immediately purchased the clothes and quickly changed.

The two who finished changing clothes and also replenishing item calmed down and sat side by side at the back cart. They threw their legs to dangle outside. The small vibration of the cart that was transmitted to their body felt pleasant.

「.....Come to think of it, Kaori. How far you have been liberated?」

「Ah, now that you say that we were leveling up with staggering momentum

weren't we? My disintegration ability also came back, so I wonder if I have been liberated much? I didn't confirm because there was no leeway though.」

Saying that, Kaori summoned the individual information screen. Yue also summoned her own screen at the same time and they respectively confirmed their usable strength.

=====

Name : Yue-pon

Rank : 75 / 2880 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Sister

Title : Sister Whose Name Mustn't be Mentioned

Skill : No Chant Imagination Configuration All Element Aptitude Combination  
Magic High Speed Magic Power Regeneration

Magic : Flame Magic Wind Magic Light Magic Water Magic Earth Magic Ice  
Magic Lightning Magic Darkness Magic Gravity Magic

※All magic name is omitted

Equipment : A set of apprentice sister outfit R'lyeh Text

Special mention : A criminal on the wanted list

Money : 5,546,030

=====

=====

Name : Kaori

Rank : 72 / 1880 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Villager Girl

Title : What is the Meaning of Villager Girl Name?

Skill : Villager girl-style Twin Large Sword Art Villager girl-style Close Quarter  
Combat Art

Magic : Villager girl-style Body Reinforcement Magic Villager girl-style

Disintegration Magic Villager girl-style Wings Villager girl-style Godspeed

Equipment : A set of villager girl outfit Gram Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi

Special mention : Yue-pon's accomplice

Money : 4,874,005

=====

「.....」

「.....」

There were certainly a lot of places that could be retorted at. Surely it was the fault of the bug. But, there was one point that the two couldn't turn a blind eye at no matter what.

「Yu, Yue? Thi, this is.....」

「.....Wa, wait. Wait, a second-」

Yue who unusually was in her wits' end patted all over her own body and performed a body check. There was nothing particular strange and she let out a faint sigh of relieve. Right after that, Yue's ragged sister outfit that she put above the box beside her was slipping down unnaturally even though there wasn't any particularly noticeable vibration. And then, the falling clothe didn't make light rustling sound, but a thud sound instead.

「.....」

「.....」

Yue and Kaori twitched but they didn't move further, they were staring at the ragged sister clothes. They couldn't avert their gaze from the clothes that was strangely bulged up.

The house cart was going onward while making small vibrations *katakata*. The sister clothe was slowly, little by little sliding off because of the vibration.

What was certain was that when Kaori was carrying Yue on her back, Yue wasn't carrying anything except the clothes she was wearing. And they also didn't steal anything except the legendary swords Kaori stole from the previous battles. And then, when Yue took off her clothes just now and put it on the box,

there was not “thing” or anything that would make that kind of bulge.

*slide, slide* The sister clothes was sliding off matching with the vibration of the horse cart.

Like that, finally, from the gap between the clothes, something like a book spine with strange color was.....

「SOOOOOII-!!」

Yue’s roar gushed! Before that thing that surely, perhaps must not be seen showed up its whole appearance, a kick with the body’s whole strength exploded. The beautiful kicking leg that was performed like a pro soccer athlete also beautifully slammed flying the sister clothes along with the something inside it.

When the two saw it falling into the grasses and they couldn’t see it anymore, they let out a long sigh and resumed their breathing that they were unconsciously holding.

And then, when Yue moved her hand impatiently and confirmed her individual information screen,

=====

Name : Yue-pon

Rank : 75 / 2880 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Sister

Title : Sister Whose Name Mustn’t be Mentioned

Skill : No Chant Imagination Configuration All Element Aptitude Combination  
Magic High Speed Magic Power Regeneration

Magic : Flame Magic Wind Magic Light Magic Water Magic Earth Magic Ice  
Magic Lightning Magic Darkness Magic Gravity Magic

※ All magic name is omitted

Equipment : A set of apprentice sister outfit

Special mention : A criminal on the wanted list

Money : 5,546,030

=====

It became like that.

Yue and Kaori looked at each other's face and nodded shortly to one another.

「.....So, Kaori. You still cannot use healing magic, binding magic, and defensive magic?」

「Yeah. Even though my specialty should be in that field. But, just being able to use disintegration and godspeed is also enough. And the swords I stole are really sharp. Yue, you still only get gravity magic?」

「.....Nn. I pray that next I'll obtain space magic. It's completely different whether I have it or not.」

It seemed they treated as though the “something” that was kicked flying had never existed. Surely it was for the sake of their mental health. They had to protect their SAN status as much as possible.

For a while the two were talking with each other about their respective ability as though trying to forget something and they spent time doing things like confirming their cooperation and so on.

It was unclear how long they were doing that before finally their feeling cleared up and the vibration of the horse cart was inviting sleepiness, when suddenly Yue felt magic power reaction and she reacted.

The reaction source was right nearby. Yes, from the coachman stand. The magic power wasn't directed toward them, but flowing toward somewhere else.

「.....Peddler-san. Just now, what did you do?」

Yue's question caused peddler Sarani to twitch and his plumb body shaking for some reason. And then, he looked back with a smile that looked pasted on his face.

「No, it's really nothing important. Rather than that, it will still take time until the next village. It's better for the two of you to lie down and rest during this time.」

「.....I see.」

Yue was relatively good at reading the heart of someone from their expression. It was because she was a former royalty and she had also met painful experience before. And so, she also immediately understood that peddler Sarani's words weren't honest.

It was really suspicious. Was this not a support event for player.....

Perhaps guessing that doubt of Yue, peddler Sarani's forehead was starting to sweat.

Yue's fixed gaze was piercing peddler Sarani. It was a dreadful fixed gaze. It was a splendid fixed gaze.

Peddler Sarani was starting to sweat like waterfall.

「It's the truth you know? A merchant won't spout lie.」

「.....I see.」

「No, it will really take time. I'm not lying. Hell will freeze over before I'm telling lie.」

「.....I see.」

「.....How about you take a rest?」

「.....I see.」

「.....」

Right now the face of peddler Sarani looked terrible because it was drenched with sweat like a fountain.

As expected, seeing it was getting stranger, Kaori also put her hand on Gram and Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi and strengthened her vigilance, it was at that time,

「.....-!? Kaori!」

「He? ——Kyah!?!」

At the same time when Yue let out that warning voice which was filled with unease, *gin-* hard sound resounded from Kaori's neck. It was the impact voice of



Yue's defensive magic that made it in a hair's breadth time to protect Kaori's neck from the rapidly approaching assassin's blade. The moment Kaori noticed that, she raised a scream while also using Villager girl-style Godspeed to leap out from the cart.

Right away, from the opposite side of the spot where Kaori was just at, a powerfully assaulting blade passed through there.

「Hmm, on top of noticing the invisibility of this me, even the following blow is dodged..... I see, it seems you two cannot be dealt with ordinary means.」

Yue landed lightly beside Kaori who jumped down. It seemed an attack was also launched at Yue simultaneously with the second attack against Kaori. Yue jumped down from the cart to dodge that.

Yue and Kaori were staring dumbfounded and open-mouthed in a da~ze seeing the black shadow who was looking down on them from above the cart. Whether it was the surprise attack that slipped through Kaori's guard, or the flowing consecutive attack, this wasn't the time for being dumbfounded..... however, the character that appeared was just too unexpected.

「Tha, thank god! You finally arrived! It's those two! Those two are the wanted criminal Yue-pon and Kaori! Please capture them quickly!」

「Merchant-dono. You did well using the magic item to contact me. Not only that, you even bring them until here to not let them escape.....my gratitude to your bravery. Leave the rest to me, go on ahead!」

「Yes, may luck be with you!」

It seemed it was something like that. This merchant-sama noticed from the start that Yue-pon and Kaori were criminal, he pretended to not notice while guiding the two toward the boss character (perhaps the mid-boss). It seemed that he was a character for that.

What betrayal. But, thinking really really carefully, these two were wanted criminal so if this was said to be the proper treatment for them then no one could deny that. This was the karma that was following the two to the bitter end.

The two were able to purchase things like recovery item and so on, so to

speaking it was something like the recovery place and save point that was usually provided in front of the boss room. Of course, they couldn't save though.

But, what was more important than such things was regarding the person in front of the two's eyes.

Yes, for some reason this person in black clothes was making a cross with his two hands that were holding short swords while meaninglessly turning his body several times in a stance of half body. The two recognized this person very much. The person was wearing sunglasses, but the two completely recognized him.

「Listen well, criminal Yue-pon! Accomplice Kaori! Now that I'm here, this place is the last stop for you two. Lament your own misfortune while carving this name into your bone! My name is Abyssgate! One of the four heavenly kings of demon king village, and an apprentice doctor! I'm the man who will consign the two of you to oblivion!」

Yes, it was Abyssgate-san desu.

Just what is the four heavenly kings of demon king village, how can an apprentice doctor saying things like "consigning to oblivion", for the time being Kaori put aside those straight-man retort and she whispered into Yue's ear.

「Yue, why is Endou-kun here? Seeing his act, he is in Abyss-san state isn't he? Is this the real thing? Or program?」

「.....Come to think of it, before this Endou was called by Hajime and visited the home, but after a while I remember he rushed out while crying.」

「Ah, I can guess.」

「.....Nn. Endou who said『NAGUMO YOU STUPID IDIOOOOOOOOOT』while exiting the home was then chased by Hajime who was making expression that couldn't endure being there while saying『Sorry! As expected I went too far! Even I got damaged!』.....」

By the way, Abyssgate was a boss like four heavenly kings for Hauria training mode. Of course, it was a program. Though he was constantly in Abyss Lord state.

「Fuh, you two finished your discussion? You can strain your wisdom to the utmost and wield all the strength that you have. If not, the abyss will swallow everything without even any time for you to blink you know?」

A turn. An upward push on the sunglasses. And arms crossed—d!

「.....Endou. How far will he go.」

「I'm thinking once more. Emily-chan who is fighting hard alone is really not half-baked.」

Inside their heart, Yue and Kaori sent their salute with streaming tear toward Abyssgate's lovable lover who surely even now was refining her Hauria correction plan.

Recently, her very act of trying to stop the chuuni with all her might itself became Hauria clan's amusement. Their affection toward Emily was rapidly heightening but.....the pure Emily-chan who was happily saying「Recently, it feels like they became slightly better!」didn't notice it.

With faraway look, Yue and Kaori was recalling Emily who several times before this was coming to play to the home, coming to consult, coming to grumble, coming to consult, coming while crying, and coming to consult.

「Then, it's time for judgment. Kousuke E Abyssgate——here I come!」

The two quickly returned to their senses when they heard those words along with feeling the presence vanishing like a mirage.

It was mostly something that was done in subconscious level. It must be because of Kaori's deep battle experience. When she noticed, she had already turned the unsheathed Ama no Murakumo toward her back.

Instantly, a metallic sound resounded and a light impact ran on Kaori's arm.

「Yaah」

What Kaori unleashed along with that short yell was the horizontal sweep using divine sword Gram that she let out simultaneously with her defense. The attack with its travel time shortened using Godspeed that was let out immediately following the enemy attack normally would become the height of counterattack and bisected the opponent.

However, the attack Kaori unleashed ended up slashing empty air in vain. Not only that, what entered her sight was something black——no, it was Abyssgate's kicking leg. His body leaped midair at the same instant when he attacked and he unleashed a midair spinning kick.

Even when taken aback by the tricky movement, Kaori wasted n time to lower her head and dodged. But, from below that lowered head, the opposite leg of Abyssgate approached.

「Abyss-style Assassination Martial Art – Hi'en Renkyaku(The bird of abyss resurrected three times)」(TN: Swallow Tempered Leg)

Midair he used the spring of upper body and twisted to unleashed three consecutive kicks.

Kaori's eyes opened wide. It was impossible to dodge. But, perhaps the kick would just barely graze her chin. If that happened, in front of Abyssgate who likely had prepared the next move she would be attacked in a state where her brain was shaken.

「——【Wave Cutter】!」

「Muh」

A super compressed water laser flew from the side of Kaori who was bending backward in her attempt to dodge the second kick of Abyssgate. That laser was flying in a straight line toward Abyssgate who was midair, however, it only grazed his side and passed through because his body unnaturally slid to the side.

Looking closer, the steel string that stretched out from Abyssgate's black glove was connecting his torso with a kunai that was stabbed on the ground unnoticed. It seemed, he pulled on the steel string for emergency evasion and moved his body midair.

Abyssgate performed ukemi while landing. Kaori approached such Abyssgate using godspeed and the divine sword Gram lunged in a vertical slash. *GOU-!* The sword that was swung down made the wind roared and mercilessly split Abyssgate into tw——

「Naive」

「Ah!?!」

The moment when Kaori thought so, the Abyssgate who seemed to be split into two divided into two clones and rushed passing through Kaori from her left and right sides.

Yue tried to rapid-fired wind blades in order to snipe the two Abyssgate, but a thrown Kunai approached Yue faster than she could attack. Furthermore, another kunai that had also been thrown unnoticed behind Yue was also flying using its trait as artifact that would return to its owner's position.

Yue who was aimed with a pincer attack from the front and back wasted no time to use gravity magic to fly and dodged the kunais. But, her offense magic was interrupted just like Abyssgate intended and his approach continued unmolested.

「I won't let you!」

「That's why, I told you that's naïve.」

Kaori spread fired silver feathers to one Abyssgate while she tried to strike at the back of the other Abyssgate with her sword, but a clone that suddenly appeared *poof* used its body as shield to block the silver feathers.

And then, Kaori suddenly lost her balance because her ankle was suddenly grasped. Although she at least avoided tumbling down, but she let the two Abyssgate approaching Yue to get away.

When she looked at her foot,

「——Doton – Shin'en Ryuusha」(TN: Earth Escape – Abyss Quicksand)

The figure of Abyssgate who was speaking his technique name with a smug face was underground with only his face and hand protruding out. His hand was firmly grabbing Kaori's ankle. It seemed that he had made a clone hiding underground unnoticed.

Kaori who for some reason was strangely irritated used Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi to slice half the face and arm of Abyssgate like mowing down grass. Abyssgate-san vanished with *puff*. Seeing that was also somewhat aggravating.

The Abyssgate that approached Yue charged from the front into super gravity

space where the gravity was multiplied that Yue laid out to stop the approach. Normally any person that entered the area would be crushed by the pressure and became a stain on the ground.

But, even Abyssgate was a user of gravity magic. His body was instantly clad in black mist and he plunged deeper as though there was nothing in his way.

「.....But, Endou is unable to invoke multiple gravity magic.」

「Correct. That's why I'll do this.」

Abyssgate's capability to neutralize attack of super gravity was something that Yue was aware of. Her aim was that by using gravity magic then Abyssgate would use his own gravity magic that was his most dangerous skill to neutralize her attack, thus sealing that repertoire of his. Yue estimated that she would be able to cope against any other magic and physical attack other than that no matter what he tried to pull.

But, that was only if it was really the case that Abyssgate had the intention to attack Yue directly.

「——Doton – Shin'en Dairyuusha」(TN: Earth Escape – Abyss Great Quicksand)

Abyssgate stabbed his short sword on the ground, at the same time the ground caved-in for about the diameter of ten meter. The ground that was turned into a quicksand was crushed down because of Yue's super gravity space. Her balance crumbled and her legs only sunk down even when she tried to find her balance.

A slight opening was created. The main body of Abyssgate didn't let go of that chance.

A sword flash approached smoothly from behind Yue. She didn't feel any presence. Before she knew it her attention had left the Abyssgate that was attacked with spreading silver feathers. Even though she certainly recognized that there were two Abyssgate approaching her rapidly!

Yue's eyes opened wide. Right now when her space magic was being restrained, she couldn't use the instantaneous space teleportation "Divine Existence".

「This is the e——afuh!?!」

「.....Nnn!?!」

‘Will I get hit with an attack in this kind of place.....’ The moment Yue thought that, a flying Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi cut Yue’s head skin just for a tiny bit while stabbing the Abyssgate behind her.

Abyssgate just barely avoided having his vitals pierced, it was his shoulder that got hit and he got blown away.

Kaori who flew toward Yue with her silver wings unfolded took Yue out from inside the quicksand.

「Are you okay Yue?」

「.....I’m not okay. My head got cut a bit. It was cut by Kaori.」

「I, I’m sorry. The gravity magic is stronger than I thought and the sword shifted. Is your soul affected?」

「.....u. Nothing particular.」

「I’m glaaad. For now I’ll pour restoration medicine okay?」

Yue’s eyes turned a bit teary while both her hands were pressing on her head. Come to think of it, she recalled that in the past when she met Hajime, when she was controlled by a monster Hajime fired without any hesitation and her head skin was also scratched a bit by the bullet.

‘Both Hajime and Kaori are merciless on my head’, Yue leaked out a complaint inside her heart. Although, it was the fact that she was saved so she couldn’t forget to say thanks.

「Nevertheless, this is the first time I fought him but.....Endou-kun, he is really troublesome.」

「.....Nn. He is completely making the best use of his own special characteristic. It’s not just for show that he dealt a wound fighting a serious Hajime.」

Yue and Kaori were watching Abyssgate who was pulling out Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi from his shoulder while quietly talking about their

impression of him at each other.

Both of them would have received lethal attack if they didn't cover for each other.

What was terrifying was his stealth. Even though they were clashing against him right from the front, before they knew it he had abnormally slipped off from their consciousness. It wasn't in the level of presence isolation and the like. It was a divine skill that should even be called as erasure of presence, no, existence. ....It was truly sad that this hereditary trait wasn't something that the person in question wished for.

Abyssgate once said. It was the best he could do to make a single wound on the demon king. That he wasn't even able to win against the wives.

That statement was certainly not mistaken. With the exception like Liliana or Aiko, if they fought seriously, Abyssgate wouldn't be able to win against Yue, or Kaori, or Shia, or Tio, and also against Shizuku even though it was just barely against her.

However, in that statement there were these additional notes.

In the case of Yue, she would win if she bulldozed through using her automatic regeneration.

In the case of Kaori, she would win if she used disintegration ability in apostle mode while ignoring any impact on the surrounding.

In the case of Shia, she would win if she used body hardening and blood manipulation to use the strategy of stabbing each other at the same time.

In the case of Tio, she would win if she used vast range annihilation in black god dragon mode.

In Shizuku's case, she would win if she created a sword world of several hundred black katana in Limit Break state.

Yes, anyone, even the veteran cheat group couldn't fight directly against Abyssgate's stealth tactic and his greatest trump card—attacking in waves using a thousand clones. There was a high possibility that they would be defeated before displaying their power if they didn't use something cheat-like



like blowing away the whole surrounding area in one go or bulldozing through using specs difference.

Therefore, he was the right-hand man of the demon king. Therefore, he nonchalantly got categorized among mankind's strongest class.

The expression of Yue and Kaori who got that fact thrust before them once more was bitter.

Abyssgate faced those two and sneered「Fuh」. He must be wanting to say that this was the beginning of the second round. Clones were materializing. The number was increasing than before. His strength and the painfulness of his speech and act were increasing following the depth of the abyss.

He was really a troublesome boss character.

And so, the two chose to annihilate the whole area.

「Mu? Where are you two going?」

Ahead of the gaze of Abyssgate who was looking up, there were the figures of the flying Kaori and Yue. Their hands were full with the MP recovery medicine that they had purchased by quite a lot.

What materialized at the next moment were five heavenly dragons and innumerable number of silver feathers. In addition, a silver sun and a sun of azure flame materialized overhead.

——He couldn't be defeated without bulldozing through by force. Speaking in reverse, if they were in an environment where bulldozing through was possible, he could be easily defeated.

「.....I'm glad this is a game.」

「You're right.」

The silver feathers and flame bullets for air bombing kept increasing without end. The five heavenly dragons growled while the sun of silver and sun of azure flame were enlarging.

Abyssgate who saw that was,

「No, aren't those a bit no good?」

The next moment, the scene of the end of the century manifested on the ground.

The earth that was plowed by the saturation attack could be mistaken as the scene of hell. The figure of the collapsed Abyssgate smoldering with rising smoke was lying there. He was dispersing into red particles just like an enemy character. It seemed that he was completely knocked out.

Yue and Kaori landed down beside such Abyssgate and they walked near his head to examine the situation.

「.....He is twitching.」

「It's amazing he still has complete limbs even after all that.」

‘If this is in reality then he will be scattered all over the place’, Kaori said such gang-like line with a cute face.

Abyssgate who was still barely conscious because of the game mechanism turned his gaze toward such two and he opened his mouth.

「Ku-ku-ku-, I'm the weakest one even among the four heavenly kings. I'm merely a disgrace of the demon king village.....」

「Eh, you are saying such thing yourself?」

「.....Hajime, brutal.」

Hajime-san who set this up was seriously savage, retorted Yue inside her heart. Surely this was the fault of the bug.

Abyssgate wrung out his last strength and pointed out with a trembling hand.

Yue and Kaori were on guard in case he was planning something at the end, but Abyssgate's fingertip was pointing ahead of the highway.

「If you circle around that forest along the highway, you will be able to see the demon king village.」

It seemed he gave them the road direction.

The hand fell down limply. Abyssgate was vanishing into dust.

「Anyway, let's go there for now.」

「.....Nn」

Both of them started walking. They didn't look back.

About five minutes since they walked following the highway, when they circled the forest, it was just as Abyssgate said, they could see a tranquil village that was surrounded by wooden fence.

It was a small scale village with a calm atmosphere. It had scenery that was fitting for the next village after the village of beginning.

If there wasn't the figures of people in front of the entrance that looked like a lovely arch made from wood.

「.....」

「.....」

Yue and Kaori shared the feeling of 'somehow, I really don't want to go there huuh'. But those people over there were looking here. They were looking awfully intensely here.

Yes, the rabbit eared person leaning on the pillar of lovely wooden arch with arms crossed and face sporting a nihilistic smile for some reason, and a masked pink, and a black dragon who was there for some reason despite the place being a village, and a man riding on the back of that dragon sporting a smile that looked like a demon king, they all were looking really intensely at Yue and Kaori.

For the time being, they tried to approach.

An intense pressure and *GOGOGOGO*- sound were emitted from the man. An atmosphere that gave the skin goosebumps was drifting in the area. The wind of battlefield was flowing viscously. A monstrous presence that wasn't inferior even compared to the real thing. By the point of time one confronted this man, don't mention defeat, that person would instead be given the premonition of death.

This was without a doubt, the last boss. The demon king.

Yue and Kaori who were made to understand that whether they wanted it or

not finally arrived nearby, and the demon king opened his mouth with an expression that looked mocking toward the challengers.

「Welcome, I am the village chief of the demon king village.」

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I watched Sniper: Special Ops.

Seagal-sama.....

Anyway, I got a better opinion of Under Siege and Under Siege 2.

# Arifureta Chapter 255

## Arifureta After II It's All Peachy If You Just Win-!!

The demon king village was a tranquil place that was surrounded with splendid wooden fence. The entrance that depicted a lovely arch could be seen as casually conveying the will 「We greatly welcome other people than villager too」 of the village chief.

As for its scale it was about twice as big as the village of beginning. There might be around three hundred people living there. There was a conspicuously large tower at the middle of the village, a cross was attached at its summit. Surely that was the church. That was Yue and Kaori's destination.

But, they wouldn't be able to reach there that easily. There was one reason for that.

Because the demon king village's village chief-san and four heavenly king-san were standing in their way with a somewhat awesome atmosphere!

「I won't let you two lay your hand on the village. Criminal Yue-pon and accomplice Kaori. You can choose, will you surrender obediently, or get punched flying.」

The village chief who was meaninglessly emitting pressure *GOGOGOGO*- on the back of the gallant black dragon was saying that. It seemed in order to protect the villagers, the chief village was planning to punish the two criminals scheming bad thing right here.

It seemed the village chief of demon king village was treasuring his village and villagers.

The black dragon cried 「Gu~ruru♪」 in agreement looking like she was somewhat having fun. The rabbit eared girl fluttered her rabbit ears *fuaasaa*-,

and the pink ranger.....the pink ranger was standing still without even a twitch. It was as though she was saying 「I want to be a shellfish」.

All of them were in a really motivated state!

Yue stared at the fearlessly grinning village chief and for a moment she showed a gesture as though thinking of something, and a beat later, she rolled up her sleeves completely looking as though she wanted to say 「Just bring it on~」 while returning back a fearless smile.

Seeing Yue walking forward, Kaori stopped her in panic.

「Geez-, Yue. Why are you that belligerent since we came here! There is an option of surrendering here, and by any chance perhaps we will be able to go to the church without fighting isn't it?」

「.....Fuh」

「Just now, why did you laugh? Heey, why did you laugh I wonder? I wonder?」

Kaori's Hannya-san almost came out looking at Yue scornful laugh that was making fun of her, but there she swallowed back her anger with an effort and she cleared her throat while pulling herself together. And then, she faced the village chief and opened her mouth.

「Err, Haji— —not, village chief-san. If we surrender can you let us go to the church? If possible, we don't to fight.....」

For the moment, Kaori attempted to negotiate in accordance with the game's setting but,

「.....Fuh」

「Just now, why did you laugh? Heey, Hajime-kun. Just now, why did you laugh I wonder!?!」

She was laughed at scornfully and made fun of with an expression that was exactly like Yue. Kaori-san was enraged with her forehead sporting a blood vein.

「No negotiation against criminal. Death or Destroy-! That is the international common sense!」

「The village chief of a remote village talking about international common

sense is.....」

Kaori became despondent when she heard the unhesitating declaration of the village chief-san.

「.....Kaori. Stop being so unsightly by trying to negotiate after this late. We are criminal! Blowing up anyone who stand in our way and devoting ourselves to plunder until exhaustion are our duty!」

「I don't think that I'm someone so nasty to the level of a defiant criminal. Or rather, can you stop casually saying "we" to include even me as a criminal I wonder!? After all it's Yue who is the culprit for all the charges isn't it!?」

Kaori's straight-man act was well executed. However, Yue-sama paid it no mind. She took a step forward and held up one hand forward, then her fingertip bent and made a challenging gesture as though to say 'come and get me'.

Ignoring Kaori who was holding her head, the members of demon king village also showed their motivation in respond to the provocation.

But, there, the rabbit eared girl came forward alone.

「Chief-sama. Chief-sama himself doesn't need to be troubled only to keep company bunches of this level. I'll take care of them. Together with pink ranger!」

「!?」

It was the common pattern. For some reason pink ranger turned her head to the rabbit eared girl in a flash with an air as though to say 「Eh, me too!?」 though.

「Hou, not a bad idea. Then I'll leave it to the rabbit ear and pink ranger. Teach them that the nicknames 『Or rather, this girl cannot get hit with bullet though, seriously. This buggy rabbit』 and 『The most wicked urban legend of the empire』aren't just for show.」

「Roger desuu! .....Eh, just now, was I nonchalantly got dissed?」

「.....」

The rabbit ear girl reflexively stopped moving and looked back, while pink ranger was covered with dark cloud absentmindedly as though she was

remembering a black history. The village chief sent a brief glance at such two before the black dragon flew to the sky with him still riding it. It seemed that he would treat himself with being a spectator from up high.

The rabbit ears and pink ranger pulled themselves back together and they each took out a huge war hammer and black katana and they took their stance.

From looking it seemed that pink ranger wasn't motivated, but the strength of these two was the authentic article. From the point of view of Kaori who thoroughly knew that, it made her get cold sweat that they were fighting these two in this condition where they had no number advantage.

Naturally her expression stiffened while she pulled out Gram and Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi.

「These are, powerful enemies.」

No reply came against Kaori's words. In exchange what could be heard was 「Sooi」 a stupid voice of throwing something. What was flying was a super compressed flame bullet the size of a fist. The speed was as fast as a bullet in contrast with that throwing voice.

「How cheeky desuuu——uu?」

The rabbit eared girl must be trying to send it flying with her war hammer attack. The rabbit eared girl faced the flame bullet and launched a horizontal full swing.

But, the flame bullet showed an unexpected movement there. It put on the emergency brakes and the next instant it flew high to the sky.

The rabbit eared girl unconsciously showed an astonished expression wondering 'Just where could she be aiming at?', but right after that, her expression became twitching.

「Eh, ah, wait, Yue!?!」

Kaori's uneasy voice resounded, but leaving that aside, the flame bullet drastically angled down and changed its trajectory even further and it quickly hit the target.

Grand explosive sound reverberated, a terrific fire pillar rose up.



——From a corner of the village

It felt like the time of the world stopped. Both the rabbit eared girl and the pink ranger, and the even the black dragon and the village chief, they were looking at the flame blast behind them with widely opened mouth. Naturally, Kaori was also the same. Screams were resounding from the village.

「.....Fumu. Although this is a game, but even in a boss fight the village isn't turned into immortal object or no entry zone.」

A voice that sounded profoundly understanding, and lovely, and in a certain sense terrifying was resounding in the area excessively clearly.

Kaori who returned to her senses with a 'hah' made a grand straight-man retort without even hiding her convulsing face.

「Wha wha wha wha, what are you doing Yue!? Are you stupid!? Do you want to die!? This sister-san with a screw loose!」

「.....Calm down Kaori. I only blew up a corner of the village a bit.」

「That wasn't a bit! You cannot throw away your ethics just because this is a game you know!? If you don't stop this, I'll get seriously angry here!」

Kaori raised an angry yell 'Ugaa——' that was unlike her, however, Yue shrugged her shoulders as though wanting to say 「good grief this little girl」. A pulsing blood vein emerged on Kaori's forehead. Hannya-san was standing by~.

With a gentle expression, Yue started to explain kindly, carefully, and thoroughly as though she was talking with a dull-witted child.

「.....Are you listening, Kaori? No matter what kind of time and situation it is, it's no good unless you are thinking from the view point of your opponent.」

「At the very least, I understand really well the rage of the villagers who suddenly got bombed.」

Yue-san beautifully ignored Kaori's retort. She pointed her index finger straight up and began lecturing. Kaori was directing a fixed glare that was at the same level of Yue. As for the village chief followed by the four heavenly kings, they were also listening carefully in interest.

「.....Even if it's a demon king that show up in a game, but why is he fighting?

What is his objective?」

「Eh? That's.....if it's normally then it's to conquer the world, something like that? In order to become a ruler is the royal road isn't it?」

「.....Exactly. In order to obstruct that, the hero and his party will try to defeat the demon king. Sometimes they will do illegal entry into civilian's home, they will rummage around as they please, steal, if there is anyone who stand in their way they will murder them even if it's against their fellow human, in a boss fight they will lynch the single opponent with numbers. Under the name of justice! Under the name of justice-! You are mistaken! I am in the right! Because this is justice!」

「That's a terrible prejudice.....but I cannot say anything seeing I cannot completely deny that.」

Perhaps recalling of someone in the past, pink ranger looked up to the sky.

「Eerr, I don't dare to believe this but, if it's for the sake of defeating the village chief of demon king village then doing anything is fine because you are justice——don't tell me that's what you want to say?」

「.....Do you think I'm a hero? How impolite. Cough-. We are off topic, but in other words what I actually want to say is, fighting from the front is not the only way to exterminate the demon king.」

「Sorry, I completely don't get what do you want to say.」

‘You still don't get it.....’, Yue-sama lifted up both her hands like westerners in exasperation. Kaori was a child that had self-control. She unconsciously lifted up her Gram but she immediately lowered it back down.

「.....If you think from the viewpoint of the demon king, the demon king want the world and that's why he will fight even the heinous hero squadron alone. Then, in order to win against the demon king without fighting, you just need to erase his reason for fighting.」

「.....Yue. Right now, I'm feeling so much goosebumps here. My feeling is like someone who have discovered a madness inside their friend here.」

Kaori who was feeling astonished hugged herself with both hands as though

wanting to say that she was looking at a scary person. The rabbit eared girl and pink ranger, and the black dragon were also having the same reaction from hearing this talk. Their expression was like someone who had seen the darkness deep inside the heart of their loved one. Even the village chief-sama was holding his head at his wits end.

Amidst that, Yue created countless explosive super compressed flame bullet while speaking her conclusion with a smug face.

「.....The demon king said. I want the world. In that case, it's fine if the world is just destroyed beforehand.」

See, there wouldn't be any reason to fight anymore after that right?

Yue puffed up her chest 'ahem' with a cute face, but her idea was extremely disturbing. I won't let you conquer the world! Before you can, I will destroy the world first without fail!

Indeed, the village chief of demon king village said it. 'I won't let you two lay your hand on the village'. He fought for that. That was why, if the village was destroyed then he would lose any reason to fight. This was truly a stylish demon king extermination. Crush not the body, but the very purpose itself!

Anyway, first thing first Kaori, rabbit eared girl, pink ranger, and the black dragon, they all simultaneously,

「Yue you demon-!!」

「Yue-san you psychopathhh!!」

「Rather, you are an evil god!」

「The husband is like this, and the wife too!？」

Hurled their straight-man retort.

Yue-sama wouldn't listen to mere words of the rabble. She floated up with gravity magic, made countless exploding super compressed flame bullets floating around her, and she spread out her hands widely.

She was truly overflowing with majesty like a demon king, with a fearless smile on her lips, and clear sadistic glint in her eyes. Like that she said,

「It's all peachy if you just win-!!」

Meteor shower rained down to destroy the world(village).

The rabbit eared girl and pink ranger screamed 'WAAAAAAH' while running around to intercept the flame bullets, and then the black dragon hurriedly participate in the battle. Seeing them like that, it seemed that it was really as expected that if the village which was a protection target was destroyed then it would be the defeat of the village chief's side.

「.....Take this and thi~s, and this this and thi~s♪ The village will perish if you don't try harder you know~. If any of you dodge or charge forward, then I'm sorry but I'll happily use the opening to destroy the village! Fu-fufu~nofu~~♪」

「Yue-san you fieeend! You bruteeee!」

「Aaahm geez-. That's why I don't want to do this~~~」

「Oooi, Goshujin-sama! Thy first wife art rampaging here! Do something about it!」

Flame bullets that were carrying terrific power densely approached like a volley of gatling gun, furthermore every single shot was flying randomly following complicated trajectory. If they dodged then the village would be blown up, if they charged forward and the defense line was broken then the village would instantly return to ash.

If Yue used one hit kill attack, the lightning dragon for example to send flying the rabbit eared girl, during that time pink ranger would rush to bring the battle into close quarter combat, but because Yue understood that she attacked with barrage of bullet.

She was merrily firing around like crazy, but the storm of magic she unleashed was delicate and possessed lethal destructive power. It was an artistic special move.

The village chief was going to join into the battle soon, it was at that time,

「Sto, stop screwiiiiing, AROUN~~~~D!」

「.....Nmii!?!」

The vertical slash of Gram (flat side) from Kaori-san who was flying in

godspeed burst on the crown of Yue's head. The magic dispersed and Yue fell while making a strange cry. Perhaps she bit her tongue because her hands were pressing on her mouth and her eyes became teary while she was rolling around on the ground.

「.....Ka, Kaoriii. What are you doinggg!」

「That's my line. This is too fiendish! Even though this is a game, but this is still too problematic for a human!」

The black dragon glanced at the village chief. Village chief averted his eyes.

Kaori huffed in anger, but even while in that state she carried Yue who was still teary eyed under her arm.

「Even without doing that, we can still go toward the church without fighting! We can enter the village with my godspeed!」

It seemed Kaori planned to breakthrough using super speed. She was determined to shake off the enemies and slipped into the church.

Yue opened her mouth to say something, but Kaori's godspeed was invoked faster than that.

This skill that made it possible to shorten the very time to move from point A to point B itself so the user could move in super speed, if it was in a straight line it could surpass even the speed of railgun bullet.

Against this speed that was beyond the pale of the perception ability of living thing in general, it would be beyond anyone's power to lay their hand on the user without using external aid like magic or artifact, or preparing a special plan beforehand.

Once, even the apostles of that god were unable to even perceive this speed. The cheat of this skill was already proved.....

(Eh, no way-)

(.....Even though I was going to say that it was impossible)

In this world of godspeed, putting aside Yue who was sticking close to Kaori, any outsider should be unable to perceive her.

With the exception of just one person.

Indeed, pink ranger didn't even twitch, the focus of the black dragon's eyes were also still fixed at the spot where Kaori was at before. Though the village chief was looking at far away melancholically, but anyway, he wasn't following Kaori's movement.

But, it was only the gaze of the rabbit eared girl——that was following Kaori.

A chill shuddered through Kaori's body, in that moment the ground under the rabbit eared girl exploded. The rabbit eared girl rapidly approached as though in a frame-by-frame playback!

If this was a race in a straight line where the two started from the same starting point, there was no way for the rabbit eared girl to win against godspeed. But, if it was just cutting into the path of an opponent that was approaching from the opposite side, it wasn't something impossible.

As though to proof that, when Kaori noticed there was a war hammer's hitting surface approaching before her eyes.

「Fuwah!?!」

Kaori unconsciously raised a strange scream while bending backward like a limbo dance to evade the war hammer. The war hammer passed above her head along with the sound as though the air exploded. Kaori's expression was twitching grandly.

But, she dodged. She immediately returned her posture from the limbo dance state and without paused she rushed.....

A shadow loomed above. Obeying the warning her instinct was ringing at her, Kaori leaped to the side using godspeed. If she escaped forward, she judged that surely she would be hit by shockwave from behind and got blown away.

That was the correct move. It was unclear how, but after Kaori dodged using limbo dance she should have taken distance of several meter in an instant with her godspeed, yet the rabbit eared girl who seemed to have catch up swung down her war hammer from behind Kaori.

The impact smashed the ground and the shockwave surged forward like a

tsunami.

It was a bad move for Kaori that her legs unconsciously stopped moving. *DOU-* When she could hear that sound of the ground exploding, the rabbit eared girl was approaching toward her front with a movement that was exactly like an instant teleportation.

(Godspeed——!?)

Kaori evaded while at the same time moving toward the village without pause. Certainly the rabbit eared girl was fast, but now they were side by side. If she could keep rushing forward toward the village like this, she would be able to shake off the rabbit eared girl. Kaori thought that, but the moment her leg stepped forward to advance, she caught sight of an iron ball approaching right from the side toward the position she would be going to and her legs reflexively stopped.

Just from where in the world it came from? Naturally the rabbit eared girl kicked it out almost at the same time when Kaori stepped forward. The iron ball that moved from the explosive leg strength was already the same like a cannon.

It was natural for Kaori to stop moving from the sense of danger, and then, as long as there was just that one moment it was enough for the rabbit eared girl.

(Ah, this is, no good——)

(.....I think it's pointless though.)

She got caught. Kaori who was convinced so resolved herself and she lifted her hand to use Gram as shield. There, Yue whose aura seemed resigned churned her magic power.

The next moment, Kaori and Yue's figure vanished and then materialized a few meter ahead.

It was Yue's instantaneous space teleportation magic "Divine Existence". Actually the skill was liberated after they got the better of Abyssgate. Although, because the skill was only liberated just now, it was affixed with use limitation and the distance it could possibly travel was around 5~7 meter.

This time too they moved to a spot five meter away from the rabbit eared girl

but.....

「Eh, Shia is——」

「-, Divine Existence-」

The rabbit eared girl wasn't at the previous spot, and instantly, a shadow loomed overhead. Yue instantly invoked Divine Existence and teleported further five meter to the side.

And then,

「Whyyy!?!」

The rabbit eared girl-san was right before their eyes. The war hammer was raised up.

「Nnn-, Divine Existencee」

More teleport! However, they were circled by the rabbit eared girl.

Further teleport! But rabbit eared girl was beside them!

Desperate teleport! Failed to escape from rabbit eared girl-san!

Even though they should be teleporting completely randomly, it was as though the opponent understood where would they teleport to right from the start, the distance of five meter was instantly filled and they were circled around!

「Ah, I see, it's Future Sight!?!」

「No? I'm not using it you know?」

Kaori pointed out that the method of calculating their current position was using the rabbit eared girl-san's characteristic magic, but the person herself simply denied that while swinging her war hammer. It was barely dodged using teleport. Although this time there was a slight distance between them, but it didn't change that their path was blocked and they were circled around.

「Then, how do you know our position!?!」

Kaori reflexively asked so, to which the rabbit eared girl-san smiled cheerfully,

「Instinct-!!」



And answered so.

Reacting against a speed that surpassed railgun bullet speed, and calculating the materializing position of instantaneous space teleportation using only instinct before circling around that position.

「.....This is the bugged rabbit's way of doing thing with the bugged rabbit's characteristic after all.」

The eyes of Yue who was saying that tiredly was looking at far away as though she was escaping reality somewhat.

Kaori had never fought Shia directly. She sometimes saw her training, saw her easily dodging Hajime's bullet and had easygoing thought 'how amazing~', but now that she faced her for real she understood well her dangerousness.

Try to imagine this.

A heavily armored tank that possessed a destructive power that was literally a one hit certain death, able to trickily move around with a speed that could dodge even electromagnetically accelerated bullet. In addition, that tank was equipped with automatic repair function, could jump around until the sky, and able to accurately find enemy position whether they were trying to hide or teleport. To say more, a future prediction would automatically activate in respond to an attack that would directly connect to its death, so surprise attack wouldn't work at all.

It was a nightmare.

Even that demon king was made to lament like this, 「I don't want to earnestly fight only against that girl. There is no way to defeat her other than using plan to checkmate her. Or rather, when I accompanied her training before this, Donner's bullet got caught barehanded by her.....now that she doesn't even need to dodge, just what should I do huh」.

By the way, after that training Hajime was improving his artifact's specs bit by bit. A demon king that was desperately increasing his strength because he was cornered by his wife.....it was really surreal.

「.....It's suicidal to do something like fighting Shia and others in this state where our ability is restricted. That's why, I thought to checkmate her while the

game's setting is still in effect. And yet, Kaori you stupiidd」

「Uu. But, Yue was just too much of a fiend, that was why.....」

If it was Yue in full power going all out then she would still manage somehow against Shia. However, right now she was in a state where finally Divine Existence could be used with limit. It was also difficult to declare that the space magic itself was fully usable.

The point was, it was a situation of “level insufficient to clear the stage”.

However, there was no way the enemies would give anymore opening that would let them make an unavoidable attack by taking the village hostage. The enemies weren't that naïve that the same method would work more than once.

‘Is this stalemate.....’

When Kaori was thinking that, she heard a sigh that leaked out from Yue.

「.....I don't want to use this move though.」

「Eh, you still have some kind of plan?」

The reliable Yue-sama. Kaori's eyes shined.

「Uh huh」Yue nodded half-heartedly, however, she was making a really lovely smile in contrast of that. It was a lovely smiling face that was sadistically bright.

「.....Some time ago, Shizuku secretly tried on frilly gothic Lolita clothes.」

「!?」

The sudden words caused pink ranger to move her face in alert toward Yue as though to say 「How did you!?」. Everyone else were directing their gaze to pink ranger as though to say 「Eh, seriously?」.

「.....When it was Shia's turn for washing laundry, she would sniff Hajime's laundry once without fail before putting it inside the washing machine.」

「!?」

The rabbit eared girl's rabbit ears stood up straight as though saying 「How did you!?」. Everyone else were directing their gaze to her as though to say 「Eh, seriously?」.

「.....Recently, Tio was starting to write poem.」

「!？」

The black dragon's eyes opened wide as though to say「How did you?」. Everyone else were directing their gaze to her as though to say「Eh, seriously?」.

Yue smirked broadly while declaring toward the girls who were like that.

「.....I am Yue. The first wife who grasp everything of the wive~s.」

She was implicitly saying, 「If you don't want the happily embarrassing this and that get exposed even further, you understand what should you do, don't you?」.

In that place where dead silence had returned, it was pink ranger who made the first move.

She plucked off her own mask and then threw it away strongly toward the ground. And then, she collapsed all of a sudden.

「Pink ranger received critical hit. Pink ranger died.」

She even said such narration by herself.

The rabbit eared girl who saw that was trembling while raising her voice.

「Uu, Yue-san you cowaaard! Fight fairly and squarely desuu!」

The rabbit eared girl pointed sharply with her finger, in respond to that Yue-sama,

「It's all peachy if you just win-!」

She answered so while puffing up her chest. The rabbit eared girl collapsed spread-eagled on the ground. 「I won't forget this desuuu」Such curse could be heard from her.

Yue's gaze caught the black dragon.

「Nu, nuguu.....」

The black dragon moaned and hesitated of what to do. Toward such black dragon, Yue-sama averted her gaze a bit, and she spoke with her cheeks slightly reddening.

「.....Tio, you was cute. You are really a maiden.」

「Thou read it!? Mine book!?!」

「.....Honestly, I'm sorry. But, before this you have the previous offense of reading my diary as you pleased, so we are even with this.」

「NuguoOOOOOH, it's just so embarrassinggg」

The writhing black dragon then laid upside down and used both her front legs to cover both her eyes and then she stopped moving.

「Wha, what violence of words.....this is terrible.」

Kaori turned a shuddering expression toward her partner. Rather, an uneasy thought 'Does she know something embarrassing about me too?' was descending on her mind.

Yue-sama glanced at Kaori. She smiled pleasantly. Kaori grabbed at Yue while saying「What's the meaning of your smile!?!」, but even when she shook Yue's body back and forth, Yue was only smiling. Kaori's unease was only swelling up instead seeing that smile.

「Aa~, somehow this development is completely different from what I imagined.....but in a sense, perhaps I should say as expected of Yue?」

The village chief-san finally came out. His voice came from the sky sounding like he was exasperated, but also in admiration, with a really speechless expression filled with complicated feeling.

「.....Nn. As expected I cannot fight everyone. It's only natural that I will aim for a victory without fighting. The leftover strength that I can preserve——can be used to fight Hajime to my heart's content.」

「Nn? You want to fight me? I completely thought that you will also target me with verbal attack that I'm really staying on guard here though.」

The village chief-san tilted his head in puzzlement, which in respond Yue grabbed Kaori's hand and she answered.

「.....Nn. This is a rare chance, so a battle for the last. I think it's also fine to test how far can I go in a tag team with Kaori.」

「Eh, Yue?」

Kaori looked at Yue in surprise. Yue turned her gaze toward Kaori and asked 「What do you think?」.

「.....Hmm, I guess. *We also don't need to worry about anything* already, let's go all out for the end!」

「.....Nn!」

Yue and Kaori touched their fist at each other in a display of their motivation. Their words caused the village chief to notice that the two *had noticed* and he made a wry smile.

Seeing Yue and Kaori who looked like they were having fun as though they were going to participate in the event that would be the last enjoyment of the day after this, the village chief started to manipulate the floating display near his hand.

Yue and Kaori were enveloped in gentle light. Next, two large swords materialized in front of Kaori, they stabbed smoothly into the ground. They were a black demon sword and a white holy sword. They were Kaori's exclusive artifacts——【Demon Sword of Circle Calamity Anima Ernte】and 【Holy Sword of Gospel Bel Rexion】.

Yue herself felt her magic power overflowing from her body which became a golden undulation that whirled visibly outside. Her hairs that were fluttering gently and her shining eyes that looked like garnet wordlessly displayed that she was in her perfect state.

「Originally this is a space for training. There is no need for even a shred of reservation or mercy. Well then, let's play a bit grandly before the dinner.」

*jakin* What was taken out with such sound was Donner & Schlag. Their form that was emitting crackling sparks was truly ominous.

「Come, sister with a screw loose, and the village chief's regrettable daughter?」

The provoking words of the demon king village's chief caused the two to have blood vein pulsing on their forehead and,

「「Bring it on-!!」」

They replied with words that also sounded belligerent.

The stage was the sky.

The village chief who was flying around in the air with crimson ripples spreading from him was cornered by the splendid combination of the villager girl who was flying in godspeed with silver wings spread out, and the apprentice sister who had three layers of halo ring behind her and five heavenly dragons obeying her command.

Meteor shower of bullets streamed like a shower in the sky, giving rise to the profuse blooming of flowers of flame blast.

「Oo, Hajime-san is not just using Cross Velt, he even started using Grim Reapers.」

「Everyone is going at it seriously. Even though they understand that they won't die, isn't this a bit too extreme?」

「Sometimes going wild like that art also necessary. After all they couldst not really cut loose in earth.」

Shia and Shizuku and Tio had gathered before anyone knew it. They were watching the battle while sitting on the ground while grasping their knees. They were absentmindedly staring at the battle of the three.

Just as Shizuku said, they wouldn't die in this space, even so the extremely radical battle caused them the spectators to be in suspense with their heart pounding, but.....

They understood from watching.

「.....They look like they are having fun.」

「.....Right.」

Both Yue and Kaori looked like they were really having fun. On top of that, the combination of the two was harmonizing further into godly level. It was as though they were practicing dancing to the same beat for real, which made anyone who watched would want to shout 「Oooh」 in admiration, the two were exhibiting such artistic techniques and tactics one after another.

Actually, from some time ago Tio had been going 「Ooh, amazing! There! Go!」 completely as a spectator.

But, both Shia and Shizuku seemed to be in a slightly different state,

「.....Muu, I will be able to match the rhythm more skillfully there. For Yue-san, doing it like this, like boring inside will be better.」

「.....Yue is also too soft there. In that setting Kaori have the habit of going to the right. Even though if it's me I will be able to do it in the way that makes it easier for Kaori.」

For some reason the two were pouting a bit with an expression that didn't find the show enjoyable. Perhaps they were jealous toward someone. And from their words it could be easily guessed who was the target of their feeling.

Even while there was a fierce battle going on the sky, the voices of 「Kaori you stupiiid~」, or 「Yue you idiooot~」insulting at each other could be heard from below. Each time they found something to be dissatisfied about from each other's movement, they would quarrel with each other, but even that quarrel itself looked like they were having fun somehow.

And then, each time Shia and Shizuku saw that, they would pout 「Muu」 again.

「It's really wonderful that they are getting along well.」

After glancing at Shia and Shizuku, Tio turned her gaze toward Yue and Kaori in the sky. Tio who were looking at both sides in order then whispered with a gentle tone.

A while after that, the showy extreme game continued until the magic power and bullet that were prepared by the setting ran out.

The hazy consciousness surfaced from the pleasant shaking and the voice of their beloved calling their name.

「.....Nnu」

「au?」

Yue who opened her eyes slightly absentmindedly looked at the face of Kaori which was in front of her eyes. Kaori was also staring in a daze at the face of Yue who was in front of her.

「.....I'm sorry, Kaori. I have no interest of that way.」

「That's a terrible misunderstanding. I also don't have an interest of that way. Yue you idiot.」

Perhaps they were slightly half-asleep, it seemed they were thinking that the other was crawling into their bed.

「Don't sleep talk, wake up.」

When their gaze followed the direction of where the voice came from, there was the figure of Hajime looking down at Yue and Kaori there. The two blinked their eyes repeatedly and then when they looked around, they understood that they were in Hajime's underground workshop. Not just Hajime, there were also Shia, Shizuku, and also Tio there.

Hajime laughed a bit while talking to the waking up duo.

「There should be no problem, but both of you, do you feel anything strange in your body?」

「.....Nn. Nothing particular.」

「Yep, I'm also fine here. ....I see, we came back.」

They had returned from the world game back to reality. Kaori who took in that fact let out a sigh of relieve.

「Yeah, that's right. I was surprised you know? When I came home, both of you were sleeping in this kind of place, you two wouldn't wake up, and when I investigated the game was activated.」

「Uu, I'm sorry Hajime-kun. Looks like the game device broke because of our carelessness. When we noticed we were taken in already.」

「Looks like it.」

Hajime shrugged his shoulders to tell her to not mind it. Yue looked over the workshop and asked.



「.....As I thought, only Endo was a program?」

Hajime answered positive to that question.

Actually, Hajime, Shia, Shizuku, and Tio who appeared at the end of the game were the same like Yue and Kaori. They were the real people who were diving into the game.

It seemed Yue and Kaori weren't really conscious of the time, but the time was already evening right now, Hajime who was in the middle of going home accidentally met up with Shizuku who had taken care of her family business and was heading toward the Nagumo residence. The two of them then went home together. Right after that, Tio's group also returned home.

They woken up the droopy Shia who was still sleeping like a log even when the sun had set, searched for Yue and Kaori who weren't anywhere and when they tried looking at the underground workshop, they found the two collapsing on the floor.

When they investigated, it became clear that the game device was malfunctioning and taking in the two.

At that point, it was when the two had finished their series of random encounters and were walking on the highway. At that time Hajime was pretty much able to quickly make the two returned to reality if he wanted but,

「Why didn't you do that then?」

「The two of you looked like you were having a lot of fun. Besides——」

Recently Yue's use of magic (offense magic instead of handy magic) was remarkably few, perhaps it was because of that her trigger of offense magic inside the game became really light.

When Hajime investigated the game log, he saw that Yue destroyed the church right after she entered the game. Hajime thought that perhaps, was she stressed out from living inconspicuously in earth although it didn't show up in her surface? Thinking that this was a chance that was hard to come by, Hajime decided to continue the game so Yue could cut loose once in a while.

To say more,

「About this game device, I'm especially paying attention to its safety. That's why, originally it's impossible for it to absorb the surrounding people by its own just from it falling a bit. And yet, for it to malfunction and get bugged like this——Kaori, you are the cause.」

「Eh!? Me!?!」

「Yes. This is just my guess, but when this device hit you, I think you unconsciously used your disintegration ability at that time. You used it for just an instant, and it was really only a slight activation, but a part of the safety mechanism along with the magic power in it were dispersed because of that.」

「Wa, was that true?」

「Yeah. Even for just an instant but it was still disintegration magic. Even though it was an incident, but you unconsciously activated that kind of atrocious thing, to put it another way your control was sloppy——Kaori, you are too much of a peace idiot.」

「Hauuua!?!」

Hajime's exasperated pointing out caused Kaori to crouch in guilt and shame. Yue poked at her repeatedly while dealing additional blow 「.....Kaori is too loose~, your stomach is also too loosee~」. 「My stomach isn't flabby-」 Kaori objected back in reflex.

And so, in order to disperse Yue's possible stress, and admonished Kaori's peace complacency, Hajime used Abyssgate program in order to buy time while he and the others finished their preparation and dived in inside the game.

「Well, though it seemed that Yue saw through that we weren't program right away.」

「.....Nn. Naturally. A program and the real Hajime, there is no way I'll mistake between the two even just for an instant.」

「Uu, even I noticed it right away.」

By the way, Kaori noticed after she saw Hajime's reaction against Yue's violence. Kaori's expression turned complicated. perhaps she felt vexed of losing against Yue.

Seeing such Kaori, Yue rubbed the salt on the wound once more, Kaori made her rebuttal against that, and then they started going into a fight like usual.

But, there an amused chuckle interrupted them. When the two who were glaring at each other turned their gaze over there, they found the figure of Hajime chuckling with a really pleasant expression looking at them.

「No, really. The two of you get along well huh.」

Even though they were going to start quarrelling for real just now, but why was his impression toward them was like that instead? Yue and Kaori tilted their head in puzzlement, to which Hajime pointed at the hand of the two while saying.

「When you two collapsed, the two of you were hugging each other so strongly as though you two absolutely wouldn't let go of each other. Look, even now you two are holding hand without any sign of letting go.」

「.....Nn?」

「Eh?」

Hearing Hajime pointing out so, Yue and Kaori gazed at their own hand. Indeed, they were tightly grasping each other's hand. What's more it was what was commonly referred to as lover hand holding with how their fingers were interlocked with the other's fingers.

When push came to shove they covered for each other faster than they could think, and when it came into battle they displayed action that was dancing to the same beat, and even when they quarreled they snuggled close to each other naturally.

What could these two be called other than intimate friend? Seen from the view point of a certain demography of people, there were already lily flowers blooming profusely at their background.

‘This is involuntary-!’ As though to say that, the two let go of each other's hand hurriedly, but before the two could speak out any complaint or excuse, the two were pulled backward strongly. At the same time, their face got buried *mofu*- into a soft place.

「Kaori-san, I'll say this in advance, but Yue-san is my Yue-san. I am her number one best friend! Be aware of that, thank-you-ve-ry-muchh! Desuu!!」

「Yue. Don't meddle with my Kaori too much. After all I'm Kaori's number one best friend. Be aware of that, thank-you-ve-ry-muchh!」

Shia and Shizuku sullenly glared at the other with Yue and Kaori who were gasping for breaths from their face getting buried into the voluminous chest of the two were in between them. It seemed they were respectively feeling a bit jealous that their best friend was going to be taken away.

「Nou, Goshujin-sama. While this sight art something commonplace, I'm feeling really alienated here, what shouldst I do?」

「.....Should I step on you?」

「!? This damned Goshujin-sama-. I love thee.」

The underground workshop was somewhat in chaos, but right after that, a new character descended down from the ceiling. A part of the ceiling toppled over suddenly, and a little girl came down smoothly from the upside-down sofa.

「Muuh, leaving out Myuu like this! How unfair nano! It's dinner nano! After eating Myuu will also play that nano!」

The princess of Nagumo family seemed to be helping Remia and Sumire while her papa and others were playing. What a well-behaved daughter.

Urged by Myuu who didn't forget to call them for dinner even while huffing in anger, the decisive battle for the seat of number one best friend ended for the moment. They all climbed up the stair while Yue and Kaori were pacifying Shia and Shizuku respectively.

「Nn? Myuu doesn't go?」

「I'll return by 'pyon-' nano.」

「.....You really like that huh.」

Hajime chuckled while exiting the room.

By the way, what she meant by "pyon" was the shortcut to the living room. If the sofa toppling over was the shortcut to fall into the underground, the 'pyon'

was a mechanism to leap to the living room from the underground. It was like that thing singer used to leap up to the stage in a concert and so on.

The princess of Nagumo family didn't like normality!

Myuu moved to the floor tile where she could 'pyon', and that time she was about to activate the mechanism, *thud* a sound came from deeper inside the workshop.

'Oh?' When Myuu tilted her head and took a look, there she found a book with strange colored front cover.

Myuu took that book with her hand.

「Hm~m, Myuu cannot read this nano..... Well, doesn't matter! Rather than that it's dinner nano!」

Myuu wasn't bothered and jumped into the living room using 'pyon'.

With her hand still carrying the book.

The living room of Nagumo residence was overflowing with liveliness. Yue and Kaori was still quarreling with each other stingingly like always even in the dinner table, however Shia and Shizuku could only see that as the proof of them getting along well and they were blazing with strange rivalry, Shuu and Sumire yelled 「We are home—」, Tio was raising voice of ecstasy from getting stepped on, and the neighbors were startled.

The little adventure of the two love rival(friend) that happened from a little happening ended, and today the common day of Nagumo family ended peacefully and safely too.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, in the middle it felt like I don't understand anymore what I'm writing, but for now the small adventure of Yue & Kaori is over.

Sorry that in the end I put a strange groundwork.

I just put it in for the time being, thinking that someday I might be able to use

it for the material of an extra story, something like that.

Come on, Myuu has the property of being liked by strange existence after all.

By the way, perhaps the material I dropped was a bit unfamiliar, so I'll explain lightly.

- R'lyeh Text

A fictitious grimoire that appeared in Cthulhu Mythos. It might be able to summon something bad. Possibly the reader would be called by something bad.

# Arifureta Chapter 256

## Arifureta After II The Reunion of Monster Friends

AN: Short story. This isn't an introduction for a long arc.

The word count is also few because I'm a bit busy. The story will finish in the next chapter.

As expected, it's impossible to make a long arc with these guys w

---

*zudon*, an impact sound that resounded until the bottom of stomach shook the air.

A thunderous sound and vibration that even felt as though a demon king somewhere had launched a bombardment didn't stop ringing at just once, the sound and impact were occurring in succession.

At the same time, in the rust colored world— in the great desert Guryuen, a large sand pillar rose up and the rolled up sand cloud obstructed the sunlight.

Although, what obstructed the sunlight the most wasn't the sand cloud. If there was a *person* here, they would undoubtedly open their eyes wide and doubted their own sanity, or escaped from reality by convincing themselves that this was a mirage characteristic of the desert.

An object that could cause any person to be like that was dancing in the sky, higher than the sand cloud and locally obstructed the sunlight.

Yes,

「「「GYUOOOOOOOOOO」」」

By the killers of the great desert that were screaming while getting launched up to the air— the sandworms.

Originally, they would lurk underground and detected their prey through sound and vibration, then suddenly leaped out from underground and swallowed their prey into their mouth that was like an excavator. That was sandworm's trait. Their difficulty to be detected and their surprise attack were the greatest target of precaution for people who were going through desert, they were a symbol of terror.

Such killers who wouldn't show their figure above ground except when preying on the prey, why would they now dancing not just above ground but even in the sky.

Of course this wasn't because they had evolved and learned the ability to fly in the sky.

The cause of that was this.

『GO DIEEEEEEEEEEE-』

Higher than the sandworms that were launched up, was an existence that was dashing to the sky. It spoke sharply like a yakuza while it descended with its *rabbit ears* fluttering.

The rear legs that were abnormally developed accelerated each time they kicked on the air, finally it broke the wall of air and transformed into a white cannon shot. It was the kick rabbit that originated from the bottom of abyss—Inaba.

His rush that was jointly using gravity's acceleration, Air Force, and Explosive Ground Shrinker was just like a meteor. There was no way the launched up sandworm had any way to evade, it received Inaba's heel drop kick and the middle of its body burst.

Faster than the rain of blood and flesh, Inaba kicked on the air and rapidly altered his path, without pause he performed forward somersault and pulverized the head of the sandworm that was further below.

When he rushed passed the sandworm midair his body twisted and launched midair roundhouse kick. The fluttering of his rabbit ears due to the breeze of wind was beautiful. But, the result that was brought about was the very definition of gruesome. A shockwave that flew out following the trajectory of



the kick exterminated one sandworm that was beginning to fall.

In addition, when Inaba swung his leg upside down in reverse as though he was break dancing, a slash that should be called as foot sword flew out from there, cutting apart the last sandworm into two.

Inaba who landed on the ground lightly flicked his rabbit ears *fuasah* with his front leg. Right after that, flesh and blood and the corpses of sandworms rained down around him. Inaba was standing with composure in the middle of the squall of flesh and blood.

『Do you think I don't notice? Come out already yeah. If you still has in you the dignity as the lord here.』

By the way, when Inaba-san talked normally, his talk would sound like 「Mokyu, mokyukyu? Ukyu. Mokyu~~kyumokyu」. It was lovely. He is a lovely bunny-chan who in the end of his evolution had his appearance turned into pure white with his round and cute crimson eyes looking moist.

He was able to talk with human language because of the function of one of the ear cuffs attached on his rabbit ear. The ear cuff possessed the skill of “Language Comprehension” and “Telepathy”, using the broadcasting function his words could be conveyed to his surrounding as though he was talking normally.

Of course, the creator was that guy.

The great desert Guryuen returned a silence like calm water at Inaba's questioning. A beat, two beat.....no change appeared even after waiting.

『.....Well, it ain't matter. I too don't really want to bully the weak. I only bought the fight that was sold to me. If you say you gonna tuck your tail and run away, then I won't follow. See ya.』(TN: Inaba's speech is using thick Kansai dialect)

Inaba quickly turned around and began walking toward west.

Right after that, the ground exploded.

The opponent that Inaba called out. It was a deser monster that was emitting especially strong magic power. It was a giant sandworm——to the degree that

the sandworms before this looked like children. It blew up the ground and assaulted Inaba from directly below.

Inaba's figure wasn't there.

There was only the giant body of the sandworm that pushed out until more than a hundred meter instantly, it looked like a tower that suddenly appeared right in the middle of desert.

Was Inaba whose body as a monster was comparatively small swallowed whole in a flash by this sandworm.....

Right after it looked like that,

『Not just your movement, even your instinct is dull huh. This is the end yeah! Lament your own stupidity——pass to the next life ya!』

A black spot was created inside the blazing sun. The true identity of that was obviously, Inaba.

The moment the giant sandworm leaped out, Inaba kicked on its jaw at the same time and flew up high to the sky.

The powerful leg that was swung down along with a piercing yell cut across the pointed up jaw of the sandworm along with an impact, without pause the cut and impact ran until the ground like breaking piled up roof tiles with a punch.

The rabbit ears of Inaba who stepped on the ground went *fuasah* once more.

A beat later, the twitching giant sandworm was cleanly split into two and collapsed to left and right.

『If you want to pick a fight with me, at the very least wait until you can win against the monsters running rampant at the bottom of the abyss's bottom..... hey, you cannot hear me anymore huh.』

Inaba shrugged with his rabbit ears and turned around, this time for sure he aimed toward the western sea and rushed using Multi Ground Shrinker.

『Even so, as I thought the monster on the surface ain't satisfying to fight

yeah. If it's like this, perhaps I should go to the palace even I gotta wait for a bit, so I can fight that cheeky rabbit or Ou-sama again huh.』(TN: Ou-sama = king)

Inaba was letting out her complaining of dissatisfaction while sprinting explosively in a speed where even the surrounding desert looked blurry.

Currently Inaba was separated from her employer and also friend Suzu.

In the first place she became Suzu's subordinate monster was to become stronger. But his wish wouldn't come true in the present-day Japan. Of course, if he actually accompanied Suzu to Japan, he would also be able to do mock battle against Shia or Hajime or others, but as expected there was no way he would be able to fight against them every day with how busy they were.

And so, Inaba was traveling from place to place that had enemy that seemed strong, like the deep part of the northern mountain range and the sea of forest, the interior of great canyon Raisen, the lowest level of abyss, and so on. But for the current Inaba, there was finally no more enemy that could give him a hard battle.

Training, and then growing from that itself was what Inaba was living for. Heightening his martial art and knowing his own limit was exactly his life work.

He wanted to prove that even a monster could reach the height of martial art in the end of hard work, that his kick was able to reach the top of the world.

For Inaba who was such a martial artist, his current situation where he found no battle that could make his blood boil and his flesh danced, where he had to cross through the verge of death, was honestly a really withering situation for him. It was to the degree that his rabbit ears were completely limp compared to usual.

『Boredom and stagnation are exactly the greatest enemy. Yosh, if I cannot find anything after searching for a bit, I'm gonna head to the palace and wait until Ou-sama open the gate. It also has been a long time since I met Suzu-han. If that Ryu person made Suzu-han cry.....I'm gonna split open his head.』

After about a few hours of dry desert sound that fluttered his rabbit ears.

Inaba who crossed the desert with astounding speed finally arrived at the western sea. There was the 【Sea City Erisen】at the coast, but Inaba's

destination wasn't there.

Inaba came here to meet someone. He was going to meet a friend that he suddenly remembered amidst his days where he was starting to feel boredom. 'Come to think of it, I haven't showed up my face to him for long already', he thought.

Inaba took a step forward from the coast. Inaba didn't fall to the sea. Dark red ripple was spreading under his feet, making a firm foothold midair.

Like that Inaba rapidly left toward offshore by walking above the sea.

And then, when he reached a spot where soon it would be hard to even see the coast, Inaba took a really deep breath, and he called loudly at the one he came to meet.

『BO~~~~~SS, LE~~~~~E!!』

The loud telepathic yell spread out like a ripple. The call that was filled with magic power and magnified by artifact would reach the radius of 100 kilometer if it was done seriously.

Inaba focused his rabbit ears for a while to look for any reaction.

And then.....

『DON'T SCREAM, SO LOUDLYYY~~~~!! Which idiot is doing this huhhh!!?』

An angry yell of harsh voice came back. The voice sounded pointlessly dandy, but it contained sullenness as though the voice's owner had just gotten woken up from his sleep by someone screaming into his ear using a megaphone.

『Oo, it reached out just with a yell. My luck is really good yeah.』

A few minutes after waiting while saying such easygoing thing, *plop* what showed up its face out from the sea was a fish with a human face that looked like a middle-aged man——that person (?) Leeman. (TN: The katakana of Leeman can also mean salary man in Japan)

『What's this, ain't this Inaba. I thought it was an idiot from somewhere.』

『Really sorry, boss Lee. I picked the fastest way to find you boss. You were sleeping?』

The two congenially conversed.

Actually, these two were acquainted with each other. It was after the legendary decisive battle was over during the one month before the return to earth. Hajime went to show his face to Leeman and Inaba who accompanied him met Leeman at that time.

As fellow monster who had strong ties with human, especially with Hajime, the two hit it off and since then their relationship grew where they could call each other friend.

Inaba scratched his head while apologizing. In respond to that Leeman splashed around the sea surface while shaking his head.

『I didn't sleep. Recently, the west from here is a bit noisy, so I patrolled and straighten up the idiots who got too rowdy. After all my wife and children cannot feel peaceful because of their noisiness.』

『Nothing beats your family in good health. ....But, acting stupid in the turf of a friend of the godslayer.....those guys really don't value their own life eh. Well, normal monster cannot think anything like that though.』

Inaba sat down on the midair foothold that he created within inches above the sea surface while saying that with his rabbit ears swinging in amusement.

Leeman who was lightly bobbing on the surface beside the foothold was also throwing his gaze in a relaxed gesture in order to enjoy himself in the idle talk with his friend that he finally was reunited with after a while.

『I'm not that much of a big shot. If it's not for Ha-bou's meddlesomeness, my strength is only to the degree where I can command the dweller of sea a bit. I'm just a trivial old man. It's uncomfortable that a lot of people, including you are strangely paying me respect, so stop it.』(TN: Ha-bou, the bou is like calling the other person sonny.)

『That's because boss Lee is Ou-sama's lifesaver after all. It's natural that you were paid respect about that much. As the proof of that, ain't boss got gifted with a lot of artifacts? There was even some human who schemed or got loud tryin' to get their hand on boss's artifacts but got their just deserts in the end, ain't that right?』

Just as Inaba said, the human faced fish Leeman's name was actually relatively well-known among the humans.

After the legendary decisive battle, naturally the historians and poets were making a lot of tales and poems that extolled that godslayer demon king. Amidst all that tales and poems, they identified the true identity of Leeman who Hajime meet during the one month before his return home, the interviewed a certain rabbit eared girl, and then they circulated the conspicuous service of Leeman far and wide.

When Hajime's party was about to get eaten by the monster lurking in the bottom of sea since the ancient time——the Evil Eater, he came running in their predicament, and by himself he bought time and gave them the chance to recover from the hopeless situation.

The historians said. If at that time Leeman didn't come running, the world would lose the mean to oppose the mad god and perhaps the world would perish.

——A human faced fish monster that was also the close friend of the godslayer demon king Leeman

It was recognized as a legend that spread far and wide through the continent.

Leeman let out a deep sigh, however, he then glared sharply at Inaba.

『You are prattling about artifacts or being lifesaver, but you yourself is also outrageous.』

Leeman's gaze turned toward the several ear cuffs fixed on Inaba's rabbit ears. Every single one of those ear cuffs was national treasure class artifact that ought to be managed by the palace, they were Hajime's quality product that currently were becoming super rare legendary artifact in Tortus.

And then above all else, was Inaba's popularity that was surpassing Leeman. After all,

『The only monster that became an ally of the demon king party by his own will, someone who fought through the Holy Precincts——Kicking King Inaba. Whether it was the hundreds of corpse beast soldiers, or the mighty and unequalled monsters of Holy Precincts, they weren't allowed to stand before his

technique, right? Kukukuh』

『Sto, stop it already boss. I didn't do anything big. I only helped a bit so Suzu-han could talk with her friend. I'm the one who really didn't do anything much.』

Looking at Inaba whose rabbit ears folded down powerlessly with a troubled face, Leeman raised a pleasant laugh.

Both of them had the self-awareness that they were monster. Both of them ended up having deep relationship with the savior of mankind through a strange fate, but originally monster was the enemy of mankind. Both of them didn't even have a shred of hostility toward human, but even so, having praise and respect from those humans directed to them made them felt really awkward.

『And, what's your business here?』

Leeman asked to change the mood.

『No, I don't really have any business here y'know. There is no more enemy here that can fight me satisfactorily, so at the next chance I got I'm thinking to go to Ou-sama's place. At that time I won't be able to meet boss for the next while, so I showed up before that.』

『What a diligent guy. Well, thanks. When you meet Ha-bou, tell him I said hi.』

『Got it ya.』

After that Leeman and Inaba talked about the recent happening.

Two monsters getting heated up with old man talk in the middle of nowhere on the ocean. One side was talking with excessively dandy voice, spinning wording that was excessively suggestive, while the other side was using Kansai dialect. Boke & tsukkomi were bursting flowingly in their talk.

In the middle, hearing Inaba who was dissing Shia, Leeman smiled wryly while remonstrating Inaba 「Don't treat the missy like an enemy too much okay」 and so on, the time was flowing while they were getting heated up talking about Shia.

But a little while after that, Leeman-san suddenly muttered 『Nn?』 as though he noticed something and he turned his gaze toward faraway.

『Boss, what's up?』

『.....The sea, is crying.』

It wasn't chuuni. Leeman wanted to say that the residents of sea that weren't sea monster were moving about in fear it seemed.

Inaba's eyes narrowed and he gazed at the sea at the west. Leeman also frowned while nodding.

『.....Just now, I said that at the west it was noisy right? It seemed that it was flowing this way from really far away. I once went to investigate when the sun had set enough, but there wasn't anything particularly strange. But, it was curious.』

『Curious? What is?』

『The monsters straying this way. All of them, they felt like they were scared.』

『Scared..... Is boss sayin' that something is happening at really far away there? And that something made the scared monsters to wander this way, is that it?』

『It's just my guess in the end though.』

It was really suspicious. But, at the same time Inaba's heart leaped. If it was unknown then that was great. If it was a threat then that was even better. Boredom and stagnation was exactly Inaba's greatest enemy.

『Good thing I'm here, boss. The wandering monsters are coming here again right? Bring me along too ya. It's better the more helper there are right? Let's protect the peace of the sea with high spirits yeah.』

『.....Good grief, someone like you. You are talking about peace with that kind of cheerful face? That's just your battle maniac in full force.』

『I ain't a battle maniac. I'm a martial artist. Fighting strong enemy is just what I'm lookin' for. Even if boss don't bring me along, I'm still gonna follow you.』

Leeman who shook his fin as though wanting to say 'good grief' in exasperation turned a glare toward Inaba.

『Can you fight underwater huh? I'm not going to babysit you okay?』



『I cannot fight underwater. But, if they want to kill me, they have to jump out from the sea. I just need to provoke them ya. Besides, look, I look delicious right?』

『You are rabbit after all. Your appearance that is.』

Inaba was laughing ‘ha-ha-ha-ha’, to which Leeman was making an expression that seemed like he was enduring headache as though to say 「I won’t say any more」 while right after that, he let out a powerful telepathy.

That telepathy was to guide the living things in the sea. It was a measure so they wouldn’t be vainly killed by the monsters pouring in from the far western sea, to protect the sea environment (Leeman’s sphere of daily life).

At the same time, an abnormal pressure of fighting spirit was emitted from Inaba. His fighting spirit that was perfectly controlled reached out toward the west.

Inaba grinded his rabbit legs for warm-up while he was making a fearless smile and made his rabbit ears went *fuasah*.

『Come on, let’s go yeah, friend of godslayer.』

『Good grief, can’t be helped. Let’s go already, kicking king of holy precincts.』

Saying that, the two rushed toward the chaotic west.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Recently, I’m thinking that middle-aged old man is nice huh.

Harsh old man, cool old man, absurdly strong old man.

Old man who is unperturbed no matter what happened, and can deal with it like adult.

I want to try to write story with that kind of old men as the main characters someday.

That’s all from Shirakome.

PS

The latest chapter of comic version Arifureta is updated.

Yue is cute. I can see various Yue.

If you are interested it can be seen at the homepage of Overlap-sama, so please try to have a look.

# Arifureta Chapter 257

## Arifureta After II The Monsters, Chasing the Unknown

AN: Even though I'm making good on my words, why do I feel like I'm betraying the expectation.....

---

There were two silhouettes dashing to the western ocean.

Both had strange appearance. Rather they were a bizarre phenomenon.

One was a rabbit running on the sea. More accurately, the rabbit was using dark red ripple spreading midair forming an energy platform as its foothold but because the rabbit was extremely near the sea surface and it was moving with abnormal speed, its dash caused sea spray to rise in its wake as though the sea got split.

But, Inaba whose rabbit ears were going *fuasah fuasah* from the sea breeze was a monster that possessed that kind of characteristic magic, so putting aside the reason of why he was at sea, there was no doubt that this was still within range that could be comprehended.

The problem, was about his companion.

『.....Boss. Isn't that foul play?』

『Shut up. It's convenient so it's fine.』

Inaba glanced aside at his companion——the human faced fish Leeman. His straight-man soul that was welling up the moment Leeman took that out was finally breaking through and leaked out.

*KIIIIIIIIII*- Such unique sound was resounding. Even though Inaba was holding back, but it still granted Leeman the speed to follow Inaba's speed.

The thing's appearance was closely resembling a delta shaped fighter jet. Its

terrifyingly smooth body that was colored with sea camouflage brought the sea resistance to nearly zero. The ripple that was flowing backward was beautiful. The picture of a shark exposing its fangs painted on its prow showed the playfulness of the creator.

There was a spot that seemed to be the cockpit near the center of the ship frame. The inside of that cockpit was filled with water where Leeman was snugly settled there. A part that seemed like the propulsion device was installed at the stern, for a glance it could be seen like the propulsion method of water jet, but what was jetting out from there wasn't water but silver particle. Without a doubt it wasn't normal from that point.

——Small submarine with dual use for water and sky Triana (v.2)

It was the strongest and fastest artifact for open sea that the demon king gifted for his lifesaver (?).

『You are already a sea monster through and through boss. You are flying. You are sparkling. A flying human faced fish, that's just too surreal ya.』

『I told you, shut up. This is more or less a submarine. It can also fly. I am a man of sea.』

Perhaps feeling somewhat awkward, inside the cockpit that was filled with water Leeman-san averted his gaze toward faraway.

By the way, this Leeman's exclusive submarine (?) was linked with Leeman's telepathy, from its activation until its steering could be performed with only Leeman's thought. In addition, a part of Leeman's scales was transformed into living mineral using metamorphosis magic and regeneration magic, those scales themselves were artifact that possessed the function of "Treasure Warehouse".

『I never thought that boss's own body would also get demonically remodeled.....Ou-sama, how terrifying.』

『I already told him that I don't need it. But Ha-bou said『Lee-san is the type to get dragged into something troublesome, so just think of this as something for reducing my worry and accept it』 and requested on me. Even though it was me who was in the receiving side. Good grief, our position is all messed up. If Ha-bou requested me that far, uncle just cannot refuse it.』

‘What else is there other than gratitude that I can show to him huh?’, Leeman shrugged his fins with that thinking looking somewhat troubled.

Inaba shrugged his rabbit ears「Indeed」in agreement. The ear cuffs that were attached on that fluttering rabbit ears were also not something that Inaba asked for, all of them were Hajime’s thoughtfulness for Inaba who was continuing his warrior journey to become strong.

The demon king-sama was comparatively harsh to human, but it seemed he was really kind to his monster comrades.

『By the way, what’s that sparkling things? That ain’t magic power right? Made in earth thing? Somehow I felt absurdly strong power from it though.....』

『Nn? Aa, this thing. I also don’t really get it. A few years ago you see, that chap Ha-bou got lost in different world that isn’t this world or earth. It seemed to be a world of sky and dragon, and this energy seems to come from there. He improved it a lot, and then he said that for this kind of vehicle this thing’s convenience is better than gravity control and improved it only recently.』

『Hohee~, a world of sky and dragon huh.....as expected from Ou-sama. He will go anywhere yeah. As I thought being at Ou-sama’s side will be the most interesting huuh.』

Inaba-san and Leeman-san didn’t know. How the energy of that world was fundamentally limited. How Triana’s energy strangely wasn’t running out at all despite of that. How the cause of that was the “small planet” loaded inside the ship.....

After several years of research, that demon king finally completely grasped one of mankind’s great problems and made it possible to miniaturize and mass produce it!

By the way, the former battleship that was similarly demonically remodeled like Triana had been reborn as an extravagant passenger ship that could fly anywhere whether to the space or the dimension sea, and it had also been unveiled already in front of a certain queen and her group.

At that occasion, the grown up queen-sama was overcame with emotion from her reunion with the demon king-sama and did this and that, then there was a

dispute with the introduced wife~s but.....

With the mediation of the workaholic princess-sama who for some reason seemed to be excessively getting along with the queen-sama, they all managed to avoid further problems.

And then the former classmates who were also boarding the ship and came along together said 「He didn't stop with just having mistress, now he even have local wife!?!」 「How far the demon king is planning to go.....」 with a shudder when they witnessed that.

Now then, Inaba and Leeman were absorbed in their carefree talk while there was something strange happening in the ocean, but the next moment, they withdrew from that place at the same time.

Inaba was making water pillar from the impact of his step. While Leeman took a sharp turn.

——OOOOOOOOOOOO——

The place where Inaba and Leeman were at a moment ago was assaulted from inside the sea by a giant sea snake with its mouth greatly opened just like the sandworm before this.

The jaw closed with a snap in vain without catching any prey. The leaping out giant sea snake monster turned its fierce gaze toward the pre——

『CHESTOOO——!!』

『We got an energetic guy here. Here』

What came flying was a white cannon ball. Inaba's flying kick that accelerated with a sound as though the air was bursting the flank of the sea snake until halfway, snapping that huge body into '<' shape.

The sea snake was going to scream unconsciously, but before it could there was a projectile flying with fire line trailing behind——a small missile that hit its head directly which gave rise to the blooming of flame blast and flesh and blood.

『A hot blooded fellow huh——uoh!?!』

『Chih. What are these guys?』

Inaba was about to land near the sea surface while making his rabbit ears went *fuasah* as usual, but the next moment, a monster that looked like a swordfish fiercely flew out to stab toward him.

Leeman struck using Triana's machine gun and blew it away from the side, but then a lot of monsters of the same type assaulted Leeman.

Inaba's shockwave and extending kick slash turned the monsters into minced meat one after another, Leeman was using telepathy to use the weapon loaded in his submarine——an ultrasonic wave impact and scattered the monsters.

But, Leeman frowned. It was just as his leaked out words said, the monsters' action was obviously abnormal.

There wasn't just swordfish type monster, all kind of monster were attacking toward Inaba and Leeman above the sea surface without balking at their disadvantage.

『Wait, boss! I felt horrible number of reactions with my senses though!? Is this how it always is!?』

『There is no way that's true! This kind of number is the first time! Geez, just what kind of troublesome thing is happening this time.』

Even while Leeman was spitting out his complain, monster types that was related with sea like shark, snake, squid, and so one were appearing in succession.

There would be no way Inaba would fall behind the sea monsters in an air battle. Thinking that it was safe to leave Inaba, Leeman left the front line for a moment and went underwater, there he let out an even bigger sigh.

Inside the sea, it was jumbled with a variety of monsters spiraling up like a fish swarm. Fellow monsters with different species were in a close formation without even killing each other, originally this should be an impossible sight.

In addition, monsters were marching in one after another from the west.

This was like a stampede by sea monsters. A tsunami of monster marching from the west.

『These guys are bad news. If this number pushed in all at once, even Erisen

won't hold although they have Ha-bou's defense mechanism.』

『Monsters marching forward without fightin' each other——this is really, this is a nostalgic phenomenon huuh.』

Inaba was exterminating all monsters that he could possibly attack from above the sea without letting even one getting away, as though to perform one kill per second. He answered at Leeman's telepathy with a voice filled with complicated feeling.

Indeed, it was as though this was the monster army at the legendary decisive battle.

A bad premonition crossed at the back of Inaba and Leeman's mind.

『I don't know what is going on. But, at the very least it's clear what we ought to do right now. Am I wrong?』

In respond to Leeman's question, Inaba's mouth split open into a fearless wide grin.

『I'm not thinking of protecting the human until that much. Yeah but, kuku-. This is a battlefield. This is my battlefield where enemies of all choices are crowding so much. I'll kick them all flying. I'll be the last one standing. If as the result the humans are saved, well, that's fine ya.』

『.....Haa. Got it, got it. I'll just casually take care of the bunches that slip through, so do whatever you like, you damned battle maniac.』

Leeman launched a line of torpedo with an exasperated expression.

When Inaba heard Leeman's words, he laughed in even more good mood.

『Hahha——!! As expected from boss! You get what I'm talkin' about! Well then, sea monsters! Let's decide a bit, just who is the strongest monster yeah! Now, COME AT ME FROM ANYWHERE ANYTIMEE~~~~~E!!』

The war cry of the battle rabbit echoed. It broadcasted to four directions and up and down accompanied with dark red ripple!

——Characteristic magic Dance Battle Frenzy

Originally one monster species should have one characteristic magic. The



characteristic magic of Inaba who was a kick rabbit was “Sky Step”. It was a magic to create foothold midair, moved in high speed, or increased the kicking power, producing shockwave or extending kick slash and so on, it was a characteristic magic that was related with movement and kick attack.

But, under the strange fate, Inaba who achieved a unique evolution later on managed to master several characteristic magic.

One of those skills was “Dance Battle Frenzy”. So to speak it was something like “Provoke” in RPG game. It magnified the hostility of enemy and directed it to the user.

The ripple of provocation that reached until the bottom of sea invited the monsters aiming at the delicious looking rabbit into battle frenzy.

——oOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO

——GAaAAAAAAAAAAAAA

——GIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIII—

Countless roars shook the ocean and burst the sea surface with pressure.

Aiming at Inaba who was intentionally standing near the sea surface, the swarm of monsters spiraled and assaulted all at once.

The sea surface bloated up. It looked like it could be mistaken as a volcano eruption. Right after that, monsters were charging all at once from all directions.

『SHAORAAAAA!!』

Inaba performed a handstand but using his rabbit ears while rotating in high speed to perform roundhouse kick to all directions. The technique that looked like a break dance blew away the surrounding monsters in radial area. The monsters were sent flying like pinball.

A giant shark monster flew out from right below him.

『I’m gonna send you back downnn-』

The rabbit ears went *pyon!*, the recoil made Inaba’s body reversed with a beautiful front midair somersault. A heel drop kick was launched from there.

The head of the leaping out shark split. Next even the sea was split open. The monsters that were within the impact range had their body's inside whipped up and blood vomits scattered around.

『ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-!!』

Monster leaped out and got sent flying, monster leaped out and got sent flying. On the sea surface with Inaba at the center, monsters were flying like machine gun strafing to all direction. They all were turned into sea scraps while skipping on the sea surface *splash, splash* like rock skipping.

Countless tentacles surrounded Inaba from all direction and enveloped him. It was a genuine monster that should be called a Kraken with body length of thirty meter.

『Bring it on-』

From the encirclement of the tentacles, Inaba leaped out——not. He jumped up a bit and then reversed his body upside-down. He kicked on the energy foothold and aimed toward the sea!

Inaba who by his own decision flew into the sea where he would be disadvantaged made a foothold inside the sea and using the skill above “Ground Shrinker” and above “Explosive Ground Shrinker”——the “Ground Shrinker – Divine Piercing Leg”, he forcefully blew away the water resistance inside the sea and passed through beside the Kraken.

The Kraken was trying to turn around with a sluggish movement to chase after his prey but,

『This is my service ya. Your first sky travel since you were bornnn, enjoy it to your heart's content yaah!!』

Inaba kicked. At the Kraken. Along with the sea.

The sea surface undulated. Right after that, *GOU* the sea flew to the sky along with an explosive sound. No, more accurately what was launched up was the kraken along with sea water clinging on it, which caused the hallucination of the sea flying up, but because it was launched up faster than the water could be shaken off, seen from the outset it looked like as though a part of the sea was wholly sent flying to the sky.

——KUEEEEEEEEE~::~~

The kraken's scream was surely something it raised for the first time since it was born.

Aa, the sky is really blue!

『Did you enjoy it? Your life will be enough for the payment ya.』

Oh? Before it knew it at its side a rabbit-san was.....

The kraken's consciousness was blew away to beyond the sky.

『Ooi, Inaba. How long you are going to play there? A lot is also straying here you know? There are also bunches that are ignoring us and going toward Erisen. If you can only finish them off one by one, then I'm going to take care of it okay?』

『Mu? Even though I had especially picked a fight, but it didn't really work? As I thought this is strange huuh. Well fine. In that case I'm going to pick a fight even more seriously yaa!』

From Inaba, a valiant war cry『MUKYUU~::~~!!』 came!

——Characteristic magic Dance Battle Frenzy Derivative Skill “Survival Frenzy Battle”

One of the ear cuffs. This derivative characteristic magic was limitedly generated from the ear cuff's ability that brought strengthening effect from sublimation magic. Its effect was several times the Dance Battle Frenzy, it made the enemy seethed with fighting spirit that made them threw their body into a banquet of battle.

A part of the monsters heading toward Erisen while ignoring Inaba and Leeman who was holding back their invasion underwater changed their route and gathered toward the sea surface right below Inaba.

The monsters were clamoring like carps flooding under water surface demanding food.

『My trump card ya. Eat to your heart's content and then head to the next world.』

Dark red magic power surged. Inaba's pure white fur was starting to be colored with dark red line faintly pulsing.

Inaba kicked on the air and dashed even higher to the sky. Far above the sky he suddenly rolled around. With an upside down posture, he activated "Ground Shrinker – Divine Piercing Leg". Inaba instantly broke through the sound barrier and further rolled around midair. His leg was directed to below——

『Blaze bright red, and burst open』

Just as those words said, Inaba's both legs were being wrapped with hell fire!

——Characteristic magic Myriad Clad Leg

It was the second characteristic magic that Inaba obtained later on. It enchanted Inaba's kick with elemental magic to reinforce his strength while also enchanting the element's characteristic effect.

From really high altitude, while falling down in the speed of sound, with the super heated kick attack Inaba——

『Bla☆st!!』

the enemy!

The sea warped. A moment later, a terrific shockwave blew up the air and sea in circle shape, a fierce heat wave instantly evaporated the sea water.

A temporary crater was created in the sea. It was truly the fall of a meteor.

All the monsters that were near the sea surface were blasted by the shockwave, even the monsters who were quite deep inside the sea had their internal organs crushed by the penetrating impact and they writhed in agony.

Even the monsters that were luckily quite far away and avoided deadly wound, a part of them lost consciousness, or else they lost their will to fight and desperately escaped to the north or west.

The crater of sea that was suddenly created was finally starting to recover its former appearance with the sea water at the surrounding flowing into it. The sea was fiercely undulating in a rampage. Dark red flesh and blood were coloring the whirling sea.

『Fumu. So so I guess.』

The rabbit ears went *fuasah*. Inaba-san whose whole body was dripping wet flew out from inside the sea and then he basked in self-esteem midair.

There,

『This stupid idiot-!!』

『Abeh!?!』

The Triana that Leeman controlled rammed at the back of Inaba's head hard. *gochin*- A painful sound rang out.

『Whether it's Ha-bou or you bastard, I think it's better if both of you will be a bit more considerate to this uncle's safety. I thought I was going to die.』

『Ah.....I, I'm ashamed, boss. Don't tell me, was the submarine broken somewhere!?!』

Inaba's previous dignity vanished without a trace. He immediately became all shook up with trembling rabbit ears. Seeing that Leeman let out a deep sigh and went 'good grief' with his fins.

『Well, I'm fine though. This will make a tsunami like this. Ha-bou was also installing tsunami countermeasure in Erisen so just this much won't be a problem but.....I'm telling you there should be a bit better way of doing thing.』

『.....Well, it's not like that's impossible. But, see, ain't my soul a blazing one? Then the finishing move must be a flame one ain't it?!』

『Who cares.』

Leeman's cold straight-man retort burst. Inaba's rabbit ears withered.

『Well, let's just say it's all right in the end. Everything is mostly taken care of, the rests are also running away.』

『Hm~m, even so, just what in the world happened ya?!』

A stamped of sea monsters. If Inaba and Leeman weren't here, surely Erisen would be attacked. This was something that had never happened before.

『We lack information. But, the scale of this is different compared to the sporadic attack by the "straying monsters" until now. Perhaps we better inform

the humans too about this for now.』

『Guess so. Especially Erisen, because that's Myuu-dono and Remia-dono's birthplace ya.』

‘Anyway, let's go back for now.’ Inaba and Leeman were of the same opinion like that with an exchange of their gaze, however, their monster instinct notified them of “something”. The two turned their gaze to the west at the same time.

『.....What's this?』

『.....I wonder』

From the direction of the open sea far away, there was a small black spot that looked standing out. No matter how they looked, it looked like it was floating in the air.

Inaba and Leeman looked at each other's face and then they advanced toward the black spot while heightening their vigilance.

Before long the thing became clearly visible. It was a mechanical object with the shape of a rectangular pyramid. There was nothing supporting it from below, it was floating still two meter above the sea surface.

『Somehow it look similar with Ou-sama's item huuh.』

『Ha-bou's artifact, is it? But, this is.....』

If talking about a floating mysterious object, what came to mind was the artifact of a certain demon king. But, both Inaba and Leeman didn't assert that. It was only a vague feeling, but their monster instinct sensed that “this thing is different”.

Just like how Inaba and Leeman was observing it, the quietly floating mysterious rectangular pyramid also felt like it was somehow observing Inaba and Leeman.

『Boss. What should we do with this? I'm only guessing, but this might be related with the monsters just now don'tcha think?』

『Must be. Something like this is best if we left it to Ha-bou. Anyway, how about we collect it for now?』

Right after Leeman said “collect”, a change appeared at the mysterious rectangular pyramid.

「――yこrrにともkwp? ――hpお、pg～――rうdEhitobllあ」

Right after it let out that gibberish language, Inaba rabbit ears stood straight from shock, and Leeman’s listless half-opened eyes――it was like that from the start though――looked somewhat surprised. Then the pyramid ignored them and started to move smoothly toward the west.

『Wha, what was that? It talked ya.』

『Chih. Troublesome. It’s making me letting go a bit more of the service time for my family like this.』

The mysterious rectangular pyramid moved away with really high speed.

Inaba’s eyes that were seeing that were gradually getting brighter. That shine was exactly the curiosity to the unknown which exterminated his boredom. He was sensing the presence of strife at the destination where this rectangular pyramid object that was related with the monsters stamped was going.

『My bad boss. I’m――』

『I got it. You are going right? Can’t be helped. I’ll go with you.』

Not letting Inaba finished talking, Leeman consented of accompanying him with an atmosphere that if he was a human this would be where he took a smoke.

『No, it’s better if boss stay behind yeah. This might be dangerous.』

『If it’s really dangerous, then I have to bring back the information of what kind of danger it is. If I let you go alone and you don’t come back, what am I going to do then? If I and you go together, even if we meet danger one of us can hold back the danger while the other escape isn’t that right?』

『No, but still ya, what are you gonna do with your wife and child boss?』

Leeman sent a glance at Inaba who was scratching his head before turning his gaze to the east. Seeing how he was sending magic power to that direction, he must be activating telepathy.

After talking about something for two, three seconds, Leeman's body rocked and the white of his eyes was bared as though he got hit by a shockwave.

『Bo, boss!? What's the matter!? Are you okay!?』

『I, I'm okay. No problem. I only touched my wife's sore spot a bit.』

『Sore spot.....what did you say?』

『No, I told her I'm going out for a bit. I don't know when I'll go home so take care of the rest please. That's all.』

『.....That, even I who don't have a mate think that way of telling her is too insensitive. And, what did boss's wife said?』

『.....Even if I go home, don't think that your room will still be here. This useless husband, something like that.』

『.....As I thought how about going home? Right now.』

Leeman's mouth formed a small grieving smile before saying「Now, let's go. We are going to lose sight of it」and chased after the rectangular pyramid.

It seemed the wife's stock of patience had ran out against the husband's wanderlust. In the end when Leeman went home, would he be welcomed back by his family.....

By the way, Leeman's home was built by hollowing out a rock at the reef area nearby Erisen. It was a splendid home. In a human sense it was unmistakably a stately mansion of a celebrity.

Seeing the back of Leeman who was going ahead, Inaba's expression looked really complicated, but he then shrugged his rabbit ears and chased behind him.

The two monsters advanced forward through the ocean in order to ascertain the unknown object and the unknown something.

Their figures before long vanished at the other side of the horizon.

After that, Inaba and Leeman's whereabouts became unknown for a few years.

Because the two by nature had wanderlust habit, no one were especially



concerned but.....

One day, due to a notice that suddenly arrived, a turmoil that started from the incident this time as the impetus dragged in the demon king family and it developed into a great tumult where hell broke loose.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The story this time is for the extra story that I'll write someday.

For now, I'm thinking that it will be a story where Nagumo family second generation will also show up but.....well, it's still in the future.

The artifact presented to Lee-san.....

This is Lee-san who was once taken out from aquarium by flying cross, so when thinking that now he became able to control that by himself, it's normal isn't it? It's surreal though.

Inaba's sure kill move.

Everyone, did you recall that person from One Piece?

But, Shirakome wrote by imagining that person from D-Gray. I like the scene of Falling Technique 「Iron Shaco」.

Twin tail is also not different then rabbit ears. Both are justice.

# Arifureta Chapter 258

## Arifureta After II You-, You Are Calling Yourself a Samurai Like That!?

Evening. The time after school when the light of the sun was starting to be dyed orange bit by bit.

In a place a slight distance away from the school building, there was the spirited yells of the students resounding.

That place was a building that was separately built from the gymnasium and was exclusively used for martial arts type club activity. The students were calling the building as dojo building. Clubs like kendo, judo, karate, aikido, jeet kune do, ninjutsu, naginata, kodachi two sword style, wrestling, boxing, and so on did their activity here, its spaciousness was more than the gymnasium with three floor in total, the completion of the building was really rare even for a private school.

People said, that it was the result of the hobby of the first generation board chairman surging out.....

At the place in the first floor of that dojo building that was allocated for the kendo club, unique spirited yells that sounded a bit different from other club were resounding. Surely, most likely, the club members were yelling 「MEE—NN」, but even when the yell went well 「eE—NN」, when it went bad 「EAAAAAHNH」, and if things didn't go well 「ENDEEEEEERR」. Like that it became an hour of mishearing. (TN: In kendo, the athlete would usually used 'men' in their yell)

Of course, that was the result of the gushing out fighting spirit.

Though about this kendo club, they were showered with a lot of attention

from the karate club, judo club, and aikido club that were also allocated the first floor as the place for their club activity. It wasn't something blatant, but there were quite a lot of glances flying toward the kendo club.

The cause of course wasn't those yells, but a beautiful girl with a trademark of a black hair ponytail.

The excellent style that could be seen clearly even across the loose kendo uniform and the dignified atmosphere that also gave off kindness. She was someone who even before her disappearance was evaluated as a composed girl, but now she appeared like an adult woman from where a core far stronger than before could be felt from her.

「Haa~. Yaegashi-san, she is seriously amazing. I wonder if I should join kendo club even after this late.」

「What are you gonna do even if you join huh. Rather, if you try to do something, you are gonna get done in by her seriously scary boyfriend you know?」

「Right right. Taking glances from afar is just right toward that kind of person.」

The target of the glancing looks——Yeagashi Shizuku. When a boy of the judo club who was taking glances at her was whispering ecstatically, his friends retorted with expression and voice that were filled with resignation.

If one looked around, it could be somehow understood that even the karate club and aikido club were also making that kind of conversation. The extraordinary mystery of her one year disappearance and her atmosphere that changed for some reason were raising her charm and degree of attention by a lot.

「Aah, sheesh. How irritating. Even though the match will be soon.」

「Really. If I remember correctly, the karate club will also have their match next month though..... They are lacking spirit.」

When one member of the female kendo club grumbled that with a frown, another member also showed her agreement while wiping her sweat.

It was at that timing Shizuku came with a drink in one hand and an apologetic

expression on her face.

「What should I say.....I'm sorry. As I thought, isn't it better if I don't come here so much? I'm also not a club member anyway.」

「Eh!? Wai-, that's not it! We weren't saying that with that kind of meaning!」

「Yep yep! The bad one are those guys who aren't concentrating at their training, it's not Shizuku-chan's fault!」

「Or rather, we are the one begging you to come here, so you don't need to be that considerate I'm telling you!」

「That's right, Onee-sama! If Onee-sama like it, I'll ambush those peeping bastards later today from the darkness!」

Shizuku had quit the kendo club after her return to school. That was because her physical ability and kendo skill had become cheat level from her experience in another world.

She was literally unbeatable by anyone if she didn't hold back. Shizuku judged that if she faced students who were seriously putting their heart into kendo and participated passionately in a match, and won when she wasn't serious while holding back, she would only bring harm to those students, and that was why she resigned from the club.

However, the club members who thought that Shizuku who returned to school would naturally also returned to the club wanted to somehow stop Shizuku from leaving the club, however, their persuasion ended up in vain and Shizuku still wouldn't return, that being the case, they consulted the club adviser and created a position of "manager that could also coach the members" to keep Shizuku in the club.

Long story short, 'it's fine even if you aren't a member, if you have time then come playing here while also coaching!' it was something like that.

Shizuku was tearfully pleaded at by her juniors, and clung at by her friends of the same age as though they were konaki jijii, and even the seniors who already retired from the club were wordlessly pressuring her everyday with their sad gaze.

Regardless of how the society and also the students' parents were vaguely keeping distance from the "returnees", Shizuku's comrades from the kendo club who tried to maintain their connection with her as though to say 「Who gives a damn about something like that!」 made Shizuku felt bashful and tickled.

In the end it was Shizuku who yielded and like that she was coming to coach especially in the days before a competition.

Thinking that it would be terrible if such Shizuku stopped coming because she was considerate of her surrounding, the female club members simultaneously gathered toward Shizuku who was looking apologetic.

It was also because they were simply fond of Shizuku, but it was also because Shizuku's coaching was actually fruitful, the students who received her coaching were without a doubt growing in skill. At the following month the qualifier for the national kendo meet would start, so the kendo female students didn't want to let go of the greatest coach that was Shizuku for that reason too.

「Hm~m, I guess. It will be irresponsible for me to stop helping midway in this kind of period isn't it? That's why, stop it with the ambush when it's dark. Also, it will make me happy if you can also stop calling me Onee-sama.」

「No way-. Onee-sama is disqualifying me as your stepsister(soul sister)!?」

Kohai-chan staggered with an expression of despair. The kohai-chan's friends of the same grade supported her 「Get a hold of yourself!」 「Hang in there!」. Furthermore, it seemed that all the juniors here were "soul sister". The soul sisters multiplied while Shizuku wasn't looking..... Consider there are thirty in the dark if you see one in the open! (TN: Japanese's saying that if you see one cockroach, you better consider there are thirty that you aren't seeing. And kohai mean junior.)

The soul sisters were looking at Shizuku. Their moist eyes were pleading, 'please grant mercy to our comrade soul sister who is connected by the bond of soul-'.

「.....Geez, it's fine if you call me Onee-sama, that's why don't look at me with those eyes.....」

It was always the Onee-sama who gave in. The crumbling kohai-chan

recovered her posture with a bizarre movement like a video being rewound. Perhaps these girls were already something beyond stepsister already.

When the practice that was fairly hard even with those things happening was over, all the female club members other than Shizuku were dead tired while changing clothes in the changing room. At that time a club member asked something that had been asked almost every time.

「Then Shizuku. When will you return back to club?」

「No, that's why, I told you already I won't.」

While ignoring with all her strength how the moment she undressed from her kendo uniform the bloodshot gazes of all the kouhai-chan were stabbing all over her body, Shizuku replied to the question of her friend of the same grade with a wry smile.

「But still, even though you are that strong. You were the champion all those years even when you were in middle school and also in the first year.」

「It's really a waste.」

Because Shizuku showed up in practice to give them guidance, the club members were satisfied to a certain degree just from being able to be together with Shizuku. However, purely as a kendo practitioner, knowing the skill of Shizuku (only to the extent of common sense), they felt it was really a “waste” no matter what that she didn't participate in competition.

Shizuku's wry smile deepened while she quickly wore her clothes to hide her body. All the kouhai-chan leaked out 「Chih」 from clicking their tongue.

「I'm already satisfied enough with kendo. Besides, even though I stop doing kendo, I'm still continuing kenjutsu. Rather, right now I'm busy with that, about various things.」(TN: Kenjutsu = sword art)

Shizuku couldn't say that it was because she now knew the truth about her family.

However, getting suspicious about various things from hearing that “various things” part was how girl worked.

「Various things, is it? I see, it must be something like trying to have your

boyfriend getting recognized by your family.」

「I won't hand over my daughter as long as you cannot win against me! Something like that?」

「Ah, so it's as I thought, Nagumo-kun is training in the dojo of Shizuku's family then.」

It seemed such rumor was spreading. The eyes of the fellow club members in the same grade were shining bright with curiosity.

「And, recently, what's going on with the boyfriend in the rumor?」

「Our classrooms are separated after all, so it's hard to get any information. Or rather, Shizuku, are you okay? You aren't two-timed? From what I heard other than Kaori-chan, he is also getting served by other amazing members right?」

Concern could be glanced at inside their curiosity. The woman relationship of the man who Shizuku got close to wasn't normal at all, and it was a well known fact in this school. Someone who was laying his hand on two extraordinarily beautiful transfer students, was even getting served by Kaori who should be Shizuku's best friend, and he was even knitting love relationship with their important friend Shizuku.....the kendo club members weren't holding a good feeling about such thing.

「Thank you for worrying about me. But I'm fine. Kaori, and also Yue and Shia, they are important people for me, and we are staying at his side fully comprehending how it look like. Though it's certainly not something commonplace. But, it can't be helped.」

The thing about a person in love was the loser, and Shizuku's happy expression without even a shred of bitterness in it, and how she spoke fondly of her love as though showing it off, while all these also happened every time, the expression of the club members still turned speechless every time.

Incidentally, there were sounds of grinding teeth *grit grit grit grit*- ringing. Everyone tried to not bother about it, but of course the source of the sounds were from all the kouhai-chan. Dark conversations which would make one wanted to retort 'You guys, just what kind of secret society this is huh' like 「As expected, we have to ambush that man in the dark is.....」, or 「However, several

people already had the table turned on them.....」, or 「We need to draw up something, some kind of new strategy.....」, and so on were secretly spoken among them.

「Well, if Shizu said that it's fine, then it's not also our place to say anything.....」

「Just what is so great from Nagumo?」

Almost all the club members had finished changing, but there was no sign of the girls talk ending even while they were putting their appearance in order. This was something usual.

The cheeks of the questioned Shizuku faintly blushed red. It was a cute expression that she had never showed even once before her disappearance. The club members' expression turned even more complicated because whether they wanted it or not they were made to realize that was how serious her feeling toward Hajime was.

Several of the kohai-chan were starting to beat up their fist onto a doll they took out from somewhere. *zudon, зудон* The punches were making unpleasantly nice sound. Those were wonderful punches that would make anyone wondered if they were more talented in clenching their fist rather than swinging shinai. (TN: Shinai = bamboo sword used in kendo)

「Even if you ask that.....there is a lot.」

「If you are forced to give one example?」

「uu.....like, how he always protect me at all times, I guess.」

Shizuku's answer that she spoke while acting bashful made her friends of the same grade said 「Aa~」 sounding like they understood but also didn't understand.

When speaking about Yaegashi Shizuku, she was “onee-sama” for all the kouhai-chan. For other girls, she was a reliable knight-sama that would protect them. Even for the boys, they evaluated her as a gallant beauty that would somehow manage by herself no matter in what kind of situation.

It was difficult for the boys and girls at the same grade to hold impression



toward Shizuku as a target to be protected. After all she was actually an owner of specs far superior than all of them.

But, people who were especially close to Shizuku knew that Shizuku liked cute things and her personality was really girly. The female club members of kendo club were included in those close people category.

Therefore, they understood what Shizuku said. Although they absolutely didn't want to understand the disgusting man who wouldn't see Shizuku as his only one.

「Really, just what in the world happened while you disappeared? From everything before this, I thought that Shizuku might go out with Amanogawa-kun.」

Several girls looked startled hearing that question and they turned their gaze toward the girl who said it.

Asking the “returnees” about what happened during the time they disappeared was considered as taboo right now based on their tacit understanding. At the beginning, everyone was really curious about that and kept asking, but even through the commotion in the society and abrupt quieting down, the answer of the “returnees” was always the same, and because that answer sounded preposterous, a recognition that the topic was “something that mustn't be asked” was spreading.

Shizuku was firmly aware of the atmosphere that was containing slight nervousness while speaking an answer that was unchanging from before.

「I already said it before this right? We adventured in another world, and fought the underlings of an evil god.」

「「「「「.....」」」」」

Sure enough, the schoolmates of the same grade were at loss for words in hesitation of what should they say. All the kouhai-chan were staring at Shizuku with worried gaze that looked vaguely pained.

‘It depends on you whether to believe it or not.....’ Shizuku’s relationship with the kendo club members were a bit too close for her to say that. She didn’t want to deal with them the same like how she dealt with mass media,

government officials, and outsiders who were only curious. Even if what she spoke was the unvarnished truth itself.

And so, Shizuku winked playfully and added her words.

「Also, I punched Kouki until he cried and apologized. Kouki who lost some teeth with his face swollen all over while sobbing ‘I’m sorry, I’m reflecting, I won’t do it anymore’ was really a sight you know?」

「Ooou.....that’s really.....」

「I, is that, true?」

「Just what happened there. I’m absurdly curious here!」

The small tension from before vanished somewhere. The female club members started going ‘kya-kya’. What kind of situation that would make that perfect superhuman number one handsome boy in the school to apologize while crying? And then, what was the circumstance that would make the caring and gentle Shizuku to be that angry? Their girl’s indefatigable love delusion power was tickled to rise up high.

Shizuku was calming down her exited friends while,

「This is also about Kouki’s embarrassing past, so I cannot speak the detail but.....at the very least, when I wished for help from the bottom of my heart, the one who responded to that wasn’t Kouki, it was always——Hajime at those times.」

Shizuku was saying such suggestive thing with intensely charming expression looking like a dreaming girl, or perhaps more like an adult woman who knew what was the meaning of love. Even her friends who were the same sex unconsciously felt their heart jumped seeing that expression.

This time, a different silence descended. The expression of the female club members was somewhat dazed, as though they were charmed by Shizuku. There was ‘buhah’ sound. It was the sound of the feeling that thought about Onee-sama spurting out from the nose of kouhai-chan.

Shizuku who noticed the situation around her looked down in embarrassment from her own words and she attempted to change the topic.

「Ra, rather than that, the preliminary next month. Do your best you all. Everyone has shockingly become strong, so I'm looking forward not just at the group match, but also the individual match. Our kendo club will dominate the top ranking of the individual competition.」

「That's quite the pressure on us though.」

The figure of Shizuku who was plainly changing the topic while busily finishing her preparation for going home with bright red ears made the female club members to look at each other's face and exchanged small smile. And then, following their friend who had become far cuter compare to before she disappeared, they finished their girls talk.

Next month.

Shizuku's figure could be seen at the spectator seat at the second floor of the joint gymnasium of a large city at the neighboring town.

Below the kendo club of her school was competing ruthlessly against the kendo club of other school. The loud yells that were filled with fighting spirit, and the sound of shinai striking the opponent, and then the cheering voices were echoing inside the spacious gymnasium.

「Our kendo club is strong huh. Especially the girls. Shizuku's influence on them is tremendous.」

Hajime who came together with Shizuku to watch whispered that with an admiring expression. Hajime personally wasn't interested with kendo match, but today was Shizuku's turn for the "holiday of just two people", so Hajime accompanied Shizuku in the form like rooting date (?).

The competition had progressed almost to the end, the group competition left only the final, and the members of the group competition were also mostly undefeated through all the matches until that stage.

Even in the individual competition, the third place had already clinched by a student of their school, Shizuku's schoolmate was also going out to the final match that would start after this. Even all the kouhai-chan won their first match without anyone losing, that was why this was actually something big.

「This is the fruit of their hard work.」

Shizuku said that not only from being humble but also because she really thought so. But, Hajime tilted his head and objected.

「Is that so? Sometimes my ears picked up words that sounded like 『Onee-sama is watching! With the title of soul sister in the line, I cannot show anything unsightly!』 though. It feels like it's only our kendo club whose morale is in different level.」

「.....The, they are all cute kohai aren't they.」

「Cute, huh. After they looked at you Shizuku, they then looked at me and a lot of them were making yakuza face that seemed to say 『Sitting beside Onee-sama with a smug face like it's only natural-. You bastard-. I'MMA KILL YOUUUUUUUUUU-』 though..... I think it's not a face a girl should make you know? Look there, that girl's opponent, she is trembling even before the match begin.」

「.....」

Onee-sama averted her gaze.

But, her averted gaze suddenly met the eyes of another. The final of the individual competition would begin after this, but the opponent athlete was looking at Shizuku. The person was already wearing the protector mask, so it wasn't like their eyes were exactly meeting, but it was clear that the person was focusing on Shizuku.

That was how strong the emotion that was filling that gaze. In addition, if pushed to say, it wasn't a positive emotion like the respectful and affectionate gaze of the soul sisters, but the opposite——an emotion of denial.

(That build.....also that school.....)

The referee called out to the athletes and the opponent athlete's strong gaze moved away from Shizuku. Shizuku tilted her head and pondered whether she had done something, but she couldn't think of anything.

The match began while she was doing that.

At that moment,

「OOOOOOOOOOOOOH!!」

The gymnasium shook. It was a roar so loud that made one hallucinated so. The loud yell of fighting spirit surged and electrified the skin. The audience seat became deathly silent.

Right after that, a sharp sound *paan-* rang.

While everyone was dazed, the referee suddenly returned to his sense with a 'hah' and gave his verdict 「Clean hit」. Yes, in just an instant, Shizuku's friend who was unmistakably top class even within the school got one point taken from her. (TN: Here the referee said 'Men ari', which mean a clean hit on the face I guess. Tell me if anyone know a better translation for it.)

Both sides immediately returned to their original position and then the match resumed. A loud yell of fighting spirit surged once more.

This time Shizuku's friend barely blocked the vertical slash from above aiming at her mask protector. However, that one attack must possessed sharpness and weight that didn't betray its appearance. The blocking shinai almost fell off from the hands holding it.

Without overlooking that opening, the opponent athlete began to hammer in with a flowing motion. Shizuku's friend was also a top class as expected that she continued to defend only just barely, but the opening she showed at the beginning became a big shackle that made her unable to stop the consecutive attacks, she wasn't able to return even a single counterstrike.

「Oi oi, that girl, is she really a girl?」

「He, hey. That's just too rude.」

The opponent athlete that was cornering the athlete of their school with an intense pressure caused Hajime to reflexively say such thing, which was chided by Shizuku in respond even while her cheeks were twitching.

Indeed, the yelling voice sounded deep, and the volume could even shake the gymnasium, it was really unthinkable that such voice came from a girl.

In addition, the body build of the opponent athlete was also out of norm. Her height must be over 180 cm. Her big boned body that could be clearly seen

even across the protector was just like a heavy weight class judoka, muscle fibers were jutting out from both her hands that were holding shinai.

Looking objectively, that body build was something splendid that would make anyone couldn't help but ask 'that's really a high school girl?'.

While Hajime was blinking in surprise and Shizuku was drawing out her memory regarding the opponent athlete, the match showed the end.

Finally the athlete of their school couldn't endure the fierce attack, and the moment her shinai strayed away, *pashiiin* such clear striking sound rang along with the shinai striking the mask protector.

Shizuku was looking worriedly at her friend who was standing still looking dumbfounded. When the referee urged on the girl she seemed to return to her senses and bowed once before quietly returning to her own area. She took off her mask and clenched her fist tightly in frustration with her faced still looking down.

The kendo club members gathered around her one after another and talked to her.

「She got dealt with a bad match there. If the opponent was merely pushing on with brute force the would be able to still manage somehow but.....」

「Yes. Indeed, the opponent.....isn't simply like that. But, why is she in the qualifier here.....」

It seemed Shizuku knew something about the opponent athlete.

「Nn? Looks like they are quarreling there. Is it all right there?」

「Eh?」

Shizuku who was pondering something returned her attention to the match venue from Hajime's words, and there certainly the opponent athlete just now seemed to be in some kind of argument with the female club members of her school.

「.....What, is she your acquaintance just as I thought? I'm hearing Shizuku's name mentioned from there.」

「As, as I thought it looks like she has some kind of business with me.」

Hajime's inhuman ear wasn't as amazing as the rabbit ear of the rabbit clan, but it had really high performance in its hearing ability. Using that, he could hear that it seemed the opponent player was questioning the female club members about why Shizuku didn't appear in the competition.

The female club members looked really nervous against the really dangerous atmosphere, but when they saw the opponent athlete who still hadn't taken off her face protector lowered her voice tone and asked if by any chance Shizuku was seriously injured, they calmed down a bit and managed to somehow answer.

But even though they now could answer back, there wasn't a lot that they could say. It seemed they told the opponent that Shizuku simply quit kendo club because of personal reason and not because of injury or anything.

Surely the female club members were thinking that this person was an acquaintance of Shizuku who was a regular at the national meet, and she was worried why Shizuku didn't participate in the competition. They said to her that Shizuku wasn't injured so there was no need to worry, however, the opponent athlete then showed an unexpected reaction.

She suddenly took off her mask as though tearing it off, and then her gaze turned toward Shizuku with a glint as though saying that she would kill her. No matter how anyone looked, that expression was of anger, like a volcano in the verge of erupting. It was also an appearance with extreme intensity.

Hajime unconsciously got reminded of a certain guy haunting a certain clothes store in the other world to the degree he put himself on guard.

The square features, thick eyebrows and beastly eyes, large nose split chin, they were all impressive.

After the opponent athlete glared at Shizuku, she moved looking like she was going toward her. The female club members who guessed that tried to stop her, but she pushed them aside and moved to exit the venue.

Feeling the dangerous atmosphere, even the teammates of the opponent athlete came to stop her, but perhaps she already had lost all her cool that she couldn't even hear their words. She was advancing while dragging her teammates clinging on her body with her.

「.....Looks like she couldn't get talked with unless I go there. I'll head there for a bit.」

「Okay. Just in case, I'll be nearby.」

Hajime also stood up following Shizuku who stood up from her seat.

No matter how abnormally big the body build that person had, it was impossible for a high school girl of the present day Japan to do anything at Shizuku.

However, what could hurt a person wasn't just simply violence. Looking from the other party's abnormal state, she might throw "words" that could hurt Shizuku.

Words were magic. Depending on the situation, it could be greatly powerful even compared to the highest level of magic from another world.

From the standpoint of a "returnee", they already heard a lot of inconsiderate words until now, if they could finish this business without hearing anything from the other party then that would be the best.

Because Shizuku possessed a strong heart she could endure a lot more than most people, but because of that her heart was easy to be wounded. Therefore, depending on the situation, Hajime was prepared to release "Pressure" that would make the other party fainted while foaming on their mouth without any hesitation.

The demon king-sama was increasingly getting indulgent toward his relatives since he returned back to earth.

「Err, I'll really be fine you know? That's why, don't do anything too reckless okay?」

「.....I'll consider it optimistically.」

The extremely unreliable words of the overprotective Hajime tickled Shizuku and also troubled her.

Like that, when the two got down to the first floor and approached the entrance toward the venue, the aforementioned opponent athlete appeared while dragging behind her teammates and Shizuku's friends.



Even the tumult around her that was trying to stop was only trivial matter. With a look that caused a hallucination as though the Fudou Myouou had descended, the opponent athlete ran her gaze fiercely and caught the appearance of Shizuku. (TN: Fudou Myouou = Acala; Acalanatha Vidya-rajā; The Immovable, a manifestation of Mahavairocana)

While somewhat desperate yells like 「Run awaayy! Shizukuu, super run awayyyyyy!」, or 「Onee-sama! Please leave this place to me and go on ahead!」 could be heard from the female club members, the female opponent who was emitting an intensity that even resembled Ashura.....

「Yaegashiii! You-, you are calling yourself a samurai like that!?!」

Said such thing with unexpectedly cute voice that would make anyone wondered just what with the war cry at the middle of the match.

Anyway,

「I'm not a samurai.」

Toward the girl who surely was at the same grade with her, Shizuku returned back words of correction with a serious face and polite language.

---

Shizuku component was insufficient, so I wrote her just now.

When this is over, I'm thinking if I should write the 'Kouki get summoned too muchh'.

When I saw the thought column or the messages, unexpectedly there are a lot who said they want to read it, Shirakome who when flattered will indulgently get on board, as expected, feel like doing it.

But seeee, this is Kouki after allll. Anxiety whether I'm going to have fun writing it is coming and going...

But when I write, there is also the feeling of wanting to write properly too.....

If the writing of the 'get summoned too muchhh' arc feel like it become slovenly, surely I will be revived if I can receive yell 'Shirakomeeee get a hold of yourself!' from you all.

Please take care of me.

# Arifureta Chapter 259

## Arifureta After II Is This Grudge, Ought to be Left Uncleared Like This-

Dead silence filled the lobby. The cheering for other match and other voices came in from the match venue, but even with all those noises it felt like silence had visited this place, it must be the fault of the atmosphere that was brought about by the two high school girls staring at each other.

“You are calling yourself a samurai” “I’m not a samurai” It was only those words. It wasn’t a conversation that high school girls would generally make, but the atmosphere of the two was too serious to call it a joke.

The asking side even now was exhaling out wild breath that was accompanied with vapor from her mouth, with an atmosphere where it was as though her bloodshot eyes might even emitted mysterious beam, while the replying side wasn’t even making an astonished expression that said「Just what is this girl saying?」, rather a desperation of「You think I’ll let anyone attach anymore strange attribute on me more than this! I’m not a samurai, believe it!」 could be peeked at from the gap of her expression.

「I’ll change how I said it. You, you are calling yourself a kendoka like that!？」

The kendo girl who boasted a huge body frame where people who seemed to be her kendo club teammates and Shizuku’s friends from kendo club were still sticking on her, was raising an angry yell with a cute anime voice just like before. The gap between the voice and the Fudou Myouou face was terrific.

The first thing Shizuku did was to let out a sigh of relieve while stroking her chest hearing she was entered into a category that wasn’t that strange for an active high school girl to be in while showing a perplexed expression at the indignation of the Fudou Myouou girl.

「I don't understand what do you mean by "like that" but.....at the very least, right now I'm not even in kendo club, so I cannot say that I'm a kendoka.」

「-, then, it's as I thought, you are saying that you resigned? You are not just taking absent?」

Her aura of anger was still unchanged, but the Fudou Myouou girl asked with an expression that somewhat feeling shocked.

「Yes, I have formally resigned, and I also don't have plan of coming back.」

「.....I know that you encountered a serious incident. Is that the cause? I heard that you aren't injured, but do you have a circumstance that make you unable to return?」

*grit* There was such sound. It was the sound of Fudou Myouou girl clenching her fist tightly. The kouhai-chan that was clinging on that arm to stop the girl stared still at that fist while her expression was starting to go pale. Her tear gland looked like it would burst crying anytime.

「No. Both my mind and body are healthy. It's not that I "cannot" return, but I "won't" return. That's what I decided.」

「-, Yaegashiii, you are-, -.....wha, what is, your reason?」

Kouhai-chan's arms were repelled away! By the inflating arm muscle! Kouhai-chan fell on her butt and she trembled all over! The friends of Shizuku, and also the teammates of the Fudou Myouou girl too, they were seeing the vision of the girl's rage aura and shivered in fear!

The Fudou Myouou girl desperately repressed the something that was overflowing out from inside herself and tried her best to be calm. Hearing that question, Shizuku scratched on her cheek awkwardly while deliberating of how to answer.

If she said her reason honestly, it would be because in the world of kendo there was already no one that could become her opponent, because the specs she obtained in another world was a foul play, those were the reasons but.....

By no meant she could say those things just like that. If she said such thing, perhaps Fudou Myouou would really descent to this world for real.

Now then, how to answer so that the matter could be settled peacefully.....

Shizuku didn't even need five second to ruminate.

But, it seemed that little time instead gave the other party a conclusion.

「.....I see. I get it. I didn't want to believe it, because I thought that there is no way that Yaegashi would, but——it's because you got a man aren't you.」

「Eh? Ah, no, it's not like——」

Shizuku noticed that the gaze of the Fudou Myouou girl turned toward behind her and she tried to say something.

But, before she could the Fudou Myouou girl threw a gaze that glinted with murderous brutality!

Not only the kendo girls right nearby, even the kendo boys and officials who became curious onlookers from afar were trembling violently altogether!

「Aaa?」

「-!?!」

Hajime-san's glint reversal!!

What was overflowing out from those shrinking pupils was exactly madness! It caused everyone to feel shiver and their body locked up thinking「Those eyes, those are absolutely the eyes of a murderer aren't they!?!」. That thing over there was a demon wearing the skin of a high school boy!

The Fudou Myouou girl quietly returned her gaze to Shizuku.

That thing was no good. That was something that a human must not got involved with no matter what. The instinct of Fudou Myouou girl-chan that made that judgment wasn't mistaken.

Now, let's get a fresh start.

「It's because you got a man aren't you!」

「For now, wait a little bit okay. ....Hajime, stop with the glaring. She is getting teary eyed, and several people collapsed already while foaming in the mouth. Look, like my kouhai over there.」

Hajime-san was looking.

When Shizuku looked back across her shoulder and asked Hajime to stop with a wry smile, Hajime obediently settled down his ghastly aura. He folded his arms once more and also closed his eyes. His atmosphere was turning back to a quiet one. The madness had left. Everyone's SAN value was protected!

Shizuku's friends let out whispers of gratitude「Shizuku is goddess」. Also, it seemed the legend of the school's two great goddess would increase. In a bit of different meaning than before.

「So, you are ignoring me. You are telling me that someone like me is not even worthy to be your opponent is it?」

「Err, you look like you are going to burst into tear anytime now you know? I won't ignore you or anything, so don't force yourself to progress the talk and wipe your.....」

「Are you pitying me!?!」

Looks like she was already in a state that couldn't withdraw back anymore. The rage that she harbored toward Shizuku for some reason and the glint reversal that a normal high school girl shouldn't get exposed at for their whole life seemed to cause her mind to be really at her wits end.

Shizuku was opening her mouth to calm down Fudou-chan who was picking a quarrel with that teary eyes while still emitting her great intensity, but the heated up Fudou-chan raised her voice angrily as though to drown out Shizuku's voice.

「I, in order to win against you! I'm giving it my all until now only for that! Whether it's in the middle school, or at the first year of high school, I was undefeated! Except against you! You were the one who always became the champion at the tournament! Even though defeating that you is my only objective, and yet!」

Angry voice, was it really? Her intensity caused the people there to feel that it was like that, but for Shizuku, she was somehow getting the impression that the girl looked like she was clinging to something, or perhaps as though she was lamenting because she understood that what she wanted was forever out of

her reach.

「When you disappeared, I despaired at that time! I even thought for a moment to stop with kendo-. I transferred here was also because I thought, that if I do kendo at the district where you were at, then perhaps my feeling will cleared up a bit! That's why, when you came back, I was really happy, and yet.....and yet, for you to abandon your sword just for a man!」

「Fudou-san, you.....」

Surprisingly, the Fudou Myouou girl-chan's surname seemed to be “Fudou”. What a match. Shizuku's whisper was faint and it only reached Hajime, but that Hajime was obviously shocked while saying 「What, did you say.....don't tell me, her name is Myouou?」.

By the way, the girl's name was Fudou Akari. Hajime, consolation price for you. (TN: Fudou Myouou = 不動明王, Fudou Akari = 不動明)

Fudou-chan rapidly walked toward Shizuku, leaving behind her teammates and Shizuku's friend who had let go of her due to her menacing aura.

And then, she pointed with a snap at Shizuku's nose, and with a blazing straightforward gaze she,

「Fight me, Yaegashi Shizuku. If you forget about me because you think it's something trivial, then I'll make you remember. This kendo of mine that you don't pay any attention to, I'll beat it into your body to teach you how formidable it is!」

.....「」

Yes, it was a war declaration.

Of course, Shizuku had no duty or responsibility to accept. The other party was considering her as rival, feeling furious, and tried to drag her into a fight were all by her own convenience. It was completely unrelated with Shizuku.

But,

(——It will be easier if I can just ignore this, huh)

That was exactly why Yaegashi Shizuku couldn't ignore this. Her personality wasn't one that would let her choose the easy path.

To say nothing of how the other party didn't come at her with ill will, and seeing how the other party somehow gave her an impression as though she was struggling with her own heart, made her unable to refuse even more.

Therefore,

「I accept your challenge.」

「-」

She accepted that challenge gallantly. The sharp glint of the other party, was replied back with a deep gaze that looked like a tranquil forest.

That voice wasn't raised to be louder or displayed intense pressure by any means. However, the heavy and deep "something" inside that voice definitely made Fudou to unconsciously hitched her voice.

Seeing that, Shizuku's look loosened up slightly.

「However, is it fine with you if we do it at another day? Today, I'm coming to cheer for my friends. I cannot prioritize you here. Fudou-san yourself, you aren't planning to come at me by neglecting your teammates correct?」

「That's.....」

Lured by Shizuku's gaze, Fudou looked back behind her. Over there, there were her kendo club teammates staring worriedly at her. A small groan 「u」 leaked out from Fudou. It seemed she recovered her senses for a bit after seeing her teammates.

Her expression turned awkward and apologetic, and then she shook her head as though to shake off something.

Shizuku handed over a scrap of paper to such Fudou.

「This is, my contact address. Please contact me when you have made your preparation.」

「.....I get it.」

Fudou received the paper and she directed a gaze that seemed to want to say something to Shizuku for a bit, but then she returned toward her teammates.

「Shizuku! Are you okay?」

「Onee-sama, are you safe!?!」

Shizuku's friends gathered one after another and talked to her with worried voice. Even the kouhai-chan who had revived before anyone knew also rushed toward Shizuku after glaring angrily at the back of Fudou.

「I'm fine, I'm fine. That person also isn't someone that I didn't know at all.」

「But, something like a match at another day..... This is something personal right? It will be against that kind of person you know? Won't it be dangerous?」

「I thought she is a barbarian from somewhere. That was scaryyy. The saying of a face like a demon must refer to that kind of person. Shizuku, I'm telling you this for your own good, it's better to report this to the teacher or someone.」

「That's right, Onee-sama! There is no way that lump of muscles is a normal high school girl! That must be a monster wearing the skin of a high school girl! Onee-sama is going to get eaten by that!」

It appeared that everyone was scared against Fudou's pressure and threatening aura, and also her atrocious body build and face. At the same time, they also seemed to be feeling great unease with this personal match where the rule might be ignored without the supervision of any adult. It was clear that they were worrying for Shizuku from the bottom of their heart.

But, the one in question here, Shizuku was instead frowning slightly.

She was happy that they were worried for her. But, if they then deprecated Fudou's appearance and body build because of that, even if that was because of the consequence of the girl's own action, what they were saying still wasn't something that felt good to hear.

Not noticing the inside of Shizuku's heart, Shizuku's friends were getting heated up even further with their criticism toward Fudou because seen from the side, it looked like Shizuku was only getting completely dragged into this.

「.....Everyone, I'm happy that you all are worried for me, but putting aside criticizing her action, saying those kind of words toward her appearance that she was born with is a bit too much.」

「Eh, ah, Shizuku.....」



「So, sorry.....」

The friends came back to their senses suddenly when they saw Shizuku's expression that was enduring distress. Shizuku's friends knew about the personality of the busybody Shizuku who would feel other people's pain as though it was her own pain. At the same time, Shizuku's expression also vaguely looked sad seeing them speaking maliciously behind someone's back.

「Hmmm. I'll say it one more time, thank you for getting worried for me. But she——Fudou-san, just like I said just now, she isn't someone that I didn't know. I almost never talked directly with her, but she is a regular in the national tournament, and I had faced against her several times. She is definitely not a bad person.」

Shizuku said that with a wry smile, and then 「Besides.....」 she continued while glancing behind across her shoulder.

「Even in the unlikely chance that she took unfair method, I'll still be fine. After all a scary person is watching over me.」

「Aa.....」

「.....」

It went without saying who was it that Shizuku referred to. Shizuku's friends looked at Hajime who was quietly standing behind Shizuku, and then they trembled when Hajime glanced back at them in respond. Kouhai-chan was hiding by using all the senpai as shield.

「Indeed, it will be fine if Nagumo is there, I think?」

「In a sense, it feels like the person just now is still better.」

「Onee-sama, that person, he absolutely had killed two or three people before. You should rethink about going out with——hiihn!?!」

To tell the truth, Shizuku's friends were thinking 「Is it really okay going out with that kind of boyfriend」, but when they recalled the glint and aura from before that resembled a devilish homicide, they couldn't think that Hajime would be really unreliable. Rather, they imagined the end of the person who tried to lay their hand on Shizuku and even felt sympathy welling up toward

such person.

On top of that, if they knew that kouhai-chan's words was actually an underestimation.....

For some reason kouhai-chan felt an intense chill in the middle of speaking and she screamed. When Shizuku's friends looked at Hajime all at once,

「What did you say, about Shizuku and me?」

「You two are really a match made in heavennn! I'm sorry, please forgive me! Don't kill me!」

Kouhai-chan was trembling like a baby deer that was only just born. Shizuku's friends were getting cold sweat seeing Hajime's faint smile.

「Hajime. Don't bully my kouhai like that.」

「I'm not bullying her. It's punishment. It's including the admonition toward her usual strange gathering and action.」

「Do it moderately please?」

「Ou」

Shizuku's friends thought. 'Nagumo is totally a bad news', and then 'Shizuku is a wild beast tamer'. By the way, for some reason there was a person who blushed slightly hearing Hajime saying 'punishment' with his S face though.....

For the sake of friendship, Shizuku pretended to not notice that.

After that, Shizuku's friends returned to the venue in order to participate in the remaining matches, while Shizuku and also Hajime returned to the audience seat. Shizuku's friends splendidly took the championship in the group competition.

At the closing party, Hajime read the mood and he didn't participate in it. For some reason they were all getting excited talking about Hajime which caused Shizuku to be blushing from start to end. After the closing party, Hajime expressly came to pick up Shizuku which caused Shizuku's friends to get excited again and Shizuku's face got even redder from their banter. Such things happened.

Shizuku whose hand was pulled by Hajime to go home right away then looked back to give her parting greeting to the others. Her expression while doing that caused kouhai-chan to lift the slogan「Onee-sama reign supreme, Nagumo Hajime ought to die」. That expression looked so happy, to the degree that it would make anyone else envious seeing it.

A few days later.

Slightly after school ended, at the period when the last of the students would go home, there was the figure of Shizuku wearing kendo uniform and protectors inside the kendo hall.

The students of the other clubs had mostly gone home, the people there were only kendo club members who had specially received permission and Hajime who came for being spectator.

「.....so you came.」

Shizuku suddenly turned her gaze toward the entrance. The club members who were continuing their practice because it was a waste to not do anything were making a wondering expression while turning their gaze following Shizuku's gaze.

About a few seconds later, a large shadow of a person slo~wly appeared at the entrance of the dojo building. Even though the shadow appeared quietly, *Dede-de-deden! Dede-de-deden!* the BGM of Termiator was playing in everyone's head.

Every single fingers grasping the door of the dojo building was thick, the legs that were stretching from the skirt were burly like rock. The upper arms caused the sailor uniform to look like it would burst open anytime, the uniform looked like it was a no-sleeved clothes like what the 'hyahhaa' group living at the end of century was wearing.

And then, her expression was also.....

He must be seething with fighting spirit. The deep groove carved between her forehead, her lips that were pressed on each other to form a straight line, sharp eyes that were gleaming brutally. The shinai bag and kendo protectors case she

were shouldering looked like flail and metal rod.

This situation was truly ‘The fierce god’s descent!’.

Several female club members spontaneously screamed「Hih」and fell back on their butt, but it must be a bit too harsh to reprimand them that they were being impolite to the opponent.

Speaking objectively, it was something that couldn’t be helped, it was clear that for normal people, ten out of ten would say that she looked terrifying.

「Excuse me. I’m Fudou Akari. I came in order to have a match against Yaegashi Shizuku.」

With a lovely voice that like before had a terrific gap with her appearance, Akari-chan gave her greeting also following the decorum. For a moment she frowned seeing the girls who fell on their butt and the male club members backing away, but her expression soon returned to before.

She focused toward one thing. Only toward Yaegashi Shizuku. She decided that everything else was but a trifle.

「Please come in, Fudou-san. Welcoming words——are unnecessary isn’t it?」

「Yes, I came here to fight after all. Your preparation?」

Fudou was approaching with a pressure that made it felt like the ground was shaking with each of her brisk step. Shizuku calmly stared back at her while nodding「There is no problem」.

Fudou was guided into the changing room and she changed her clothes there, and then she sat down across Shizuku and began to put on her protectors.

「Before the match, can I ask one thing?」

Shizuku asked while wrapping a towel on her head. Fudou nodded.

「You said, that your objective is to win against me. Is that really all there is to it?」

「.....What do you mean?」

「No, it’s fine if this is just my misunderstanding but..... No matter how, it feels like this is not simply you purely wanting to raise your skill in kendo further

above.」

「.....」

Being unable to have a match against the athlete that was her objective. That athlete completely stopped doing kendo. Would she display that much of a rage just because of that.....

An athlete that was considered as rival not participating in competition or retired from the club because of some kind of circumstance wasn't that rare of a story. Many people must have harbored dissatisfaction or tasted the feeling of being off their game regarding that.

But, Shizuku thought that the intensity of the emotion that Fudou showed was hard to be explained with just that. She felt from Fudou something more, as though her important thing was stolen away, a fervent something.

The expression of the questioned Fudou warped slightly. It was unclear whether it was directed toward Shizuku, or toward herself. But for Shizuku, if she was pressed to say, it looked like it was directed toward Fudou herself.

「.....A person like you who has everything won't understand, the feeling of a person doesn't have. For me, I have nothing but kendo.」

After saying only that with a faint murmur, Fudou put on her mask protector as though to hide her expression.

Shizuku stared at such Fudou for a while, but urged by the gaze of Fudou that peeked out from behind the mask, Shizuku put on her own mask.

Both of them entered the match area while the kendo club members were watching attentively. They followed the etiquette with flowing movement and with the word「Begin!」from the club member who took the referee role as the signal, the match began.

Right away,

「oooooooooooooooooh!!!!」

A yell of fighting spirit that felt as though the air ruptured resounded. The club members simultaneously became paralyzed, while the window glasses were rattling for real, not just metaphor.

Fudou attempted to shake up Shizuku with fine sliding step that seemed to be flowing.

In respond Shizuku was only quietly standing still with her shinai readied in front of her. She didn't look perturbed or paralyzed at all.

「-, oOOOO-!!」

Like a large tree. That was how Shizuku seemed to be like. As though to blow away the weakness that she felt for a moment inside herself, Fudou clashed her dominating aura many time over toward Shizuku. She moved the tip of her shinai with small movement, she made feint with her gaze and footwork, all in order to lure in the opponent.

Images were emerging in her mind.

She would strike the face protector.

——Her torso was hit.

From the face toward the torso.

——Her forearm was hit.

From forearm to face. Even if it was blocked she would push in.....

(-, it would get, returned-)

No matter how she ran her imagination, she could only image herself getting struck back.

Didn't she give up doing kendo? Didn't she stop participating in match and everything until now? Or else, was it that even with her only doing kendo in her spare time, even with her blank period of not doing kendo, yet she was still unable to even reach toward her feet.....

(Such thing-, that's absurd-)

An indescribable emotion welled up from inside. The image of defeat.

To crush down that feeling, Fudou tried to gush out a yell of fighting spirit that would be even louder than before——

「oOO——」

「yAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

She was crushed instead by the sudden war cry running through her.

*shin*, silence fell. It was as though even the insects outside the building were holding their breath, a quiet world. Just with a roar, it was as though the world was overwritten with Shizuku's territory.

If it was just impact, then surely Fudou was above.

However, in "weight" that was hammered into the heart, Shizuku was overwhelming.

While everyone stiffened,

「-!!!?」

When Fudou noticed, in her field of vision, a shinai swinging down was.....

She was able to move even faster than her mind could think must be the fruit of her everyday training.

*PASHIIIIIN*, the sound of two shinai clashing resounded. There Fudou finally noticed that she was blocking against Shizuku's attack toward her face.

Fighting spirit that surpassed hers. A terrific step in that she couldn't even perceived. And then,

(It's, heavy-!?)

Weight that was unthinkable to be coming from Shizuku's slender body. Shizuku's pressure that was maintaining the sword-locking contest without moving into consecutive attack caused Fudou who should be superior in body build to reflexively step back.

「E, eh. That's, Shizuku right?」

「Should be, but.....」

Bewildered whisper leaked out from the female club members. Shizuku's style was a "sword of finesse" that made use of variegated technique with elegant footwork and speed to the maximum, it was a common knowledge. They had never seen Shizuku bringing in the fight into a sword-locking contest by her own initiative, in addition she didn't unleashed her technique from there but instead

pushing in with strength.

「Has your eyes opened I wonder?」

「-, Yaegashi-」

Hearing those words from Shizuku who was staring at her from point-blank range, Fudou noticed herself that almost got swallowed in. She clenched her teeth hard and pushed Shizuku back with a shout.

Shizuku didn't resist and gently pulled back. And then, she once again took her previous stance.

Fudou clenched her teeth grindingly seeing Shizuku's state.

「Not taking advantage from enemy but giving advice instead, you are really composed aren't you」

Fudou unconsciously let out such curse. Shizuku still only observed calmly.

「What is this match for I wonder? Right now, is not the time to exchange words.」

「-, I know that!」

The calm reply caused Fudou's face to flash red in shame and this time she fiercely assaulted.

Fudou was getting back to form her pointless exertion of strength and her mind that was shrinking back from her own image, she unleashed an unconstrained assault that was backed with weight that was unbecoming for a high school girl.

The strikes came consecutively and clear impact sounds that sounded like handclapping echoed inside the dojo building.

Against the blows that were like a storm, Shizuku sometimes dodged, sometimes, parried, sometimes blocked, and dodged more by even making use of that pressure. If Fudou's footwork was like a flowing water, then Shizuku's footwork should be called as a floating leaf dancing lightly in the air from receiving the wind.

No telling blow could land on her.



Even though normally the opponent's stamina and mental would be shaved due to the unceasing offense and overwhelming pressure, causing them to expose an opening, the one who was starting to breath roughly was Fudou instead. It was obvious even from across the mask protector. Shizuku was breathing without even the slightest disorder without even a drop of sweat.

Impatience caused Fudou's attack into something indulgent.

Shizuku smoothly stepped in.

「aa.....」

*zupaan* A sound that even felt pleasant to ear resounded. Without relaxing her alertness, Shizuku turned around toward Fudou's back and took her stance.

Fudou didn't move. That was because the hit just now was too beautiful. She could only opened her eyes wide in amazement.

It seemed that the all the other club members, the referee included were in the same state, everyone was paralyzed. They never even imagined that Shizuku who had never participated in a match even once since her return to school, far from not looking like she had no blank period, she even had become so strong to the degree that it was incomparable from before.

Strong, that word wasn't enough to describe it. In everything, what was called as the extremity was something that would make anyone felt beauty from it. This was exactly that. Shizuku's kendo already possessed "beauty" that would even made one felt moved.

「Referee.」

「Ah, err, me, men ari one point!」

Those words made Fudou to return to her sense too.

She still looked amazed, however right after that, seeing Shizuku taking her stance while calmly facing her, her expression greatly distorted. Her expression looked as though she was facing a reality that she didn't want to recognize, as though something that was hard to accept was thrust before herself.

「SEYAAAAAAH!!」

Fudou leaped forward. She began a fierce assault once more.

But, as expected her sword didn't reach, it was blocked, parried, and evaded with cruel calmness.

And then,

「MENN!!」

Once more, with a perfection that wouldn't allow even a single excuse, Shizuku's face strike landed. A clear impact sound echoed.

Fudou powerlessly fell on her knees. That wasn't because the strike caused a concussion or anything. It was because her heart broke. She crumbled down.

While the referee was troubled seeing Fudou who didn't look like she would carry out the etiquette for after the end of the match, Shizuku put away her shinai, took off her mask protector, and opened her mouth.

「Fudou-san. You see, this is the reason I resign from kendo club.」

「.....」

Fudou slightly looked back across her shoulder. Shizuku continued.

「While I was missing, I wasn't playing around at that time. I was desperately polishing my skill in a struggle to the death. Because there was no other choice than that. Even though I stop doing kendo, but I'm still continuing the kenjutsu of my family even now. That's why, for "kendo", for the people of kendo club, my sword has become nothing more than a poison.」

「.....In other words, you are saying it's because you are too strong, because no one is a match for you anymore? That I am not even worthy to be your opponent?」

「-, that's not it. I'm saying that even though it's the same path of sword, but the direction we are going toward is different. Even if you make me as your objective, it will distort your sword instead——」

Shizuku tried to find the right words somehow.

Shizuku allowed her friends in the kendo club to be present in this match too was also to divulge this reason to them who were urging her to come back to the club one way or another, but Shizuku had the self-awareness that she was saying something that also could be taken as her being haughty.

And so, even while she was talking to Fudou, a shadow of unease loomed in her expression wondering whether she would be hated by her friends.

Seeing such Shizuku, the club members were divided between people who understood what Shizuku meant, people who showed a complicated expression that didn't know of what to say, and people with eyes that got even brighter while saying 「As expected from Onee-sama!」. But, none of them showed a clear displeasure. Surely that was the result of Shizuku's personality and the friendship that she had built until now.

But, it seemed Fudou couldn't be like that.

「Why, just why-. There is only kendo for me! Even though I only have kendo! Even though I have devoted everything for it until now-. But why is it you who have everything that instead become this strong! You who easily abandon kendo-!」

「Fudou-san. What do you mean.....」

Shizuku asked Fudou who was starting to leak out tears while she still hadn't taken off her mask.

「I'm envying you!! You are beautiful, stylish, and adored by everyone! On top of that, even in kendo where I have devoted my everything, you easily surpassed me! Even though you have everything that I want! And yet, and yet-, you easily abandon my important kendo for a man! Even though you abandon it, you are still stronger than me.....such thing, it's just too much」

「.....」

Such envious heart was thrown at Shizuku right from the front.

The body build and appearance of Fudou Akari were to the degree that it was fine to say anyone who met her for the first time would feel fear. It had been like that since she was a child. No matter how much of a girl her heart was, her outward appearance wouldn't let anyone see her as a girl.

Other people would make a complicated face, or in a terrible time they would laugh when she tried to be girly. Just by walking around, the people she passed in the way would send her a shocked expression. Even though she liked cute thing, she was ridiculed that it didn't suit her.

She already lost count how much her heart had been broken by clear malice. Just how much she had been wounded by insensitive words and deeds. How many times her heart was gouged because a boy that she liked was actually speaking ill behind her back. The heart of Fudou Akari was unmistakably a girl's heart. The world was too cruel toward such her.

What was the most painful for her, was when she saw her parents looking pained when they saw herself feeling pained. It wasn't that they didn't love her. Rather, it could even be said that they were doting on her. That was exactly why, seeing her parents getting troubled due to their troubled daughter fanned up her guilt.

Consequently, that must be why. Why she stepped into the path of kendo.

It was no use even if she kept getting troubled about her own look. In that case, she would try stepping into a world that would suit even someone like her. And then, so that she would be able to approve of herself, she would become number one in that path.

She decided so.

But, she encountered her. Inside the world she stepped into, there was that girl.

「Why are you that beautiful? Why are you that strong? Why are you that loved? Even though I'm like this-, isn't this unfair!？」

It wasn't like Shizuku knew about the detail of Fudou's circumstance. But, Shizuku guessed it just from those words. The daily life that Fudou Akari had experienced until now. The bitter experiences.

Suddenly, the words that were always thrown at her in the past resurrected inside Shizuku's mind.

——Are you a girl?

Her chest tightened. Shizuku saw her past self overlapping with Fudou who was shedding tears. She was about to open her mouth following her boiling emotion.

However, before her feeling could turn into words,

「.....You can just feel hurt. You should just taste the same pain like me!」

After saying such thing, Fudou whose eyes were giving glimpses of flame of envy and hatred deep inside rushed out from the dojo building without even giving anyone time to call at her to stop.

「Fudou-san-, wait——」

Shizuku immediately tried to chase after her, but her hand was grasped by a powerful strength and she was pulled back. When she quickly turned around, the one she found there was Hajime who had been silently watching until now.

Shizuku showed impatience and told Hajime to let go of her hand, but Hajime spoke back with a serious gaze.

「Don't worry, Shizuku.」

「Hajime.....」

「I'll finish her off later. I'm not gonna lose to anyone in how to break the heart skillfully.」

It seemed that Hajime-san was planning to go and finish off the girl who was running off while crying.

Anyway,

「Stop that-, this demon king-!」

*zupaan* A raging shinai was launched in a straight-man attack to the face of the demon king. 「Ouch-」 Demon king-sama pitched forward while saying that.

Even the kendo club members who were dumbfounded by the chain of events also crept away, or even shuddered from Hajime's words.

Hajime stroked her own head while looking at Shizuku.

「You have calmed down a bit?」

「Eh?」

Hajime made a wry smile toward the astonished Shizuku and he continued.

「What is someone at her wits end going to do chasing after someone else who is also at her wits end? Calm down first for now.」

「Ah.....」

「Besides, a beauty like you, no matter what you say toward someone who has complex about their own appearance, in most case it won't end well.」

If someone who didn't have confidence with their own appearance was then told 「It's fine, face doesn't matter!」 by someone who was recognized as attractive by everyone——it was guaranteed that the person would go 「You bastard, you are making fun of me huh!?!」.

Strength left Shizuku's body. But, she also didn't look like she was accepting it.

「Then, are you telling me I should leave her alone because of that ? Such thing——」

「That's why, I'm telling you to calm down. What that girl is holding inside, is it something that light that words you thought up in the spot will be able to solve?」

「That's.....」

Shizuku was at a loss for words. Hajime let go of her arm and in exchange his hand touched Shizuku's soft cheek and pinched there tenderly to calm her down.

「Isn't it better if you give her a bit of time? Like that, if that girl become shut in then you can visit her however many times you like, and if she try to do something then you can just stop her. Either way, doing it right now won't be anything good for both sides.」

The caution of Hajime who seemed to have seen through that Shizuku was shaken seeing her past self overlapping with Fudou, made Shizuku to hang her head down while nodding despondently.

「Don't make that kind of face. I'll also look out so that it won't become something that cannot be undone. That's why, you can think slowly, what kind of words you should say, and what kind of action you should take the next time you meet her. Come on, for now let's go back home for today. Go change your clothes.」

「Yes.....」

Perhaps she was feeling regretful that things didn't go well, or perhaps she was worrying of what she should do. Shizuku was totteringly vanishing into the changing room looking somewhat dejected. Hajime saw her off while making a troubled expression. As for the kendo club members, they were writhing a bit seeing the figure of down-hearted Shizuku that normally she would never show to them.

「He, hey Nagumo. You won't stop her? You are her boyfriend right?」

「Tha, that's right. It's absolutely dangerous to go meet that girl or trying to stop her when she comes to attack! That person's state wasn't normal!」

Shizuku's friends were arguing vehemently at Hajime's act that seemed to push the back of Shizuku who was trying to do something about this matter.

Fudou's state at the end was certainly uncommon. Different from when she was pushing for a match, her strange atmosphere just now looked as though a stronger negative emotion was overflowing from her. No matter who one thought about it, she looked like she was going to do something bad to Shizuku.

Normally this would be where one ought to stop from getting involved. No matter how strong Shizuku was, there was no need to allow her to purposefully head toward danger. And if Hajime was her boyfriend, he should not let her lover to get involved with this all the more, was what the girls argued about.

But, Hajime indifferently declared to them who were like that.

「Her meddlesomeness and worrying habit are hardcore one. It cannot be helped right?」

「Cannot be helped you say.....isn't that too irresponsible even though you are her boyfriend?」

「It's fine. If that's what Shizuku want to do that is. If she is going to be meddlesome toward other people and she is burdened with trouble because of that, then I'll take care of her and shoulder the burden twice of that, I'll also spoil her while I'm at it. That's my role.」

「.....」

The expression of the girls went *munnyuu*. It was an expression as though they

were forcefully fed with a terribly sweet pastry. As for the boys, their expression was half admiring, and half jealous seeming to say 'Anyway, won't Nagumo just die already' in their own way.

「Putting that aside, there is one little problem though.....」

「Eh, wha, what?」

One girl asked back while stuttering a bit for some reason. Hajime scratched on his cheek awkwardly while,

「That Fudou girl, she was running out still in her kendo uniform, or rather she was still wearing all her protectors. What are we going to do with her uniform?」

「Ah.....」

When they looked at the entrance, her shoes were also left behind. In this time when the sun had already set, a huge girl wearing full set kendo equipment except the mask protector was running away with tearful face while barefooted..... It felt like a new urban legend would be whispered in the neighborhood.

「As expected Fudou won't come back herself to take back her things. Even if we want to return her things to the kendo club member at her school, it will be a problem if a male like me go there carrying girl uniform.」

「If it's Shizuku it feels like she is going to say that she want to return it herself but.....from the talk just now, it will be questionable if we let Shizuku go do that.」

「Yeah. And so, oi, you kohai over there.」

Hajime's gaze locked on to kouhai-chan. Kouhai-chan reflexively jumped on the spot while giving a strange reply 「Yhess!」.

「Tomorrow morning, go deliver the uniform to Fudou's school.」

「Eh? Tomorrow morning.....err, I have class normally tomorrow though?」

「Aaa? Then, you can just come here to collect the uniform first thing in the morning, go to her school, and then return here before class start. Ah, you cannot bring the uniform home okay? Just in case, what if that girl comes back here to take her things herself.」



「E, err, senpai. That person's school, is really far from here though.....」

「Looks like it. And?」

「E, err, my house is also, quite far from here so, looking from the total distance it will take a lot of time.....」

「I see. And?」

「.....Uu. At least make it after school, is that no good?」

「Oi oi, what are you going to do if by chance Fudou doesn't have spare uniform? If you deliver it first thing in the morning, in the worst case she can change after arriving in school. But if you deliver it after school.....you are a cruel fellow huh.」

「Whi, which mouth is saying thaatt」

Kouhai-chan grinded her teeth *gugigigigigi*. It was a rebellious attitude. Really inexcusable. Added with her usual mischief that was crossing the line, her attitude really wasn't good.

Hajime made a wide grin while stepping forward as though taking advantage of the gap of her consciousness and approached near, dealing an iron claw on kouhai-chan. *creak* An unpleasant sound rang..... (AN: Iron claw = a wrestling move? where you grasp the face of the opponent with one hand hard)

「Ouch-, ouch ouch ouch ouch-. Se, senpai!? My head, my head is splitt——」

「Oi, kouhai. I'm saying that if you clear this mission, I'll forgive all your mischief until now. You get any complaint?」

「Hahih, none at all! I'll work hard and complete the missionnnn!」

The pitiful kouhai-chan was released, and then she crumbled down on the floor with her legs glued close to each other, that posture was as though she was a pitiful girl that encountered a violent hoodlum. In front of the kouhai-chan who was whispering「Onee-sama, is this also a trial for me?」, was Hajime-senpai who was standing imposingly without even a shred of guilt while dealing additional blow「If you fail, or if you play hooky.....you understand right?」 to the downed opponent.

The gap of this with his act against Shizuku before this that was indulgent in

various meanings was terrific.

While the club members were shuddering once more,

「.....What are you all doing? Or rather, why is everyone not changing already?」

There, Shizuku who had finished changing clothes arrived with a dubious expression.

「No, there is nothing. ....Right?」

Hajime looked over the kendo club members with a smile.

「「「「Yes! There is nothing at all!」」」」

The hearts of the kendo club members were as one. They couldn't go against Yaegashi Shizuku's boyfriend.

Shizuku seemed to guess what happened somehow and she sent an exasperated gaze at Hajime while also making apologetic expression at the club members at the same time, but before she could say anything, 「Now, we are going home」 her hand was pulled by Hajime and she was taken away.

At the entrance, Shizuku looked back and somehow said only 「See you all tomorrow!」 before fading out.

Inside the dojo building that became silent,

「Uu, how dare you do that to a girl's face. Is this grudge, ought to be left uncleared like this-」

There, the grudge of kouhai-chan who didn't learn her lesson echoed.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Shizuku arc will continue for a little bit more.

By the way, the scene where Shizuku returned a yell of fighting spirit, I imagined the awesome scene of Tama-chan of Bamboo Blade for that. Atomio Fire Blade.....Shirakome was trembling in various senses.

# Arifureta Chapter 260

## Arifureta After II Residential Area's Voder-sama

Author Note: I'll post one more chapter at 19:00.

The last of Shizuku arc.

---

The next day after the incident with Fudou Akari.

A short time before the morning homeroom started, Shizuku talked about the details of yesterday to Kaori, Yue, and Shia who had arrived.

「He, hee~. So there was something like that..... That must be terrible, Shizuku-chan.」

「Well, it's not that terrible though..... I'm thinking whether I should be able to handle that better. It's just a meaningless what-if though.」

Shizuku's shoulders dropped while saying such thing. Yue and Shia made a bit exasperated face while Kaori smiled wryly to such Shizuku.

Although, even though Kaori was smiling wryly, it seemed her attention was taken by something else, since some time ago her gaze kept glancing at other direction even while she was listening to Shizuku's story.

Yue and Shia didn't look like they were really bothered about it, but even the classmates who had arrived already were paying attention to it with cringing face「Uwaa」or admiring face「That girl, she is a hero huh」.

「Ouch ouch ouch ouch-, my head-, my heaaad」

「You're right. Your head is dumb huh.」

「It's painful-, let go you bastarrrd!」

「Aa? Bastard? Your way of speaking is improper huh, kouhai.」

「Hiih, I'm sorry! I got too cocky-! Don't grin on my forehead-, Onee-samaaa! Help meee!!」

A scream echoed inside the classroom.

「And then, I have a friend in Fudou-san's school, so this morning I tried calling her to ask, is she going to school. But, normally she would come early for morning training, but my friend told me that she hasn't come yet.....」

「Tha, that's really worrying isn't it, Shizuku-chan. But, I wonder if perhaps it will be better for you to also feel worry about somewhere nearer to you for now?」

「Onee-samaaa! Help meee! Oneesama!」

「There is also that thing that happened only yesterday, so I plan to wait and see for a while but..... I'm thinking of being the one to go meet her when the time is good.」

「Eeehh? Oneesama? Oneesama! Your soul sister is falling into a devil's hand right hereee!」

Shizuku-oneesama didn't turn around. Seeing such attitude from Shizuku and the deed that was being carried out behind Shizuku right now, Kaori couldn't help but let out cold sweat.

The kouhai-chan who was always hanging around Shizuku.

Right now she was receiving iron claw from Hajime first thing in the morning. Her face was being tightly held in an eagle grip while her forehead was nonchalantly getting grinded against with increasing strength, even watching from the side that looked painful.

Kouhai-chan was desperately tapping repeatedly on Hajime's arm while desperately seeking help from her beloved Oneesama, but she was also casually insulting Hajime while doing that, so each time the grip's strength was increased and she was gradually losing momentum.

「Hey, Shizuku-chan. That girl is desperately calling at Shizuku-chan though.....」

Shizuku's beautiful acting as though nothing happened which was unlike her

made Kaori to finally ask while she raised her eyebrows with a troubled look.

「Aa~, Hajime? Won't you forgive her soon? I'll also speak with her later about it.」

「Well, fine then.」

Hajime casually tossed away *poi* Kouhai-chan. Kouhai-chan fell on her butt with「Ahih」. 「Uu, that huurt. My head feels like they are splitting opeenn」 Kouhai-chan's face contorted looking like she was going to cry, but only after a bit she glared at Hajime fiercely.

「That's cruel, Nagumo-senpai! Just what I have done that made me deserved that!?!」

「It's because how you were trying to post those blasphemous edited photographs.」

By the way, it was about edited photographs where Hajime was in a dreadful situation in them. In the photographs he was co-starring with macho onii-chan. As expected it was a doing in the level that made even Shizuku plainly snapped seeing the appearance of her lover that crossed the line.

Having a gaze that had crossed being chilly and even looked nihilistic like a black hole directed at her, kouhai-chan trembled with a sudden chill. She was drenched with cold sweat, and inside her heart she whispered「As I thought, have I overdone it I wonder?」.

But, in front of the hateful son of a bitch, the pride of a soul sister wouldn't allow her to apologize or anything.

In the first place,

「Uh, bu, but! This is because Nagumo-senpai's own fault!」

「Aa? Why is that huh?」

Against Hajime in his current mood as an opponent, even though it was only at the level like a puppy yipping *yap yap*, but Kouhai-chan was still taking a defiant attitude against such Hajime. A commotion was running through the classmates.

「Hey, is there anyone who has a fresh status plate? I'm gonna ascertain that

girl's vocation.」

「It's obvious already even without doing that.」

「Yeah. One who oppose the demon king is always——a hero.」

Such conversation were done between Atsushi, Akito, and Noboru. The other classmates seemed to also in strong agreement.

Not knowing that all her senpai was looking at her as though they were seeing a hero, or perhaps seeing a rare beast, Kouhai-chan shook her twin tail wildly while pointing sharply with her finger.

「Today, I woke up at five o'clock you know! I came at school at six o'clock without even eating breakfast, and from there it was also terrible!」

「Terrible? What is?」

「The school gate, it wasn't open!」

‘Well of course’, everyone nodded. As expected, even the teacher who came early for morning training and so on wouldn't come at six o'clock.

「You came too early.」

「But, if I want to participate in kendo club's morning training even just for a bit, I won't make it in time if I don't come at least that early. After all, the other school is really far.」

All the senpai were in admiration, thinking ‘she is unexpectedly diligent huuh’.

「And?」

「It couldn't be helped so——I had no choice other than trespassing in.」

All the senpai tilted their head, thinking ‘she is diligent, right?’.

「But, our school, it was really a big deal for a period because of all of you senpai's disappearance remember? Because of that the gate and fence were also reconstructed for a bit.....」

「Aa. The countermeasure for unlawful intruder. Well, it was made so that it's a bit harder to enter here, only to the degree like the school of the rich I guess.」

「Yes. And so, right from the morning I was copying wall climb sport. It was

difficult to climb up the wall. There were few protrusions to use.....」

「You must looked completely like a suspicious person.」

A high school girl doing wall climb on the school's wall at six in the morning..... The gazes of all the senpai were once more turning into eyes that were looking at a hero in a different sense.

「But, I accomplished it. I collected that girl's uniform and climbed the wall once more to escape, and then sped away with my bicycle.」

「No, use the train. Just how far do you think the distance is? If I remember correctly, it's about three, four station. Using bicycle to go there is.....」

「Round trip cost 440 yen. You bourgeois senpai won't understand the value of that amount.」

「.....」

Saving 440 yen by pedaling bicycle. Was it her lunch money for today? The eyes of all the senpai were really gentle. At the same time, there were also accusing stares piercing Hajime. Hajime-san whispered 「Perhaps I should at least pay extra for her expenses.....」.

「And then, a hell was waiting for me.....」

「Here is Japan isn't it? But for some reason I'm smelling the smell of adventurer from her though.....」

「Yes, it was a heart-breaking hill! The school of that girl, the school building is located on top of a hill! Can you believe it! My legs were already like jelly! What's more, there was a bus stop at the hilltop, the people who were arriving for morning training or whatever were overtaking me using bus! In addition, they were staring at me across the window! It was like they were saying 『Eh, what's with that person? Why is a student from another school is desperately pedaling a bicycle until she got drenched with sweat like that? She is a bit out of place though~』! There were even people who pointed at me I told you!」

「.....」

Not losing against the hill, not even losing against the curious stares, kouhai-chan climbed to the peak.

By the way, looking at kouhai-chan who finally arrived wobblingly like a ghost while breathing roughly ‘zee—haa, zee—haa’, a teacher that must be an adviser——a young female teacher welcoming the students at the front gate was screaming.

「I who safely accomplished my mission received a lot of water from a kind female teacher, after resting for a bit I left the school. Haha, that hill road, when coming it’s like hell, but the return home it’s really heavenly! The exhilaration was amazing! I rode the bicycle down while my hands let go of the steer handle you know! What a thrill!」

「You, are really enjoying life huuh~」

The classmates nodded 「Certainly」 at Hajime’s whisper.

By the way, regarding kouhai-chan who was going down the hill road with a fierce speed while happily yelling 「Hyahoo———」 with both her hands in banzai pose and her twin tails fluttering, currently it was becoming a hot topic at the school over there even now.

It was a terribly dangerous stunt, so good children absolutely must not copy it at home okay?

「After that, I sent a grandma who was tired from walking her puppy and became unable to move back to her home, and in the end I didn’t make it in time for the morning practice.....」

「Your trouble attraction rate is unbelievable oi」

Lightly ignoring Hajime’s words, kouhai-chan suddenly opened her eyes widely in a flash.

「I have accomplished the mission that gave me enormous difficulty the first thing in the morning. And what did Nagumo-senpai say to such me after that!?!」

「? Did I say something?」

「Yes, you said it! When senpai saw me drenched in sweat, 『Unebelievable. It was like you are a comedian wearing wig that produced water. Are you gonna participate in R-1 after this?』that was what senpai said! Who did you call a comedian! I’m not training for that just so you know! That was the result of my



hard work you know! Praise me properly, you bastard!」 (TN: R-1 seems to be a comedy show in Japan. Anyone know more detail about it?)

All the senpai thought. That was a splendid tsukkomi. If she could find an excellent partner that took the role of the funny man, wouldn't she be able to participate in even M-1? Such thought ran through their mind.

By the way, right after kouhai-chan got her sweaty state pointed out at her, she rushed toward the dojo building with a fierce speed and properly put her appearance in order using the necessities for female club member that were constantly prepared in there. After that, she went to take the aforementioned edited picture from 『Soul sister's secret armory』, and when she tried to paste the photo on the door of Hajime's classroom she got the first iron claw of the morning.

「Now, praise me. While you are at it, apologize. Say 『You have worked hard. It's really inexcusable for me to bully such capable kouhai. As my apology I'll part from Shizuku right now. I won't come near her anymore from here on until the doomsday』. Now, quickly! Quickly say—ah, stop-. Please stop senpai! Don't tie my hair into a reef knottt! Oneesama, save meee!!」

Hajime-senpai's technique shined bright. Kouhai-chan's twin tail was tied into a reef knot in the blink of eye, furthermore the tips were formed into heart shape. The hairstyle was then thoroughly fixed in place with rainbow colored wire with great detail.

The gazes of all the senpai who were looking at kouhai-chan struggling and squirming with teary eyes were lukewarm. Their gazes looked as though they were watching a frolicking small animal while they were saying 「She isn't learning huuh」 or 「She still haven't get enough huuh」. Kouhai-chan's petite body build also spurred that image further.

Shizuku smiled wryly while standing up to save kouhai-chan. The bell rang in a good timing.

「Come on, the bell has also rang, let her go already with that much.」

「Can't be helped.」

Kouhai-chan crumbled down on the ground with legs gluing close on each

other as though she had just gotten assaulted by a hoodlum. Shizuku replaced Hajime and expressed her thanks to kouhai-chan regarding the matter of returning the uniform (Shizuku knew that kouhai-chan was ordered by Hajime to do that only this morning).

Kouhai-chan who were gifted with the words of thanks from the onesama that she loved and respected instantly made a loose expression that couldn't be showed in front of other people.

And then, after she stood up while trying to hug onesama which was casually dodged by Shizuku, she glared hatefully at Hajime.

「You better remember this!」

She said such thuggish line and ran away. The heart styled hair was bobbing up and down above her head. Was she planning to enter her own classroom while still like that? She was a kouhai whose soul of adventure was overflowing everyday nonchalantly.

「That photo is really too much but.....so far as it goes she was doing it at the door of our classroom where no one other than the people of our class would see it, so forgive her already okay?」

Hajime shrugged at Shizuku's words.

Seeing such Hajime, Yue let out 「Nn~」 from her mouth while tilting her head.

「.....Hajime. Actually, you are really pleased with that child?」

Those words toward the husband that came from someone who was acknowledged by everyone as the legal wife were basically recognized as correct by everyone in that place. If Yue saw it like that, then the possibility that it was actually like that was extremely high.

Not just Shizuku and others, but all the classmates also looked at Hajime feeling 「Eh?」. Hajime smiled wryly from getting seen through while he lifted both his hands in giving up posture.

「Well yeah. Somehow seeing her feels nostalgic.」

「Nostalgic? By any chance, did you know her from before?」

Shizuku asked. Hajime shook his head and denied it before his gaze moved

toward Shia. Shia tilted her head because Hajime suddenly looked at her for some reason.

「That's not it, perhaps I should say it's that girl's regrettableness, or how she won't get discouraged, somehow those sides of her resembled Shia when I first met her.」

「.....Heh? Resembled, me?」

It seemed everyone didn't get what Hajime meant, but only Yue nodded 「Aa~」 in understanding.

「Yeah. The you when we first met could only be called as a regrettable rabbit. What you did and your attitude, rather it was your very existence itself that was regrettable. If there is a race of regrettable rabbit, then you will get a perfect score of 100 without any objection.」

「Hajime-san, are you picking a fight with me?」

Right now anyone could see the vision of her rabbit ears that were invisible because of the artifact hairband she wore going *usaa-!!* in indignation. (TN: Usa => Usagi => Rabbit)

「Your face was terrible with snot and tear and drool, your important place was in plain sight, even though you were the one asking for help but you were strangely impudent, your forcible attitude.....」

「Nuh, guu, I, I cannot deny that desuu.....」

「Even when I elbowed you, kicked you, electrified you, sent you flying, but you absolutely wouldn't let go even while weeping.」

「When I recalled it now, Hajime-san was really a brute that time! Or rather, even when I asked for help when I almost became a monster's meal, you tried to desert me so nonchalantly!」

The classmates who had never heard of the story how Hajime met Shia made a shuddering expression at Hajime's deed at that time. They couldn't even imagine it looking at his current attitude toward Shia.

「But still, I think Yue also felt it but.....you were that kind of regrettable rabbit, but even so you didn't get discouraged, looking at you energetically

hopping around running over there, hopping around running that way, just watching you like that was really fun, that even us felt like we were also energized.」

「.....Nn. Just looking at Shia was somewhat fun.」

「Aa, u.....is, is that so.....」

Shia shyly played around with her rabbit ears that must be there. Even while looking at such Shia with a gentle gaze, Hajime also wafted off an atmosphere that felt vaguely lonely.

「You who needed to get looked after when something happened, is now in the remonstrating side instead right? Like when Yue and Kaori quarreled, or when Myuu was going to do something reckless, or when I wasn't reading the mood.」

By the way, what Hajime meant by not reading the mood referred to the time when he was flirting with the wife~s (mainly Yue) without even caring of other people's eyes.

「.....Nn. Shia is a firm person. Her housework is also almighty.」

「That's why, seeing that girl who even though is regrettable like that, yet still charging ahead without getting discouraged, it's like I'm facing Shia in the past, it's a bit nostalgic.」

「I see now. When we met Shia, it was when she was already transformed into the bugged rabbit.」

Shizuku and the classmates also nodded 「I see」 in comprehension. And then, thinking that they also wanted to try witnessing the “regrettable rabbit Shia”, but seeing how such thing couldn't be witnessed anymore, many of them whispered 「how regrettable」.

Hajime also looked at Shia once more, and then he whispered 「how regrettable」 while narrowing his eyes fondly.

Yue looked at Shia with nostalgia, and she whispered 「.....regrettable」. Kaori and Shizuku too, they were thinking of the no good Shia and imagined that such thing might be cute in its own way, but seeing that they wouldn't be able to see

it already, they whispered 「That's regrettable」 「It's regrettable」.

「E, excuse me, I think that perhaps all of you are saying that in a good meaning, but still, getting called regrettable, regrettable on and on so many times, it's a bit.....」

「「「「How regrettable」」」」

「Stoop! Please stop looking at someone's face while calling that person regrettable earnestly like that desuu!! Auuu, my past self is resurrecting desuu~」

The rabbit who was still called as regrettable whether she was actually regrettable or not was trembling all over while falling down powerlessly face down on her own table.

Hajime and others were staring at such Shia with a lukewarm gaze.

Sunday.

Kaori was walking alone through a residential area toward the station in that day off. The time was just past noon. Her appearance was casual, but seeing her it was clear that she put her appearance in order while being properly conscious of her outing.

(Hm~m, I wonder if the time is fine? Nevertheless, it was shocking that that person is coming here. It seemed that person came when Yue opened the gate but.....she said that it's a secret from Hajime.)

Kaori glanced at her arm watch while talking about such thing to herself. Today she had a plan to meet with a person who came from the other world secretly from Hajime. It appeared she was going to talk with that person a bit while also having tea but.....

The point where it was a secret from Hajime gave off a really bad vibe. Although, it was just as Yue said, in this world there were things that weren't ought to be known.

Kaori fastened her pace while making a really complicated expression——it was at that time,

「.....Who is it? Do you have any business with me?」

Kaori stopped still and said such thing toward the street where there should be no one else other than her.

After a while, there was only dead silence filling the street, but before long, from the gap between the fences of two houses behind Kaori, a person came out while making rustling sound from the clothes that rubbed the wall of the cramped space.

SSSHHH, HOHHHHH

「.....」

A strange breathing sound resounded in the street.

Kaori who turned around was speechless. She was speechless, however, inside her heart she was greatly shaken.

The reason was,

(Da, orth Vader is here-!?)

Yes, what came out from between the houses, was someone wearing pitch black clothes, pitch black mantel, and then wearing a unique full faced gas mask, Lord Vader! Even now he was breathing ‘SSSHHH, HOHHHHH’!

If this was just a mere deviant, Kaori surely wouldn’t be this shaken. She would finish it by normally defeating the other party. But, the opponent here was Lord Vader. She didn’t understand how she should react!

As expected, should she praise ‘what a lovely collection you have there!’ like that here?

Even while Kaori was shaken and thinking of such thing,

「.....If you’re going to hate someone, then hate Yaegashi Shizuku for this.」

「Eh?」

Lord Vader took out a shinai from his mantel. Seeing that what came out wasn’t a light sober, Kaori went ‘hah’ and returned to her senses, however, her attention was diverted when she heard the name of her best friend spoken out.

Taking advantage of that opening, Lord Vader unleashed his shinai saber in a

horizontal slash. The attack didn't aim at the head, but aiming at the shoulder blade. From that it seemed the attacker still had some rationality left, but even so there was no doubt that this was still a dangerous deed the attacker was doing.

If a delicate girl like Kaori got hit with that, it was possible her bone would break, even if that wasn't the case there was enough possibility she would get sent flying and got knocked somewhere on her body.

Well, that was if Kaori was just a delicate girl though.

「Eih」

「Eh?」

What was instantly taken out along with that cute voice, was a cleaving attack from a special security baton that stretched out from the centrifugal force when it was taken out.

Against that cleaving attack that was swung down like a guillotine, the horizontal slash of Lord Oader was knocked down——not, far from that the shinai saber was snapped into two in the middle.

Lord Vaoer was dumbfounded. A lovely voice 「Ei!」 came toward such him once more.

What entered his field of vision, was slender fingers that were clenched tightly, it was a fist that could even be called small. Although, the power was so heavy to the degree it felt like a gorilla was behind that punch.

「Buhee!?!」

The Vador mask was smashed apart, and the person behind the mask was blown away. The person inside the Oader rolled around on the ground before they fainted spread-eagled.

「Eh? This person, could she be.....」

Kaori whispered that while she moved to restrain the person for the time being, and then she took out her mobile phone after making a thinking gesture for a bit.

And then, she began to contact her best friend.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Why am I writing kouhai-chan that much, that's because as the result of my self-analysis while writing, I felt nostalgic about the regrettable rabbit just like I wrote in this chapter.

The regrettable rabbit is no more.....how regrettable.



# Arifureta Chapter 261

## Arifureta After II I'll Defeat You Bastard-. Today, Right Here!

AN: This is the posting of the second chapter for today.

The previous chapter had been posted, so for those who still hasn't read it, please visit there.

---

「Kaori!」

「Ah, Shizuku-chan.」

Shizuku rushed with a worried look into a small park a slight distance away from the residential area from before. It seemed that Hajime was also nearby, because he arrived together with Shizuku.

「So she ended up causing a scene. What's more, she did it by taking a really nasty method.」

Hajime said such thing with a cold voice when he saw the person sitting down beside Kaori. The voice without a shred of warmth in it and the straightforward words caused the person's big body to twitch.

Shizuku thanked Kaori once more for contacting her and then she moved her gaze toward that person——Fudou Akari.

「.....Fudou-san.」

「.....」

Fudou didn't react and kept looking down. Her expression and eyes were dark. Not even the slightest bit of dominating aura could be felt from her large body. And above all else.....the track of nosebleed Kaori-san's face punch was terrible. The smashed mask put beside her indicated the gruesomeness of that punch.

「.....Just quickly call the police or whatever.」

After some time of silence, Fudou whispered those words with faint volume. Self-abandonment could be felt from that voice. There were also resignation and weariness mixed in it. It was as though she was a tired old woman despite her youth.

Indeed, although it was only an attempt but what Fudou did was still a criminal act. She was completely a suspicious person. After all, she was Lord Vador in the middle of day. She had no way to make any excuse.

But, Shizuku really hesitated when Fudou mentioned about calling police.

As though sensing that hesitation of Shizuku, Kaori opened her mouth with an expression that looked worried for both Fudou and Shizuku.

「You see, Shizuku-chan. From the start it didn't look like Fudou-san planned to actually hit me you know?」

「Kaori?」

「-.....」

Fudou looked at Kaori with a taken aback expression, and Shizuku also faced Kaori with a questioning look that wondered what she meant.

「The shinai sabe——cough-. The shinai you see, it suddenly lost momentum just before it was going to hit. Perhaps, she might be intending to stop just barely before it hit. Even in the case that it hit me, I think it would only hurt me somewhat without any injury. She was also aiming at the shoulder just in case.」

Shizuku understood that Fudou still hadn't lost her rationality after hearing Kaori's words and let out a sigh of relieve. On the other hand, Fudou was looking at Kaori with a shocked expression for some reason, but right after that, she made a ridiculed face as though exposing her whole sense of inferiority.

While that happened, Hajime was directing an admiring gaze toward Kaori.

「Even while understanding that it won't be a problem, you snapped the opponent's shinai, and in the end you even smashed her face..... Kaori-san, that's lovely yes.」

「Tha, that couldn't be helped! Because, it was Lord Vadeo right in the middle

of town! Anyone would be shaken just like me! There was even the sound ‘SSSHHH, HOHHHH’!」

「I think that sound is unrelated though.....」

Kaori was speaking her justification with bright red face. In respond Hajime was looking at her with a gentle and understanding expression while glancing at the pulverized mask and Fudou’s face that was dyed with nosebleed, and then he snapped a thumb up at her.

Kaori-san rushed forward. She let out her protesting punches *poka poka* at Hajime.

Seeing such Kaori at the corner of her sight, Fudou raised a low laughing voice that was unmistakably self-deprecating this time.

「Fudou-san?」

「Just laugh at me, Yaegashi. My sword is completely seen through by a normal girl who doesn’t even do kendo. Hahahah, I’m really laughable. Anything and everything I did is just pointless. In the end, the kid who have it will go above the kid who is have-not even without doing anything.」

Actually Shizuku really wanted to make denial at the part when Fudou said normal girl. Depending on the situation, Kaori was stronger than Shizuku. After all, her specs were that of a god’s apostle. It was fine to even call it a foul play.

After laughing for a while, Fudou looked exhausted as though her soul had slipped out from her body, then she said one more time 「Just call the police already」. It was clear even without any words. She was broken right now. She had given up her own life as worthless.

Seeing such Fudou, Shizuku closed her eyes once and then whispered with a faint voice.

「——You are a woman?」

「-」

Fudou twitched and trembled. She thought that Shizuku was making fun of her. She thought that this was the payback for her trying to hurt Shizuku’s friend.

But, Shizuku's next words caused her heart that should have been closed to unconsciously react.

「You see, at the past when I was in elementary school, I was once told that.」

「.....Yaegashi was?」

It couldn't be helped that her gaze turned unconsciously suspicious. There was no way Yaegashi Shizuku who was praised as a beautiful girl by everyone would be gotten told that.

Shizuku made a wry smile and she then talked about her appearance when she was a child and the series of events related to that.

Fudou snorted at that.

「What? Do you want to say that by working hard you can become beautiful like now? That's only the talk if the person has a good base from the beginning. That kind of talk——」

「That's not what I meant. I'm not talking about look. I'm talking about whether you like yourself or not.」

「Liking, myself?」

Fudou's gaze turned even more suspicious from not getting what Shizuku was talking about, to which Shizuku nodded silently.

「I, hated myself. I wasn't aware of it myself, but I stifled myself, ran around busily for other people's sake, took only the role of protecting others..... Even though I actually didn't want to do something like kenjutsu, even though I want to be more girly, I want to lament and complaint, get protected like a princess..... Even though it would be great if I could be like that, but everything was the polar opposite of that.」

「.....」

The self she wanted to become, her ideal self, they all were the polar opposite of her current self——those words caused Fudou's eyes to widen slightly. It was as though she was hearing about herself.

「Even my current self is fine, there is nothing wrong with it, that was how I persuaded myself and pretended that I was accepting it, but one day, the day

when I needed to pay the price from continuing to deceive and hate myself came.」

「Price?」

「I almost died.」

Fudou gulped. She wanted to laugh Shizuku down from saying such absurd thing, but Shizuku's expression and voice didn't even have the slightest bit of humorous atmosphere in them.

「Really, I was beaten up so laughably pathetically. My whole body was chopped up, I was also humiliated with words, if he was late in coming to save me just by a hairbreadth, a blade would have already sticking into my head at that time.」

「No no no no no, just what the heck with that kind of situation huh!」

Shizuku let out a dry chuckle when she recalled that time, while Fudou spontaneously acted the straight-man. As expected, it was a situation that was unimaginable to happen to modern person of this ear. Fudou thought that it was a lie, but it was just too out there for a nonsense talk, and above all her instinct screamed at her that it wasn't a lie.

「When I was at elementary school, I was saved by Kaori. During the time I disappeared, it was Hajime who saved me. Other than them, I was also always getting saved by someone. ....Fudou-san. You said that I'm someone like me is in the category of the have, but if I really have everything, then I wonder why is it that I'm always saved in the crucial time.」

「.....Yaegashi.」

The perfect and dignified girl who was recognized by everyone. Shizuku who Fudou thought as such person was now making an expression that looked pitiful from the bottom of her heart. Fudou's expression turned into disbelief.

「It's the fact that everyone has difference due to things like their birth and upbringing. But, surely it depends on themselves whether they can make use of it or not. I who Fudou-san said to be someone in the have, was really no good that I almost died. I finally could affirm that after really almost dying and then getting saved again.」

Shizuku cut off her words for a moment there, and then she turned a nostalgic gaze at Fudou who was staring at her in astonishment.

「The national meet when I was just entered middle school. I faced a first year like me. An athlete that unusually fought with upper stance. Her skill was obvious even when that was the first time I faced her. Even though her first move looked slow, when I noticed “the invisible face strike” was already swung down.」 (TN: Upper stance = a stance where the athlete held the shinai with both hands above their head.)

「Yaegashi, you, remember.....」

Shizuku got a faraway look in her remembrance of that time, however she then shook her head.

「I don't remember most of what happened in that match. My head became blank when I received the first face strike, I was simply losing myself in my thought. When, how did I get hit, how would I block it, how would I see through it! Those were all I could think. Your sword was really really scary.....」

For Fudou, the first time she fought Shizuku, she could only see it as though Shizuku was perfectly handling her technique. It was a bolt from the blue for her to hear that unexpectedly, Shizuku at that time was fearing her.

「When the match was over, after I comprehended that I somehow won, when I looked back I couldn't recall anything..... However, after my excitement passed, the strongest impression that remained inside me was only——what a beautiful sword that was.」

「Beautiful?」

Shizuku nodded. Her gaze returned toward Fudou. It was difficult to describe the emotion that peeked out from deep inside her eyes. It was like envy, or respect, or perhaps fear, it was an emotion with such a mysterious color.

「It wasn't a cheap trick. An attack of certain defeat that doesn't need the second attack. Simply, swinging down the lifted up sword straightforwardly. It was direct, and resolute to the utmost. There were earnestness, sincerity, and resolve riding in it, it was a beautiful sword.」

Shizuku had never even dreamed that there was a girl the same age like her

who could swing such sword.

Because Shizuku had done kenjutsu since she was little, the skill she had piled up led her to victory in the match, but Shizuku wasn't able to be happy at all with her victory. She won the match, but lost the fight. That was how she felt.

「After that, I became conscious of your figure each time I participated in the national meet. At our second match, as expected your sword was beautiful, but that time I fought without getting swallowed, executed the technique I trained to face you, and I was able to win.....I couldn't do it in the match venue, so I secretly sneaked out ahead and made a guts pose outside.」

「Such, thing.....」

There was no conceit in those words. The athlete who was her objective was training hard the same like her in order to win. And she felt genuinely happy from being able to win against her.

Fudou's sight became blurry after knowing that fact.

Shizuku picked up the snapped shinai of Fudou and she suddenly took a stance with in on her waist. It wasn't a stance for kendo match, but a stance of sword drawing art. At the same time, a heavy aura burst out from her body. Fudou's body froze spontaneously. The cause was because that aura was of killing intent. Even though a kendoka and a swordsman both wielded sword, but there was a decisive difference between the two sides.

Shizuku suddenly relaxed her stance and talked with a wry smile.

「I'll leave it to you whether you will believe it or not, but I, during the time of my disappearance, had cut living things.」

「Eh? Cut?」

「Yes. I cut down a living thing with real sword. Even now I remembered it. The sensation of cutting flesh, the smell of spurting blood. Doing that was necessary to survive, so I don't regret it. But, I'm already unable to continue kendo. Whether in strength or the meaning of wielding sword, even though I'm a swordsman, but I'm not a kendoka.」

「Not a kendoka, but swordsman.....」

She had heard the rumor about Shizuku and her classmates. It was a story that was so hard to believe so suddenly. It would be strange to believe the story of a war in another world.

But.....

The gaze of Shizuku that was staring at her, in the end was it something dishonest that could be washed away by “common sense”? Fudou didn't think so.

「I won't return back to being a kendoka anymore but.....I want to keep watching it. That beautiful sword of yours. Perhaps this sound like sarcasm to you, but I think that you who swung that sword was also really beautiful.」

「.....is that so.」

Fudou looked back at Shizuku, and then she looked down.

She clenched her fist tightly as though enduring something, and her body was a bit shaking. Tears were falling drop by drop on top of that fist.

It was unclear how much time passed.

Before long Fudou lifted up her face. Her expression was a refreshed one that looked as though something that haunted her had vanished away somewhere.

Fudou sat with seiza posture on that spot, and then her gaze met Shizuku and then Kaori straightforwardly. And then, she lowered her head hard and pressed her forehead on the ground.

「I had done something dreadful and caused trouble for all of you, I'm sorry. I'm really, sorry」

The words of apology of Fudou resounded inside the small park.

Shizuku's gaze moved toward Kaori. Kaori immediately guessed Shizuku's question to her whether it was okay to forgive Fudou, and she smiled while nodding.

Hajime moved his leg up and down. He was meaning to urge Shizuku to step on Fudou's head to make her repented deeply. Shizuku immediately guessed his meaning and she smiled while ignoring him.



「Promise me, Fudou-san. Continue with your kendo. Polish your sword, without getting influenced by someone like me.」

「Yaegashi..... Yes, I promise. ....It will take time until I can like myself. I also cannot declare that my unjustified resentment will absolutely vanish. But, I won't discard what I have piled up until now, that's the only thing that I won't do. I will work hard, so someday I can like myself.」

Seeing the clear eyes on the face that Fudou lifted up, Shizuku smiled and nodded happily.

Fudou also smiled seeing that expression. Even though her look was severe just like Fudou Myouou, her refreshed smiling expression looked somehow charming.

Surely, in a future that wouldn't be so far away, she would be able to grow to like herself for sure. That smile caused Shizuku to be convinced of that.

Fudou grasped the hand that Shizuku presented and she stood up. Kaori tried to wipe up Fudou's blood with her handkerchief, but Fudou hurriedly backed away. Kaori was unmindful of that and insisted, making the atmosphere to turn harmonious.

‘Well, the case is closed with this’, Hajime thought so leisurely. It was at that time,

「Uu~, what a nice story this iis! Truly the springtime of youth! Onee-san is really moved!」

That deep but strangely charming voice suddenly resounded.

Hajime's spine instantly got goosebumps. His instinct rang the warning alarm loudly!

「Ah, Chrystabel-san! I'm sorry, even though we have an appointment.」

「Don't worry about it Kaori-chan. You had already contacted me beforehand after all, Onee-san doesn't mind at all yahn≡」

He couldn't understand the reality. Why was the monster haunting that clothes shop in Brook was here? Why was that guy talking to Kaori so naturally like that? Why was that guy wearing frilly one piece made in earth!?

The impact felt was as though a monster inside a picture book was encroaching into reality.

No, rather that was, an indescribable, blasphemous——

「Hajime-kyu~~n? I wonder if right now, you are thinking about something impoliteee?」

「-!?!」

‘Be cool, be cool, me.’ Hajime desperately told himself.

「Why, are you here? How did you creep out from that world?」

「Nnmaa, how rude! It was like I am something that always crept out smilingly!」

The sudden invasion of monster——not, the appearance of the manager of clothes shop, Chrystabel, it caused Kaori to ignore Fudou who was flustered for the time being and she explained the situation with a wry smile.

It seemed Chrystabel was interested with the clothing and accessory of earth and he (TN: Or she? What should I use here?) consulted Liliana whether she could possibly learn about clothing and accessory in this side.

Liliana also took into account about the promotion of Tortus’s culture and gave her okay sign, however, thinking whether Hajime who really disliked Chrystabel would easily let him passed through the gate, in the end Liliana then consulted Yue first.

Yue had close relationship not with just Chrystabel, but rather with the manly women group too. But although she readily agreed to invite Chrystabel to earth, but she didn’t wish to give Hajime any worry.

There, when Hajime was busy and Yue took his place to periodically open the gate, she secretly called Chrystabel. After that Chrystabel’s livelihood in earth was secured mainly by Remia who from the beginning had work related with clothing and accessory, and recently she even created an office for that in earth, and now Chrystabel was working hard in his study.

The first thing that Hajime who heard the circumstance did was——

「Okay, die」

Performing quick draw with Donner.

「Munh」

Shop manager Chrystabel repelled away the bullet with his chest!

By the way, the loaded bullet was a rubber bullet.

「How fervent nn≡ I'm feeling Hajime-kyun's love yahn!」

「Stop it! Don't look at me with those eyes! Or rather, weren't you taught that when someone is talking you should look at their eyes! You bastard, your gaze is shifting below each time you are looking at me!」

The gun fired continuously! The fired out bullets was repelled by the arms that shop manager Chrystabel crossed in front of his body. The gaze of the shop manager that peeked out from the arms' gap was locked on at Hajime's lower body!

Hajime's SAN point was shaved down!

「I don't understand what are you talking about hereee—fumu, that's a nice tight.....」

「SHAORAAAAAH!!」

Hajime-san's flying kick burst! The ground under shop manager Chrystabel who received that kick scattered around in radial shape from the impact.

「Ca, calm down, Hajime-kun! This is in the middle of residential area! A lot of families are right nearby! Aah, don't fire your gun! Tha, that's right, I have to lay out the barrier!」

Kaori was laying out the barrier for sound isolation and recognition obstruction in flusters while charging into the battle in the attempt to stop Hajime who lightly lost his senses from feeling the danger toward his ass.

「He, hey, Yae, Yaegashiii? Your boyfriend is holding gu——」

「That's just a toy.」

「Eh, but, it's making loud firing——」

「Just a toy.」

「The concrete is split——」

「Just a toy.」

「.....」

The thing Shizuku's boyfriend was holding was a toy gun. The final answer.

Though incidentally, the ground was smashed from his step and it also looked like he was stepping on the air and leaping around.

「It's just magic trick and acrobatic there. My boyfriend, he want to be magician in a circus at the future.」

No matter what there was a limit in forcing that logic. Akari-chan thought so, but the face of Shizuku who was smiling while staring still at her with her forced explanation looked scary somehow, so she just nodded.

Surely, that was the correct choice.

Even if for example, that boyfriend-san was suppressed by Shizuku's friend using extendable baton in two swords style while moving in a speed where her figure vanished. That too surely must be magic trick and acrobat. Surely.

When Kaori who hugged Hajime tightly and covered him from the sticky gaze of shop manager Chrystabel said 「If you don't quit with it, I will get angry here」, as expected even shop manager Chrystabel also gave up on Hajime and turned around.

Hajime gasped with a weird voice 「Ubooa」 from his mouth due to insufficient sanity point while Kaori was embracing him with a face that didn't look that dissatisfied as one would have others believe with her hands patting Hajime to calm him down. Shop manager Chrystabel glanced at that from the corner of his eyes while walking toward Akari-chan who was being dumbfounded.

Extremely thick eyebrows, arms, chest, torso, legs. Every part of his body was huge added with his thi~~ck face. No matter how one looked at him, he was a man of giga muscle lump, but his body was clad in frilly one piece clothes. His braided hair was fixed with a pink ribbon!

The shop manager who like usual was fiendish in various senses was pouring his gaze at Akari-chan.

A beat. Shop manager Chrystabel nodded as though he had comprehended something and his sparkling eyes turned at Akari-chan.

「You, it's fine for you to temper the beauty of your sword, but tempering your female beauty is also fine isn't it?」

「Eh? Err?」

Akari-chan was bewildered!

「Seeking beauty is something natural for human yahn. If it's Onee-san here, I will be able to make you shine even more!!」

Arms and legs that looked like log. Thick chest. Muscles that were obvious even through the clothes..... But with frilly one piece and ribbon.

Just what in the world this person was saying? Fudou-san was even more confused.

But, shop manager Chrystabel didn't stop. From his wriggling movement that looked like tentacle.....

「Yes!」

Fro~om~hi~is Front Double Biceps!~

「Just!」

Fro~om~hi~is Most Muscular!~

「Like me here!」

Side Chest-!!

Shop manager Chrystabel was shining radiantly!

「Ah, no, I'm good.」

Akari-chan quickly prepared to go home. She politely said「Once more, I'm really sorry for all the trouble」to Shizuku and walked away to exit the park. Her shoulder was gripped strongly.

「It's fine, don't be scared yahn.」

「No, you are scary.」

「It's fine pyon☆ Leave everything to Onee-san! This Onee-san's name is

Chrystabel! The ally of every manly woman and maiden!」

「Ah, no, really, I'm already fine even if I stay like this so—wait, ah, don't shoulder me! What's with this person-, this dreadful strength!? Where are we going!? Helppp! Someoneee, Yaegashiii! Helpppp!!」

「Kaori-chaaan! Shizuku-chaaan! Please take care of the rest okaayy! Also Hajime-chaaan! Let's meet again laterrr!」

When they came back to their senses, both Akari-chan and shop manager Chrystabel were nowhere in sight.

A week later at Sunday.

A contact came from Chrystabel who had been out of contact until now. He said that he would return Fudou Akari who he kidnapped.

「So, she is alive.....」 Hajime who was tense in this one week whispered so with an expression that was showing respect to Akari-chan's survival ability. Shizuku and Kaori glanced at such Hajime with their hands dragging him along because he was throwing tantrum 「I don't wanna go」 because he was also a concerned party while heading toward that small park.

By the way, Shizuku and Kaori dealt with Akari-chan's house and school. Their dealing method was by forceful suggestion using the demon king quality product artifact. The figure of Shizuku and Kaori nodding to each other with a desolate smile while saying 「We are completely infected huh」 might or might not happened.

And so they arrived at the public park like that. There wasn't any sign of people. Other than Hajime who was strangely nervous, there were only Shizuku and Kaori there.

「Fudou-san, is she fine I wonder.」

「Well, honestly I have something to say with how he was suddenly taking Fudou-san away that even caused her to be absent from school but.....this is Chrystabel-san we are talking about, so I think it won't be anything bad.」

「I, guess. Chrystabel-san can be forceful sometimes but, he is a person with a

good will.」

「Even though his gaze went toward my lower body each time we met?」

Hajime's words were treated like nothing. Hajime silently looked up to the sky. Who ever thought that the sky was this blue.

After ten minutes from the appointment time, the appearance of that huge body appeared. It was shop manager Chrystabel. As always he was really frilly. And then his arms and legs were all lethal weapon.

There was no one beside him. It seemed he was alone.

「My? Have I made you all wait I wonder?」

「No, we also came only just now.....rather than that, Chrystabel-san. What about Fudou-san?」

Shizuku asked representing all of them.

「My my, don't be that impatient. Her remodel——cough-, beautifying was going really well yahn≡ It's the result of her heart's reformation! It's just as I thought, whether woman or man, if they work hard to become a figure that they thought to be beautiful, then it will come trueeee! I too is feeling honored that I can be of help with that yahn!」

‘Just now, did she say remodeling?’ Before anyone could cut in even while thinking so, shop manager Chrystabel circled his hand at behind him. And then, he pulled out someone. It seemed that Fudou was only hiding behind the large body of shop manager Chrystabel.

Like that, the person that came out was——

「「「Who?」」」

「Uu, long time no see, although it might not be that long that I can say that. It looks like I have troubled all of you, like taking care of my family, or my school.....that, thank you.」

Tall body, and extraordinary body style. Hair in princess cut that reached until the waist. A color of bashfulness could be seen vaguely on the person's well-featured face.

Really, just how was this? No, actually they already knew who. However, they simply didn't want to recognize the reality. Of this abnormal situation, this bizarre phenomenon!

The girl with hair in princess cut thrust the reality before the stiffened Shizuku and others!

「Err, I am, Fudou Akari you know?」

It seemed that was how it was.

Just what in the world happened that the girl who even resembled the Fudou Myouou could become a yamato nadeshiko like this.....

Anyway, putting aside the dumbfounded Shizuku and Kaori, Hajime was——

「As I thought, you bastard cannot be let to live!」

Gun fire.

「Muhn」

Shop manager Chrystabel repelled everything with his chest!

「What the hell is that!? That ain't a problem of beautifying or anything anymore! Ain't her bone structure changed there! Just what in the world did you damned do! Metamorphosis magic!? Is that metamorphosis magic!?」

「That's a trade secret pyon≡ If you dee~epened your relationship with me, then I'll-teach-you≡」

Shop manager Chrystabel's full power wink and kissy gesture were thrown!

A blood vein snapped to the surface of Hajime's forehead. With a twirl the gun spin reload was carried on.

「I'm convinced right now. You cannot be left to do as you pleased in this world. If you are left as it is, this world will get infested with the bunches that received your demonic remodeling. This world, my birthplace, will be encroached!」

「My, speaking as though I am like a black bug in the kitchen! That's rudeeee. And? What will Hajime-kyun do I wonder?」

「That's obvious.」



Hajime pressed Donner's barrel on his forehead and yelled his oath.

「I'll defeat you bastard-. Today, right here!」

「Fufu, fuhahahahah! Just try it if you can! My manly woman soul, is undying!」

The demon king-sama spoke something that sounded like what hero-sama would do, and then he charged toward the shop manager-san of clothing shop.

The result of the battle was.....as could be easily guessed, Hajime received lap pillow from Shizuku in order to recover his scraped off SAN point. Anyway, Shizuku who was gently brushing Hajime who was making noise in his nightmare looked really happy.

By the way, about Fudou Akari-chan though, after that she made a name for herself in kendo world as a beautiful kendoka. Regarding the reaction of the surrounding about her transformation, so that the shop manager of the clothing store wouldn't be demanded for by anyone who became interested with the before-after of the girl, Hajime might or might not ran around to follow up with that.....

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Overcoming complex by mental growth, I planned for such a story, but when I realized it had become a story with solution of fantasy and physically remodeling the body.

The plot of Shirakome is always not breathing.....

By the way, I also put this in the activity report but, the comic version of Arifureta is updated.

No matter from where you look, you will be wanting to enjoy the cute Yue without fail, if it's fine with you please try to go take a look at Overlap-sama's homepage(Comic Gardo).

Please treat me well.

# Arifureta Chapter 262

## Arifureta After II Is That God, Really Alright?

*KUEEEEEEE*, a high pitched shriek resounded.

Right after that, a squall that struck down from the sky rolled up cloud of dust and blocked the field of vision. Small pebbles of sand attacked the eyeball which would force anyone to narrow their eyes while covering their face with their arm.

As though waiting for that opening, rain poured down by mixing in among the squall.

However, it wasn't a rain of water. It was a rain that was made from stone needles. The stone needles with total length of around 15 centimeter approached the ground looking really like a heavy rain.

——Coatrice's stone needle

It was the characteristic magic that was fired by a huge black eagle monster, Coatrice. If someone got hit even by a single needle, they would be petrified in the blink of eye. And such needle was fired in a wide area by several hundred needles simultaneously, while the target's sight was blocked by the squall and cloud of dust.

「——"Wind Wall"」

A magic trigger with the chanting abbreviated was whispered with a small voice. Wind that whirled with the caster as the center blew away the cloud of dust.

What appeared was a young man. He had silky brown hair and well-featured face. His body was lean and tight despite being slender and tall. Wearing simple protectors that only protected his body's vital spots, his hands were holding a

western sword that was shining faintly in a low stance.

That young man——Amanogawa Kouki didn't even look nervous facing the squall of stone needles, he calmly lifted the holy sword above his head and began rotating the sword fast with only the motion of his wrist.

The holy sword that was starting to rotate like a pinwheel in an instant looked like a round shield in addition with the radiance it was clad with.

Right after that, stone needles showered down on the round shield of holy sword. But, it seemed the stone needles couldn't slip through that shield because of its great momentum, the stone needles were easily repelled and scattered to the surrounding, piercing the ground around.

*KUEEEEE*, a shriek that was unpleasant to the ear resounded once more. It seemed the monster lost its temper from witnessing its characteristic magic gotten scattered.

The coatrice folded its wings that produced squall physically, and then its huge body rapidly swooped down.

「tsk——”Light Explosion”!」

Light exploded. Flash gushed out from the holy sword round shield like an explosion, and the shockwave blew away the remaining stone needles.

The stone needles stabbed the surrounding like thorns. If he moved recklessly to dodge the coatrice, he might get hit with petrification from below. Kouki picked this forceful option because of that.

Using “Ground Shrinker” skill, Kouki leaped out to the air in one go.

The coatrice put forward the sharp claws at its legs.

「——”Light Severance”-」

Just before both sides crossed each other, Kouki created a simple barrier in midair using light element elementary magic. Using that barrier as a foothold, he changed his trajectory midair. At the same time, he swung his holy sword in a circle arc.

Coatrice and Kouki crossed over each other midair.

The coatrice charged toward the ground without decelerating at all. Its neck plopped off and flew like a joke, and its flesh made a graphic sound with its impact from crashing on the ground.

Kouki twirled midair while rotating his body to fix his stance, and then he landed on the ground. Just in case, he confirmed that there was no stone needle on the ground, but the needles were already crumbling as though weathering from age, so there would be no problem even if he landed on a stone needle.

「.....」

Kouki confirmed the crumbling of the stone needles and the death of the coatrice, and then he let out a small exhalation to unravel his tension. At the same time, he held down something that was rising up inside.

His complexion didn't change at all. The change of his physical condition didn't show up outside. Even that condition that was becoming typical post-battle was already something he was used to.

(Not just getting used to it, I have to overcome it though.....)

Kouki talked to himself inside his heart while using his spirit to push back the breakfast inside his stomach that was gradually rising up as though to say 「You calling?」. He unconsciously smiled bitterly at himself that was like that.

「What are you doing grinning like that, it's disgusting.」

「Nnguh!?!」

The caustic words that stabbed at him like a throwing javelin caused the breakfast to rise up as though to say 「As I thought you are calling aren't you?」. Using spirit! He pushed it back!

The one who threw the javelin of words from the nearby rocky area was a female knight clad in Hairihi kingdom knight order's equipment. She looked good looking, and she could be seen like a noble's daughter if she shut up and wore a dress.

In fact, the girl was from the background of a noble family though.....

Anyway, while Kouki was fighting the coatrice, the girl was hiding in the cover

of rocky area and didn't come out at all. She didn't look like she was feeling bad at all about that, far from that, when the battle was over she came out with a violence of verbally attacking her ally while approaching near with a brisk pace.

「Nn, nnh. Err, isn't it going too far calling me disgusting?」

「A man grinning while standing in front of a corpse with its head and body separated from each other, at a scene that is drenched with blood, how could I not call him disgusting? My apologize, I cannot really follow hero-sama's sensitivity.」

「Ah, yea, sorry.」

Seeing the female knight backing away like in a rewind toward the nearby rocky area while her whole body was radiating aura 「It's creepy」, it caused Kouki to consent inside his heart 「Well certainly!」 in desperation while his mouth was apologizing.

「So, hero-sama. We more or less finished exterminating the monster in the request.....are we going back to the town? Or else, will you continue hunting like usual?」

The female knight asked while looking up to the sky. The sun hadn't even reached the zenith yet. This was a time period that was just right if they were going to go back to town to take lunch and reported to the guild about the request's completion.

Normally anyone would do that, but from how the female knight was asking like that instead, it could be imagined that *usually* Kouki wouldn't return to town in this case.

「The eyewitness report about the coatrice and also the extermination request we received said that there is only one of it but.....there was also other eyewitness report of other monster. The monsters of 【Divine Precincts】 are troublesome. And this place is also nearby Raisen grand canyon, there are a lot of hiding places here. We have time, so I'm thinking of investigating further.」

「.....So it's like that.」

The female knight was turning a vaguely exasperated gaze at Kouki and she let out a small sigh.

Kouki and others had went back to earth and returned to school.

But, Kouki who was tormented by his sin persuaded his family and childhood friends and he dropped out of school by his own choice. He immediately crossed over to Tortus, and like this he moved around exterminating monsters as an adventurer to atone for his sin.

At the legendary decisive battle, the monster swarm that overflowed from 【Holy Precincts】 wasn't completely annihilated. Quite a number of them succeeded in escaping. The monsters of 【Holy Precincts】 were powerful. Every last one of them possessed the strength of the monster at the deep part of Orcus great labyrinth.

For the adventurers of this world, these monsters were severe if they weren't adventurer of "Gold" class.

It was for that reason that Kouki crossed over world without waiting to graduate from high school, and here he accepted monster extermination request especially against monsters from 【Holy Precincts】. He asked for cooperation from Liliana, he also appealed to all the branch heads of the adventurer guild, and like this time he was given the preference to receive information and request about such thing.

He was carrying on request with the highest degree of danger by his own wish. It was also wasn't rare for him to have consecutive battle every day. Indeed, there was no doubt that there would be enormous damage is these monsters were left alone, and rapid disposal of them was necessary and also something to be thankful for.

However, Liliana and some others were worried that if Kouki kept being reckless like this then it might brought fatal danger to him someday, they advised him to care for himself a bit more but.....

At present, there wasn't any sign that Kouki's action pace would drop. This time too, Kouki seemed to be planning to search for monsters outside of the request and fought them just like usual.

(I wish he will also be considerate about me who is being dispatched as his watcher and also supporter.....)

Although fighting side-by-side with Kouki wasn't included in the range of the female knight's duty, just watching a battle against the monsters of 【Holy Precincts】 was nerve wracking.

At the battle against coatrice just now, it would be the end for the female knight just by getting grazed by the stone needle. Kouki and others of the another world group was in different level when it came to resistance against magic. Most likely, she would be completely petrified in a matter of seconds if she got hit.

Before this too, she felt uneasy only hiding in the cover of a rocky area, so she was hiding herself by creating a trench with godspeed hole digging.

「Aaa, I want to meet Oneesama.....」

「Hm~m, the periodic gate opening is still quite far away I think.....」

The female knight whispered to herself while following behind the walking Kouki. Kouki smiled wryly while recalling the oneesama that this female knight greatly respected, or rather she greatly loved to the degree that might be a bit too extreme——Yaegashi Shizuku.

「I know that already. Aa, I hate my own powerlessness. I thought that trivial thing like the world can be crossed using spirit and guts if it's for oneesama's sake, but, nugugu」

「If the world can be crossed like that, just what is the meaning of Nagumo's hardships then.」

Kouki's wry smile deepened.

This female knight. Originally she was a royal guard that was attached to Liliana, a direct subordinate of the formerly royal guard commander and the present kingdom's knight order leader, Kuzeri Rail. But, why then she was now accompanying Kouki? If such question was asked——the short answer was, she was demoted.

She was one of the stepsister group that greatly loved Shizuku, she caused troubles over and over again because of her overflowing oneesama love, and she turned out from royal guard knight -> normal knight directly under the leader -> normal knight -> this girl is no good already.

At the legendary decisive battle, Kouki was at the enemy side. That fact was a common knowledge also because of Kouki's own declaration.

And so, no matter even if it was for hunting the monsters of 【Holy Precincts】, naturally there was also opinions that were uneasy of leaving Kouki unregulated.

Although Liliana declared that such thing was unneeded but.....Kuzeri consulted to Kouki with an exhausted expression 「That girl, I'm thinking of firing her」, that being the case in order to give peace to the heart of the people who was yelling their anxiety, let's attach a knight as a watcher, let's make it this girl! That was how it ended up.

「I wish that you won't speak of the name of that son of a bitch.」

「You will meet another painful experience if you keep saying such thing you know?」

「You mean, like hero-sama who got Shizuku-oneesama taken from him so thoroughly?」

「Gahah!?!」

Kouki pressed his hand on his chest and fell down. He got on all fours with his head hanging down. It was a terrific counter.

「Good grief, putting aside Kaori-sama, I wished that you would at least protect Shizuku-oneesama to the death. Even I will be able to snatch away oneesama if it's only from hero-sama.....」

「Uguh」

「Rather than hero-sama, you are the loser-sama. You are chicken-sama!」

「Kafuh!?!」

「Hey hey, how does it feel to be treated as “little brother” by a girl the same age with you? How does it feel? Hey hey」

「Uu, uuuuu」

The female knight poked repeatedly with the sheath of her knight sword at the crouching Kouki. She was venting her anger with her all, filled with the grief



and lamentation toward the present situation where she couldn't even scratch that son of a bitch demon king.

But, it was at that time that a strong presence was transmitted from the direction of 【Raisen Grand Canyon】.

「.....Looks like, I have a good luck today.」

Kouki stood up so easily it was unthinkable that he was getting so grandly humiliated until just now.

And then, he immediately walked forward while urging the female knight to follow with his gaze.

The female knight followed in a hurry. Kouki suddenly turned his face toward such her.

「Aah, that's right. I had asked this several times already but.....can you stop with the “hero-sama”?」

「.....」

Kouki said that with a small smile casually. The female knight spontaneously turned silent, and after thinking for a while,

「Then, I'll call you chicken-sama.」

「Can't you just call me Kouki normally!?!」

Kouki spontaneously tsukkomi-ed. As expected it seemed he couldn't turn a blind eye at that.

The female knight slightly backed away and made a shuddering expression while she hugged her breast.

「Asking me so we can call each other by name.....please stop, I'll get pregnant.」

「You won't! What are you saying so suddenly!?!」

「It's Oneesama's warning. I received that warning when I went to report to her that I am appointed with this duty. First he would create familiarity by calling each other by name, after that he would nonchalantly increase the body touch rate, for some reason some incident would occur and he would resolve it,

and in the end he would smile pleasantly with sparkling teeth. That is that guy's modus operandi you know, be careful okay, onesama said to me.]

「SHIZUKUUUUUUU-」

The tsukkomi of Kouki's heart burst out. The roar of monsters echoed from afar as though hailing in concert with that.

「Well, it's impossible for me to be infatuated to other person that is not onesama. Kouki-sama, I'm really sorry but, I hope you will give this up.」

「Why is it like I was confessing and then get rejected.....wait, this is bad! Isn't this an aurora dragon!?!」

Kouki felt exhausted, but right after that he saw the monster that showed up and he raised his voice in panic. The monster that flew out from 【Raisen Grand Canyon】 was the dragon shaped monster that fired breath of extreme light that was once called as grey dragon. The white dragon had disappeared and right now they were called as dragon of extreme light.

Their original specs were high already, but now they were the 【Holy Precincts】 version and their level had been increased. It was a formidable enemy that wasn't really a laughing matter for adventurer.

Kouki gritted his teeth at the appearance of a monster that wasn't in the report while he turned his gaze behind him in order to give instruction so the female knight would retreat.

「Quick, get away—wait, fast!? No, that's fine though!」

At that time the female knight had just leaped into the trench that she dug before this. It was a wonderful escape.

Kouki's expression was complicated feeling somehow not satisfied, but the next moment he twitched due to the light shining above and he turned around. And then,

「Uu, UOOOOOOH」

He faced the extreme light that was released at the same time and raised a war cry in desperation.

The female knight who was only showing out her face a tiny bit from the

trench to observe such Kouki was,

(.....Hmm. Even though he actually didn't mind even when he was ridiculed about his relationship with Shizuku-sama, but he cannot endure getting called "hero-sama". What a difficult person.)

Kouki's act before this. Despite his big reaction, but he easily returned to reality. From that it could be understood that he had already come to a clean decision about his relationship with Shizuku. Rather, he was accepting with the relationship where the two of them were like family of older sister and younger brother and felt satisfied with it.

But, in regard of getting called "hero-sama", Kouki smiled cheerfully and acted like it was nothing, but if one looked carefully they would clearly see that he had tense expression.

And then, the emotion that he was desperately hiding in front of the corpse of coatrice. That was.....

(It was, fear. Now then, what in the world that fear is about.....)

The female knight was watching Kouki who challenged the monster in midair battle with simple barrier as his foothold while pondering a bit.

The current Kouki wasn't wearing the "holy armor" artifact that was given to him from the palace. That was because Kouki returned it himself. He also returned all the artifacts he received from Hajime like "Air Force Boots" and others.

That was because of his guilty conscience that said that those items weren't something that could be possessed by him who wasn't a hero, at the same time it was also a decision that came from his determination to train himself back from zero without relying on artifact.

He was only carrying the holy sword wasn't because he wouldn't let go, but because he couldn't let go of it. For some reason, when Kouki left it behind, it would fly back to him when he moved a certain distance away from it. It was as though the sword was saying it had no user other than Kouki.

In any case, it didn't change that Kouki's defensive capability had declined remarkably, if he was hit by the breath of light then he clearly wouldn't get

away unscathed.

Then, in that case, was that linked to his fear then.....

The female knight had a hunch that there was no way that was all there was to it.

However,

(Well, it's something inconsequential!)

The female knight easily abandoned that thought.

At the distance, it seemed Kouki had finally finished off the dragon. And then, right after that, three more aurora dragons appeared and he raised a shocked scream 「Whaat!?!」.

(.....Hmm. I guess I better make the trench a bit deeper.)

The female knight who actually was nonchalantly an expert in darkness element magic ignored Kouki who raised a war cry 「I, I WON'T LOSEEEEEEEEE-」, and then she diligently worked hard in digging a hole.

「Uguu, I thought I was going to die.....」

「How exaggerated. In the end other than getting knocked down by a tail, didn't you normally win without even getting particularly wounded?」

「.....Kaa-san, thank you for birthing me with a tough body.」

Kouki got a distant look and offered his feelings of gratitude toward his mother that was in a different world.

As expected, it would be severe for Kouki and the female knight who had just undergone a mortal combat to continue searching for monster, so right now they returned at their base recently——【Brook Town】.

If one walked at the bustling street, an aroma that really stimulated one's appetite would waft from the street stalls. Kouki's stomach was already empty too from his intense exercise. His breakfast that rose up even when he didn't call now didn't show any sign of showing up.

Kouki's gaze was unconsciously absorbed toward the numerous street stalls,

but——

「Oi, that's」

「Ah? .....Chih, he is still in this town huh.」

「Is this alright? What if he is scheming something.....」

The men who looked like adventurer that happened to pass by were talking whisperingly to each other when they saw Kouki. Their voices entered his ear.

The area around Kouki's chest slowly turned chilly. He unconsciously moved to cover his head with the hood of his cloak, but he stopped his hand from moving and kept his appearance without change.

Their expression that he caught in a glance was clearly feeling disgusted, along with color of anxiety that oozed out. Even though they understood that right now the hero was taking the initiative to hunt the monsters of 【Holy Precincts】, their disgust didn't really vanish. No matter how they couldn't wipe out their unease.

The traitor of mankind. The hero of betrayal. The envoy of evil god.....

Would he bare his powerful fang toward mankind once more, could he be scheming something.....

Trust that was lost once wouldn't return easily.

It was something he understood. It was something he was prepared for. That was why Kouki didn't hide his face. He looked forward, determined to accept it with resignation.

「Regaining trust is something really difficult.」

「Eh?」

The words that female knight suddenly let out caused Kouki's eyes to open wide. The female knight was staring straight ahead while further adding more words.

「It cannot be done in a day. Losing it is easy, but obtaining it is hard.」

「You're, right.」

「However, giving up is exactly what a “person that cannot be trusted” would

do. Therefore, one must never give up.」

It felt like warmth was spreading slowly inside Kouki's chest. He was getting looked coldly at like this was him reaping what he sowed. At the time when he was needed the most, he instead prioritized his own emotion and betrayed everything.

But, like this there was also a person who was concerned for himse——

「Someday I will bloom a second time for sure at central! And then, I will be at Oneesama's side.....guheheh」

「Ah, yea, that's what you mean huh.」

A fatigue suddenly assaulted him. But he thought positively 'Well, my heart is lightened I think!' and fastened his steps.

The inn that the two of them used as their base came into view. The large wooden signboard had "Inn of Masaka" written on it. It was an inn that was used by that demon king and actually was considerably famous, to the degree that it became a bit of sightseeing spot. (TN: In Japan, 'masaka' meant 'don't tell me...')

After all the inn was brazenly advertizing in a big way by hanging down a banner that was written with "Demon king-sama's appointed inn! Your journey started from here!". It seemed the inn was also selling things like demon king manjuu and so on. They had a really good business spirit.

Kouki was making a complicated expression while opening the inn's door and entered inside.

The landlady of the inn welcomed the two of them with 「My, welcome back」 and a gentle smile. It seemed the people of this inn also didn't really think of anything particular toward Kouki. They were always attending to him with an attitude that was the same with other customer.

It was a really calming inn, with the exception of one thing.

Kouki and the female knight took their seat in order to have late lunch. They took the menu to take a look of what they would eat today. It was at that time,

「Today our recommendation is the teriyaki of Kururu bird you know?」

「Uoh!？」

「Nnnh」

The voice that suddenly resounded from nearby caused Kouki and the female knight to jump on the spot altogether.

The cause was one.

The inn's poster girl who was bringing the two of them water with a cheerful and charming smile on her face——Sohna Masaka-chan. The approach of that Sohnna-chan wasn't noticed by the two until she called out at them. (TN: Sohnna sounded like 'sonna' which could mean 'such thing', or 'no way'. Sohnna Masaka, sounded like 'no way, don't tell me...')

Both Kouki and the female knight were people who served in battle. Kouki's Presence Detection was especially excellent to the degree that it could be said in extraordinary level, even if the other party possessed the skill of "Presence Isolation", as long as they weren't the same another world group like him, he would be able to detect them. The exception to that was like the rabbit eared bunches lurking in a certain sea of trees.

But, such Kouki didn't notice Sohnna-chan when she approached him.

「So, Sohnna-chan. Since when you were there.....」

「Eh? I normally came out from the kitchen bringing water to you two just now though.....」

She answered Kouki like that with a puzzled expression. Kouki cocked his head wondering whether it was just him feeling exhausted.

However, this kind of situation had happened several times, like when he walked in the corridor at midnight when he woke up to go to toilet, or when he came out from the bath's changing room, or when he was taking meal like this time, when he noticed she was already behind him. He really couldn't believe that it was just a coincidence.

「Sohnna-chan, by any chance, do you have experience of receiving some kind of special training?」

The female knight unintentionally asked that.

Sohna-chan showed a puzzled expression toward that question, and the next moment she let out a chuckle. As though to say that she had heard a funny joke.

「Giggle, geez, what's with that question? What kind of special training that an inn girl would receive!?!」

「Ah, no, it's just my feeling. My apologize, it seems that I was a bit confused.」

「You were working from the morning weren't you? Surely you are really tired now. Please eat a lot and get lively.」

Sohna-chan smiled sweetly. By no means that she was a beautiful girl that would make other people opened their eyes wide, but she possessed warm loveliness of a plain flower that resolutely bloomed fully.

Kouki and the female knight also forgot their shock just now and their expression turned warm. Surely, it was just as Sohna-chan said, they were only feeling a bit tired. Thinking that, they ordered their meal before looking at each other's face and exchanged a wry smile.

「Ah, that's right. Sohna-chan. About the dinner tho——ugh」

Sohna-chan wasn't there. It was after she took the two's order, and Kouki and the female knight looked at each other's face only for a moment. Yet despite so, when the two returned the gaze back, Sohna-chan wasn't there anymore. They didn't even feel any sign of her moving away.

「.....」

「.....」

Kouki and the female knight unintentionally fell silent.

「Did you call?」

Sohna-chan materialized.

「Ah, no. It's nothing at all.....」

「Is that so? Then, please wait a bit until the cooking is finished okay!」

Sohna-chan vanished energetically.

It was like her presence was slippery.....



Kouki and the female knight waited for their meal silently for some reason. When Sohna-chan brought them their order, as expected they also couldn't grasp her presence.

Kouki and the female knight ate their meal silently.

When they finished their meal, Sohna-chan cleared up their empty plates.

But, at that time, Sohna-chan dropped something. A metal plate the size of a hand palm——a status plate.

「Ah, Sohna-chan, you drop——」

Kouki immediately picked it up and his gaze inadvertently moved toward the status plate. Originally, a status plate's content couldn't be seen as long as the owner didn't pour their magic power into it, but this status plate was shining faintly with its content visible, perhaps because Sohna-chan was displaying the content just now because of some kind reason.

Kouki stiffened when he saw the content. The female knight who unintentionally peeked at it also stiffened.

The status plate was quickly pulled away from Kouki's hand.

「Thank you very much, Kouki-san. But, seeing other person's status is a violation of manner you know?」

「Eh, ah, sorry.」

「No, no. It's me who is carelessly leaving it in its visible state after all. But, please be careful the next time okay.」

Sohna-chan smiled sweetly. The smile of a poster girl was dazzling.

The female knight whispered with a small voice while staring at the energetic back of Sohna-chan who was returning to her work.

「Just what is that girl?」

「No, even if you ask me that.....」

A strange silence fell.

「We, well, it must be that. This is the appointed inn of the demon king after all!」

「Tha, that's true!」

The two who forcefully convinced themselves excitedly headed out for their afternoon work.

By the way, the status of Sohna-chan that the two saw was,

=====

Sohna Masaka 16 years old Female Level 22

Vocation: None Occupation: 【Brook Town】 Inn of Masaka Employee

Strength: 9

Stamina: 15

Endurance: 6

Agility: 5

Magic Power: 3

Magic Resistance: 3

Skill: Accounting – Love Smell Sensing – Sharp Ear – Night Vision – Rope Descent – Wall Climbing – Infiltration – Diving – Elusive Phantom

=====

It was a collection of skills that was really oriented toward spy except the first two skills. Or rather, as long as one wasn't from another world group, normally a person would only have about one or two skill. Most likely those skills bloomed later on through arduous training.....

There was a monster in the inn of 【Brook Town】, perhaps.

In addition, in the evening of that day, a letter from Liliana reached Kouki. The next morning Kouki and the female knight returned back to the palace.

As expected, at that time too, Sohna-chan was behind the two of them to see them off with her presence beyond grasp even from hero. Both Kouki and the female knight couldn't hide their shudder.

Kouki and the female knight who arrived at the palace were welcomed by

Liliana and knight order leader Kuzeri.

The moment she saw Kuzeri, the female knight scowled 「Gee!? Leader!?!」. Her scruff was grasped by Kuzeri who had pulsing blood vein on her forehead and she was dragged away. It was a really natural flow of event without even any time to stop it, just like how water would flow from high place to low place.

「Eerr, for the time being, it's great that you return safely, Kouki-san.」

「Yeah, thanks, Lily. You wrote in your letter that there is a troublesome monster appearing at the outskirts of the capital but.....」

Seeing Kouki who hurriedly gave his return greeting before quickly asking about the monster sighting caused Liliana to smiled bitterly thinking 'just like always huh'.

「About that. I think even the knight order can deal with this monster, but I called Kouki-san just in case. But even though I said that, there is only eyewitness report so far and the situation is nothing urgent. The knight order plan to depart tomorrow morning, so first please drink some tea and rest.」

「I see..... If that's how it is then I get it.」

Kouki who noticed that Liliana was being considerate at him also smiled wryly while he complied with Liliana's suggestion.

Like that, Liliana was about to ask about the problem Kouki was holding in his heart in a casual manner——it was at that time,

『I found you, hero-sama. Please I beg you, save my beloved world.』

From the sky, a gentle voice that gave off earnestness came down.

「Eh?」

「Eh?」

Both Kouki and Liliana stiffened in puzzlement. Right after that, a pattern of magic circle that looked like hieroglyph character they had never seen before stretched out on the ground below Kouki. The magic circle increased in radiance and overflowed with a power that was falsely similar with magic power.

「Do, don't tell me-」

「Ko, Kouki-san!?!」

The face of Kouki who guessed what was happening was grandly twitching.

At the same time, the hieroglyph characters of the magic circle flashed fiercely. Liliana reached out her hand toward Kouki right away, but Kouki shook off that hand and pushed away Liliana instead.

「Lily-, tell everyon——」

「Kouki-san!」

Before Kouki could finish talking, the raging light settled down. And then, there was nobody there anymore.

「Thi, this is terrible! I have to tell Hajime-san!」

Liliana was dumbfounded for a while before she raised her voice 「It's terrible! Terrible!」 while rushing away in a feverish haste.

After the light completely blanketed his field of vision, Kouki tasted a sensation as though the gravity was changing direction every few tenth of second. Kouki who could only let his body getting carried away inside the darkness where he couldn't see anything finally found a streak of light.

He desperately reached out his hand to that. The light was rapidly approaching.

Kouki said 「Eei, to hell with this!」 and leaped into the light——

「Gaboh!? Ugogoooh!?!」

He became panicked from the large amount of water that entered his trachea.

(I, I can't-, breath!? Wa, water!? Underwater!?)

Yes, the destination of the light he leaped into was underwater. At the corner of his sight, he could see the radiant sunlight and the beautifully swaying water surface.

But, he didn't even have the slightest bit of composure to enjoy such sight. He was unable to breath sufficiently, on top of that he spewed out a lot of oxygen

because he suddenly coughed. His consciousness was already in red alert state. It wouldn't be funny if he died by drowning right after getting summoned.

He desperately struggled while trying to surface, but his sight was gradually locked into darkness. It felt like his consciousness was falling away.

While it was already getting hard to even think, the water surface suddenly shook.

His dazed mind was barely able to comprehend that a person leaped into the water.

The shining sunlight illuminated that person.

Long white hair. Chocolate colored skin. Sharp gaze that conveyed a strong will, jade colored eyes. Her approximate age might be a bit older than him. She had extraordinary figure that was wrapped with clothes with a lot of exposure, her body was painted with mysterious pattern.

(Beautiful.....)

Kouki who was unable to even move his limbs anymore could only think of such thing in amazement.

Right after that, that woman grasped Kouki and swam up to the surface with a staggering force. It took only a moment until they popped out of the water.

「Gahah, gehoh, –」

「Are you okay? Get a hold of yourself! Come on, spit the water out!」

Voluptuous breast pressed on Kouki while he was being carried. The woman who saved Kouki had a masculine way of talking in contrast with her appearance.

「Gefuh, tha, thank you. Yo, you saved me.....」

「Don't mind it. I never thought that you would appear at the bottom of the spring. I was a bit late. Sorry.」

The white haired and brown skinned woman's sharp gaze softened a bit hearing Kouki who was thanking her even while coughing painfully.

From her words, it seemed that she grasped that Kouki would appear in this

place, but it could be inferred that it was outside her expectation for Kouki to appear underwater.

To speak further, the voice that spoke from the sky before he was summoned sounded completely different than this woman's voice.

(There is no doubt that I'm summoned but..... It looks like this person isn't the summoner.)

While Kouki who recovered her thinking ability was thinking of such thing, he could hear countless splashing sound of people entering the water.

When he looked there, there were multiple men and women raising their voices saying things like 「Your majesty, you are safe!」, or 「Please leave something like this to us!」, or 「Suddenly jumping in like that, what are you thinking!」.

「There wasn't even a second to waste. It couldn't be helped. Rather than that, let's quickly pull him up.」

「Aah, geez-. It will be a scolding when we go home! Now, hero-sama. Please hold on to me.」

It appeared the woman who saved Kouki was called her majesty——in other words, it seemed she was a queen of a country somewhere. While feeling obliged that the queen personally jumped in to rescue him, a man past middle-aged with great physique and a look like a seasoned warrior grasped Kouki and lent him a hand.

When Kouki looked around, everyone's skin was similarly brown colored. Although, it was only the queen who was white haired.

Kouki who was pulled up to the bank reflexively sat down. The queen who stood imposingly in front of such Kouki opened her mouth with a powerful gaze directed at Kouki without looking bothered at all with the water dripping down her body.

「Now then, this had become an inconceivable first meeting, but for the time being, I'll introduce myself. I am Moana. Moana de Shelt Synclea. I am the one who is currently like the queen or whatever of Synclea kingdom.」

The people who seemed to be her subordinates made an expression that looked like they were feeling headache thinking 「What's with that 'like the queen or whatever' 』.

Moana completely ignored them and her expression turned a bit hesitating.

「You might think that my way of talking is pompous, but this is what I'm used to due to my position. If it bother you, then I will try to talk as courteously as possible.....」

「Ah, no, it's fine like that.」

Kouki immediately said that which caused tension to leave Moana's shoulders in relieve.

And then,

「I see. That saved me the trouble. Then once more, welcome to Synclea kingdom. O envoy of "the mother of all life" "the will of the great blessing" —Foltina. We are imploring, so that your existence will become our salvation. Please treat us favorably.」

Saying that, she presented her hand slowly.

It was a feminine hand, but looking closer there were a lot of callus on her palm from the result of handling sword. Her skin also had small scars here and there. She was someone who fought. Was it normal in this world for the queen to fight personally, or was her country placed in a situation where she was forced to do so.....

Seeing how he was summoned, and these people were looking for help, surely the situation was a fairly troublesome one.

Well, putting that aside, for the time being he had to ask this one question no matter what.

「Is that god-like person, really alright?」

Surely that god wasn't the last boss who enjoyed toying with human right? That was Kouki's question,

「Nnnn??」

It was obvious but, that question only served to make the queen confused.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Kouki arc.

First thing first, thinking that perhaps there will be reader who thought 'The queen's way of talking is different from the queen who showed up for a bit before this!', the supplementary explanation is that this queen's unadorned way of talking is like at the previous chapter after a fashion.

I'm not planning to continue Kouki arc for that long, but if it actually get long then sorry. I'll apologize in advance.

Now then, now is Golden Week huh.

How will everyone of Narou people will spend it?

Shirakome whose heart is moving into a certain village for the lonely people will surely get pursued with dealing with the piling up game.

If possible, I also wanted to upload a short story for Golden Week..

If nothing else, I pray so that everyone of Narou people will be able to enjoy Golden Week.

PS

I revised a few words at [The Obstinate Princess Lily] of the third world -> of the second world.

Thank you very much for pointing that out.



# Arifureta Chapter 263

## Golden Week Special After Story Yue's Diary①

AN: It's short, but if it is okay for you readers, please use it to kill time.

---

— —Month o Day x. Clear weather.

Tomorrow will be the first day of Golden Week. Everyone will go camping. I hear we are also going to have BBQ.

From what I heard, it seems that it's an event of grilling and eating meat outdoor.

.....Just what in the world is interesting about that, I don't really understand. Even though we had been doing that all the time in our journey.

But, everyone is looking forward just to go have an outing. Perhaps, there is also a way to enjoy it that I don't know.

Very well. Oh camp, oh BBQ. Bring it on. I'll determine your caliber!

By the way, the members for the BBQ event will be Nagumo family, in addition there are Kaori, Shizuku, and Aiko (Lily has work and cannot come no matter what), other than them Kaori and Shizuku's family will also join us it seems.

I see. They are telling me, show us the power of the first wife if you can.

Very well. Oh family, oh Kaori. Bring it on. I'll teach all of you, the caliber of the first wife!

Now then, it looks like tomorrow will be really busy. This is a rare chance, so let's write the diary in real time, I'm thinking of developing a magic for automatic recording mode, thoughtography style.

.....

I did it. As expected, me. But, it's thoughtography type, so it will be mostly like a live coverage. I'm uneasy whether the paper space will be enough, so I'm thinking of going with a brand new diary for the camp. Also, while the magic is in operation, there is the risk of things that I'm not planning to write or things that I thought about strongly will also get written. This point required special attention. Hajime, I love you.

Putting that aside, the weather is really warm recently, so Hajime's is gradually dressing lightly, I love it.

I am Yue. A woman who won't steal glances at what I want to see, but stare fixedly at it without any shame!

Hajime, sniff sniff. Rub rub. Kufuu~~

——Month 0 Day x. Clear weather

.....Oops. I noticed it when I reread back, but my emotion leaked out a bit. I have to be careful, if not it will be disastrous for Hajime inside the diary.

Now then, today the weather for camping is clear. The temperature is also warm, a day that is really pleasant to spend it outside. Although, even if it actually rained, the weather can be manipulated to be clear so there will be no problem.

Any rain cloud that dare to hinder Hajime's plan, will be obliterated without any trace.....fufu

Nnn. Just now, it feels like something leaked out. Just in case, I made it a secret that I'm writing diary, so I won't take it out in the middle of this camping. If something strange get written, I'll have to erase it when we go home.....

Letters that is written by thoughtographs, can it be erased so easily?

.....Anyway, let's think about it later.

The campsite was inside a forest three hours away from home by using car. It is in the foot of a mountain range, and there is also a river flowing nearby. So to speak it is a little-known good place, it looks like that it's not equipped with

facilities as a camp site. However there is a suitable open space for camping inside the forest, something like that.

I believe the place isn't developed strangely, but a good place where one can feel the nature.

Are those the locals? Several families, and group of young men and women can be seen here and there, regardless of the Golden Week, this place doesn't feel crowded. That too make it easier to spend time here.

Though it seems Hajime found this place using the compass.....

Good job, Hajime. I love you.

A while after we arrived in the campsite. The family of Kaori and Shizuku also arrived. The plan is to gather on-site, so it was a bit of worry that perhaps they might get lost, but it looks like they arrived safely without any incident.

The car of Shizuku's family is a black colored wagon type.

.....The car looks like what a secret service agency in a movie or book would use as on-site base.

The car of Kaori's family is a normal car, so it looks all the more bizarre.

Shizuku and Kaori got down from their car. Both of them have a nice smile.

.....Let's prank Kaori later. I'm going to distort that smile for sure. Kaori who is in indignation is funny after—cough-cough-. It feels like something leak out.....

Nnn.

Kaori's papa-san is looking at Hajime with an expression brimming with dreadful animosity. It feels like the caption [FIGHT] is going to appear anytime.

Oh? Hajime suddenly waved his hand. Is it a gesture toward Kaori's papa-san?

Oh? A small metallic rod stab the ground near Hajime's feet. If I remember correctly, that thing is called rod shuriken.

When I follow Hajime's gaze, Shizuku's papa-san and Ojii-san (TN: Grandpa) were there. Right now, it's only for a brief glance, but something is hidden inside their sleeve.

Ah, Shizuku's papa-san and Ojii-san were hit by Shizuku.

Ah, Kaori's papa get frightened by Kaori's hannya and get into dogeza.

Ah, Otou-sama (TN: written as father-in-law) is burning with rivalry for some reason and try to hug Hajime.

Ah, he get joint locked.

Fumu. I think it's really very well that the event started livelily.

Now then, this is not our first meeting, but for now, let's go there to teach both families that the first power is 530,000. It will be the end if the world of the wive~s get underestimated. Teyandeiberaboumee! (TN: The last gibberish, it seems to be a line that sometimes is used by old man that were born and raised in Edo. It roughly means, 'what the hell are you saying huh, this damned stupid bastard')

Everyone carried the camping tool and secured a spot. The gazes of the youngster group that seems to be the local keep glancing this way, but this happen every time so it's not worth worrying about. If they come for picking up girl then they only need to get washed into the river.

There is also a heated gaze coming from the family group. It's a boy about the same age with Myuu. It seems he is immensely interested with Myuu.

Oo, Myuu turned a bright smile and waved her hand to him. The boy became bright red! The boy waved back! However, at that time Myuu's gaze already moved toward Hajime papa! The boy fell on all four!

To toy with the opposite sex at this age.....

Myuu, what a terrifying child-!

Putting that aside, Hajime papa's hand is wandering around his thigh. Today Donner-san has day off you know. Also, take off your gaze from the boy.....

While the boy's mental state is in danger, the simple tents are set up, and the preparation for the meal is also being done.

The mama~s and papa~s are resting, also for thanks for their everyday work.

It's BBQ, so we only need to cut vegetable though.....

Because of Hajime and Otou-sama's insistence, it seems that it's no good unless there is curry while camping.

And then, it seems I'm not allowed to join in with the cooking duty.....

Why? I cannot understand it. Just what had I done to deserve this?

Eh? It's no good because I'm trying to add originality~? Especially because what I'll put into pot cooking when they take off their eyes from me?

.....I wish to profess that it's an extremely regrettable accusation.

Indeed, when we were in our journey I wasn't really well-acquainted with cooking, and perhaps there were a really fe~~w times that I ruined Shia's cooking.

But, that is in the past. I am Yue. A woman that is always progressing. Right now, even cooking is something that I can normally——

Eh? Indeed there is no problem with my normal cooking? But, I'm not allowed to do pot cooking? Absolutely? Try to put my hand on my chest and think back of what I have done?

.....Certainly, when I'm in front of a pot, there is itchiness in my soul. I can hear the voice of the ingredients appealing 「Now, throw me in!」 to me.

However! However still! That's——

Ah, yes, I'm sorry. It's nothing at all desu.....

That's why, Shia. Stop looking at me with that eyes where the light is turned off. Even though you are sweetly making a cute smile, please stop shrinking your eyeballs, I beg you!

.....Fumu.

If I'm not allowed to participate in the cooking duty, what should I do then.....

The mama~s has quickly entered drinking bout time, but joining in that group is.....

As expected, it feels awkward to enter among the papa~s who are all consoling Kaori's papa who is crying for some reason.....

When I focused my hearing, I can hear words 「My daughter you see, my daughter, recently, she is really cold to me.....」 that sounded as though they are wringed out from his throat. Shizuku's papa and Shizuku's ojii-chan are nodding 'un un' in agreement. Otou-sama said 「Well, don't put it into mind!」 while his hand is tapping Kaori's papa shoulder, comforting him with absurdly light feeling——

Ah, Kaori's papa threw himself at Otou-sama. Ah, Otou-sama dodged. Furthermore he nonchalantly makes Shizuku's papa and ojii-chan into his shield. A game of tag that circled around those two is starting.

The look like children.....

Hm~m, as I thought, let's stop trying to enter the circle of the parent~s.

I'm bored.

What to do.

Oh, digital camera is discovered inside the luggage.

.....

Fumu. How about taking the photographer role? Should I print it and stick the picture in the diary, making a picture diary?

.....

Not bad.

From today I am paparazzi Yue.

Speaking about that, before I knows the figure of Hajime and Shia and Myuu has vanished. Where are they going?

Their presence is.....

Shia is in the nearby river. Hajime is in the mountain. Myuu is at the upper stream?

When I thought that they are together, it turns out all of them are all over the place. They really are free spirited.

Anyway, let's follow Myuu for now. She is carrying the minimum equipment, so nothing should happen to her in the mountain and river around here, but as expected it's worrying that she is alone.

.....

.....

.....

Myuu discovered. But, for some reason she looks strange. She is heading to upper stream following along the river, but sometimes she will tilt her head, and focused her hearing.

What could she be doing? Curious. Let's try following her a bit without calling at her.

.....Nevertheless, the more we head to the upper stream, the more the ground became unstable, but the pace of Myuu who keep advancing is quite something.

Even though we are already in a place that can accurately be called as a mountain stream, Myuu is hopping 'pyon pyon' from rock to rock in a speed as though she is running on a flat ground.

It looks like she is activating the artifact for physical ability reinforcement but.....

Even so, her body balance and choice of footsteps are quite something.

I have to praise her when she get back if it's like this.

Anyway, a photo of Myuu's lovely figure! One more time!

.....

.....

Nn~~. Perhaps I'll have to take her back soon. We have come until really far at the upper stream, the surrounding is also filled with trees growing in abundance.

I think Myuu is advancing with clear destination in mind somehow but.....  
Really, why is she going upper stream until this far?

.....Oh? Myuu's legs stopped.

She is looking around restlessly. She crouched on the river bank, her head tilt.....

.....

Something came out!? From inside the river, something that looks like a child covered with scales all over its body came out!?

What is that!? UMA!?

Perhaps Myuu is in a pinch. Here I'll use Divine Existence and take Myuu——

Nn? It looks like they have amicable atmosphere. Ah, they handshake. The UMA waved and vanished into the river.

Myuu returned back in a good mood.

For some reason, it feels like I have seen something that must not be seen. Hajime once grumbled 「Even though Myuu is really strange but she is easy to get liked, so I've got to pay attention at her」, now I see, perhaps he referred to something like this.

Anyway, I hid and let Myuu walked past, and then I follow behind her. It seems she is already going back to the campsite.

I feel a bit relieved. If she is going deeper inside the mountain and try to deepen her relationship further with strange living thing, as expected, that's something I cannot just only observe from afar.

Nevertheless, just what in the world 「The Suiko Suu-chan」 means..... (TN: The kanji is 水虎. Google it if you want to see the picture. It's some kind of youkai in Japan and China.)

When I return to the campsite, Shia is shooting fish at the nearby river. Not fishing. Shooting.

Myuu happily dashed toward there. It seems Shia is flicking a fishing hook that is at the bigger side using her fingers, shot through fish inside the river, and then she pulled at the string that is tied to the hook and catches the fish. It's to top up the BBQ ingredient.



There is a lot of fishes with split open head entered into the bucket beside Shia. Blood is scattered at the surrounding.

A father and a boy are fishing at the lower stream, but for some reason they are trembling all over with pale face. It's as though they had witnessed a gruesome scene. Perhaps because they are at the lower stream, a lot of red liquid is flowing their way.

Myuu is receiving Shia's teaching while learning fishing hook shot too, so the scene is turning even more gruesome. It looks like the father and boy there didn't really catch anything.

.....Later, let's share some of the catch with them.

For now, the picture of Shia and Myuu happily shooting at the red scene 'kaclick'!

Nn. The picture is terribly cute.

When I return to the tent, Otou-sama and Kaori's papa are wailing while hugging each other. Seeing that, Shizuku's papa also looked moved and shed out tears, Shizuku's ojii-chan is nodding deeply feeling greatly impressed.

Just what in the world happened.....

As for the mama~s.....they are completely drunk. Kaori's mama is drinking straight from a 1.8 liter bottle of Japanese sake, Shizuku's mam is also drinking from what looks like a whisky bottle. There is a mountain of beer can in front of Okaa-sama (TN: Read as mother-in-law).....

Nevertheless, Okaa-sama..... She really is a person that suited to be a boss lady. Her figure sitting with one knee drawn up and a cigarette held at the corner of her mouth is wild! Cool! Next time, let's try copying that. (TN: I don't really get the references in this paragraph, can someone check it and tell me later?)

Nn? Some kind of commotion is.....

People who seem to be university students are looking here from afar while being noisy about something.

When I follow their gaze, I see.....

Kaori is throwing vegetables. Shizuku is cutting them midair. And then, Remia catch them on a plate. By the way, one of Remia's hands is stirring the curry pot slo~wly slo~wly while doing that.

Why are they doing that kind of circus act? I don't get it but they are looking like they are having fun. That's what is most important. Click.

Surely, most likely, seeing how the men who seemed to approach to call at them are shrinking back, I think this is the method those three thought up to prepare for BBQ while also checking those men in place.

Beside the tent, Tio and Aiko are making some kind of rustling sound.

I see, it looks like they are setting up hammock.

It's a hammock type that is tied at trees, so Tio who is able to ascertain that it has been tied firmly is wiping her sweat with a really nice smile.

Oh, looks like she is quickly trying it out.

Aiko is holding the hammock in place while Tio is getting on it.....

.....The rope snapped because it cannot support the weight.

Tio is in daze while keep sitting on the ground. Click.

Aiko is getting all flustered while saying a follow up like 'Perhaps the rope is too old!' but..... At the corner of Tio's eyes, tears are..... No matter how anyone look at her, the cause of those tears isn't because of the pain from her butt hitting ground, looks like she received damage from the fact that the rope cannot endure her weight.

She sat on the floor hugging her knees and buried her face onto there.

Aiko is desperately consoling her while running her gaze restlessly around, then she dashed in a rush perhaps from finding something.

Looks like her aim is the vine twining around a tree. She take it into her hand, confirm at the surrounding with restless gaze and.....ooh, the vine is lengthening slitheringly. It looks like she lengthen the vine with the power of farmer master and make it grow thicker.

With that she reinforced the hammock and tied it up on the tree again.

Furthermore, she also apply her magic on the tree to fuse the vine on it and increase the toughness thoroughly.

Aiko help Tio who is still shutting herself inside her shell to stand up while talking at her gently. The dejected Tio nodded a bit.

She is gee~ntly, gee~ntly getting up on the hammock. For some reason, even my heart is also beating fast watching it.

Do, do your best-, Tio! You can get on it if it's you! Surely you can get on the hammock!

Ah, Tio's hand slipped! She got on the hammock face down!

The vine.....

Ooh, it doesn't snap! It's perfectly supporting Tio! Aiko's face is amazingly smug!

But.....

Tio keep laying face down. She is in an amazing posture like a shrimp with her body arching backward and both her hands held up. She wriggle and squirm in the attempt to face up somehow, but it doesn't go well.....

Ah, she give up. She is unmoving on the hammock while still face down. She is really like a shrimp but, doesn't that hurt?

Aiko's smug face turned into a really complicated expression. When Aiko try to gently push, the backward shrimp Tio wavered *pura~n pura~n* like in a swing.

.....Yep. Let's quietly leave.

Nn? Hajime's presence is nearing. I don't know why he entered into the mountain, but it looks like he safely finished his objective.

But, what is this I wonder? There is one more presence beside Hajime.

When I stared fixedly at the direction where Hajime is going to come out from.....

Yes, the campsite panicked when they saw Hajime appeared with "that".

Beside Hajime, there is a one-eyed bear-san that looks really grim with the three straight scars on one of its eyes. It really look like the lord of the forest.

According to Hajime, he explained that 「I encountered the bear inside the forest. It impertinently attacked me so I finished him with a punch on the stomach and it got emotionally attached to me」.

I see, I completely don't get it. It seems, Hajime's reason is that even though there is no danger at the surrounding, just in case he checked inside the mountain but.....

The daughter interacted with UMA, the father made a bear that looked really like the lord of the forest into his underling.

These parent and child are really similar.

The one-eyed bear-san laid down on the ground face up, exposing its stomach as though wanting to say 'I'm not dangerous at all!'. Myuu who returned from the fish shooting makes sparkly eyes and dive on its stomach.

The common people other than us who see that are screaming even louder.

The papa~s are in admiration, while the mama~s are cackling.

While Myuu is riding on its stomach, for some reason sparks scattered between the one-eyed bear-san and Shia.

The eyes of Shizuku and Kaori brightened at the fluffiness, while Remia is stirring the curry ro~und and ro~und while going 「My my, ufufu」.

Aiko is getting all flustered, and Tio keep being a backward shrimp.

Hajime is saying 「Let's start the BBQ soon yeah」 while glancing at the bear-san for some reason.

Bear-san shook *Twitch-!!*.

.....Chaos visited the campsite.

Fumu. I'll deal with the other people who come here for camping, but for now,

Click.

I get the feeling that the first memory of the Golden Week will become something really lovely.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Yue's diary. Actually I wrote one for the extra story of the fifth volume.

I'm thinking to match it with the school arc and try to insert it sometimes for idle story.

Or rather, Myuu is again with something strange.....

Just what in the world Shirakome is planning to do with Myuu? Even I myself don't know anymore.

The characters are moving as they pleased, that is really something that happen huh.

I wonder, should I just mix up legend, myth, urban legend into one big mess already to make something like「Behind Myuu, it become a swarm of Hyakki Yakkou nano!」.....

# Arifureta Chapter 264

## Arifureta After II A World That is Relatively Finished

It was a place of large spring, surrounded by forest of trees. There was no sound that could be heard other than the rustling leaves.

It was Kouki's question that brought the silence. In front of Kouki who was crawling on all fours at the edge of the spring while coughing, there was queen Moana making a bewildered expression.

Suddenly the sanity of the existence that they greatly respected and loved was being questioned. The question was an extremely impolite one that normally it wouldn't be strange if they snapped toward the one who asked.

In fact, the atmosphere of the people standing around the queen——six men and women with warrior appearance, and two man and woman who didn't seem like warrior but looked used with fighting. And one woman whose clothing was different with the others, her attire somehow gave the impression that she was a lady attendant——was turning into one that couldn't be said to be pleasant.

Although, not even one of them tried to reproach Kouki's impolite statement, they didn't look like "fanatic". Was that because of healthy religious faith, or else was it because they were holding back because they were in front of the queen, the reason wasn't clear.

Kouki felt the atmosphere of the surrounding and saw the bewildered expression of Moana whose hand was still presented at him, and realized that his question was crude before he apologized in panic.

「I, I'm sorry, saying that so suddenly. I am a bit traumatized with an existence that is like a god.....」

「Tra, trauma of god? Or rather, you had met that kind of existence before?」

The words of Kouki who was once involved with a supernatural existence that was called god caused Moana and her people to make expression of being struck with admiration. Was the young man before their eyes an existence so great that was also chosen by another great existence different from Foltina, they wondered.

But, Kouki's next words turned them speechless.

「.....Yes. Though, it was when he was in a state of possessing an acquaintance. He thought nothing of human except as his pawn in a game, caused many wars, brainwashed people, and when he got bored he sent in his apostles to massacre mankind, that kind of god.」

「That's, not god. That's absolutely an evil something else right?」

A magnificent tsukkomi from the queen. Her way of talking changed. By any chance, that might be her unadorned way of talking.

Kouki smiled wryly while saying 「Perhaps」 and he took Moana's hand.

「Eerr. Let's see, Foltina, sama? I think you said that person was the one who summoned me but, I completely don't know anything..... But first thing first, I only wish to confirm ahead just one thing, can I return to my original place?」

From the hand of Kouki who returned a firm grip in his handshake, Moana felt the strength of someone who was similarly a fighter like her and she coughed once. She recovered her disordered mind and way of talking.

After that she lowered her eyebrows looking a bit troubled and,

「I'm sorry. But honestly, we too are currently also baffled. We have never heard the voice of Foltina-sama that clearly before, and someone like you who visit from a different world, it is like a fairy tale.」

「In other words.....」

「Yes. It's just as you thought, if the "original place" that you said us really in another world, then we don't have the method of how to return you back there. Or rather, you really came from another world huh?」

「Eerr, I think that's the case but.....」

As a test, Kouki tried mentioning the name of the kingdom and empire but Moana and others gave no reaction. Perhaps this place was an unknown continent that was also in Tortus.....such possibility couldn't be denied, but seeing that Moana and her people had no power of summoning, in the end he had no other method except making contact with this Foltina-sama, or searching for a method to go home by his own strength.

(Or perhaps, will that guy come here to pick me up? It feels like he might show up all of sudden with troublesome face after Shizuku and others begged him.)

Thinking of “that guy” that floated at the back of his mind——Hajime, caused Kouki to smiled wryly. If it was him who possessed both the method to cross over worlds and the method to find Kouki, then it wasn't something impossible.

Moana and her people made a worried expression seeing Kouki's state, they wondered whether he was cornered from feeling shock into a condition where he could do nothing but laughing.

Seeing the good character of Moana and others that somehow could be seen through from them, Kouki felt a bit relieved while smiling to show that he was fine.

「I'm sorry. Come to think of it, I haven't introduced myself. I am called Amanogawa Kouki. ——Just a mere swordsman.」

「Swordsman.....」

Moana and her people made a bewildered expression once again, wondering why he didn't introduce himself as the hero. But, before that bewilderment could turn into spoken out question, Kouki stood up and continued his words.

「If this is another world, a place that doesn't know about my former world, and I cannot go home, then that can't be helped. Can I ask you to please teach me about various things. Including the reason why I was called here, your majesty the queen?」

「Ye, yeah. That's right. It looks like you were really suddenly tossed into the spring, we will give you explanation as much as we can. Also, you also don't need to worry about any basic necessities. Even like this, I am a queen after all.



There won't be a problem with just providing for a single guest.」

Moana pulled herself together and said that while winking at him with playfulness. The atmosphere of that place softened slightly and the people who seemed to be her attendant also smiled slightly.

「And also, I don't mind if you call me Moana. You are a guest that Foltina-sama entrusted to us. It should be fine if you think of your status as higher than me. That's why, it's fine to not humble yourself like that.」

「Aa~, perhaps so. But there is also the matter about me being outsider so....., please let me call you Moana-sama. As for my language.....for the moment, please let me keep using polite language as it is.」

「Mu, I see.....」

Moana's shoulders dropped in a bit of disappointment. The expression of Moana's followers looked like they had headache right after Moana said to him to not act humbly, but their expression turned grateful when they heard Kouki's reply. Seeing that, Kouki felt relieved that his response wasn't mistaken.

It appeared that this queen had a really unconventional character, as could be seen from how she was so used to battlefield to the degree that she had scars on her body.

「Then, I'll have you let me call you Kouki. That will be fine I believe?」

「Yes, of course.」

「Right. Well then Kouki. There is a bit of problem with the safety of this area, if possible I want us to be on the move quickly. If we hurry we should be able to arrive at the capital before the sun set.」

Kouki nodded showing that he had no objection, to which Moana also nodded back 「Great」. And then, she moved her gaze at the woman in attendant attire beside her.

「Anneal. We cannot keep being like a drowned rat like this all the time. Please.」

「Yes, your majesty. ....I pray. For the grace of the sun and the wind——"Wind of Embrace"」

The woman who was called Anneal looked to be in her middle twenty from her appearance, a woman with slightly calm atmosphere. Her eyes were droopy, and when she replied her voice was also soft, which spurred such impression even more.

Different from the other followers, she wasn't carrying anything that looked like weapon, in exchange she was carrying a large satchel on her back and several bags that looked like shawl.

Whether it was Moana or her followers, they all were basically wearing pants and protectors above their clothes with white undertone. But it was only Anneal who was wearing something like an apron in the place of protector. That was the reason Kouki got the impression that she was like a lady attendant.

When that Anneal whispered in a faint voice, right away a part of the pattern on the back of her right hand shined faintly.

「This is.....」

Kouki looked down on his body with a slight surprise. His clothes was swaying from receiving gentle warm wind. From the sensation of wind his skin felt, it seemed a warm wind was whirling with his body as the center. The same thing also happened with Moana and the followers that entered the water just now.

「Fumu, it seems it will also be necessary to explain about blessing art too. She is praying, or perhaps offering her wish to the power that dwell in nature——the blessing power, to have that power shared with her.」

Power was dwelling in all living things and the whole nature. Moana and others called that power as blessing power, and the technique that made use of that power by praying or vowing was named as blessing art.

The painting on their body was something that represented their prayer and vow as letters which made it possible to shorten the invocation procedure.

As for Fortina, she was thought to be the aggregation of those powers of nature, an existence that possessed will. Sometimes, there appeared people who felt “the will of the great blessing” like in the fairy tale, or heard her words.

By no means that existence could be confirmed clearly, people vaguely thought that such existence existed.

In the teaching since the ancient time, the sense of values of living while feeling gratitude to not just Foltina, but to the whole nature was planted into the people.

Therefore, rather than calling the people's feeling toward Foltina as religious faith, it should instead be called as ecological sense of values to treasure the nature.

Kouki listened to such story during the time of waiting until their clothes dried up.

(I see. Rather than faith, they are offering respect.....or perhaps gratitude, something like that.....)

Like that, his conviction that Moana and her people weren't fanatic was getting stronger inside Kouki. Although, Kouki still hadn't let go of his wariness toward Moana and others. His polite language and title of honor toward Moana displayed that.

When their clothes dried up completely, the explanation about blessing was also mostly over and Moana raised her voice.

「Now then, let's depart. We will keep talking about what we should teach to Kouki in the way. Spenser, I'll leave the vanguard post to you.」

「Understood, your majesty.」

The aging warrior that pulled up Kouki from the spring before this seemed to be called Spenser. He was the eldest among all the people here, his short black hair without any grey hair gave a youthful impression. Although, his body that was obviously trained even through his equipments and the glimpses of sharpness of a fighter deep in his eyes gave a weight that this person couldn't be underestimated by any means.

When Kouki asked, perhaps it should be said that it was just as expected, it seemed that other than Anneal, all of the people here should be called as the most elite warriors of Synclea kingdom, they were the royal guard of Moana. And Spenser was the leader of the royal guard force.

Following Spenser's lead, they advanced through the thick forest. The temperature and humidity also didn't feel unpleasant, the pillars of light

created from the light through the gaps between leaves were beautiful. Kouki narrowed his eyes pleasantly thinking 'What a verdant world'.

Kouki talked toward Moana while they were advancing with the soldiers surrounding Kouki and Moana at the center.

「The nature is really abundant here. The spring before this too, even though it was quite deep, but the water was really clear until the bottom. This is also thanks to Foltina-sama, no, to the blessing power that filled this world, right.」

「.....That's correct.」

For some reason Moana's expression turned complicated. Inside his heart Kouki felt uneasy thinking if he had said something wrong while his gaze was looking around. There, he saw everyone including Spenser and Anneal were also making a complicated expression.

Kouki wracked his mind even harder to spot what he had said wrong. Moana showed a wry smile to such Kouki.

「No, forgive me. Kouki hasn't said anything wrong. It's just, I was thinking to explain it after this but.....place abundant with nature like this, only numbered a little.」

「Eh?」

Kouki was perplexed. Moana's bitter smile deepened while she explained further.

「Outside this forest, there is a desert continuing as far as the eye can see. This place is special.」

「De, desert?」

「Yes. the blessing power is being stolen from the world. Because of those <Dark Being>.」

<Dark Being>——According to Moana, they were a grotesque race that emitted miasma, a power that neutralized the blessing power. They must be something like monster if a comparison was made with Tortus. It seemed they were called Dark Being because they were constantly enveloped in miasma that looked like black mist.

They consumed <Blessing Power> just by existing, stealing life force from all living things. They were truly the natural enemy of not just mankind, but also nature.

「We don't understand what are they, and from where they came. But, let's see, if we are asked 'what is your history?', then we ought to answer "fighting the Dark Being". That is just how long we have been fighting them since far in the past.」

It felt like inside the eyes of Moana who was having a distant look, there was deep and heavy something that couldn't be described with words dwelling inside. Kouki only stayed silent without saying anything, merely listening to what she said.

「A lot of nature lost blessing power. Because those Dark Being are making blessing power their food, they are acting prudently from exploiting the nature compared to in the past. Because if blessing power disappear from the whole world, they too won't be able to keep living. However, they have a method so that they have no problem even while refraining from exploiting nature.」

They were raising human like livestock. The blessing power a single human possessed was in a different league compared to a single tree or a single animal. Therefore, the <Dark Being> liked to eat human.

Thanks to blessing power, the growth of plants and animals in this world was quick, and strong. But, even so the Dark Being's appetite was above that. Also, a lot of blessing power was consumed, or perhaps eaten in battle. If blessing power was lost to the degree that there was no prospect of recovery, nothing would remain in that place. The place would only become a world of sand.

The supply and demand weren't balanced, regulating their eating so that the blessing power wouldn't dry up meant that they would always be unable to obtain the feeling of full stomach.

That was why, so that it wouldn't be a problem even if the animal and plants were eaten until they ran out, the Dark Being raised human as livestock.

「This is a battle where our survival and dignity are on the line. Our great ancestors created means to oppose the miasma, diligently studied the blessing art, and like that life continue until it come to our time. ....But, perhaps that

too has reached the limit already.」

Moana's vast gaze caught Kouki. The thing dwelling inside those eyes that reflected himself——Kouki gulped when he saw that.

「This world, the great mother nature, Foltina-sama is——that's why, they summoned you correct?」

Things like hope, didn't exist there. There was also no expectation. What was inside those eyes, was mortification, and then disappointment toward herself.

The personification of blessing power that should even be called as the will of the world——Foltina had made her judgment. That it was impossible to resist with just the human of this world. That was how much this world had been cornered.

The fact was, there was no other country around Synclea kingdom. There were only feudal lords in each territory, where they all answered to the kingdom. Countries that once called themselves as empire, federation, holy country, and so on, all of them were perished. Across several mountains, or at the continent across the sea, there were other countries that were still resisting, but it was unclear how long they would be able to keep at it.

‘All of you is no good already’, it couldn't be helped even if the world thought so about them.....

Even though there wasn't any shadow on Moana's expression, but those eyes told of Moana's feeling more eloquently than anything else. In Kouki's eyes, it looked as though the queen before his eyes was smiling while crying.

——It's fine. I swear I'll save this world!

If, he said such thing without thinking of anything, surely Moana with her personality would laugh livelily while also saying 「That's really reliable!」 to him. While the inside of her eyes was looking like she was going to cry just like now, while feeling disappointed at herself, while getting hurt.

Kouki was glad that he didn't say anything like that. But, however, then, what should he say instead?

It's still not over yet? There should be something that you can do?

Foltina-sama isn't disappointed or anything at you?

It's just a coincidence that I was summoned you know?

He didn't understand.

Kouki didn't understand, what was the correct thing to say.

Kouki couldn't bear to look at Moana's eyes by more than this and he averted his gaze. Moana too also moved her gaze to the front as though there was nothing and she was going to continue her story about the <Dark Being>.

But, at that moment Kouki lifted his face in surprise and he stopped walking.

「Hm? Kouki, what's the matter? Is your condition——」

「.....Err, there are a lot of presences that way. They are heading this way with really fast speed but, what is the possibility that they are your comrades?」

「-. Everyone, prepare to fight! At nine o'clock!」

Moana ignored Kouki's question and immediately raised her voice. Everyone, without a single exception and without even a moment of delay rearranged their formation to face toward the indicated direction. There was no hesitation and also no one asking for confirmation.

That movement that was without the slightest disarray was just like the group behavior that birds showed. Moana's instruction was also extremely fast, but even more than that, the proficiency of the most elite royal guard unit was also enough of a show.

「Kouki! Do you know their number and distance?」

「-, Yes! Their number is.....16. Their distance is 80 meter——ten seconds until the contact! I believe they are large four-legged animals!」

For a moment Kouki thought whether they would understand when he spoke about the distance using the unit of meter, and so he restated it as the time until the contact with enemy.

Moana's eyes opened wide. Based from the information that Kouki brought to her, she had an idea of the existence that they could possibly encountered in this area.

But, what she was surprised about wasn't because that existence was approaching. She was shocked at the width of Kouki's detection range based that she deduced from that existence's moving speed and the time until the contact with enemy that Kouki estimated.

Although, her surprise only lasted for an instant.

「You all hear that! Assume it's the black wolf species! They will come to tear down our formation in their first attack! Neisan, Lilin, take the wind out of their sail!」

「Understood」

Spenser and others, the six soldiers unsheathed their sword. Their swords were single-edged sword with large curvature that looked like shamshir. The width of the sword was wide, and if seeing just from there then they could be categorized as large sword.

The man around his thirty who was called Neisan, and the woman her late teen who was called as Lilin, the two of them held their hands together in prayer behind the six soldiers. They must be art user that specialized as rear guard. Each time the prayer of the two was released to the world, a part of the patterns visible on their cheeks and nape was shining.

The monster of this unknown world finally came. Kouki was nervous and getting cold sweat while also drawing out the holy sword that was dangling from his waist. The holy sword that shined from reflecting the sunlight filtering through trees was so magnificent that everyone spontaneously wanted to let out a sigh of admiration.

Unconsciously Moana and Anneal took a second look.

It was right after that,

Violent killing intent and black miasma rapidly approached from inside the forest like a squall.

「――<Protruding Earth>」

「――<Smashing Raging Wind>」

Prayers of the casters reached the hearing at the same time. The pattern



painted on Neisan's cheek until his nape shined, and at the front the earth protruded out matching the activation of that hieroglyph-like pattern. It was just like a wall of stone. The wall of stone had thickness of thirty centimeter, with width and height of two meter.

*zushin-*, the sound of something crashing on the stone wall rang out in succession.

Instantly, the pattern stretching from Lilin's shoulder until her neck also shined, and blowing down wind that should be called as super localized downburst struck at the other side of the stone wall.

*gusha-* Graphic sound and small voices of death agony leaked out from the other side.

Neisan's voice echoed even more.

「I pray. Seeking for the crumbling earth, smash apart——<Scattering Pellet>」

The stone wall was pulverized by itself and then its fragments shot out to the front like a directed explosive.

Black smoke was bursting in one after another——no, those were black wolves clad in that black smoke with body length of a meter, several of them were turning a somersault altogether.

Seeing that, two of the vanguard soldiers rushed out.

「I pray! This body is a sword——<Soul of Strife>!」

That was a blessing art that raised physical ability. It wasn't just a prayer, but a vow taken toward themselves, by doing that they were strengthened by the blessing power inside their body.

The first step of the two soldiers dented the ground. With that force they slaughtered with one slash two black wolves that only just stood up again somehow from the impact of the pebbles.

Aiming at the two soldiers that stuck out from the formation, more black wolves approached them, but Lilin's wind obstructed those wolves. When the black wolves regained their balance, the two soldiers retreated to the formation with brilliant speed.

The black wolves growled in irritation. As though to display their annoyance, they spewed out black smoke— —miasma with even more thickness.

Right away, the surrounding vegetations wilted as though they lost their vitality, they dried up completely.

「Don't break formation. Keep up what are you doing.」

「We understand.」

The <Dark Being> that was called as black wolf species was a species that specialized in cooperation and melee, their attack power itself was relatively low except a part of the species. The soldiers firmly held the formation and accurately finished off the attacking wolves, while the rearguard's blessing art sniped from behind. That was the theory.

The captain of the royal guard Spenser narrowed his eyes like a hawk and when he spoke to make confirmation just in case, everyone else nodded firmly without any agitation.

(.....Their appearance is monster just as I thought. Is the difference between the two is that one emitted miasma and the other isn't? These wolves resembled the four-eyed wolf but, I don't feel as much pressure from these wolves. I can also follow their movement enough. What's left, whether they have skill like characteristic magic or not.)

Kouki calmly analyzed the battle strength of the black wolf species. Seeing that calm attitude, Moana secretly sighed in relief.

From the sensation of Kouki's hand, his sensing ability just now, and the minimum accurate information they shared before this, she assumed that Kouki possessed a lot of battle experience, but even so she was worried that he would panic when the time came that they faced the <Dark Being>.

But, at that time, a huge shadow appeared slowly behind the black wolves surrounding them.

『Hou, so it's as I thought that the information that the queen went out of her country is true.....』

It felt like the air shook slightly. Clad in a miasma with thickness that was

clearly different from the surrounding black wolves, it was a black wolf with a body built that must be more than two meter. That wolf was talking with a voice that sounded like it directly resonated inside the head.

「Eh?」

Kouki leaked out an astonished voice. His eyes opened wide.

On the other hand, Moana and her people didn't look surprised, they were glaring at the large black wolf with an expression as though they had bitten something sour. It seemed that it was something normal that the black wolf possessed intelligence and speech.

Wasn't the <Dark Being> beasts without any reasoning? Wasn't they the same like monster, a disaster that was mankind's natural enemy.....?

While Kouki was confused, Moana raised the corner of her mouth and replied back with a fearless expression.

「We also scattered fake information so that we wouldn't get found out, and we planned to move quickly with only the minimum number though. It seems your side have an excellent observer. But, are you seriously thinking you will be able to kill us just with this number?」

『I'll take my chance. There is no way I'll hand over the achievement of taking the head of the queen to the other pack. I'll present your head to the king, and lift my name, Niebla!』

*UOOOOOOOOOON* A howl that was even accompanied by physical shockwave burst. The black wolf that introduced itself as Niebla gushed out dreadful black miasma along with undulation of power that transmitted electrifying sensation to the skin.

The vegetations at the surrounding that were instantly enveloped by black miasma withered up one after another.

Naturally, that miasma also enveloped Kouki and others. Moana immediately snuggled close to Kouki that their skin touched. It wasn't because she was scared. It was to protect Kouki's body.

If the miasma came in contact with the blessing power of all living

things——that was to say their life, Moana and others wouldn't come out unscathed. But, their state didn't look like they were enduring anything like that.

「Everyone, pay attention to the remaining capacity of the miasma stone! Lilin, scatter away the miasma while concentrate attacking Niebla!」

「Roger!」

Moana's instruction was given. Moana's hand reached out toward her chest seemingly unconsciously. There was a colorless and transparent cylinder shaped gem about five, six centimeter long attached there. That gem——miasma stone was faintly muddy black.

「Kouki, sorry. I should have handed this to you first. Put this miasma stone on your body. It will protect us from the miasma.」

It seemed miasma stone was something like how there was magic stone inside monster, it was an organ inside the body of <Dark Being>. After extracting the miasma inside it for about ten days, it was processed and put on the body, that miasma stone would absorb miasma within its capacity range, and by wearing it one could do activity even inside miasma for a period of time without getting affected.

Moana wrapped a miasma stone pendant around Kouki's wrist. At the same time the black wolves led by Niebla attacked simultaneously.

Niebla too, he couldn't join the cooperation attack because of Lilin holding him back and could only run around outside the formation in the attempt to perturb the soldiers.

Using that chance, Neisan's blessing art was decreasing the number of the black wolves by one, and then one more, it was only little by little, but it was continuing steadily.

『Chih. You are doing well with these number. As expected from the elite unit of the queen-』

Niebla whispered with a voice filled with bitterness.

Right after that, Niebla resolved himself and howled, he charged forward

without stopping even while the wind blades that Lilin released carved his body and caused blood to spray out.

「He is coming! Push him back and then kill him!」

『Don't underestimate me-』

Spenser gave his instruction, at the same time Niebla's howl surged out. Right after that, miasma gushed out explosively from the ground below two warriors who were facing Niebla.

「Guah」

「Whaatt!?!」

「Dario-. Fedri!」

The soldiers——Dario and Febri raised scream of shock and got blown away. Because Dario was considerable young even among the elite guard, unlike the veteran Fedri, he was unable to defend right away and crashed on the ground some distance away without even being able to apply ukemi.

The hole that was opened from the absent of the two was immediately closed by Spenser. He blocked the brutal claws of Niebla using his sword and he held his ground trying to halt the rush's momentum.

「Guh, you bastard-」

『You're in the way-』

Miasma converged beside Niebla and took shape. It was the shape of three huge claws.

Lilin fired <Smashing Raging Wind>, but Niebla who blew up miasma upward and neutralized it didn't pause and unleashed the three claws in a horizontal swept toward Spenser.

The other soldiers had their hand full facing the black wolves. They couldn't move right away.

「I won't let you」

It was queen Moana who cut in. She slipped into Niebla's bosom from really close to the ground as though she was crawling there, and struck her sword at

his torso with a stunning slash.

Because Niebla immediately pulled back, the trajectory of the three large claws also shifted slightly. Spenser also wasted no time backing away and he got off with only his protector's surface torn.

『Chih. As expected, ordinary method won't work huh.』

Niebla spat that line out and plunged in the miasma claws. Spenser blocked that while Moana stepped toward Niebla.

But, Niebla seemed to also have predicted that movement.

「Dam——」

『First, I'll eat starting from that irritating caster!』

Niebla leaped over Moana's head and used the miasma claws he created himself as a foothold and leaped further, his sprang toward his objective——Lilin who was accurately slowing him down.

Lilin who was making prayer in order to back up Moana late to react just for a moment against Niebla's irregular movement. She wasted no time twisting her body while trying to pray for defense, but whatever the case it was impossible to completely dodge the attack.

It would be most satisfactory if she lost only an arm——she resolved herself for that but the next moment,

『——<Light Severance>-』

A light barrier that shined radiantly manifested in front of Lilin's eyes. Niebla's claws only raised unpleasant scraping sound *gigigi* and stopped before the light barrier.

「Wha, what!?!」

『What's this!?!』

Lilin's shocked voice and Niebla's surprised exclaim overlapped.

Niebla adroitly turned his body midair in a somersault and his legs stopped in front of the unknown technique. And then, he looked for the person that was the source of this with his atrocious beast eyes running at the surrounding.

It took a moment to specify the culprit.

『You, what the hell was that just now?』

*gururu* Niebla raised a growl that was brimming with killing intent and wariness while asking that.

The person his gaze was directed to was naturally

「Kouki!」

Moana's shout that was filled with shock and gratitude because he protected her comrade resounded.

But, her gaze, and then Niebla's beast eyes that were emitting killing intent were immediately narrowed in dubiousness.

Short and ragged breathing leaked out repeatedly could be heard.

Without any doubt, it was Kouki's breathing. It wasn't that he was adjusting his breathing. It even sounded like he was hyperventilating.

It was obvious even from Kouki's expression that he wasn't in a normal state.

Yes, it was something that even caused both enemy and ally to feel dubious——

Kouki's expression was pale, as though he was fearing something.

The tip of the holy sword his hand was holding was shaking a bit, while being pointed on the ground.

It wasn't——being pointed to Niebla, to the enemy in front of his gaze.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

# Arifureta Chapter 265

## Arifureta After II Why, Are You a Hero?

AN: The story ain't progressing even after I wrote twelve thousand words.....

---

He didn't understand.

Was he an enemy? Was there really no middle ground to talk with each other?

He didn't understand.

Were Moana's words the truth? Was justice really on her side?

He didn't understand.

Was it the correct thing to do, to cut down an existence with its own will while he was still not really understanding anything like this?

He didn't understand.

They were the enemy seeing how they came attacking. Enemy should be defeated. That decision should be correct. ....Was it really?

He didn't understand.

He should believe Moana and her people. ....Should he really?

He didn't understand.

Was his judgment really righteous? Was what he believed in correct? Was there something that he failed to notice? Was he averting his eyes from what he should see? Was there anything that he misread? Was he really not thinking conveniently?

He didn't understand. He didn't understand. He didn't understand.



『Hah, just a coward-』

Those thoughts rushed inside Kouki head for a moment in circles. A sneering voice that seemed to see through that caused Kouki to return to his senses in surprise.

When he noticed, brutal claws were approaching before his eyes.

「-!」

『Nuh』

Even when he was taken by surprise, the piled up experience and the greatest specs moved his body by itself. The holy sword that sprang up with a terrific speed shifted Niebla's claws upward.

Seeing his attack averted so easily caused Niebla to leak out a voice of shock. He could never imagine that a trembling young man with pale expression and ragged breathing from fear would be able to show a reaction this agile even in his wildest dream.

Although, Niebla's agitation only lasted a moment. The instant he passed Kouki by, he swung the miasma claws. He used his own body as camouflage to make the miasma claws attacked from Kouki's blind spot.

But, what resounded wasn't a scream of death agony or the graphic sound of flesh getting torn apart.

*shaaan* A single clear sound of scraping metals that didn't suit the battlefield. It was the sound of the miasma claws that were launched from the blind spot getting parried by Kouki's holy sword. He matched the motion of the miasma claws and averted only their trajectory.

『What-』

Niebla's agitation was clear to see this time. An impact ran through his stomach at that time.

『Gofuh!?!』

An impact that made him thought whether his internal organs were being stirred blew away his consciousness for an instant. He crashed on the ground without even any awareness of up and down. When Niebla recovered his

consciousness, his gaze ran toward Kouki.

He saw Kouki's figure raising one foot there and he finally understood that he got kicked flying.

It was a terrifying technique. While his reflex toward the first attack was also amazing, but even more than that was his sensing ability toward attack from a blind spot, technique that beautifully parried every attack instead of blocking, and then the perfect counterattack.

But, however,

(What's with that!? That man, just what's in the world is the deal with him!?)

Niebla felt more confused than scared. While this young man he was staring at possessed amazing technique like a veteran warrior, but he was still directing scared gaze toward Niebla even now.

Just a single kick pierced through Niebla's defense as though tearing through paper scrap and reduced him to a state where he still couldn't stand up right away. Just what in the world a man who could that was feeling scared at?

Or perhaps, he was merely acting? Niebla guessed, but seeing Kouki's state that was desperately stifling something inside himself, it didn't look like that at all.

That was why he didn't understand. Here was a warrior that might even surpassed Spenser, the royal guard of his sworn enemy the queen, and yet his attitude was too mismatched for someone like that, which made him unable to understand.

(Kuh, my underlings also cannot hold on for longer. Then, what I should prioritize is-)

Rather than focusing on a newcomer that he couldn't understand, he should prioritize attacking the enemy that would definitely caused collapse in the enemy side if that enemy was defeated, or even if he just wounded that enemy the enemy side would still be shaken. In that case, he would also be able to escape.

Niebla's eye glint moved away from Kouki and turned toward Moana.

『UOOOOOOOOOOOOON-!!』

It was a howl so loud that felt like the eardrum would get blown away from that. Right away, miasma with abnormal thickness and amount gushed out from Niebla's body.

The intense ejection of miasma that looked as though they would paint over the space itself like black ink was also a dangerous act for Niebla himself. Because it was an act that was equivalent with ejecting out his own life force.

But, in this battlefield where irregularity existed, the best choice was to escape with certainty. As though to show that, Niebla's ejected miasma transformed into several hundred tough claws.

「Your majesty-!」

「I pray-, this——」

「Kuh」

Anneal immediately leaped forward to protect Moana, Lilin was trying to use blessing art of protection while showing anxiety, and Moana resolved herself to intercept while sweating coldly, it was at that moment the miasma claws in the number that was absurd to even be counted attacked like a barrage.

「That's the only thing I won't let you do! ——<Heaven Severance>!」

Kouki cut in front of the tsunami of black and claws with a step-in that could be mistaken with a teleportation.

Moana called his name 「Kouki-」 with a voice that sounded concerned for him.

Were Moana words the truth? When he heard her voice, he couldn't imagine that she was deceiving him. This person who was worried for him when he was in danger even though they only met just now and she still hadn't ascertained his background, how could he think that she was using him or anything?

But,

(That's not it, that's not it at all. What I cannot believe is——)

His heart felt like it was being whipped and messed up inside a mixer. Even so,

the feeling that he had to protect moved Kouki.

Among the skill that he could invoke swiftly, this light element defensive magic could protect at the widest range——<Heaven Severance>. This magic that could deploy several layers of shining defensive wall simultaneously blocked all the rapidly approaching miasma claws.

Inside the miasma so thick it gave hallucination that the darkness of night was descending, countless layer of radiance defensive wall flew around like the torch of hope. Such scene even looked fantastical.

The miasma was blocked with certainty, and then Kouki's holy sword swept it aside.

That figure that perfectly handled Niebla's fierce attack that caused veteran soldiers like Spenser and others to gulp caused them to comprehend it, indeed, this person was certainly an existence that was invited by a great being. He was a magnificent warrior.

Everyone was thinking so during the dispersal of the miasma. Everyone other than Moana who was currently at Kouki's side, seeing his face that was desperately defending against the attack with an expression that looked like he was going to collapse anytime now.

『You bastard-, how far you are going to be a hindrance-!! –Tsk, next time I'll definitely bring you do——』

「There won't be any next time.」

Niebla finally recovered from the impact of Kouki's attack and he tried to slip into the miasma to retreat, but it was at that timing that Spenser broke through that miasma and rushed near.

Niebla wasted no time to swing his claws, but Spenser moved with flowing movement like water and his sword finally caught up to Niebla's torso.

『Gugah!?!』

「This is the end-」

Scream of fighting spirit surged out. Spenser's sword was enveloped in wing that possessed faint green radiance.

While Niebla's blood danced in the air, Spenser dodged the jaw attack that Niebla carried out in desperation and his beheading slash was sucked into Niebla's neck.

zan- Spenser's sword cut through. Niebla's huge body fell down. And then, Niebla's head rolled on the ground.

『The likes, of.....livestock is-』

Niebla fighting spirit didn't vanish even with his head removed, however, because of the limit of his body, he fell silent after spitting out words of resentment at the end. The miasma dispersed and light vanished from Niebla's eyes.

Spenser huffed and he sheathed his sword, and then he raised a tense voice 「Situation report!」. Right away, the royal guards who in the end didn't lose even a single person reported one after another that they were all safe, that Niebla's underlings were annihilated, and that Dario wasn't seriously injured although the bone of his arm broke.

It seemed there were many small wounds, but by using blessing art to heighten their self-recovery strength, wounds until simple broken bone could be healed within a few minutes.

「Hero-dono! Thank you very much for protecting her majesty. I say, that was really as expected from the chosen warrior of Foltina-sama. Truly, that was a splendid skill.」

Spenser was facing Kouki with an expression that was filled with praise and gratitude without even a speck of malice in it. The other soldiers were also the same. Lilin and Neisan were showing him respect even while gazing at him full of curiosity. It couldn't be helped that they became curious with Kouki's magic.

「Ah, no, it's nothing really big.....」

「Hahah, to be able to say that "it's nothing big" after enduring the fierce attack of a <Dark Being> of that level when he was sacrificing his life force! How very reliable! Hero-dono, once more, please take care of us from here on too.」

Spenser looked for a handshake with a friendly smile. It seemed he was harboring impression of a likeable young man who was an outstanding warrior

while also possessing humility toward Kouki.

But, even though Kouki was responding with the handshake request of such Spenser and also the soldiers who were gathering around him with similar expression like Spenser, his expression looked somewhat troubled throughout all that.

「Say, can I ask you all to call me by my name if possible? Don't call me hero. I don't mind if you call me Kouki.」

「Oo, what a happy thing to ask. Then I'll call you Kouki-dono. Only if you call me Spenser in return.」

The gaze of Spenser who perceived Kouki's words as another expression of friendliness was increasingly getting friendlier. The positivity level of the aging soldier was rising up steadily. And it seemed it was also the same with Lilin and others.

Kouki's expression was getting increasingly looked as though he was stuffing his cheeks with bitter food. However his expression was turning into one where it looked like he was desperately holding it so it wouldn't come out on his face.

「Kouki, let me also give you my words of thanks. That preeminent skill is really worthy of respect. I wish to express my gratitude with something but..... in any case, we also cannot really be carefree after receiving the attack just now. I want to depart immediately though.....」

「Ah, yes. I have no objection. It seems that the information of Moana-sama and others coming here was leaked out. Indeed, it's better for us to hurry.」

Moana entered between his conversation with Spenser and others looking somewhat as though she was putting a damper on things. Kouki let the tension bled out of his shoulders toward that interruption as though in relief.

They once more advanced quickly as a party toward the edge of the forest with Spenser in the lead.

Before long they could see the border of the forest. Kouki saw multiple large silhouettes taking position in front of the border and his hand reached out toward his sheathed holy sword.

「Kouki, it's okay. Those are our mount animals.」

「.....Your mount, is it? They look like large lizard though.」

「Right. They are called Arous. Their trait is their flat torso and long neck. Their running ability is high with little shaking. They are mainly eating fruit even though they look like that. They are really taking kindly to human you know?」

From the point of view of Kouki whose common sense when speaking about a transportation method using animal would think of horse, he felt a bit bewildered of mounting a lizard more than two meter long with atrocious face.

When he got nearer, he could see something like collar and U-shaped fetter and something like a stool to sit down attached on the animal's back. He guessed that the rider could stay standing or sitting by lying heavily on the stomach on the saddle.

From a glance, their atmosphere felt like 「Hyahhaa—! There is human! The food! I'm gonna eat them alive yeah!」 looking as though they were going to attack, but seeing the equipment attached on them then indeed, they certainly looked like a transportation method of this world.

(I see, they are like the monster that the devil race used as mount huh.....  
But, hm~m.....

For the moment Kouki accepted that they weren't dangerous existence, but this time he became bothered by something else.

There were ten Arous in total, but the Arous with the best physique and style among those ten had a large ribbon tied on top of its head. A pink ribbon. The ribbon was really pink.

Brutal looking face, eyes that shined with fierce glint, the leaked out growling voice *guruu*, the imposing air.....but, on its head was a pink ribbon.

What surrealism. Was this the fashion sense of this world's people? Or else, was that an indispensable equipment? No, other than this one Arous that looked like leader, the other Arous weren't wearing ribbon or anything.....

Kouki was confused.

Moana followed Kouki's gaze and she guessed what he was staring at. And

then looking a bit boastful she approached the Arous with ribbon.

「Fufu, what do you think? It's cute right? This child is my personal mount. His name is Haumu. The~re there, Haumu~, your master has returned back here~. Were you lonely?」

Moana caressed Haumu's head *rub rub, pat pat*. 'I see' Kouki realized, it looked like this Arous wasn't just a mount. Moana seemed to harbor a definite fondness to it. He guessed that this Arous was in a position of pet, or perhaps partner of Moana.

Both sides held trust at each other——

「Guryah」

「Ouch!?!」

Haumu's headbutt was launched. Moana's head was thrown back hard. Kouki became flustered 「As I thought it's ferocious!?!」, but whether Anneal or Spenser or the others, none of them paid that any attention and they kept preparing their own mount for their departure from here.

「Fufu, what, as I thought you were lonely alone? When we got home I'll give you a lot of care okay, so~——ouch!?!」

‘This cute cheeky guy!’ When Moana tried to hug Haumu once more with that kind of feel, a jaw drop that was like a heel drop kick burst on the crown of Moana's head.

「.....Excuse me, are you okay?」

「Ahaha, there is no problem at all here, Kouki. Haumu is a spoiled child since a long time ago you see. He would frolic at me right away when I approached him.」

「Guryuu」

「No, that, no matter how I look at it.....」

When Moana turned her head toward Kouki, Haumu's mouth closed *snap* on her whole head. Moana was struggling and squirming. No matter how he looked at it, he could only think that she was being preyed on.



「Sto, stop it Haumu! Right now isn't the time for playing around! That's why, ah, it hurts! Haumu, it's a bit, no, it's really hurt here! Come on, you are a good child so let me——AA」

Moana tapped repeatedly *peshi peshi* at Haumu's head to say give up. Haumu was chewing on Moana as though to appeal of something, or perhaps as though to clear up a grudge of many years.

Kouki who couldn't bear to see that looked at Anneal asking for help. Anneal let out a sigh while pointing at Haumu's head with her finger motion.

Kouki fearfully approached Haumu.

「Err, Haumu?」

「Guruu」

When Kouki turned his gaze at Haumu's head, Haumu nodded as though to say 「Please」. His teeth dug into Moana. Those were the teeth of a herbivore, so the teeth didn't pierce through, but it must be still hurt. A small scream 「Au!？」 came from Moana.

Kouki slowly reached out his hand and took the ribbon from Haumu's hand.

Haumu conveyed his gratitude at Kouki with his gaze, and then he did 「Peh」 at Moana as though he was spitting out his spit.

「Uu, ge, geez Haumu. You're really a pampered child.」

Moana crumbled down on the ground as though she had been assaulted by hoodlum, and she wiped up her face that was slathered with saliva. Her way of talking was changing must be because she was a little shaken. She was averting her face shyly from Kouki who was looking down at her with a really complicated expression.

「The, then Kouki. You can sit behind me——cough, I wonder if it's agreeable for you to ride behind me?」

「Ah, yes.」

Moana was still slathered with saliva, however, in order to recover the dignity of queen, Moana changed her way of talking back. Following her, Kouki climbed on Haumu's back. As expected, it seemed the standard was to ride by standing.

When Moana climbed up, it felt like 「Chih」 sound could be heard from Haumu but.....that must be an imagination, there was no way he could clicked his tongue.

「Hm? Eh? The ribbon is.....」

It seemed Moana noticed when he got on Haumu's back. Moana was looking around restlessly in a state seemed to say 'Where has the ribbon gone?'. The ribbon was in Kouki's hand.

Haumu turned his long neck and stared at Kouki. An earnest feeling that could be seen just from a glance was residing in those eyes. That was a feeling of, 「Do something about this woman!」.

「.....Looks like it flew off somewhere just now. Moana-sama, there is also the matter about the attack, isn't it better if we depart soon rather than later?」

「I, I guess. Right, I'm sorry Kouki. That ribbon was Haumu's favorite but..... this is not the time for saying anything like that isn't it.」

It felt like killing intent was residing in Haumu's gaze. Kouki understood. Haumu's gaze was declaring 「Who are you saying is pleased with that thing huh, idiottt! I'm gonna let you die someday, just you wait!」.

Kouki who somehow guessed the relationship between the queen and her personal mount was——slowly entering the ribbon into his pocket. In the world, there was also things that was better to be treated as not existing.

Haumu's eyes brightened. It seemed that his positivity level toward Kouki was steadily increasing. 「Guruu♪」 Perhaps it was just his imagination, but Haumu was raising a growl that sounded like he was in good mood.

「Fufu, are you happy being able to run together with me? This cute cheeky guy! But, we have guest today here. So run carefully out there okay.」

「Gurya!!」

Was that a simple reply, or was that a yell of denial 「Ain't no way I'm happy about, that, you idiottt!」, in any case with the powerful roar of Haumu as the signal, the party left the forest.

Right after they left the forest, what leaped into Kouki's sight was a sand colored world. There was the color of sand continuing until the horizon as far as his eyes could see. Moana's words that the forest behind them was something rare was certainly a fact.

「Compared with Guryuen.....this is different huh.」

That was the impression of Kouki who saw this vast desert.

A great desert existed in Tortus. It was a world of brown color. A world that was filled with the same heat and sand like this place.

But, Kouki understood. The great desert of Guryuen and this desert were decisively different. He was unable to find any words that could express what was the difference accurately but, if he had to say it——

「It's dead.」

「.....Right. It's just as you say. This is a dead world.」

Moana affirmed Kouki's words. Haumu was advancing through the sand with surprisingly little shaking and surprising speed. Above him, Moana who was holding on the U-shaped fetters while looking back across her shoulder at Kouki had eyes that were filled with grief.

「This is not just a desert. This is the result from blessing power, the power for the sake of living getting thoroughly stolen. Once, before the large scale war that occurred about a hundred years ago, it seemed that this area was also a verdant forest.」

「War.....」

About a hundred years ago, a war, no, a decisive battle of the Nth time that occurred between mankind and the <Dark Being>.

The one who stood at the front as the leader was the king of Synclea kingdom at the time. At the end of the fierce battle, while great damage resulted for both humans and also nature, even so that king succeeded in bringing down the king of the <Dark Being> of that time.

「The honorable ancestor drove away the army of <Dark Being>. The compensation for that was nature was lost from 80% of the kingdom but.....

even so nature is still left behind at the surrounding of the unaltered capital. I believe that was an amazing war result.」

「The capital wasn't relocated after that?」

He understood from seeing this desert that could only be expressed as “dying”. This was a place that human couldn't possibly live at. Eighty percent of the country territory died. He believed it was a matter of course for the capital to be relocated for the country's revival attempt.

Moana looked at faraway while opened her mouth in respond to Kouki's question.

「The king of <Dark Being>——because he looked completely dark from the abnormal thickness of his miasma, we called him the <Dark King>, but it is said that guy lived for long as the strongest existence among the <Dark Being> who were saving strength.」

「Dark King.....」

「Do you get it? We are not talking about lineage. He is not an existence that will end after being defeated once. The <Dark King> exist in every era. Although there is variety in his strength each time though.」

Moana's gaze that was staring at far away ran through the vast desert. Kouki guessed what Moana wanted to say and he whispered.

「This place is still a battlefield isn't it? This is also the best place for it.」

「Yes. Because there is no blessing power that can be stolen from here. In this desert, those fellows can only use the miasma that they stored inside their body. The point where no blessing power cannot be obtained from the surrounding also apply to us, but even so, it's ideal that those fellow won't be able to get strengthened and destroy nature for more than now.」

That was why they didn't relocate the capital. Because the ruined territory was exactly the best battlefield there was. The soldiers of Synclea were remaining in this barren land for the sake of continuing battle. No matter how many months and years passed, Synclea kingdom was the front line battlefield.

「Of course, we are moving our people to place that still have nature

remaining. We entrust the feudal lord of every area with autonomy. We are leaving the production of the main food and everything else to them.」

「What is the prospect of the enemy circling around this desert and aim at every other territory?」

Moana shook her head to answer Kouki's question.

According to her, the <Dark Being> were ruling the eastern land, the kingdom's territory was at the west with this great desert sandwiched in between. A sea was spreading at the north, and similar like a desert, in the sea there was nothing to block the sight, so if any Dark Being tried to come from there, the surveillance unit stationed at each territory would notice.

At the south there was mountain range area spreading, at the other side of the mountain area there was a large country that still remained and constructed their battlefield like Synclea, so if something happened then a notice would immediately reach them.

Therefore, it was impossible for the <Dark Being> to invade the western territory without Synclea kingdom noticing.

The desert and Synclea's capital were literally the last fortress and also the front line battlefield.

「.....How admirable.」

「Thank you.」

Kouki put his hand on his chest and said that, toward all the soldiers, and then toward the young queen who led them. Moana smiled happily and nodded at such Kouki.

Silence continued for a while. Kouki pursed his lips into a straight line and turned his gaze downward, he was turning his thought toward the soldiers who he was told about.

Moana was glancing repeatedly across her shoulder to such Kouki. And then after she showed hesitation several times, she opened her mouth.

「Kouki. Can I ask you something?」

「? What is it?」

Kouki lifted his face. Moana's gaze wandered around, looking like she was choosing her words.

「That, is.....why, are you, a hero?」

「Eh?」

It felt like something cold was entering slowly into Kouki's chest. It felt like he was asked 'isn't it presumptuous for you to call yourself that?'. It felt like Kouki's weakness that was exposed at the fight against Niebla was seen through.

Seeing Kouki who was shaken and his face complexion worsened, Moana added more of her words in hurry.

「Ah, no, that's not what I meant. It's not that I'm ridiculing you. I'm only wondering that it's a curious way of calling you.」

「Curious, is it?」

Understanding that Moana's intention was different from what he thought, Kouki let out the tension from his stiffened face and tilted his head.

「Yes. I thought it's curious. When I heard from Foltina-sama that a hero is summoned, I don't really understand what kind of person would appear. Because, don't you think so too? Hero(yuusha)—if we take the literal meaning of that word, the meaning will be “a person with courage”.」 (TN: The word yuusha is made from two kanji, the kanji of courage and person. Yuusha can mean hero, the brave, or man of valor in Japan.)

Moana threw a questioning gaze at Kouki to confirm that they were in the same page. Kouki nodded.

「If that's the case, then I can throw out my case and say with surety. That the soldiers of my country, are all “hero(yuusha)” without a single exception.」

「Ah.....」

Kouki was taken aback and leaked out a small voice. Moana looked back and stared straight at Kouki.

「If by perchance, Kouki is a man who had accomplished some great exploits, and that was why you were chosen by Foltina-sama.....then shouldn't such

person be called as “hero(eiyuu)” instead?」 (TN: Eiyuu is made from kanji of ‘Han’ and man. In Japan it means hero, heroine, great person)

「That’s.....」

「Ah, no, it’s not that I wish to trouble Kouki. I’m just wondering.」

Sensing Kouki’s perplexity, Moana said 「Forgive me for asking something strange」 and she returned her gaze to the front.

But, Moana’s words were clinging completely inside Kouki. Question was overflowing inside his mind.

Just what in the world a hero(yuusha) was.

(Thinking back now, just what is a hero? I called myself that because that’s my vocation. But, still, hero——a person with courage.....that’s a person’s nature, it cannot be called an “occupation” that showed a person’s innate ability isn’t it?)

He recalled. The vocation of his comrades.

Healer. Martial artist. Swordsman. Barrier user.....

Yes, everyone had vocation that was connected to an actual occupation. It was only “hero(yuusha)” that was of a different disposition. Certainly, rather than a transcription of a work one had aptitude toward, it was a title that displayed one’s character. So to speak, it was a transcription that wasn’t any different with vocation of “pessimist”, “optimist”, or “good person” or “bad person”.

If one wanted to describe a vocation that led the people and fought powerful enemy, then it should be better to call that vocation using “commander” or even “king” instead.

(Was it because in Tortus “hero(yuusha)” is recognized as occupation? However, if it’s the case of “a person that accomplished great exploits” just like Moana-sama mentioned, then it should be fine to use “hero(eiyuu)” instead. Why am I “a person with courage”? Just what am I.....)

Why did he obtain the vocation of something like hero(yuusha)?

When he looked back at the events at Tortus, even himself was harboring doubt whether he even have possessed such nature in himself.

How many times he was unable to move in the crucial times? How many times he failed without even choosing anything? How many times he acted as he pleased and dragged his comrades into trouble?

Why was someone like him a “hero”?

——Why, are you, a hero?

「.....I don't know. I really, don't know.」

That voice sounded wrung out from his throat, it sounded like it would vanish anytime.

Moana who understood that it was an answer toward her question just now looked back once more. And then, she peeked at Kouki who was looking down with a fixed stare.

「I see. ....It will be great if you understand it someday. Yep, surely the time will come when you understand the reason.」

「.....Why, do you think so?」

In respond to Moana whose manly way of talking broke down, Kouki unconsciously also asked back with his plain way of talking.

Moana smiled. Her expression looked affectionate.

「Because, aren't you still struggling? Aren't you doing your best to find the answer? The world isn't so cold that it would trample down that kind of person.」

「.....Is that so?」

「That's so.」

The world would surely smile at those who kept struggling without giving up. The one who said those words with conviction was a queen who was continuing to fight wholeheartedly in a world that was heading to ruin. For Kouki, those were words that were really heavy and really beautiful that caused him to be taken aback.

The two stared at each other. The eyes of Anneal and Lilin who were keeping pace beside them looked curious like cat. And then, the eyes of Spenser that



were looking back from the front with a cold gaze.

「Nnh」

「Cough, ahem」

Moana and Kouki did something that looked like coughing or perhaps not while quietly taking distance from each other.

The lips of Anneal and Lilin crooked with the feel of 「Mufuu~」. Their maiden sensor might be reacting to the scene just now.

「Ho, how long until we reach the capital.」

「Ri, right. I believe we will arrive at the evening with our current pace.」

Kouki asked an information that he already heard before this to varnish over the matter, and Moana also answered in the same attempt.

They continued to advance while inside that really delicate atmosphere for a while. Slightly elevated hills were starting to get visible here and there.

But, at that time, like a rehash of the event inside the forest, Kouki suddenly reacted to something and looked up.

「Kouki?」

Moana asked Kouki while she raised her fist and commanded the unit to stop moving.

Right after that,

「-, something is falling here! Evacuate!」

「Advance! Rush ahe——」

Moana wasted no time responding at Kouki's warning, but multiple objects freefalling and crashing at their surrounding arrived faster than that.

*zudon-zudon-* What were crashing on the ground with that roaring sound that shook the ground were living things that looked like lizard, clad in thick miasma. They were wearing equipment that looked like protector, and from their bone structure it could be seen that they were mainly walking with two legs. From their appearance, they were what they called as Lizardman in RPG.

「-, scaled dragon species!? Just what in the world!?!」

Moana's confused voice resounded. Her reaction was understandable. If this was an ambush, then she would just give instruction right away to form formation and prepare to intercept. In that case there wouldn't be any hesitation whatsoever and the royal guard would finish carrying out that order in a moment just like when facing Niebla and his underlings.

But, the lizardmen called scaled dragon species that fell from the sky—six of them were already dying. Naturally the cause of them dying was the impact from their fall. If it wasn't because of the thick protector they were wearing that wasn't suited for battle and also the impact reduction from their miasma, they might have died instantly.

These enemies launched a surprise attack yet they almost get annihilated at the same time with their entrance. Moana and her people could only look at the situation like that.

They weren't knowing that the objective of this surprise attack was exactly to take advantage of that confusion.

「「「GIIIIIAAAAAAAAH」」」

「「「GUEEEEEEEEEEEH」」」

Shrieks burst out. Those weren't screams from pain or suffering. They were the same scream like Niebla's scream. They were emitting miasma by staking their life. The six lizardmen were gushing out miasma that rivaled what Niebla did before.

「Impossible-, are they planning to suicide!?!」

「Your majesty, please escape! Lilin, your wind!」

Moana leaked out voice of shock while Spenser roared angrily.

The six lizardmen were obviously of lower status than Niebla. Yet regardless of that they were scattering miasma that rivaled Niebla was because they were literally exchanging their life for it.

It was truly a suicide attack. An ambush of suicide bombing from the sky was something outside expectation.

The miasma that exploded and dyed the surrounding area black instantly didn't grant any time for escape, for Lilin to activate her wind, or even for Kouki to respond.

Everything was swallowed by blackness and vanished.

If it was seen from slight distance away, it looked like a tornado of black flame was generated. Moana and others were inside that tornado.

At that timing, a pterosaur descended down from the sky. At its back was a scaled dragon species that was conspicuously larger than normal. He was equipped with metallic protector and his hand was holding a large spear.

『Looks like it was worth it instigating Niebla. Although the miasma stone the queen is carrying is special, but it won't be able to endure that guy's miasma and the miasma of six underlings using up all their life.』

‘Ge-ge-ge-’ The scaled dragon species raised a weird laugh.

It seemed that the leaking out of the information that Moana and her people left the capital with few number and Niebla getting hold of that information were all the scheming of this scaled dragon species.

Everything was for the sake of reducing the capacity limit of the miasma stone that was the lifeline for Moana and her people. And then, he would deal the finishing blow easily when Moana and others became unable to move.

『With this my king's——』

The scaled dragon species was standing calmly while staring in pleasure at the miasma completely ruining Moana and her people, but the voice and phenomenon that suddenly occurred caused him to swallow back his own words.

「Turn this place into sanctuary, let none of god's enemy through——<Sacred Severance>!!」

*GOU*- Pure white light burst up. The storm of miasma that could be mistaken as black flame ruptured from inside, and a dazzling light swelled up in half-sphere state.

Not the slightest bit of miasma existed at the inside of that light, the miasma

that was blown away along with the light melted into the air and dispersed.

『Wha, what?』

At the end of the gaze of the scaled dragon species who couldn't hide his agitation, were the royal guards and Arous who collapsed at the other side of the shining barrier, and also the queen.

But, there was just one person, a man that looked unaffected at all even inside that much miasma was holding the limp Moana in his arms.

『You-, what the hell are you! How are you that calm even after getting bathed in that much miasma!?!』

The scaled dragon species that somehow pulled himself back together from his confusion readied his large spear while yelling angrily.

Kouki softly put Moana to recline on Haumu and he whispered something while ignoring the scaled dragon species's angry yell. And then, something that looked like light particles showered down on everybody including Moana and enveloped them in a gentle light.

Seeing that——Kouki unsheathed his holy sword while turning his gaze to the scaled dragon species.

Kouki showed the same reaction at the scaled dragon species just like with Niebla.

Face that turned pale. Shaking body. Ragged breathing.

But, there already wasn't anyone else here that would finish the enemy while he was holding it in.

If he ran away, Moana and others would die.

Even if he prolonged it, as expected they would still die.

If he didn't choose, they would die.

The time for choosing, had come.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about

misspelling and omitted words.

I'm sorry that the gloomy story is continuing.

Next chapter the fundamental problem that Kouki is holding will become clear.

If possible, I hope I can make consecutive posting next week.

Even Shirakome also want to progress the story in one go until where the tale move in a big way. After that as expected it will be like musou game isn't it. (TN: Like playing in Dynasty Warrior or Samurai Warrior game)

Although, there are important parts more than just Kouki's growth, so I'll endeavor to not cut corners.

There are opinions 'Kouki arc is just, you know~' here and there, so I thought that the number of people reading will decrease by a lot, but the number of the PV or the review after reading isn't dropping. It feels like Shirakome will melt from the kindness of Narou people.

Thank you~

# Arifureta Chapter 266

## Arifureta After II A Fundamental Problem

AN: Serious-san has the principle of going home regularly.

My fingers moved by themselves.....

---

The brilliant light enveloped the collapsed Moana and others in half-sphere state.

Their miasma stones that had the function of absorbing miasma that made it possible for human to act inside miasma for a period of time were dyed muddy black. The complexion of Moana and others went straight passed white and became ashen color.

Not just Moana and her people, Haumu and the other Arous., the mounted beasts also powerlessly splayed out their four limbs where they could only repeat breathing in short gasps.

They were only barely living. The blessing power inside the body of Moana and others were holding on to their life.

But, it was obvious that it wouldn't be long before the scythe of death god would touch them. Their time limit was near.

Kouki made Moana leaned on Haumu's body, and step by step he walked toward the lizardman who was the <Dark Being> that caused this situation. (TN: I changed the Black People into Dark Being cause it seemed those words could cause misunderstanding.)

The tip of the holy sword that was pointed to the ground was slightly trembling, and his breathing was ragged. The feeling of wanting to run away without choosing anything was clamoring inside himself like a locked beast that was trying to escape from its cage.

Kouki came to a stop after he got out and took a step away from the boundary of the highest class light element defensive magic <Sacred Severance>. An angry yell was thrown to such Kouki once more.

『You-, I'm asking what the hell are you! What's that strange light! How the hell you are able to stand!?!』

Sharp dragon eyes. Dragon scales that looked harder than even steel armor. His whole body was bulging with muscles, and his hands were readying a long and large spear.

It was clear just from confronting this Dark Being face to face like this. That he was a strong one that had achieved considerable military achievement.

Yes,

(He isn't a beast.)

This opponent was a warrior that possessed intelligence.

As though finding a ray of hope, Kouki thought of the six beings that didn't give any reaction to his <Presence Detection> and asked back instead.

「.....Weren't they, your comrade?」

『What?』

The lizardman didn't seem to understand what Kouki was asking him for a moment and he let out a voice of dubiousness. But, he immediately guessed that Kouki was speaking about his six compatriots that performed “suicide bombing” to scatter highly thick miasma by paying with their life as the compensation, and he answered with a snort.

『Obviously they were my underlings.』

「You, commanded them to die?」

『.....Just what are you asking? What are you talking about since some time ago?』

The scaled dragon specious didn't understand the intention of Kouki's question and was getting more and more suspicious.

He must never even imagined that Kouki was getting desperate in trying to

find even a bit more reason to make his “choice”.

Because this was a guy that abandoned his comrades, because this was a guy that made light of life without any reason.

That was why, it should be fine to kill him, just like what he did all this time when facing against monster, something like that.

Kouki’s expression distorted painfully while stringing his words together.

「If, this is only what if. What are you going to do if I say you can go to another world?」

『What?』

「If you can migrate together with flora and fauna too, to a new world that is filled with blessing power, and you can live there without fighting human.....or it can also be the reverse, the human will be the one that move away. If you can live in a world without human, a world of only <Dark Being>——」

This was the last resort. Because this was a plan that completely relied on that man, it was a proposal without any positive proof. But, if there was that man’s compass and crystal key, then perhaps they would be able to find an inhabited world. In addition, securing enough of the necessary blessing power would also be possible.

‘That guy is different than me, surely there is nothing impossible for him, that’s why’, Kouki thought.

The long battle that passed between Moana and her people against the <Dark Being>.

Perhaps there wasn’t any more ground for them to coexist together.

Perhaps there wasn’t any more room to talk between them.

Then, was the only path left was where one of them conquered everything?

Was battle unavoidable, that one side had to be sunk into the abyss of despair?

Was there really no third path.....

The suggestion of “separated living” by migrating to a new world.



That was an idea that was brought about from Kouki's pondering. <Dark Being> that possessed will and would go hungry if they didn't consume blessing power, and human that couldn't endure the miasma and unable to live without blessing power everywhere around them. That idea came because Kouki couldn't find a clearly correct "choice" like in a novel or drama where good was rewarded and evil was punished.

If it was about the compensation for that man, then he was determined to pay it in any kind of shape. That was the only thing that Kouki could decided promptly right now.

But, that desperate proposal of such Kouki was,

『Hah』

Kicked to the curb in rejection by a sneer and a violent "thrust".

Kouki caught his breath, but his reaction was quick. He parried the tip of the long spear using his holy sword. *gigigi* The sound of metals scraping each other resounded along with scattered sparks.

The lizardman immediately pulled back his long spear and launched repeated thrust like surging waves. Those thrusts that were controlled with immense physical strength and flexible muscle were uncommon.

Kouki handled the attack while he raised his voice further.

「Wait, listen to me! I came from another world! The barrier behind me is the proof of that! Even without human and <Dark Being> fighting, perhaps there is a way for a future where both sides can live without annihilating the other! That's why——」

The holy sword blocked a sweep of the spear. *gan* Impact sound resounded and a slight numbness ran through Kouki's arm. It became a situation of sword locking contest. In that situation, the lizardman showed a scorn in his dragon eyes and said his piece.

『That's shocking-. I never thought this kind of coward still exist! Aah, I'' recognize it! You are really a human of another world. There is no way someone like you is a warrior of this country!』

*gou* Miasma spouted out from the lizardman. No, perhaps it should be said instead that he released the miasma. The miasma that was released to blow at Kouki became a physical impact that made Kouki's feet left the ground. When that happened, naturally Kouki got blown away to the side due to the pressure from the sword locking contest.

Kouki bounced several times on the sand before he barely performed ukemi and rearranged his balance to stand on his knee. When he returned his gaze to the dragon scaled species, he saw the figure of the enemy ignoring him while rushing toward <Sacred Severance>.

The lizardman who was ignoring Kouki struck his long spear toward the barrier with a yell of fighting spirit.

『Chih! This hardness is really something!』

The lizardman spontaneously cursed seeing the shining barrier only giving off impact sound without even a scratch.

The barrier was of the highest class. It wouldn't be broken that easily. But, the lizardman also didn't have the time to keep attacking it as he pleased.

Kouki charged forward while cloud of dust was left behind from his momentum and this time he was the one who blew away the lizardman.

Even while getting blown away, the lizardman killed the momentum by crawling on all four.

「Why are you rejecting a path where both sides might be able to survive....., why-, won't you choose the path of living!」

『Don't make me laugh-』

The lizardman easily cut down Kouki's pained appeal.

『You are telling me to recognize that the like of livestock, the like of food has the right to live freely? That's just crazy!』

You are nuts for trying to look for something that doesn't exist from us as though we are human.

Is that because you are a human of another world? That you have that kind of thinking?

The existence of other world, whether it really exist or not. Such thing doesn't matter.

I'll teach you. The truth of this world. Just what is the meaning of living!

The lizardman trampled forward hard *don* and stood up. He stepped firmly on the ground of sand like a large tree, and he threw out his chest without even an ounce of shame.

『Fight, steal, conquer, rule! Those are exactly the long-cherished desire of the living!』

Miasma was overflowing from the whole body of the lizardman. The thickness of the miasma was increasing in concert with his roar.

『We are turning human into livestock, to create a new world where the pain of hunger vanished! So that we, <The Being Clad in Scale Armor> can have an exceptional position! The head of the queen is indispensable!』

A pressure that was unseen by eye assaulted Kouki. That wasn't a distinctive power. It was a dominating aura, a mettle, the power of resolve that he dedicated for the future of the scaled dragon species he was looking at.

『Then, I'll reward my followers who staked their life! Listen-, you half-baked person who possessed strength beyond your position! My name is Ragal! The chief of <The Being Clad in Scale Armor>!』

'Aah', Kouki thought. His heart leaked out a sigh of admiration and also despair.

Did this person ordered his comrades to die? Perhaps, so, perhaps not. He didn't know the truth, but there was only one thing that he was certain about, those lizardmen who carried out the crazy surprise attack by freefalling from the sky and accomplished their objective with their life as the payment, they too also possessed a definite resolve. They didn't perish inside grief and despair that they couldn't oppose and defy by any means!

『I'll kill you, and take——the queen's head!』

Sand pillar blew up. That sand pillar that looked as though it was piercing the sky was the mark of Ragal's step. He wore his miasma like armor and appeared

instantly before Kouki's eyes with his long spear that he also covered in miasma.

Kouki evaded the sharp thrust that pierced through the wind by moving half his body to behind. The long spear's thrust instantly transformed into a sweep that ignored the inertia.

The pressure from that attack was far greater than before. It could be clearly seen that the strength inside the attack was ascending further. Kouki immediately used his holy sword as shield, but by doing that it felt like the sword would be thrown away along with his arm.

Kouki desperately braced his legs, but suddenly the pressure vanished and he unintentionally stumbled. The next moment, his feet floated lightly. The miasma that seemed to seep into the ground unnoticed stirred up the sand below Kouki's feet.

The long spear was swung once more at Kouki who lost his balance. Kouki averted the spear by slamming his palm on the flat side of the spear tip, but then the peculiar attack of scaled dragon species assaulted him.

The rotating Ragal launched a spinning kick followed by his sweeping dragon tail.

The upper and middle area was blocked like that. Dodging was impossible.

The claws of the legs were approaching, followed by dragon tail that became like a blade with the miasma enveloping it. Terror was rushing through Kouki's whole body instinctually. He backstepped desperately and only barely managed to dodge.

But, it seemed that Ragal had read the flow of offense and defense until that far. He showed not a shred of turmoil that his attack was evaded, he smoothly formed a throwing spear made from miasma. It was fired like a bullet from close range toward Kouki's head.

Excluding some case that was out of norm, the dynamic vision and reflexes of Kouki who boasted specs at the pinnacle had saved his life until now. When he shifted his body faster than his awareness, the miasma throwing spear passed through with only a scratch on Kouki's neck.

Kouki backstepped even further when his feet touched the ground and he widened the distance.

There was the sensation of warmth and something trickling on his neck.

Without averting his gaze from Ragal who readied his long spear once more, one of Kouki's hands slowly caressed his neck. His fingertip felt something wet, something with raw sensation.

「-」

It wasn't a fatal wound. It was only his skin that was cut. But, it was an attack toward his neck. A lump of ice slid down inside Kouki's heart.

Just now, he almost died.....

Scary.....

Death was scary.

Nothing convenient would occur. Death was right before his eyes. He wondered, how was he able to say something like「Everything is absolutely going to be okay」before. Anyone would die when it was the time to die.

Amanogawa Kouki, could die easily.

Scary.....terrifying.....

Ragal was gradually closing the distance. He wasn't letting his guard down or getting self-conceited. He planned to kill Kouki carefully and then returned triumphantly with Moana's head. There was no turmoil or hesitation inside him.

Scary.....

Killing was scary.

Severing the life of a being that possessed will, it was something that was really terrifying.

Killing Ragal. Became the ally of Moana and her people and then killed all of the <Dark Being> to the last.

Surely doing that meant killing the hope of the <Dark Being>.

It meant crushing their dearest wish, severing their thread of life, and

granting them despair.

Scary.....

It felt scary to control the survival of someone.

Someone who might be able to live a proper life would get derailed by getting involved with him. Such thing was unbearably terrifying.

Something was moving at the corner of his sight. When he sent a glance that way while slowly taking distance away from Ragal, he saw the figure of the collapsed Moana there.

She was supposedly leaning on Haumu, but it seemed she stirred and fell on the ground. Or perhaps, she was getting weaker that she was unable to even maintain her leaning position.

Scary.....

Death was scary.

Killing was scary.

Making mistake was scary.

But,

——Not being able to protect, was scarier. That was the only thing, that he couldn't endure.

So,

It was only the failure of “cannot choosing”, that he absolutely couldn't tolerate anymore, so,

That was why,

「I'll kill you」

His face looked like it was going to cry, his voice was trembling, however, he spoke his “choice” clearly.

Kouki took a step forward.

Even saying that it took an instant was still lacking to describe it. It was as though the ground was shrunk closer, his speed was literally like that when he

appeared before Ragal's eyes.

『Nuh』

A diagonal slash from above that looked only like a silver flash caused Ragal to block it just barely with his long spear even while staring in astonishment. Instantly Ragal's legs were buried into the sand along with a thunderous sound that felt like an earthquake. If they were standing on a hard ground then perhaps there would even be a crater formed.

Speed and destructive power that were incomparable from before. If Ragal let his guard down, the brutal attack might split him into two together with his spear.

In that attack, there was certainly “killing intent” that was nonexistent until now filled into it.

『Don't underestimate mee-』

Ragal gushed out miasma that was accompanied with impact along with a loud scream of fighting spirit.

「——<Light Severance>-!」

Barrier of light manifested between Kouki and Ragal.

The barrier was instantly smashed from the impact it got showered with, but it accomplished enough of its objective to not let its creator got pushed back.

Toward Kouki who neutralized the miasma shockwave just as planned, Ragal used his everything, miasma of thrown spear, spear attack combo with gyration, hand claws, jaw, kick, and dragon tail to launch an offensive that was like a surging waves.

Kouki handled, dodge, repelled, and intercepted all of those.

『-, you are still-, going further up!? You bastard-, what in the world——』

The sword attack finally surpassed Ragal's martial might. Ragal was forced to switch from offensive into defensive, and this time he raised a voice that was definitely shocked and agitated.....

An upward slash. The long spear was thrown far away.

Thrown spear of miasma. It was evaded with a twirl.

The two passed each other,

「-aAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

A sword flash drew an arc along with a war cry that sounded like a scream.

Briefly, cloud of dust danced in the air.

Kouki who stayed unmoving in a position of finishing the slash of the holy sword was silent with his back toward the back of Ragal who was in a stance of swinging up his long spear halfway.

『How, can.....this be.....』

That voice was filled with feeling of shock, despair, and then resentment. Those were the last words of Ragal.

Slowly, the lizard head shifted and fell to the ground. Miasma scattered in a burst and the large body crumbled down following the falling head.

Kouki wordlessly looked up to the sky and took a deep breath. And then, he slowly turned around. In order to see the result of what he had done.

A head that threw an empty gaze at empty air. A large body that lost its head and spurted out blood. Dark red blood that dyed the ground of sand.

The definite proof of a life stolen.

「tsu, oguh, geeh」

The thing that welled up even when he only killed monster that didn't possess will or intelligence overflowed this time without him being unable to hold it back. But, in the first place because he hadn't eaten anything for long, what came out was only the stomach's gastric juice.

Kouki supported his body with his holy sword while falling in one knee. In this moment he looked as though he had aged drastically. His rounded back looked as though something enormously heavy was weighing him down. His trembling back looked as though he was desperately enduring that weigh.

He desperately kept hold of his consciousness that was forcefully shutting down in order to protect his heart from the mental burden. Right now wasn't



the time to faint, it wasn't the time to be absorbed with the repulsive sensation remaining in his hand, that was how he persuaded himself.

「-, guh, I have to go.....」

Even though his stamina hadn't been used up, but his body was heavy like lead. Kouki dragged himself and walked toward Moana and the others.

Looking at the condition of Spenser and the others, he could see they were still alive. Even Anneal who had the lowest battle strength was breathing faintly.

Kouki let out a sigh of relieve while also tensing his pale face right away in this situation that didn't permit letting his guard down.

He pulled Spenser and others and also their Arous to lay them down near Moana.

「Dissolve grief, clear away the dark clouds. That thing not stained is the light of all creation. The heaven light of salvation——<Vast Sky>」

Light element intermediate level recovery magic <Vast Sky>——a magic to recover from abnormal state.

Before this after he deployed <Sacred Severance>, Kouki applied this magic with shortened chant toward Moana and others who were ravaged by the miasma. The result was “no effect”.

Perhaps, the effect was decreased because he omitted the chanting. Thinking so, Kouki tried to invoke the magic once more but.....

「-, it's still not effective.....」

<Vast Sky> couldn't clear away the miasma invading their body.

Kouki gritted his teeth while trying out another chanting. Imagining that if Kaori was here then she would be able to display the maximum effect even without any chanting, he became a bit jealous.

「From the pure domain, the holy mother extend the hand of salvation. O those who seek, look to the sky. See the light at the end of the dark clouds. The holy mother didst not abandon thee. Descending with the halo of salvation on her back, inside the embrace of lookout arm, here the holy mother smile.  
——<Holy Ceremony>」

Light element highest level recovery magic <Holy Ceremony>——it was a wide area recovery magic for army use. This time Kouki invoked it with the arrangement of limited area for further increased effect.

Brilliant light became spreading ripple that wholly enveloped Moana and others leaving no spot uncovered.

「Guh.....」

「Spenser-san!」

It seemed there was effect this time.

The one who recovered their consciousness first was as expected the one whose foundation ability was in different level. It was the captain of the royal guard Spenser.

「Kou, ki-dono? What in the world.....-, what about her majesty!?!」

「Please calm down. I cannot really say that Moana-sama is safe, but she is alive. There also no death among the others.」

「I, I see.....I'm glad. The enemy?」

Even though he sounded pained, but his voice sounded a bit clear. Kouki told Spenser about Ragal's plan, how he was defeated, and then how he was unable to purify the miasma, and how his recovery magic was effective to a degree.

「Recovery magic.....something like that is..... Nevertheless the scaled dragon species Ragal.....you have finished off another considerable big shot again.」

It seemed that Ragal was an enemy whose name was fairly well known. Spenser showed surprise at Kouki's explanation before his expression suddenly relaxed and he conveyed his gratitude through his gaze.

「To be caught inside the enemy's scheme completely.....it's pathetic. If Kouki-dono isn't here just what will happen to us then. My deepest thanks.」

「.....No. Rather than that, what is the prospect of your recovery? Is there a method to purify the miasma? Like, the miasma stone is it? .....Can we use it if we collect the stone from Ragal and his underlings?」

Kouki's complexion became somewhat bad saying that but there was still no one else other than Spenser who could talk. If nothing was done about the miasma eroding the body, then the problem wouldn't be fundamentally solved. It seemed Kouki's recovery magic was nothing more than a temporary fix.

「No. Miasma stone cannot be used right away after it get collected. It will need to be purified for about three until seven days before it become usable. Since it's come to this, Kouki-dono. Can you take her majesty and return to the capital?」

「.....Spenser-san, you are telling me to leave you all behind?」

「Yes. But, please don't misunderstand.」

Seeing Kouki's expression warped, Spenser smiled gently while adding to his words.

「Thanks to Kouki-dono's technique, it feels like my body can hold on for a while even after getting bathed in miasma. If during that time, you can call for help together with her majesty, then there is still hope for us yet.」

「How long you feel that you will be able to endure?」

「For us the royal guards, about a day. I'm worried about Anneal, but that child too isn't her majesty's personal attendant just for show, so I believe she will be able to endure for half a day.」

「Half a day.....」

He heard that they would arrive at evening by riding Arous. From the current position of the sun, the distance could be reached if there was four hour.

Even if Kouki was carrying one person on his back, if he ran seriously he could put some serious speed even though it wouldn't be as fast as Arous. He guessed he would be able to arrive by two hours more than if he was riding Arous.

Thinking about the preparation for the rescue too, when they came back here they would use Arous so it felt like he would make it in time.

「Just in case. ....Celestial ladder illuminating the land unceasingly. That is the light of protection and healing——<Full Scope Heaven>」

「Oo, this is.....」

Light element intermediate level recovery magic <Full Scope Heaven>——the effect was low dependent on the amount of magic power laced into it, but it was a magic that periodically invoked recovery magic.

Kouki poured magic power into it so much it felt like something was taken away wholly from inside him and he was attacked by a sense of fatigue, but in exchange for that the effect should continue for a few hours.

「This is the magic that I used just now. It will automatically heal in interval but.....does it feel like it can extend the time for all of you to hold out longer?」

「Yes. I had faint consciousness after I got bathed in miasma just now, at that time I felt the blessing power inside my body strangely revitalized. Thanks to that, I got away with only this much even after getting showered with miasma that thick.....I see, so it was Kouki's technique. ....This warm light. It's like it's Kouki-dono himself.」

「.....」

Kouki couldn't find any words to respond to Spenser's words and he kept his mouth shut. He coughed to divert his mind and asked once more how long Spenser felt they would be able to endure. His answer was that it felt like they would be able to hold out half a day longer.

「If possible, I want to move all of you away from this place where we were attacked.....」

「That is like putting the cart before the horse, a waste of time. Among the <Black Being>, their rivalry with the different race is fierce. Therefore, you can consider that Ragal won't tell about the surprise attack to other race other than Niebla who he used as sacrificial pawn.」

「.....Understood. I will call for help as fast as possible.」

「Yes. I'll leave her majesty in your hand.」

Kouki invoked <Sacred Severance> one more time to make it last for several hours, and then he stood up with Moana on his back.

And then, he dashed right away to the direction that Spenser told him.

He reinforced his body and ran on the desert as though he was gliding while

putting recovery magic on Moana.

After about a hour of running, when Kouki thought to stop soon to hydrate himself, it was at that time,

「Uuh.....Kou, ki」

「Moana-sama! You are awake.」

The voice of Moana on his back reached his ear. Kouki stopped running and laid down Moana while one of hi hand was supporting her. He took out a water bag from his luggage and put it on Moana's mouth.

Moana obediently drank the water. Her throat was gulping down the water.

「Nh, thank you, Kouki.」

「No. Rather than that how do you feel? I wish to tell you about our situation.」

「No, that's unnecessary. My condition can also hold out until we reach the capital thanks to Kouki's technique.」

Kouki's eyes widened from hearing Moana's words. He thought she was completely unconscious, but it seemed that wasn't the case.

「Forgive me, but I'm worried about Spenser and others. Can I have you hurry on ahead?」

「Yes, I understand.」

Kouki carried Moana on his back once more and started running. Moana leaned her head on Kouki's shoulder limply while also adjusting her position so she could at least talk, she then revealed that actually she had been conscious all this time even if only faintly.

「Nevertheless, you aren't affected by the miasma. This is a blessing in disguise.」

「I guess. It seems in this world blessing power = life force, so perhaps that is the reason? I felt a bit weary when the miasma showered me, but I don't have blessing power so that might be why it doesn't really affect me, I think.」

「Yes, perhaps that's so.」

For Kouki, or perhaps more accurately for existence from another world that

didn't rely on blessing power, perhaps the miasma of this world could be said as something like highly concentrated exhaust fumes. The miasma didn't have immediate effect to shave down his life, but it shared the point where it disturb his health and gave bad effect to his body. Perhaps he would be in danger if he was bathed in it for a long time.

After having that talk, Moana suddenly stirred her body. Her arms that were circled around Kouki's neck tightened a bit and she strengthened her hug at him.

Wondering what was it about, Kouki was about to look back across his shoulder, but before he could, Moana opened her mouth. Her manly way of talking broke down and she spoke with what must be her original way of talking.

「.....Sorry, Kouki.」

「？」

Was she apologizing about getting carried on his back like this? Kouki tilted his head in puzzlement and then Moana said out words that made Kouki couldn't help but felt shaken in respond.

「.....That was your first time right?」

「-」

He didn't ask what did she meant. It was something he completely understood. Moana had been conscious all this time.

Then, in that case, naturally that meant she saw it.

Kouki's discord. Kouki's disgraceful behavior.

Unconsciously his breath turned ragged and his legs almost got tangled.

「I'm sorry. Surely we have made you carry a heavy burden.」

「Such, thing.....」

The words of denial that was spoken with hoarse voice melted into air and didn't resound further. It even felt like his body became lead and his gliding footsteps became disarrayed and slow.

Even though he had hesitated when fighting her sworn enemy, Moana's voice didn't sound blaming in the least, far from that, her voice sounded apologetic and sympathizing to him.

「I heard it. —『why won't you choose the path of living』 You said.」

「.....Sorry. Saying that to an enemy that Moana and others had fought all this time with your life in the line..... When it came to it, I still didn't understand. About the relationship between Moana's people and them. About their fundamental sense of value. That's why, I easily said such thing——」

「Kouki. I'm not blaming you. You came to this world only just now, you only heard our story and got told to kill enemy that you don't know anything about. Anyone would hesitate from that.」

Moana's put her hand clumsily on Kouki's head. And then, he softly brushed his head, as though to say that it's fine. And then,

「Kouki, is really kind huh.」

She said that. She said that toward Kouki, a person who was desperately searching for a path so that her hated enemy could survive. There was no ill will in her voice, instead there was kindness.

That was why,

「You're wrong-!!」

Kouki couldn't endure it. Such misunderstanding.

Because Kouki stopped running and his knees bent, Moana slipped down from his back and her waist lowered to sit on the ground in girl sitting posture.

Moana didn't say any protest, she stared at Kouki fixedly. While feeling that gaze, Kouki yelled with a force as though he was going to vomit blood.

「Stop it! I'm not kind or anything! I'm not some kind guy or anything-」

Usually he could control his heart and he wouldn't spit it out. But, the shock from killing a being with will for the first time was really big, and then the unforeseen kindness toward his greatly shaken heart was more than enough to break the dam of his heart.

「Even I'm being a hero is a mistake-. I'm not a hero at all! I have only ever made mistake-, I cannot see anything-, I keep hesitating——」

Kouki crumbled and meaninglessly grasped on sand tightly. *grit grit grit* The slight sound from sand rubbing each other sounded like the creaking sound of Kouki's heart.

「When it was at the most important time, when I was needed the most, what I did to my comrade-. Even though she was always near me-, I didn't even notice until she was that broken-. My best friend-, my childhood friends-, even though they should be important to me-, I pointed my sword at them-」

For Moana who didn't know about Kouki's past, she must be wondering what he was talking about. The discharged words only sounded incoherent to her, she wasn't clear about their meaning.

But, there was also something she understood.

That Kouki, had made some kind of big mistake.

That he regretted it very much.

That he was blaming himself all this time.

And then,

「.....Kouki. Why are you that scared? What is it that made you so scared?」

That Kouki was terribly terrified toward something.

Kouki lifted his face. His teeth were clenched, and a deep wrinkle was carved on his forehead. His eyes shook.

「.....I, what I'm scared at is.....I myself.」

He feared himself who approved of killing. Because he didn't understand whether his killing intent was right or not.

He feared that he was fighting. Because he had no resolve of getting killed.

He feared making mistake. Because he knew of reality that couldn't be undone.

He feared making choice.



The reason was,

「I, cannot trust myself.....more than anyone in this world, more than any kind of existence.」

The fundamental problem that Kouki held.

Yes, it was a “lack of self-confidence” to an extreme degree.

The problem that preceded even the question of making the resolve to kill and getting killed. The lack of the most important thing for the sake of making choice.

Even though he doubted, distrusted himself more than anyone, how would he be able to decide his “resolve” and “choice” that would only come from self-confidence.

How would he be able to accept the praise that he was a hero?

How would he be able to affirm that said he was “kind”?

「Even so Kouki, you made your choice. We were saved by you.」

Moana said her words toward Kouki who looked as though he was being shackled hand and foot.

「.....Because I promised everyone who put their life in the line to save me. I will fight against myself. That’s why, only the failure of being unable to choose anything, that’s the only thing that I must not do anymore. That’s all, there is to it.」

He didn’t make the choice because he stepped forward courageously, or because he made his resolve, or because he was kind, such thing was even less true. He was only getting pressed by the time limit and then made his choice frantically because of that.

Kouki said that with an expression that was half-crying half-laughing for a beat of time. Before Moana could say anything, he slapped both his cheeks hard and stood up forcefully from feeling shame toward his messed up self.

And then, he presented his hand to Moana.

「Sorry. This isn’t the time for something like this. Let’s move ahead quickly.」

「.....You're right. No, you're correct.」

Moana's way of talking returned back to before. Kouki put her on his back once more and began to run on the desert wordlessly.

Moana also didn't say anything. Just, her gaze was poured intensely on Kouki's face from the side. Inside her eyes was mysteriously filled to the brim with clearness and tremor as though she was looking from inside water through water surface.

And, a while after Kouki started running, his <Presence Detection> reacted once more. Kouki and Moana got nervous 「Uwah, enemy!?!」, but they felt dubious that the multiple presences that were coming with considerable speed were coming from the direction of the kingdom capital.

Kouki decided to look at the situation for the time being and he rushed to the top of a hill, there he caught the figures of a human group riding Arous dashing toward their way in the distant view.

「Thank god..... It looks like they aren't <Dark Being>..」

「Yes. Far from that, we should welcome them instead. It seems the warrior chief who remained behind caught a whiff of the danger that befell us.」

According to Moana, it seemed the group of around a hundred people advancing their way with sand cloud rolled up behind them was a force of Synclea kingdom's knight order. Seeing how they were really in a hurry, most likely they noticed the attack plan toward the queen using some kind of method and so they traveled in a rush like that.

Moana sighed in relieve with tension leaving her shoulders. She then waved her hand in a big way, causing the soldier group to notice the two of them. The group shifted their path slightly and headed their way.

Kouki also slid down the hill in order to link up with the soldier group.

And then, when both groups finally approached each other until a distance where both sides could confirm each other's face by sight,

「ONEEEEEEEEEEEEE-CHAAAAAANNN!!」

Such young voice reverberated. Looking carefully, on the Arous running at the

lead of the group, the two could see a young girl climbing up the shoulders of the rider of that Arous while waving her hand around.

Her age was perhaps around seven, eight years old? Her chocolate colored skin was wrapped in pure white clothing, her blond hair that reflected the sunlight glitteringly was tied in twin tail.

The shocked expression of the rider that got climbed really left an impression. The soldiers around the leading rider also looked like their eyes were flying out from their socket. From how they looked like, it could be seen that they were shocked that the young girl was climbing up like that, or rather that the young girl was actually here. It felt like the soldiers' voice of the heart 「Why is she here!?!」 could be heard.

.....It seemed, the young girl wasn't carried to the battlefield by their own will.

And then, as though to represent the heart of those soldiers,

「Wwhaa-!? My, my cute “Koone-tan”, how could she be hereeeeeee-!?!」

A voice that sounded like a shriek resounded from Kouki's back.

.....It seemed this queen-sama, was a person who called her little sister by adding “-tan”.

During the time until the two joined up with the soldier group, in the middle of the desert,

——UoNeEEEE-CHYAaAAAAN——

Such yell and,

——KOoOOOONE-TAaAAAAAAN——

And such yell resounded repeatedly.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'll post chapters in succession until the point where depressing Kouki become determined Kouki!

Was how eager I was, yet I was unable to do that.

Reason: I bought complete works of Lovecraft->against my better judgment I read fkeia-, ia-, Cthulhu, fhta— —

Sorry

Setting that aside, at May 25 (at the earliest it will be around 22) the sixth volume will be in the bookstore shelves.

I'll put the detail in my activity report, so if it is good please check there.

Also, it seems the comic version is updated.

Finally it's the endgame of abyss arc huh. I was heated up w

Please take a look at that too by all means (Comic Gardo)

# Arifureta Chapter 267

## Arifureta After II Koone-Tan

AN: I'm sorry, this chapter is short, and on top of that the story doesn't progress.

Recently, my head is not working.....

---

「Bieeeeeeeeeeeeh」

Such grand crying voice of a girl was echoing. It was a splendid sobbing, to the degree it made one wondered whether the dryness of the desert might be moistened because of it. The glamorous blonde hair twin tail of the girl was wilting limply as though to express the girl's emotion.

「Your highness! It's no good even if you are crying! In this dangerous time you are sneaking into a luggage of all things, just what are you thinking! This is not a problem that can be seen as merely a prank!」

The one who was saying that to scold her highness——Moana's little sister whose name was princess Koone de Shelt Synclea, was the leader of Synclea Kingdom's soldier force——Donar Sord.

He had a really serious and strict look with short grey hair on his head. His age was around the early half of his forty. In front of his tall body that was nearly two meter and large frame that was like a bear, Koone whose height might be around 130 centimeter was like a mere speck.

The countless scars that could be seen on Donar's face and arms were making the dominating aura and pressure enveloping him to become even more fiendish, so objectively looking at him addressing Koone who was sobbing in front of him, it only looked like a man-eating bear was going to prey at a pitiful girl.

But, perhaps it should be said as expected from a princess. Even while shedding tears like a waterfall, Koone spoke her own excuse at the man-eating bear——or rather, at the soldier chief Donar.

「Because-, because Onee-chan is-」

「That is no excuse! Every time, every time, I don't know how you slip through our watch, but I wish your highness will think about the time and situation! In the first place your highness is——」

「Bieeeeeeeeeeeeh. I'm sorryyyyyyy-」

「Nuuh, please don't interrupt my remonstrations! Every single time your highness is always deceiving people by crying like that! Your highness is not really reflecting on yourself!」

「Uwaaaaaaaaaahn, I'm reflectingggggg-」

「Good grief! Please promise me that your highness won't do anything like this anymore!」

「Ueeeeeeeeeeeeeehn. I'll consider it after careful ponderingggggg-」

「Your highness!? What's with that doubtful reply!?!」

Soldier chief Donar was heating up even more. The crying voice was also powering up even further.

At the surrounding there were the soldiers encircling them with hardened defense. Every single one of them were vigilantly watching the surrounding with a stern gaze, but sometimes they were sending glances at the exchange between their chief and the young princess as though wanting to say 「This again」 or 「Our vigilance is dampened here.....」.

「Do, Donar? Isn't it fine already with that much? Look, Koone-tan is also feeling really sorry already. Okay?」

Flustered. The one who was calling out in such state at soldier chief Donar who was continuing his preaching was Moana who somehow recovered by using new miasma stone that the soldier group was carrying.

Moana was acting timid without any dignity as queen that could be felt from her. Soldier chief Donar's eye glint flew toward such Moana with a really

piercing force.

Moana unconsciously screamed 「Hii!?!」 and trembled.

「Your majesty-. What do you mean by “okay?” just now! Is your highness really aware of the graveness of this matter!?! In the first place, it’s because your majesty is always pampering her highness no matter how much time passes that this kind of situation even occur!」

「I, I’m not really pampering or anything.....」

「In that case, please at least stop calling her highness with “Koone-tan”! Just how many times do I need to ask that until your majesty can understand!」

「Uu.....bu, but still. Donar. Koone-ta——Koone coming along without anyone knowing about it is also the blunder of all of you.....」

Moana faced away and rebutted with pouted lips. Her way of talking was queenly, but it sounded sulky. Pulsing vein emerged on Donar’s forehead in respond to that.

「.....Indeed. No matter what kind of circumstance there was, it was my blunder to fail to notice her majesty’s action. I will humbly accept any punishment no matter what it is.」

「Eh? Ah, no, something like punishment is too exaggerating——」

「Even so-! That is that, this is this! This matter is concerning the safety of her highness’s safety! It’s a common knowledge that her highness is a mischievous tomboy! She secretly turned my lunch to be extremely spicy, she whispered many untrue things to my wife, because of that my wife won’t listen to me anymore, she willfully put cute decoration on my sword, if this is only something like those then I can just laugh it off! But, for her to secretly come along into a battlefield! This lack of sense of danger cannot be overlooked! Only my words are not enough, how about your majesty also reprimand her highness as her elder sister!」

「Ah, yes. I’m sorry.....」

Before anyone knew it, the queen-sama sat on seiza posture beside the sobbing Koone while getting preached on.

What's this chaos.....? Kouki did nothing except staring at the sight before his eyes dumbfounded.

「It's always like this, so don't let it bother you. The chief is an existence that is like a father already for both her majesty and her highness.」

「Eh?」

A calm voice addressed the astonished Kouki. When Kouki turned his gaze at the voice's direction, he saw there a soldier with swept back hair of burnt brown color looking to be in his early thirty.

「I am the vice chief of the soldier force, Othar. Kouki-dono, that is your name correct?」

Among the many muscular soldiers, Othar who was relatively small statured was actually the number 2. Kouki was feeling a bit surprised of that while he nodded at Othar's question.

Othar who was emitting "gentle" atmosphere peacefully from his whole body was smiling with even more calmness and peacefulness after receiving Kouki's confirmation.

「The chief along with Spenser-sama has been watching over the two of them as though they were his own children since they were small. The king and queen of the previous generation.....the father and mother of Moana-sama and Koone-sama has passed on to the great nature five years ago, which caused the chief to be even more so like that. He is also the sword instructor for Moana-sama, so the chief isn't really holding back when treating the two of them.」

According to Othar, the parents of Moana and Koone seemed to die at the large scale battle against the <Dark Being> that happened five years ago.

At that time, the one who led the <Dark Being> was the current <Dark King>, so their strength was tremendous, all the royal family with the exception of Koone had to fight. It was the best they could do to make the enemy retreated even after they all staked their life.

Although Moana, Spenser, and Donar were seriously wounded, but they barely survived. And since then, in order to support Moana and Koone, Spenser and Donar got close to the two royalty as substitute parent. From the start the



two men also received deep trust from the previous generation king, and they were also close to the two princesses as bodyguard and instructor. For Moana and Koone, the two men were just like family.

「.....So that's how it is. In that case, it cannot be helped even if Moana-sama is pampering her little sister.」

Her only remaining relative. It was only natural that Moana was pampering her little sister Koone then, Kouki thought with understanding look. Her attaching “-tan” too, yep, surely that also couldn't be helped, Kouki thought.

And then, it seemed Koone whose family passed on in the period of time when it was unclear whether she had awareness to her surrounding or not seemed to like acting mischievously, she also came along to the battlefield because she was worried for her big sister. Surely it was only natural for her to be like that if one saw it as her being lonely and feeling scared of losing her big sister.

「No, Moana-sama's “idiot big sister” act was already like that since Koone-sama was born.」

「Eh?」

「Koone-sama's tomboyish manner too, she was like that since before the previous generation king passed on to the nature.」

「Eh?」

「Whether it's in the palace or in the capital, since the two of them were little they were talked with numerous title and nickname like, 『Siscon princess』 『Elusive phantom princess』 『Dual personality queen』 『The always grinningly crawling princess Koone-tan』 『Stop it, Haumu will snap you know queen』 『I beg you, please don't be a nuisance to our work, princess』 『Or rather, please stop the princess, queen』 『Stop it, please stop decorating my weapon Koone-sama』 『GYAAAAAAHH, QUEEN!?!』, and so on.」

「No, those aren't title or nickname, those were just complaints aren't they!? Or rather, the last one is just a scream isn't it!?!」

If it was said with indirect expression, then it seemed the royalty sisters were really close and intimate to their vassal and people. Absolutely no one was

saying that they were problem children.

Othar gently smiled at Kouki's tsukkomi. It also somehow felt like Othar was saying 「There is nothing else to do but laughing right?」. This gentleness of Othar that was like Buddha might be something polished for the sake of the queen & princess duo.

「Now then, I think it will be the time soon for the relief squad to link up with Spenser-sama and others.」

Othar looked up to the sky and confirmed the passage of time from the inclination of the sun. After the soldier group joined up with Moana and Kouki, a part of the soldier group headed toward the rescue of Spenser and others without stopping.

If they were taking it slow too much and Spenser and others caught up to them, Spenser would shout at them 「What are you all doing so sluggishly! Bring her majesty to the capital right away!」, Othar explained with a wry smile.

Seeing from Moana's state, it seemed that the effect of the miasma on her had mostly gone already, she looked like she had recovered enough, so under the protection of the soldier group, they should return to the safety zone that was the capital quickly even if it was just Moana.

‘And so because of that’, with an atmosphere that seemed to be saying that, Othar was,

「Kouki-done, if it's not a bother for you, can I ask you to please call out to the chief?」

Asking Kouki to deal with it, while she was smiling peacefully.

Kouki realized. This person, from the start he was approaching him in order to entrust the mediation of this chaos situation to him. He was a person with calm personality, but he was also a type of person that would really forcefully push a matter to other if it was a matter that could be pushed away to other.

When Kouki glanced at the direction of Moana and co, the preaching was still continuing. Perhaps lured by the crying of Koone, even Moana was getting teary eyed. It seemed she was really enduring the preaching of the soldier chief who was like father to her.

Kouki sighed deeply while replying 「I'm going」, and then he timidly called out to the chief.

「Excuse me, it looks like Moana-sama has recovered already, how about we depart soon?」

「Hmm?」

A sharp glint flew toward Kouki. Kouki reflexively twitched. For some reason he was reminded of Shuuzou (Shizuku's grandfather) at the time when he was training at Yaegashi dojo.

‘By any chance, a preaching would also come at him.....?’ Kouki prepared himself for such possibility.

「Ooh, isn't this hero-dono. How rude of me to not even greet you satisfactorily. Once again, I am the soldier chief Donar Sord. A thousand thanks for your help toward Moana-sama and my comrades in arms.」

Donar's right fist hit *don-* on his chest and directed a gaze of gratitude without any falsehood in it toward Kouki. Perhaps he was originally a gentle person if he wasn't getting heated up to the royalty sisters.

「I am Amanogawa Kouki. Please call me Kouki. If it's word of thanks then I have received enough, so please enough with that. Rather than that, how about we depart soon? Although she has recovered, but it's better if Moana-sama can quickly take a rest, and surely it's also better for the little sister to quickly return to the capital too.」

「Indeed. I had showed you something unsightly. It's my bad habit of getting too passionate when her majesty and her highness are concerned.」

Donar scratched his head awkwardly while saying that. His brief glance toward Moana and Koone was filled with deep affection. Certainly, rather than something that a vassal directed to his lord, that gaze was something like what a father would direct toward his daughter.

「Onee-chan, is that person the hero-sama? Amazing! To come stopping Donar in the middle of his preaching while meeting him for the first time, he is really a hero! Koone really think that he is a hero!」

The tears pulled back instantly and Koone-tan said her definition of hero with a wide smile. It seemed she was saying that a hero was a person who was able to stop the soldier chief's preaching. Or rather than that, what happened with the loud bawling just now.....

At her side, Moana was saying 「As expected from Koone-tan. What your eyes are focusing at is different from other people. Onee-chan is really in admiration!」, praising with a tension like an idiot parent who swinging from joy to nervousness from watching the announcement of their child's result in a tournament.

Donar let loose a sharp glint, but perhaps judging that the preaching was over, Koone approached Kouki with light footsteps *tototon* while her twin tail was shaking due to the wind blowing from somewhere.

And then, she looked up with a fixed stare at Kouki with eyes that were jade colored just like her big sister and——smiled widely.

「Nice to meet you! I'm something like a princess, Koone de Shelt Synclavia! Thank you very much for saving Onee-chan and others!」

Saying that, Koone tapped her right hand on her right chest.

It seemed that it was a gesture like bowing one's head or a salute.

Kouki was thinking that he had to ask about that gesture and other things related to that later on while for the time being her,

「What do you mean something like a princess!?!」

Was both sisters were feeling some kind of reluctance in being a royalty? Kouki was thinking of such thing while spontaneously making a tsukkomi.

Midway, Kouki and others managed to link up with Spenser and others who were catching up with a momentum that was leaving behind the rescue squad while screaming 「YOUR MAJESTYYYYY-」.

The angry yell 「Why is her highness is here!?!」 from Spenser and the crying voice 「Bieeeeeenn, my Onee-chan love was overflowing desuuuuuu!」 from Koone, the lukewarm gaze of Kouki toward the queen who couldn't maintain

her dignified way of talking in front of her little sister, the queen whose gaze was wandering around from receiving that gaze, and the wordless pleading 「Don't shave off our tension here~」 from the soldiers, all those were entangled complicatedly and they all kept traveling in the middle of such chaos for a few hours.

Finally that came into view.

A chalk white palace was towering high right in the middle of a large oasis. Several spires were lining up symmetrically to left and right, and at the middle was a building in the shape of a quadrangular pyramid with a conspicuously large size.

Bridges made of stone were stretching to four directions from the chalk white palace that was glittering from the reflection of sunlight, and countless buildings with similar chalk white color were lining up at the outer part of the oasis.

And then, further at the outer edge of the city at that outer part was surrounded by a river around ten meter wide in donut shape. The river wasn't flowing anywhere, it was like a cycle of a flowing pool.

It seemed inside the city there was also canals that looked like stitches across the city, regardless of the city's location that was in the middle of desert, several small ships could be seen coming and going there.

——A city of water in the middle of desert.

That was the front line metropolis——Synclea's kingdom's royal capital.

「Amazing.....it's beautiful.....」

Words of praise were unconsciously leaked out from the mouth of Kouki who was staring at the capital from above a slightly elevated sand hill. From the story of a front line capital that lost the nature, Kouki held the image that the capital would be like a fortress with a rugged and devastated air.

「Fufu, isn't that right? ——Cough, don't you think so?」

「Err, Moana-sama. I don't mind even if you talk normally you know?」

「I don't really understand what is Kouki talking about.」

Moana slowly averted her sight away from Kouki's kind gaze. It seemed saying that 'I'm completely accustomed with manly way of talking~' was actually an overly optimistic evaluation toward her own readiness.

Moana was resuming walking in order to enter the capital while starting to talk a bit faster to varnish over the matter.

「Kouki. About that oasis you see, it's not just beautiful, actually it also has a barrier to not let the <Dark Being> get near.」

「Barrier, is it?」

Moana made a smug face once more as though to say 'How's that, amazing right?'.

「Yes. Actually, Kouki. The royalty of Synclea kingdom has a special power. Different from the normal blessing power that can be used by anyone as long as they have the correct prayer or vow, there is a blessing art that can only be used by those with the bloodline of the royalty——the heaven's blessing art. There is one heaven's blessing art per person of the royal family. Each one is a characteristically special and powerful art.」

「Yes yes yes-! Koone is able to use nyoki nyoki art!」 (TN: Nyoki nyoki seem to mean 'shooting up one after another' in Japan.....?)

Koone was making a smug face that was exactly like her big sister while twisting and wriggling her body around. The heaven's blessing art that was upwardly compatible from the normal blessing art——a nyoki nyoki art. In the end, that was.....

「Koone-tan! That's so cute, Koone-tan! The formal name is pretty much <Regeneration> but, from now on let's change it to <Nyoki Nyoki Art>——」

「Your majesty?」

「Nothing at all——cough-, it's nothing.」

According to Moana who returned to her senses after getting hit by Donar's sharp eye glint, Koone's heaven's blessing art <Regeneration> seemed to be an art that could make a place that had lost blessing power to be filled with blessing power once more. The target that was hit by this <divine protection>

would have their latent power invigorated temporarily and got strengthened.

「The heaven's blessing art of an honorable ancestor of the long past is dwelling inside the oasis of Synclea kingdom in exchange of his life.」

「Is it something like, the <Dark Being> is unable to touch this water?」

「Yes. More accurately, they are unable to touch, but when they touch, even the miasma inside their body will be absorbed and dispersed. This place is right in the middle of a desert without any blessing power. Those bunches won't be able to fight if even the miasma they are retaining is stolen. Therefore, this oasis is the greatest barrier.」

Kouki harbored awe toward the royalty of that time who discarded his life in order to leave behind an art that possessed such tremendous effect for the later generation. Just how much resolve and wish that person filled into this he wondered.

Kouki was shivering slightly when he suddenly noticed something and asked.

「You said something about in exchange of life, the heaven's blessing art's effect will increase by doing that?」

「.....Correct. Different from a blessing art, using heaven's blessing art is difficult. The user will be assailed by intense exhaustion after using it once. Their life will be lost if they overuse it. In everything, there is nothing that can be done "freely" you know.」

Moana said that jokingly, but Kouki could do nothing except returning a vague smile.

He caught sight of Koone who was staring fixedly at her big sister from below Moana. Both sisters possessed beautiful jade eyes and chocolate colored skin. Despite so, only the color of their hair was different. Moana's hair was pure white. Rather than saying that her hair was white colored from the beginning, it was like the hair originally had color that currently had faded away.....

There was no one with white hair color even amidst the soldiers around them. It was obvious that hair color wasn't a characteristic of this country's people.

Different from Koone, he was told that Moana participated in the battle five

years ago. It was a fierce battle where all members of royalty were lost with the exception of these sisters. It wasn't difficult to imagine how Moana must have risked her life.

Five years ago she should be in the middle of her teens. She lost her family at such young age, she herself fought by straining her life, and protected her country and little sister through—

An indescribable feeling grew violent inside Kouki.

「Hero-sama.」

The young voice calling at him surprised Kouki. His looking down face was naturally heading toward the direction of the voice's owner.

Koone who was staring fixedly at Kouki without him noticing was making a bright smile.

「Onee-chan is amazing right? Koone think she is amazing!」

It was a praise without even a shred of shadow in it. And then, it was respect and love toward her big sister. Koone puffed up her chest as though and showed a really smug face as though it was something about herself. Kouki smiled to such Koone.

「Yes, Moana-sama is amazing.」

「That's right, that's right. In addition she is a beauty right? Koone think she is a beauty!」

「E, err, yes. That's, I think she is a really beautiful person you know?」

Beside Koone who was puffing up her chest while going 'That's right, that's right', Moana was blushing. Rather than because Kouki was praising her, she was blushing because the litter sister who was praising her was irresistibly cute! Like that. Her breathing was getting rougher and her gaze was focused still on Koone.

「Hero-sama!」

「Err, Koone-sama? Don't call me hero, I hope you can call me Kouki.....」

「I'm sorry. I cannot call hero-sama as brother-in-law-sama!」



「No one is saying anything about that though!？」

「If you want Koone to recognize you, then I have to ask you to show me your sincerity, desu, hero-sama!」

「That's why, please stop talking with the premise that I am aiming at Moana-sama!」

「If you toy with Onee-chan, I intend to splash extremely spicy spice at your “pii-“! Koone has no mercy to Onee-sama's enemy!」

「A girl must not say “pii-“! Or rather, what terrifying thing you are saying there!」

Kouki's tsukkomi was in the peak condition. While he was at it, the eyes of Moana and the surrounding soldiers were opened wide. Donar and Spenser were looking around with angry gaze that said 「Who is the one who taught word like “pii-“ at her highness huh!？」.

Koone-tan——in public she was a princess who was given the recognition of 『the chaos bringer』『chaos in three seconds after appearance』『when found don't get involved and contact the soldier force right away!』 as the common sense.

Even though the capital was already right before their sight, inside the atmosphere that was turned into chaos, Koone-tan who was directing an unshakable (?) gaze toward Kouki was,

「Flaky hero-sama. I won't forgive you if Onee-chan is hurt. Koone absolutely won't forgive you if that happen!」

She declared such thing with a bit of expectation and a large anxiety residing inside those eyes that were scattering smile everywhere.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

To everyone who reported 'I bought Arifureta vol 6 you know~', thank you very much.

My greatest gratitude to all of you who took the book into your hand.

By the way, that person who came out at the start of Kouki arc is the same person with the character who is the storyteller at the extra story w

Do you know if you answer the questionnaire at the new book information at Overlap-sama's homepage then you will be able to go the page of「afterword's afterword」?

Each time, I put things like inside story of Arifureta and the like there, but this time.....

A writing that will make one want to tsukkomi「You are alive!？」 is posted.

If you like, please try to have a look for killing time.

# Arifureta Chapter 268

## Arifureta After II At Synclea's Capital First Part

「Fuu.....」

Kouki naturally leaked out a deep sigh like that. Kouki was sitting down on the bed of a guest room inside the palace that was given to him while making a wry smile toward himself who was like that.

When he looked over the room, the quality of every furniture that was put in minimum there wasn't bad. At the very least, the bed he was sitting on was soft. However, it had so little decoration that it could be said to be simple, it looked inferior when compared to the guest room in Hairihi kingdom no matter how Kouki looked at it.

It showed the current pressing situation of the country, so Kouki fell backward and lied down with his expression staying complicated.

He instinctively leaked out a sigh 「Fuu.....」 once more from his mouth. It seemed he was far more fatigued than he thought.

He hadn't reached the limit of his stamina at all, but the core of his body and the inside of his head felt clingingly heavy. To speak in the meaning of mental fatigue, his current condition was truly in a state of total exhaustion.

Kouki lifted one of his hands to block the sunlight shining in from the window. When he was staring at his hand in a daze, the sensation of "that time" was revived vividly.

(tsu, .....I, killed, huh.)

The sensation of cutting apart flesh. Blank gaze. Spurting out blood.....

「Uuh」

He unconsciously felt desire to vomit and he crouched on the bed.

(It should be, the correct choice. ....It was a race against time. ....In order to save Moana-sama and others. ....That's why, it's not a mistake, that's how it should be.....)

To persuade himself, to convince himself, he repeatedly, frantically muttered that the option he picked "should be the correct one" over and over.

—Even though I don't understand what is correct?

—Despite I, not trusting myself more than anyone?

Each time Kouki yelled inside his heart that he should be correct, the cold voice of himself was echoing. That voice sounded as though it was the voice of his other self that he confronted once at the 【Cavern of Ice and Snow】, the figure of himself smiling coldly suddenly crossed over at the back of his mind. Clad in black holy armor, white hair with black streaks coloring it, and then dark red eyes like monster.....

「tsu」

Kouki sat up in a flash and he shook his head. It was his bad habit since the legendary decisive battle. When he noticed his thought was falling into an endless spiral. What's more it was bad thought he was falling into.

In order to renew his feeling for the moment, Kouki recalled the events after he reached the palace.

「It was dreary but, the audience hall was really beautiful huh.」

The audience hall where Kouki was made to pass through in order to formally introduce him to the palace people was so impressive and beautiful to the degree he unconsciously leaked out such monologue.

It was a chalk white space without a single smudge. There were several pillars with beautiful and detailed engraving that would make anyone sigh in admiration. It seemed the hall was structured to make use of sunlight using mirror reflection to shine even the inner part, and because of that ventilation of light that wasn't unlike air ventilation, crisscrossing pillars of light were showering inside the audience hall regardless of the place being deep indoor.

And then, Moana when she was sitting on a chair that was made from the same chalk white stone like the building was also positioned under the crisscrossing light pillars, making a beautiful sight that would cause anyone to hold their breath.

Due to everything in the surrounding was white, her chocolate colored skin was really standing out. Her pure white full dress that was beautiful while being simple was also fitting her perfectly that it made him comprehending 「I see, she is really a queen」. On top of that, the white hair which was possessed only by her alone also really gave out the impression of mysticism.

At her surrounding, aides, soldier force, royal guards, and so on were standing by in rows. Because Kouki only saw Moana in her traveling clothes all this time coupled with her warrior attitude, when he was led inside the audience hall as the last one among that line up, he spontaneously stopped walking when he saw her dressing up like that.

He immediately came back to his senses and walked until his designated position, but looking from how Moana's expression became slightly bashful, she must have noticed how Kouki became fascinated.

Feeling really embarrassed that the inside of his heart was seen through by an older girl, Kouki shook his head while moving the focus of his recollection toward another point.

「Nevertheless.....as expected, everyone is having expectation huh. —toward the hero.」

A gloomy feeling welled up inside him. The people inside the audience hall, regardless whether they were military or civil official, everyone were holding expectation toward the existence of “hero”.

That could be said to be natural.

In the large scale battle five years ago, Synclea kingdom lost all members of the royal family with the exception of Moana and Koone. Not only that, they naturally also lost a lot of soldiers.

The power of <Heaven's Blessing Art> the royal family possessed was tremendous. It could be said as the trump card of Synclea kingdom. They used

that trump card, paid a great sacrifice, and with that the best they could do wasn't extermination but repelling back the enemy.

That was how powerful the <Dark King> of this generation was. Currently he seemed to be unable to move properly in order to heal the wound he received, but even then there wasn't any sign of the <Dark King> getting replaced, and on top of that even while being currently wounded, the Dark King had the strength that allowed him to keep reigning above the <Dark Being> still.

He was truly a monster. Most likely he was being at his most powerful ever. And then, nine out of ten cases, he the <Dark King> would surely come attacking once more with even more strength. Then, for the current Synclea kingdom that had lost many of their royal family, at that time of the rematch, would they be able to defeat that guy.....

The prospect wasn't bright.

At such time, the existence of a hero of another world appeared together with the oracle of Faltina.

If those people were told from Moana's mouth that the hero used technique of another world, that the miasma didn't affect him, and then he defeated <Dark Beings> who were quite famous unaided and saved Moana and her people, it was impossible to tell them to not expect much from Kouki.

But, even though he understood that.....

「.....It's heavy.」

To the degree it felt like he was going to get crushed.

Once, when he was summoned to Tortus, he thought he could anything. He thought there was nothing he couldn't do. He didn't even notice the "weight" of the words save the world, rather his heart was feeling exaltation the more people were holding expectation toward him.

Right now.....those expectations were simply, simply, nothing but terrifying.

The possibility of him betraying those expectations. The possibility of failure. And also, the possibility of him making mistake.

Aaa, he wanted to run away. But, he had promised, to fight himself, and to

fight his heart that wanted to avert his eyes and ran away. Because at that time, he had made a promise, with the girl who was his childhood friend, and with his best friend who came risking his life and punched him.

There was no way, he could run away.....

Aa, agonizing.

「BAA——NN!! Looking like a princess, but actually might not be a princess-!? iiit's Kooneee!!」

「Hiih, what's going on-!?」

Serious-san was blown away along with the room's door.

Kouki who was immersed in his thought got caught by surprise and he reflexively jumped on his bed. Incidentally he was also screaming pathetically like he never before.

Koone didn't even pay attention to such Kouki and stepped on the collapsed door while entering the room. She then pointed sharply at Kouki. She even winked *pachin*- while she was at it.

「Hero-sama! Koone thought that perhaps you are feeling fretful, so Koone come here for you!」

「Eh, fretful? Rather, the door.....」

Kouki was wondering how did the door get blown away and his gaze glanced alternately at Koone and the door she was stepping on.

However, as expected Koone didn't pay it any attention.

「Koone will give you a tour of the capital! Now, let's go!」

「Do, don't pull at me. Or rather, Koone-sama. Have you asked permission? If you go outside as you pleased, you will get scolded by Spenser-san or Donar-san again you know?」

「Koone think, that going out mean going out of the capital! In other words, inside the capital is the same like in the palace! Koone isn't going out!」

「Tha, that's too much of a broad interpretation isn't it.....」

Koone theory was surging out. Koone's hand beckoned at the wryly smiling

Kouki as though to say 「It's fine so shut up already and follow Koone!」. She was really masculine.

Normally he would want to accompany her. However, currently he wasn't feeling good at all.

Kouki didn't know how much the people of the capital were aware about Kouki and the matter of hero, but he entered the palace by going through the main street together with the soldier force and Moana. Naturally, a lot of people witnessed Kouki riding the same Arous with Moana and Koone.

If he went outside to the capital, perhaps he would be looked at with those eyes of expectation again. Above all else, his heart was awfully tired right now and he wanted to rest slowly.

And so, Kouki tried to speak 「No, I.....」 with reservation but,

「Koone Body Attack!」

「Guheh!?!」

Koone-tan was always abrupt at any time. Due to the unleashed flying body attack, Kouki was pushed down on the bed. Koone who was straddling Kouki was making a smug face. But, right after that, her expression quietly changed. Kouki held his breath toward that jade eyes that were staring at him fixedly.

「Hero-sama. No matter how much we pray at a place where there is nothing, nothing will happen you know? That's why, first we should see, hear, and feel. Koone think that those has to be done.」

No good idea or anything would emerge even if he fidgeted hesitantly inside the room like this. Kouki spontaneously opened his eyes wide, feeling as though himself until just now was seen through.

In a complete change, Koone smiled brightly and,

「Koone also want to listen about the story of another world! Please teach me about the hero-sama's world while also learning about this world! Koone want to know!」

「Ah, yes.....I guess. Then, let's go.」

Kouki kept getting toyed by the quickly changing aura and expression of



Koone, however, he nodded thinking that what Koone said also had truth to it, and he requested her to give him a tour of the capital for a change of mood.

But, at that time,

「Wha, what!? The doo is-. What happened!? Kouki, are you saf—」

Moana-sama who seemed to come to visit Kouki made her entrance.

And then, the queen-sama—or rather the severe siscon saw it. The figure of the little sister she doted straddling a man on the bed. Looking closely—Kouki's excuse was that he reflexively caught in his arm Koone who jumped him so that she wouldn't be hurt, that was really what happened—Kouki's hands were holding the waist of her beloved little sister.

I see.

「Faltina-sama hath spoken. She said, kill Kouki.」

「That's a lie-. I mean, this is not what it looks like! This is misunderstanding, Moana-sama!」

Kouki who instantly guessed how Moana mistook the situation was desperately attempting to resolve the misunderstanding. But, not reading the mood in this kind of time was Koone-tan Quality.

「Onee-chan! It's amazing! Hero-sama, he is really hard!」

Kouki wished that she would attach more detail like “the abs is” or something without fail. He didn't know whether Koone aimed for that or if she was just an airhead, but in any case, Kouki now acknowledged Koone as a troublemaker.

Although, he had no leeway at all for speaking out his complaint. Moana-sama whose expression had turned into one resembling a Hannya mask was reaching toward the sword on her waist that she seemed to always carry around,

「HEAVEN'S JUDGMENTTTTTT-」

「Hiiih, don't use real swordddddddd-」

She assaulted the scoundrel that “toyed” with her beloved little sister.

Even while screaming, Kouki wasted no time to hold Koone with one arm

while moving out of the way. At the same time his other hand created a miniscule barrier on his palm and averted the sword attack. For the moment the sword was still sheathed, so he wouldn't get cut, but Moana's Hannya face made him thought of a naked blade, so Kouki was desperate.

Moana who was slashing down from a forced stance because of her agitation had her balance crumbled when her sword was parried. Like that she collapsed on top of Kouki.

Kouki erased the barrier and immediately caught Moana.

There,

「Moana-sama!? Just now, a loud voice was—」

The strongest royal guard captain who doted on the two sisters like father made his entrance.

The captain witnessed it. The scene on the bed, where the pair of sisters who he thought as his own daughters, were being embraced by a man with both his arms.

「HEAVEN'S PUNISHMENTTTTTTTT-」

「Hiiih, this is a misunderstandinggggggggg-」

The sorrowful scream of the hero-sama echoed once more in a corner of the palace.

By the way, Kouki caught Spenser's attack using both his feet. In doing so, Spenser flopped down and his face dove on Kouki's important part, while Kouki was fainting in agony, Kouki who was embracing Moana and Koone with both his arms while holding Spenser on his important place with his legs were seen by the people of the palace who were rushing into the room. It went without saying how screams were raised.

「Uu, that was a horrible experience.....」

The disheartened voice of Kouki echoed in the bustling shopping district of the capital. Beside him, Moana and Koone were walking with their faces hidden by wearing hood. Moana looked apologetic while Koone was laughing

cheerfully.

「Koone-tan! You troubled Kouki, so reflect a bit on your action!」

The two had more or less finished apologizing to Kouki, but it was doubtful whether Koone was reflecting from her outward appearance. Moana scolded Koone, something that she rarely did.

「The flustered hero-sama was interesting I'm sorry!」

「That's amazing, Koone-tan! You are able to apologize properly!」

「No, it's doubtful that she is apologizing, or rather it feels like I'm getting dissed.....」

Kouki was staring fixedly at the elder sister who was completely pampering her little sister, and Koone who was understanding various things somehow and did what she did.

「Now now, hero-sama. Koone will let you to eat the capital's specialty food! With Onee-chan's money!」

「Leave it to me Koone-tan! Onee-chan has been saving a lot of my pocket money for this kind of time!」

An unexpected truth was shed on light. It seemed the money that queen could use for her personal use was given with pocket money system.

When Kouki was introduced in the audience hall, there was a tottering gramps that looked like he was going keel over anytime, but that gramps was actually civil official chief (a position like a prime minister), and he was introduced as the one who took charge of the financial affairs too.

The tottering gramps handing over pocket money toward Moana-sama who accepted it with a pleased face.....

Kouki imagined such scene and for some reason he felt warm and fluffy.

But, for the time being, he guessed that he should say what ought to be said.

「Moana-sama. Aren't you too weak against Koone-sama's casual coaxing?」

「Isn't she too pampering toward her little sister who actually might be black hearted in truth?」 Kouki tried saying that while smiling wryly.

But, the one who objected wasn't Moana, the objection came flying from a small gangster.

「? Hero-sama wishes for an eight year old girl to pay? Is that so? The penniless and jobless hero-sama!」

「Gofuh!?!」

「Understood. The eight year old girl Koone will treat the penniless adult hero-sama! .....It's just a pocket money that Koone saved earnestly, but Koone will use it for hero-sama's sake!」

「It's fine! I get it already so please stoopp! The gaze of the surrounding is painful!」

Koone tilted her head with a wondering expression 'Is that so?'. Kouki thought. This little girl, she absolutely did what she did intentionally.

Little girl these days was terrifying. Kouki recalled the daughter of the demon king that crossed his mind, and then he also imagined the scene of that terrifying little girl who inherited her father's disposition taking the hand of this little girl before his eyes who was actually black hearted, where the two of them were getting along well with each other. His body shivered. It was truly a terrifying imagination. Just like a nightmare.

Kouki casually made an oath. 'Let's not provoke the little girl to the best of his ability', like so.

Then, at that timing Koone quietly ran off, perhaps she discovered something at the road ahead. While thinking 'she really move around abruptly huh', Kouki followed behind Moana who was chasing behind Koone in hurry.

「.....That's」

Ahead of his gaze, Koone was skillfully slipping through the crowd of people. Seeing that, Kouki unconsciously raised a voice of admiration.

It seemed no one noticed the small Koone rushing below them. Surprisingly, it seemed Koone sensed the awareness within the field of vision and gaze of people, so by avoiding that awareness she was able to take covert action that would make even an assassin to feel shocked.

「Koone has a good mind. No, perhaps I should say that she has good sense. She read the thought and feeling of people to a surprising degree. To the level that can make you think that perhaps she has a mind reading ability.」

「Sensing the thought.....」

Moana spoke while watching Koone slipping smoothly through the crowd.

「That movement that cannot be noticed by other people, it seems that it's also the application of that. Something like, by looking, hearing, and feeling carefully, she can understand what someone is focusing on.」

「Is that how she sneaked into the baggage of the soldier force before.....」

「Yeah. Amazing right!? That's my Koone-tan!」

「Tha, that's right. In a sense, it's really amazing.....」

An elder sister boasting of her little sister with a triumphant look. Certainly what she mentioned was amazing but.....

When Kouki saw Koone sneaking into the back of some fruit seller, he couldn't help but spontaneously thought that it was really a waste of talent.

In the fruit store that seemed to be ran by a married couple, colorfully juicy fruits were lined up inside, the husband was lively raising his voice to attract customer from behind the goods' shelf.

Koone-tan was creeping up behind him. And then,

「BAA—NN!! This is the one who hallucinate to be a princess since who know when! Kooneee!!」

「GYAAAAAAH, what is this-!?」

The husband was toppled over. Suddenly behind him an explosion reverberated, which might be caused by blessing art, and at the same time someone appeared while raising a loud voice. There was no way he wasn't surprised.

The husband looked behind him while falling on his butt, there he found Koone who was smiling widely with both her hands going banzai and his shoulders slumped down. With a small voice「Koone-sama again huh.....」his

expression turned troubled.

「Uncle Geor, Koone came! Three kukuri please!」

「Thank you for your patronage. That's what I want to say, but please spare me from the surprise each time you came, Koone-sama.」

It seemed that Koone was a regular customer of this store, and she was also a habitual criminal who surprised the owner while she was at it.

「Ahahahah, it doesn't matter about my husband, but Koone-sama, if you don't act in moderation then the soldier chief will scold you again.」

Neglecting his husband who was still falling on his butt, the madam with large built selected the fruit for Koone quickly. Moana who chased after Koone handed over money toward the woman who was really like an auntie of the shopping district.

「I'm sorry about Koone every time. She seem to be really pleased with the fruit of this store.」

「My, this is your majesty. Today both of you sisters are going out it seems. Well, please don't worry about it. No matter what he say, but my husband too is looking forward to Koone-sama's visit after all.」

「Thank you for saying that.」

Kouki watched over the exchange between Moana and the married couple from a step away.

It seemed that Koone's entrance also caused the surrounding people to notice that the royal sisters were here, but affection could be seen from their expression. It wasn't excessive respect, but something that could be thought as coming from exceedingly close relationship. But, by no means the people were looking lightly at the sisters, it was obvious even just from a glance that everyone held respect and affection.

It seemed that the distance between the royal family of Synclea kingdom and the people was extremely small.

But, what made Kouki curious wasn't that. If it was about a royal family who was openhearted and friendly, he was already acquainted with princess Liliana.

For Kouki this wasn't something that was that unusual.

While Kouki was staring fixedly at that point he was curious about, the married couple noticed his gaze and called out to him.

「Oh, that person there.....by any chance, is he the recently rumored hero-sama?」

「Eh? Ah, yes. I'm called like that more or less.」

「Oh my, in that case then this three kukuri is not enough, I have to give a bit of extra. Setting that aside, is something the matter with this? It seems you are keep staring at this since some time ago.」

Saying that, the madam clapped *pon-* on it, at the sword that she was wearing on her waist.

Yes, the married couple of the fruit store were carrying sword. When he looked really closely, not to mention the shop owner, even the shop employees at the neighboring shops who were calling at Koone, and also most of the people who were coming and going, everyone were carrying the minimum arms.

They were just a shop owner, just a person who seemed like a normal housewife, but everyone was carrying sword on their waist.

Kouki asked with a bit of bewilderment.

「Excuse me, both madam and sir are this shop's owner right? Not actually a member of the soldier force that is helping here in your off-day?」

「? Yes, yes. Both of us has been doing business here for a long time though.....」

「Err, then, why are you carrying sword?」

From the look of the madam who didn't understand why Kouki asked her that, it seemed civilian carrying sword was something really normal in the capital, it didn't look like there was any particular circumstance.

「About that hero-sama. This place is the world's front line you know? Although the soldiers are the specialist of the battlefield, but there is also no reason that fruit seller cannot fight, the <Dark Being> isn't the type of fellow

that would let go of us just because we are a fruit seller right?」

「Ma, madam is fighting?」

「Yes, yes, I will fight you know. That is if this capital becomes a battlefield. Of course, I'm praying that it won't come to that. But, not doing anything, not able to do anything, and die simply, something like that, I'll have none of that. It's nothing big, I have been slapping my husband routinely everyday. One or two <Dark Being> is no concern at all.」

After saying so, the madam laughed heartily while slapping her husband who was making a pathetic expression beside her repeatedly.

Front line—Kouki felt it for real just how far the meaning those words had.

The people *remaining* in this capital, all of them had the resolve to fight when the time came. They were spending their days with the resolve for all the capital's people to be counted as war strength.

When Kouki looked at Moana beside him, her gaze dropped down with a silent expression. She was feeling down—but that wasn't really it. She was calmly, accepting their resolve, it was that kind of expression.

Koouki looked over his surrounding.

Without knowing whether it was tomorrow or some other day, the next moment they might be thrown into battle with their right to live on the line. The people were living with such resolve.

*Drip*, something spilled out inside his heart.

「Isn't it, scary?」

The madam's expression turned puzzled. And then, while laughing heartily she,

「That's, obviously it's scary! But see, look, the kukuri of our store, if it's for the sake of making the customers able to enjoy this then, well, I'm going to work a bit harder. Right, dear?」

「Well yeah. If we don't sell kukuri, who will then sell kukuri in the capital. As a fruit store owner, I'm not gonna allow the guys doing their best fighting to be unable to even eat a kukuri.」



The shop owner shrugged and lightly washed the kukuri his wife picked before handing it over. Kukuri was a fruit with an appearance like a yellow apple. Koone quickly nibbled at it. Her eating manner was so hearty it made him wanted to tsukkomi just in where she was a princess.

Even while chuckling, Moana also put the fruit into her mouth while urging Kouki with her gaze 「Try eating it」.

Kouki felt his heart whirling from the madam's words while tried a bite of the fruit. Right away, thick sweet and sour taste spread inside his mouth, and a rich aroma tickled his nose. If he had to guess, then plum had the most similar taste with this fruit.....but, it had a good flavor that he couldn't just eat at a moment notice even in earth.

「Delicious.....」

「Right, right!? This is Koone's recommendation, so that's natural. Koone think that it's only natural!」

For some reason Koone made an awfully smug face more than the married couple fruit seller. While her mouth was smudged all over with fruit juice. The madam was laughing heartily once more while politely wiping Koone's mouth. Moana went 「So, sorry to trouble you」, even though she was the queen yet she was feeling obliged. The husband looked at such Moana and smiled.

Kouki who was staring at them took one more bite of kukuri. For this, for the sake of the people who wanted to eat this, the married couple fruit sellers would fight when the time came. He took a bite while chewing on their words.

Bright moon shined brightly at the peak of the night sky.

Kouki who was led around by Koone until the sun fell was now leaning on the railing at the guest room's veranda while staring at the moon tiredly. The capital was different from the city in earth, the brightness had completely submerged and the city looked quiet.

Even coldly the mystical moon was reflected on the oasis, making a sight where it seemed there was twin moon. It was really a great view. The sparkling water surface was also wondrously beautiful.

Kouki's gaze dropped at the moon wavering on the water surface without any particular reason while recalling Koone's tomboyish act and the easy big sister who was merely doting. A small smile emerged on his lips.

He recalled the later matter after he ate kukuri at that fruit store.

The next place he was guided toward was the best weapon shop in the capital.

When Koone made her entrance with 「BAA————NN!! This is the one who make anyone challenged to reexamine the definition of princess! Kooneee!!」 from the back entrance of the shop, a boy about the same age with Kouki went 「GYAAAAAAAH, Koone-sama came out againnnn!?!」and toppled over backward.

With the ferry rower to cross the oasis river that they visited next, she intentionally leaped out from underwater while saying 「ZABAA————NN!! The one who won't be able to deny if asked whether she is a parasite in the palace!?! Kooneee!!」. 「GYAAAAAAAH, why is it always from underwater every time!?!」 the rower uncle yelled so while toppled backward and fell into the river.....

But perhaps it was the usual thing, because the uncle returned to the ship normally with a smile while saying 「Please spare me from that anymore」, and his clothes along with Koone were dried using blessing art.....

Then she circled behind the royal guard led by Spenser and the soldier force led by Donar who were actually following Kouki and others while surrounding them in all directions, made her appearance 「BAA————NN!! Don't think I'll be a princess till forever! Kooneee!!」, and smashed into pieces the confidence of the royal guards and soldiers 「GYAAAAAAAH, your highness!?! Why is your highness over there!?!」.....

The nickname of chaos in three seconds after appearance really suited her.

But, for Kouki, Koone who was such unprecedented tomboy was not just a mere girl who loved prank anymore.

「See, hear, and feel, is it.....」

Perhaps, the people who Kouki met and exchanged words directly with today were picked by Koone. People that possessed words that could possibly

influenced Kouki the most.

If not, then there was no way that Kouki's heart could be currently shaken to this degree even though they were only exchanging brief words.

「Everyone.....were really lively.」

The people he met, every single one of them possessed confidence of their way of living. They were proud of themselves.

What should he do so he could have confidence about himself like them? Could he be proud.....could he believe?

「If I fight like I'm asked in this world.....will I understand?」

But, like that, what would be different than the time when he was summoned to Tortus.....

Kouki shook his head. He was about to fall into an endless spiral of thought again. He was summoned, experienced his first kill, heard the circumstance of this world and the story of the people living here.....his heart was completely tired.

‘Let's rest for today.’ Deciding that, Kouki turned around.

「Good evening, this is Koone.」

「HIIIIIIIIH!? Since when!?!」

With a bright smile, Koone-tan was right behind him when he noticed. Kouki's scream echoed.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'm resigned to accept the opinion of 'the story is not progressing huh'.

However, in order for Kouki to change, I want him to have a lot more encounter and experience, but then this chapter of the capital move slowly and won't progress faster like this.....

In case I write the story at the mental side, it will become long no matter what I do won't it.....

And so, for the reader the development that is a bit tedious will continue, but this development will be limited to just Kouki arc so I wonder if I can wish for mercy from you readers.

Well, just as showed in「The Gathering of the Returnees」, after a week that person will make his entrance, so the time left for Kouki was also that one week.....

However, Koone is standing out huhh.....at first it should be like this though.

When I wrote for some reason inside my head Poison-on of [This world is a game you said~] you see..... (TN: Seem to refer to Poison-tan from Kono Sekai ga Game dato Ore dake ga Shitteiru, not really sure though. Anyone can clear up about this reference?)

Shirakome's plot always get instant death.....

# Arifureta Chapter 269

## Arifureta After II At Synclea's Capital Last Part

「Are you okay, hero-sama?」

「I'm not okay at all! Why are you here!? Or rather since when!?!」

Kouki was cowering in fear while raising his voice, his hand tightly grasping from above his clothes his heart that was jumping around inside.

He even forgot to use polite language against the royal family and made tsukkomi with his usual way of talking.

That was how scary Koone-tan who sneaked behind him with a bright grin was. It was simply a horror. He wanted to yell 「Enough with this little girl already-」 with all his strength.

「Fu-fun! Koone's "stealthy skill" that cannot be noticed even by hero-sama is amazing right!」

「It's not in the level of amazing.....even <Presence Detection> doesn't work.....」

「H~m. Koone doesn't really understand what is this thing called <Presence Detection> about but.....hero-sama's focus was completely directed somewhere else you know?」

Koone tilted her head. According to her, with how he was completely distracted, what's more in his exhausted state, it was comparatively easy for her to sneak at him by using her special technique and her heaven's blessing art at the same time.

「Using heaven's blessing art at the same time? If I remember correctly, Koone-sama's art is <Regeneration> isn't it.....」

「Fufuhn. It's called <Regeneration> because it can bring back greenery to the desert but, its essence is direct interference art that focus, attach, or adjust blessing power.」

Like that, by adjusting and harmonizing her own blessing power with the miniscule blessing power inside the air, her existence became harder to comprehend—to say it further she was able to “adapt”.

「It's Koone-style “Stealthy Art – Level 2”.」

「What are you using the unique ability of the royal family in full for.....」

Kouki massaged his temple repeatedly as though he was getting headache.

「Hero-sama, hero-sama. Won't you talk a bit with Koone?」

「.....No, I'm going to rest—」

Kouki whose respect toward royalty was blown away completely to somewhere easily tried to reject Koone's invitation.

But, his gaze suddenly met hers. He was suddenly at loss for words after seeing Koone's gaze.

That gaze was really deep. To the degree that he held his breath in surprise. There was earnest and pressuring feeling inside that gaze. Different from the figure of the tomboy and wild and mischievous princess, those were the eyes of someone with unknown depth.

「Won't you talk with Koone a bit?」

「.....What is it?」

Kouki's reply made Koone's mouth burst open in a smile. With rapid steps she stood beside Kouki before she gazed at the direction of the oasis—the capital.

「How was it today? The capital is a good place right? Everyone was all good people right?」

「Yes, very much so. They are really good person. While knowing the current situation where the tomorrow is unknown, yet they don't despair.....everyone choose something, and they hold pride.....that their choice is correct.」

Koone nodded. But, her expression for some reason didn't look at all like the

proud expression she showed him when she gave him the tour through the capital. Rather, it was an expressionless face that looked as though it lost emotion.

Kouki who had only seen her acting innocently until now held his breath again.

「Do you now want to help us?」

「.....So, that's your aim just as I thought.」

Kouki sighed. As expected, Koone wasn't just a naïve and innocent princess.

「Yes. *That too* is one of Koone's aims. Because it seems that hero-sama has hesitation.」

It was likely that she had heard from Moana too. How Kouki felt hesitation about fighting. That he was trying to show a path where there would be no fighting to even the <Dark Being>.

Koone seemed friendly, but perhaps she actually didn't believe him at all. Thinking that should be only natural, Kouki gazed at Koone while staying silent.

「Koone *more or less* is a royalty, so I want to save the people. Koone understand that Synclea kingdom, no, the human race is already at the limit. There will be no salvation without relying on hero-sama.」

「Koone-sama?」

‘But see’, Koone continued, to which Kouki directed at her his dubious expression. And then, he was speechless hearing her next words.

「Based on the circumstance, or perhaps based on hero-sama's feeling, if you think that it's impossible then—please escape.」

「What, are.....」

While speaking of wanting help, while speaking of there was no future already, she told Kouki to escape by his own decision. ‘I don't mind if you forsake us’, ‘It's fine for you to not save us’, she said such unbelievable thing.

「However, at that time, please take away Onee-chan together without fail.」

After telling him to leave everything else, she asked him to allow just her big

sister to survive. As expected, Kouki couldn't reply to those words. It wasn't because he was refusing the request. It was because he couldn't understand Koone's thinking.

Koone finally met her gaze with the confused Kouki.

「Hero-sama, you have a rough idea of how to return to your own world aren't you?」

「Wha-, how do you.....」

「I heard from Onee-chan. Hero-sama at first confirmed whether you can go home or not. In other words, from the beginning hero-sama's condition is to go home. But, I heard that when hero-sama was told that it's unknown, hero-sama didn't even look upset.」

In other words, he had an idea of how to go home.

「But, most likely that method isn't something that hero-sama can do by yourself. Perhaps the timing, or some kind of special phenomenon or item is necessary—possibly, someone will come to pick up hero-sama.」

「Why, do you think so?」

「Because hero-sama hate killing and fighting right? A world that ask such thing from hero-sama must be a despair. If someone in such situation is told that they cannot go home, normally they should be more despairing or upset. Hero-sama is still composed because hero-sama has the belief that you can go home.」

「.....Haha, you got me there.」

He was seen through by a little girl who wasn't even ten years old. Furthermore, she also showed an attitude of conviction that her hypothesis wasn't mistaken from Kouki's reaction. It seemed he was also led around by the nose.

Kouki couldn't help but smile wryly.

He was still composed. That was a fact.

It was clear that there was no way Shizuku and others would abandon Kouki. The fact that he was summoned to another world would surely be told to them



by Liliana, and not long from now the gate would be opened. He should be able to go home without doubt, and when the time came, he could even be like that demon king, abandoning this world because this problem was unrelated with him.

He was agonizing because of his own heart, not because he was cornered.

In a sense, that was exactly the reason he was able to concentrate only at his own emotion. Yes, even more than toward the crisis of this world.

While he understood that this world was in the depths of despair, in the end, he prioritized himself.

Kouki thought. 'Aa, I'm really a coward.'

「Hero-sama isn't a coward you know?」

「Eh?」

Those words sounded as though his heart was read. Kouki opened his eyes wide in surprise and looked at Koone.

Koone made a troubled smile.

「Hero-sama, don't have any duty at all toward this world. There is no need at all for hero-sama who is a complete stranger to feel guilty. The reason is—」

—Even herself who was a royalty, was prioritizing her own feeling and told him that it was fine if he didn't save them.

「That's.....」

「Certainly, Koone love everyone in the capital, Koone want to save them. That is my true feeling without any falsehood in it. But, for Koone the most important person is Onee-chan. If Onee-chan and all the people are weighed in scale, the scale will tilt toward Onee-chan. Rather than the many that Koone loved, Koone treasure my only dear family.」

Those words were surely unbecoming for a royalty.

「Onee-chan is at her limit already. She used heaven's blessing art too much at the previous battle, now she has no power remaining anymore. She overused it to the degree it cannot recover anymore. If she has to fight that <Dark King>

one more time she will die with certainty.」

「That white hair.....so it's because of that just as I thought.....」

「Yes. Koone's father and mother, big brother and uncle, all the cousins, every~one died. Donar and Spenser are like family for Koone, but even so, for Koone my true family is, the one I loved the most, is only Onee-chan now. For Koone, only losing Onee-chan is—unbearable.」

She understood that it crossed the limit of being mischievous, even so she sneaked inside the baggage of the soldier force using her all and rushed out of the capital. This was the reason.

Evil hand was drawing near her most beloved big sister who left the capital following the oracle. If she heard such thing, she wouldn't be able to not rush off. She didn't have any leeway to consider the duty of royalty or about being nuisance to other people.

Even while she understood that what she did was the worst conclusion toward everyone, that it was an outrageously horrible betrayal, but living in a world where her big sister died was something Koone couldn't think about. If something happened to her big sister in the worst case, she was even prepared to suicide by the sword beside her corpse.

That was why, because she was such a person.....

「See? After all someone like Koone, is just “someone that is like a princess”.」

It wasn't a kind of joke. Koone herself was the one who didn't recognize Koone de Shelt Synclea as a royalty the most.

Kouki stared at Koone. He wondered just how much emotion this small girl was hiding inside that small body.

—Rather than the many that were looking for salvation, a person who was important for herself was more

What crossed Kouki's mind, was that guy's figure who once said the same thing at him.

Was it selfish?

Was it irresponsible?

Was it an “evil” that ought to be scorned?

「If I run away」

「Yes?」

「If I choose to run away while taking away Moana-sama, Koone-sama will also come along right?」

For some reason Koone looked puzzled at Kouki’s question and,

「No?」

「.....」

「For Koone, if Onee-chan is alive then it’s fine with that. If it can let Onee-chan to stay alive somewhere, then Koone will be able to do my best by that much. And so, Koone will take the baton pass as queen.」

‘Just as I thought’, Kouki thought.

If Koone was a person who could abandon everything other than her big sister, there was no way she would be liked by the capital’s people that much. There was no way she would run around with the pretext of pranking and showed out her face throughout the capital.

And then, surely this wise girl was convinced of their defeat in the future. Whether the future where many humans were caught and turned into livestock, and also the future where few humans would continue painful battle as guerilla fighter, and how she would be needed as the cornerstone to support the battle of such people, surely she had imagined it without doubt.

After all her heaven’s blessing art <Regeneration> would only really shine at such devastated world, in order to support the foundation of people’s living.

Kouki reflexively almost said the words「Then, all the human in this world, take them to another world somewhere」, however, he gritted his teeth and held his tongue.

When he suggested it at Ragal, his heart was messed up like a library that had all its bookshelves pushed down. It was just a desperate proposal.

Now that he was calm, he couldn’t speak it out so easily. The reason was that

the one who could accomplish that wasn't himself. He didn't even know if he could pay the compensation. Even if he could pay, he didn't know if his suggestion would be accepted.

He couldn't say such uncertain hope.

Against Kouki whose expression distorted looking somewhat painful, Koone's opened her mouth with an atmosphere that suddenly relaxed.

「Now then, that's all Koone want to say. In conclusion, if possible Koone hope hero-sama can save the world okayyy~. Ah, but if it's impossible then super run away taking just Onee-chan with you! Leave the rest to Koone then! Like that! Koone is cool. I'm super cool is what Koone think!」

‘Cooool Kooone, coool Kooone!’ The usual innocent Koone twirled round and round while repeatedly yelling so. Kouki's expression became speechless seeing such Koone.

When Koone stopped still her twirling coool Kooone dance, she then pointed sharply at Kouki and gave him a mischievous expression.

「Now then, let's cross the last item in the list today! Hero-sama, hero-sama. There is a peerless beauty at the terrace located in the west of the palace you know? If you go there now, you will be able to meet a sexy beauty with alcohol provided! This might be a chance to deepen relationship?」

‘Get done in by Onee-chan's charm, and like her so much you won't be able to abandon her by any means!’ Such voice of heart was resounding loudly.

Kouki tried to ask Koone somehow.

「By the way.....my right to refuse?」

Koone spoke with a bright smile.

「I'll yell you know? 『Nooo—, hero-sama, what are you doingggg!? Dragging Koone into your room! Just what are you going to do with this “niice bodyy”~~~』 Koone will yell that loudly you know?」

「I'll go right away! I really want to meet with pretty woman quickly-」

Kouki answered energetically. He didn't even have the composure to make a tsukkomi how nasty she was.

Koone-tan was simply scary even without her sneaking at him. Especially her smiling face.

Kouki arrived at the place Koone taught him.

Midway, Spenser appeared from the shadow of a building and asked him threateningly「Where are you going at this time?」, but when Kouki answered with dead fish eyes「It's Koone-sama's.....guidance」, he conceded him the passage with similar dead fish eyes while saying「.....Is that so, I'm sorry」.

This royal guard captain gave off sorrowful aura that made him thought that various things had surely happened to him too in the past.....

‘Now then, where could Moana-sama be’, Kouki wondered while running his gaze around.

Then,

「.....Kouki?」

A voice came from above him. When he looked up, he found the figure of Moana looking down wonderingly at him from a terrace at the second floor.

With the moon that was half hidden because of the spire as the background, her appearance with her cheeks slightly red was indeed charming.

The moonlight also made her hair that was like snow to be tinged with phosphorescence, that charming figure which looked mystique made Kouki to gulp reflexively.

「What's the matter, for you to be here?」

「It's Koone-sama's guidance.」

Perhaps because of his agitation, Kouki repeated that answer like a pious believer that worshipped the god Koone.

Moana looked puzzled before a beat later she couldn't endure and start chuckling.

「I see, I see. It cannot be helped if it's her guidance. Come on, get up here. Accompany me drinking for a bit.」

「Ah, yes, then.....」

Kouki who was assaulted by a strange embarrassment entered the building and climbed the stair hastily. It seemed the place where Moana was at was adjacent with the corridor, the door was left open.

At the spacious chalk white terrace, Moana was leaning on the splendidly molded handrail with one of her hands swirling a glass. Her soft smile shaken Kouki once more.

「What's the matter with you since just now? You are strangely stilted. Did something happen with Koone?」

「.....We only had a little talk.」

Kouki took advantage to blame the cause of his agitation because of Koone. She had thoroughly shocked him, so it should be allowed for him to do this much. He pulled himself together while thinking that and stood up beside Moana.

「What kind of talk?」

Moana asked him that while presenting her glass at Kouki.

Kouki hesitated at what she meant with that gesture. When he looked there was bottle placed on the handrail, but there was only one glass which was the one Moana was holding. That was only natural seeing she was drinking alone. In other words, she told him to accompany her drinking was by sharing the use of her glass together.....

In the end, was it fine to drink from the same glass with the queen.....

Looking from the expression of Moana who was pushing the glass at him, he saw how she told him to not mind it.

Kouki persuaded himself 「Well, fine I guess」, and put the glass on his mouth. The amber colored alcohol looked like whisky in a glance, but the taste was fruit liquor. From the fragrance and taste that he had familiarity with, he guessed that most likely this was something that used kukuri. The alcohol content was also not high, the sensation in his mouth was nice with extremely delicious taste.

Moana who saw that Kouki was pleased with the drink smiled happily while intentionally pouring a second helping.

Kouki felt obliged while answering her question.

「We talked about how the people we met today are good people.」

「I see.....and do you think so?」

「Yes.」

Kouki nodded. And then he hesitated a bit. Should he talk about Koone's request to him that was unbecoming for a royalty? But, he immediately shook his head and shook off that thinking. In exchange, he spoke about another matter.

「Then.....we also talk, about how you are at your limit.」

「.....」

Moana stiffened for a moment. And then, her expression became complicated and she took the glass from Kouki in a flash, this time she drained up the glass empty. From the sigh 'fuu' that she breathed out, the fragrance of sweet fruit wafted out.

「It was.....a horrible battle.」

「Is it about the battle five years ago?」

「Yes. He was really a monstrous fellow. He spouted out miasma to empty air, then all of it become countless number of weapon, or become beasts. That kind of <Dark Being>, I had never seen it before.」

Her way of talking returned to casual and her gaze flew to the past. She took off the mask of the queen and spoke her words as just Moana. Kouki stayed silent and lent her his ear.

「The army's number was also dreadful, everyone without exception fought desperately. I too used my <Divine Protection> power continuously. But, no matter how much we fought desperately, everyone died. No matter how much <Divine Protection> I used, I couldn't protect them.」

With the light of blessing power from heaven's blessing art <Divine

Protection>, the erosion of miasma could be blocked. That was to say, against attack type where weapon formed from the miasma used by <Dark Being> was wielded, this art also became an immense barrier.

In that hellish battle, Moana had the role to protect the soldiers.

But, in reality, she couldn't protect them to the end no matter how much power she wringed out. Just how much the sense of powerlessness felt by this girl who understood that her role was as a protector.....

「I was determined to offer up my life. I planned to use up all my strength in that fight. Because, the one who should survive isn't me, it should be my big brother.」

「That's.....」

Kouki reflexively almost interrupted, but Moana's vast eyes and the fierce regret whirling inside them stopped his words.

「Big brother's <Heaven Light> was a heaven's blessing art that excelled in killing ability. The one that used the opening father and the others created by throwing their life to deeply wound the <Dark King> was also big brother. At that time, even though if only I could just protect big brother from the last counterattack of the <Dark King>, there would still be hope for him.」

Moana's big brother—Nada de Shelt Synclea struck a sure attack at the <Dark King> with the life of his father the king and others as the price. But, the <Dark King> that bore a deep wound that was fatal unleashed an attack of all his might at the very end.

As the result, Nada who stiffened after using a big technique got taken by surprise and died, and the <Dark King> was also carried away by his subordinate and retreated. That was the conclusion.

In order to protect Nada, Moana used <Divine Protection> to the full extent of her ability, but it wasn't enough. Nada's death when Moana was just a step away from exhausting her life forcefully rescinded the <Divine Protection>.

Her regret was the thinking that perhaps if she used <Divine Protection> by pouring all her life the moment <Dark King> counterattacked, then she might be able to save her big brother.



At the time that was her full strength. That was why, it was useless to even think about it. But, she couldn't help but think it.

「<Heaven Light> is more effective for bringing down the escaped <Dark King>. And Koone's <Regeneration> is indispensable for returning the world to before after the <Dark King> is exterminated. What the world need, isn't a used up wreck like me.」

「That's speaking too far, Moana-sama.」

Moana drank one more glass of the fruit wine before speaking a self-torturing sentence. Kouki gently took away the glass from her.

Moana directed her gaze at Kouki. She stared fixedly at him while letting out a faint voice.

「Hey, Kouki. Did Koone, say to you that she wanted you to take me away and escape?」

「—tsu」

「Ahaha, sheesh that child, as I thought she asked you that huh.」

Just how was this pair of sisters could take him by surprise like this? Kouki grumbled inside his heart with the feeling of venting his anger.

「How does Moana-sama know that?」

「Of course, that's because I'm her big sister.」

「You pair of sisters are just too sharp.」

「Fufuh.」

Moana chuckled just a bit cheerfully and warned him still with that light mood.

「I'm telling you I won't run away okay? Just spare me from anything forceful.」

「.....You will still fight, even in that completely worn-out condition? Even though you understand that next time you won't be able to endure?」

「Yeah.」

She easily chose the path of death. Something inside Kouki was stirred awfully hearing those words.

「.....Why, are you that strong? Why is everyone, can easily do what I can't? You might die you know? You will have to kill someone by fighting you know? Don't you feel scared?」

「Kouki.....」

「Why? Why are you able to choose such choice without hesitation? What should I do so that I can live confidently without hesitation like that-」

Kouki's voice was rough as though he was venting his anger, he stared at Moana glaringly.

「What should I do-, so that I can make a choice that I can believe as "correct"-」

Moana closed her eyes. And then she made a troubled smile and formed her words with voice that sounded frail.

「Do you think I have no hesitation? Do you think I have no regret? There is no such thing. I'm always hesitating, and I regret a lot. Kouki is making too much of me.」

In fact, didn't she just speak one of her regrets just now. Told that, Kouki's eyes opened wide in surprise.

That's right. She couldn't protect her big brother. At that time, wasn't she able to do more? Wasn't she able to use more strength? She had spoken such doubt that was even holding herself in contempt.

Kouki looked down in shame from how he lost himself just now.

「On the contrary, I'm really a hopeless human you know? Actually, I unbearably want to hurl abuse at Kouki so much that I need to endure it desperately.」

「Eh?」

「Why is it only "now"? If you are going to save us, then why didn't you come five years ago at that day? I'm holding that kind of irrational feeling inside. I understand doing that will be just barking at the wrong tree, so I'm doing my

best to not speak it loud.」

‘But in the I said it’, she scratched her cheek awkwardly as though to say that. Kouki was dumbfounded for a while, but then he responded with a wry smile 「I’m also venting my anger unjustly just now」.

Moana’s expression turned serious, and then she directed at Kouki a straightforward gaze.

「I understand Koone’s feeling. I also feel responsibility as royalty. When I think how my choice hold the fate of many people, I’m scared and want to run away, even I myself don’t know what is right. But see, there is also just one thing that I understand.」

「What is it?」

—Even if I escape now and stay alive, I won’t be saved.

In the end of her choice to run away, even if she survived then, it wouldn’t be a salvation.

「Kouki is also the same right?」

「I too?」

Kouki’s expression turned suspicious because Moana’s words were really unexpected for him. Perhaps Moana thought that such Kouki was amusing because she chuckled while slowly pointing her index finger.

A lot of small scar could be seen faintly, however, that finger even looked beautiful instead. It softly stroked Kouki’s forehead.

「You are always making a pained face from worrying, creating wrinkle at this spot, but you never stop thinking no matter what. Even though you were called here selfishly, but you don’t even complain, far from that you killed an opponent you didn’t want to kill while screaming, and saved us all.」

「That’s.....」

「You try to accept everything, whether the feeling of the people you meet, and also Koone’s wish, and even my choice.....your words “even in that completely worn-out condition”, I’ll return those words to you exactly the same.」

The fingertip that gently brushed his forehead slowly drifted to Kouki's cheek. The sensation of that fingertip felt really pleasant for some reason. Kouki unconsciously closed his eyes.

「But, you won't run away as expected aren't you? Throwing away everything and pretend to forget it, you cannot do anything like that right?」

「.....Yeah. That's the only thing that I cannot do.」

「Because, that's not a salvation isn't it?」

「Yeah.....」

「See, aren't we the same?」

「I guess.」

When he opened his eyes, Moana's face was there surprisingly close. An aroma like sweet fruit tickled his nose and her sparkling jade eyes caught Kouki's heart. He stared at Moana as though he was enthralled. For some reason, he couldn't avert his gaze away from Moana.

Gentle night wind brushed his skin, and a pleasantly silent time flowed.

「.....grit-」

「Spenser, shii~~! Right now they are in a good scene so you cannot be a nuisance! Being a nuisance is wrong, is what Koone is thinking!」

A whispering (?) voice was flowing smoo~thly.

Moana slowly and quietly took distance from Kouki. Kouki was persuading himself「Surely <Presence Detection> is taking holiday without permission.....」.

And then, when they turned their gaze toward the door with twitching expression, there they saw the royal guard captain biting on a handkerchief with a demonic look behind the door, and a black hearted little girl making a smile that felt like 'hihii~~~'.

「Moana-sama. Thank you very much for the delicious drink and the meaningful talk. I'm thinking of taking some rest soon.」

「Ye, yes, right. Not that. Cough-. You're right. A lot happened today and you must be tired. You can take a good rest for now.」

Bowing at Moana who coughed and smoothed up her appearance, Kouki then headed toward the door with brisk steps. Koone who seemed to not even intend to hide anymore was giving a thumb up at Kouki for some reason. Spenser was whispering「Duty.....」or something. Anyway he ignored everything.

「Kouki!」

Just before he got out of the door, Moana called out to him. When Kouki turned around, Moana's gaze was swimming around because of being a bit concerned about Koone and Spenser, even so right after that she then opened her mouth after fixing a straightforward gaze at Kouki.

「Kouki is, fixated with rightness.....must be because you want to save someone correct? You fear making mistake.....because you are scared that you will hurt someone right? That's, Kouki might not like it if I say this but, I think that's Kouki's "kindness". That's why, that is why. —At the very least, that feeling of yours that think about other is "right". I will assert that.」

「.....Moana, sama.」

Kouki felt like crying very much for some reason. However, he gritted his teeth strongly to not show his unsightly side.

And then, he squeezed out some words,

「.....Thank you very much.」

And replied so.

While expelling the sight of the little girl beside him making a black smile that said「Just as planned!」outside of his field of vision.

Returning back in time for a bit, at the time when Kouki received the tour of the capital.

Past the front line desert area at the western land that was still lushly green, a certain feudal lord of a territory was raising a worried groan.

「What's the meaning of this? There is no mistake in this report right?」

「Yes. I also inspected it myself but, there is no mistake.」

In the office, the feudal lord was making a difficult face with the written report in one hand, before long he shook his head and made a determined expression.

「Report using a letter to her majesty. Tell the messenger to prepare. We have to ask Koone-sama to come urgently.」

「Acknowledged. Right away.」

The vassal hurriedly left the office. The feudal lord watched that while making a large sigh.

「I have a bad premonition.....」

That whisper melted into empty air and vanished.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Koone-tan whose character spontaneously stood in Kouki arc

The demon king's daughter went without saying

I suddenly thought.

Should I try revealing a little girl character at the second part of abyss lord too.....like that.

What do you all think about little girl trio...

# Arifureta Chapter 270

## Arifureta After II Heading to Unusual Phenomenon

At the north side of Synclea kingdom capital's north side, there was a mysterious space formed from a branch that stretched from the donut shaped oasis surrounding the capital. The branch was drawing a great circle that joined into the main current once more, creating sandbank between it and the main current.

If it was seen from the sky, this sandbank between the branch and main stream that could be expressed as a "lump" created from a part of the circle had the size that was about the same like the sports ground of a school.

As a matter of fact, the expression of sports ground was to the point. That spot was the training ground of the soldiers adjacent to the capital.

Actually, even the next day after the unprecedented event of hero summoning and the emergency situation where the queen was ambushed and her life fell into danger, the soldiers were still working hard like usual at the training ground.

「Put your spirit into it! Are you guys making any effort huh! The formation change is too slow-. It should be possible to do it three seconds faster! Do it again!」

The one who motivated the soldiers doing formation change training with his angry yell that sounded like thunder was the soldier chief Donar.

Chief Donar's voice resounded really clearly. It was the voice characteristic of a commander that could reach the ally clearly in the battlefield.

At a slight distance away from the formation change training, a fierce training of one against one, or possibly one against many was being carried out, but

even though the people there weren't the one being yelled at, the moment they heard the angry yell of the soldier chief, their expression became stricter and their spirit surged even further.

Also, at the place nearer to the river of the oasis, the art users were performing blessing art training with similar serious expression.

「Concentrate. But not at just one point. Concentrate toward the world. Earth, wind, heat, moisture.....concentrate to everything that surround you. Your self is receiving blessing from the world, be aware of that strongly.」

Even though that voice had courteous demeanor and wasn't loud by any mean, it smoothly entered the ears and coached the art users. It was the voice of art user group's head art user—Rinden Stole.

He was a man at his forty with long rust colored hair that was tied behind. From a glance he looked like a really calm and gentlemanly attractive middle-aged man. But, perhaps it was just as expected from someone who was entrusted with a group same like Spenser and Donar. The zeal dwelling inside his eyes would make anyone instinctively gulped.

The truth was this Linden was the biological father of Lilin who was selected into the most elites of the royal guards that were led by Spenser. Both father and daughter were art user that overflowed with talent.

Ahead of Linden's gaze, the art users were joining their hands together in front of their mouth while wholeheartedly offering prayer that showed so much concentration vein emerged on their forehead. At the same time, the patterns painted somewhere on their body also shined radiantly.

Countless spears made from hardened sand protruded out from the ground like wave, whirlwind that hoisted up sand launched blades of wind and sand, sphere of light that perhaps was made from converged sunlight danced wildly, or oasis's water became whip that rampaged, all those were clearly the effects of their prayer.

Whether the soldiers or the art users, all of them possessed a definite passion.

While understanding that they couldn't be optimistic or anything about their



situation by any means, even so they wouldn't draw back even by a step no matter what. Such definite passion that wouldn't even lose against the scorching desert was shown from their attitude.

「.....This is amazing.」

Kouki's leaked out whisper slipped and vanish amidst the spirited roar of the soldiers.

In the eyes of Kouki who was observing from a spot where he wouldn't be a hindrance, there was a color that could be taken as envy or pain emerging.

Suddenly the figure of the queen who said to him that she wouldn't "run away" even when she was already at her limit crossed inside his mind. At the same time, the voice of a young but earnest princess who said "It's fine even if you abandon everything, so at least just my big sister" also resounded in his mind.

If a coexistence with the <Dark Being> was unacceptable, then there was no other path to save Moana except by Kouki's assistance.

Then, would he eradicate the <Dark Being> in that case?

Even though he didn't even know if the rejection of coexistence was really the consensus of all of them or not? In the first place, was someone like him who was burdened with deep mental damage just by killing one being could possibly do such thing? He could save Moana and others, wasn't such thinking itself was just his arrogance?

Then, should he escape while taking Moana with him just like Koone wished for?

Even though what gave hope of "perhaps" in this hopeless situation was his existence, yet he would abandon the people? Would he betray their hope, their expectation? Not to mention despite how such thing ran counter to Moana's wish? Even though it was a choice that might sacrifice the young Koone instead?

Then, would he take away only Moana and Koone, and also the people who were especially close to them?

How far the scope of that would reach? Only Spenser and others? Or else the servants that supported Moana in the palace too? Or perhaps all the people of the capital? Who would decide the size of the scope of the people that would be saved? How could someone like him could have the right to decide who would ride the Noah's ark.....

Then, should he treat everything as never happened instead?

Ignored everything where he saw nothing, heard nothing, and knew nothing, and departed in a journey to search for the way to go home? Could he ask Moana and others to just think of him as someone nonexistent right from the beginning?

He wondered just what was right. He wondered what should he do to reach the best conclusion.

Aa, again, it felt like he was drowning inside water.....

Furthermore, the drowning feeling wasn't like inside the forest spring where he was summoned, but like inside a swamp full of mud.....

「Kouki-dono. What is your thought, about the training? If there is something that bothered you, then please give us a pointer without reservation.」

A voice suddenly called toward Kouki who was staring in a daze at the training while being stuck inside a crucible of dark thought like that.

When Kouki came back to his senses in surprise and moved his gaze, there was the figure of chief Donar right beside him without him noticing.

Kouki replied somewhat in fluster.

「N, no, the likes of me giving pointer is too.....」

「You are being humble again. Kouki-dono is the hero-sama summoned by Foltina-sama. You don't need to feel even an ounce of reservation. I dare say that your advice might someday save their life.」

Kouki somehow felt gazes on him. When he directed his awareness there, several soldiers and art users were indirectly paying attention to the conversation between Donar and Kouki.

Their gazes weren't filled with anything like wariness of an outsider sticking

their nose, but an expectation and curiosity toward the hero, hoping that perhaps they would be able to receive anything that could make them grow even just for a bit.

Yes, from them there was heavy feeling that was choking for the current Kouki.

While feeling conscious that he slightly leaked out strange breathing *hyuh*, Kouki took a breath, then replied with a wry smile.

「No, I really am unable to give any pointer or anything..... Rather, it's me who is affected by everyone's skill and zeal.」

「Oh, is that so! That is really something joyous to hear.」

Chief Donar smiled really happily hearing Kouki's words. The soldiers who seemed to be listening attentively were also vaguely showing pride from receiving the praise of the hero.

But, there, the head art user Linden who must be listening to the talk of chief Donar and Kouki asked a question with calm voice.

「Does the same opinion apply to us too?」

「Yes, of course. Or rather, in the first place I still don't really understand what blessing art is. Someone like me has no pointer or anything that I can say.」

Linden quietly narrowed his eyes toward Kouki whose wry smile deepened while answering that non-specialist like him was all the more unable to speak of anything about blessing art.

「I see, that's logical. However, I heard from my daughter that Kouki-san actually manipulated practical art for combat really skillfully. I assume that you have abundant experience of fighting, although the principle of our arts differ, but is there really nothing that you can perhaps comment about from that standpoint?」

From the eyes of Linden who was saying that while stroking his chin with one hand, a curiosity could be vaguely seen there. Perhaps he was simply interested for Kouki's advice, or rather at Kouki's impression and magic themselves.

「The blessing art is.....a magic that seem to be extremely practical for

combat. The blessing art that I had seen for real was only the art that manipulated wind and earth used by two royal guards, but the cooperation with the vanguard, the deployment speed, and the choice of art to match the situation, all of them made me went wide-eyed in surprise.」

「Hou. As a father, it's really make me happy that Lilin's skill is highly assessed so much like that.」

「Ahaha..... It was really amazing. However.....that's right, if there is one thing that make me curious, it's about whether there is a blessing art that is specialized for defense or not?」

「Specialized for, defense?」

Linden went 'h~m' while stroking his chin with one hand. Perhaps it was his habit when he was thinking. He then opened his mouth.

「I think, it will be something like the stone wall that Neisan created..... Other than that, there are wall of squall or heat, and if the location is in this capital then the water of the oasis itself will become barrier. But, the “defense specialization” that Kouki-san talked about isn't something like that isn't it?」

「Yes. Because in the end something like that is “something that can also be used as defense”. For example, there is something like that among the magic I used, I also had used it in front of Lilin-san before—<Light Severance>」

Kouki whispered his chanting and materialized a shining barrier midair. Right away, the training ground became noisy. Everyone temporarily stopped their training, or rather they were made to stop from focusing their stare at the shield of light.

Chief Donar and head art user Linden who saw the magic of another world for the first time opened their eyes wide altogether. But, the next instant they spoke 「Oo! This is!」 while scrambling to approach the barrier with great curiosity.

「Oo, it's not hot or cold! Even though this should be only light yet it's hard like this!」

「It's similar with blessing art of sunlight but.....that art literally carry heat. But this is really only light..... Donar, please try to cut it a little.」

「Leave it to me.」

The sword of chief Donar that was swung halfheartedly was repelled back while making *gakin* sound. Just from that cheers of 「Ooo!」 were raised from the outsiders too this time.

「How about this then!?!」

The soldier chief became a bit worked up. The head art user was also watching attentively with really excited look.

Chief Donar let out a slash that was sharper and heavier than before. The sword shined and drew a beautiful trail of sword slash in the air that could make someone instinctually be charmed. This time a small crack entered the Light Severance with a snap.

「Hou! Although it was done without reinforcement, I put about seventy percent of my strength into it. It's only cracked with that! What a marvelous barrier!」

「Yes, yes! It's extremely interesting! Just what kind of principle is behind it? The very light itself is possessing weight? No, however.....」

The two middle-aged men were seriously excited. Even while feeling slightly creeped out against the soldier chief and head art user who were continuously approaching forcefully, Kouki answered with a troubled face.

「About the principle's detail, even I don't..... But, this is an art principle that is called magic, various phenomenon can be caused by using magic power, magic circle, and then chanting. The energy's property is different with blessing art, and the point where the very energy itself is materialized as art is different from blessing art, but I think the two's operation procedures are really similar.」

「H~m, really interesting. The very blessing power itself is used as protective wall or attack..... H~m, can that be replicated? H~m—」

Linden was thinking with a difficult expression like a researcher wracking his head in front of a difficult problem. On the other hand, chief Donar's really serious appearance was now looking like a child, staring at Kouki with sparkling gaze.

For some reason, recently the positivity level of middle-aged man and animal toward Kouki was raising up excessively.

While feeling a bad premonition for some reason, Kouki asked with his gaze 「What's the matter?」. Chief Donar then suggested immediately as though to say that he had been waiting for Kouki to ask.

「Kouki-dono. Let's do a mock battle!」

「Eh? What did you say?」

His heart that had no enthusiasm unconsciously caused a line like a deaf main character to appear. However, the chief Donar who seemed to have his soldier's soul lit up didn't pay any mind about that at all.

The feeling of wanting to see magic that was actually used practically in battle, and the curiosity toward Kouki's skill as swordsman that he heard from the story were coming out in his face. At the same time, 'Most thing could be understood by exchanging sword, exchanging sword is the quickest way' such feeling also showed through.

「.....Ryutaro type exist in any world huh.」

「Hm? Did you say something?」

Kouki unconsciously whispered while recalling his best friend who boasted 'Anyway, I'll surely manage somehow if we exchange blows!'. Chief Donar tilted his head.

Kouki who wasn't motivated wracked his mind to somehow avoid doing mock battle. But, Linden who seemed to come back to reality from the sea of his thought before Kouki could think of anything then smilingly dealt an additional blow.

「Indeed, a mock battle will be the fastest way to have other people to know about Kouki-san better. Kouki-san, can I please ask you to do that?」

「Eh.....yes.....」

Even though he thought that this person was a researcher type, but unexpectedly head art user Linden was also in the active people faction. His words caused Kouki to unconsciously nod against his better judgment. The mini

Kouki inside his heart yelled angrily 「You are swept by the flow, me!」, but it was already too late.

A spot was emptied right away while the audiences were clamoring.

His opponent of all thing was chief Donar and Linden at the same time.

「.....Excuse me, the mock battle, is against the two of you?」

「Hahahah, don't mind it!」

「Fufufuh, please don't hold back!」

The opponents were the tops of each group that must be the strongest fighting force of Synclea kingdom. Furthermore, they had nice balance of a vanguard and rearguard.

There was no more doubt that these two middle-aged men were hobby friends with similar personality, but it seemed that it was also an undoubtable fact that they were considering the existence of Kouki as an opponent was at the level that ought to be faced by top class warriors.

Kouki spontaneously put his hand on his stomach. It felt like he was feeling throbbing pain. The surrounding was overflowing with expectation and curiosity, if he exposed something unsightly here, how much grief and disappointment would be created then.....

(.....Heavy.....)

In addition, it was a battle against people. Although it was a mock battle, for Kouki who had only experienced murder this was something that felt even harder. Hesitation and fear quickly assaulted him, it took a desperate effort for him to suppress his trembling and hyperventilation.

「? Kouki-dono? Are you not feeling well?」

It seemed even though he was hiding it, but a veteran warrior could somehow sensed Kouki's bad condition. Chief Donar asked him with a worried expression.

For a moment Kouki thought to answer 「Exactly!」, wondering if it wasn't still too late for him to excuse himself from this mock battle.

(But.....if I cannot even do mock battle, then I..... Don't run, don't run me.)

He shook his head. He scolded his heart. Kouki made a small smile and answered 「There is no problem」.

Chief Donar looked slightly dubious, but he accepted it for the moment and pulled out his sword. Linden took several steps back.

「Then, I'm coming you know?」

「Anytime.」

A sudden gust blew instantly. No, more accurately it wasn't wind. A pressure that felt like that attacked Kouki. It was without a doubt the pressure from Donar. It wasn't pressure that was tilting at the negative side like killing intent. If he had to say then perhaps he should call it a pure fighting spirit.

It was too stern, it was too striking. Against that pressure of fighting intent that was heightened until the utmost limit, Kouki gulped unconsciously.

The disorder of his breathing might be seen through.

When he noticed, the soldier chief was right in front of him. At the same time a silver flash that approached to split him vertically into two was reflected in the corner of his sight.

It wasn't a movement with speed like Ground Shrinker. The chief's first movement was too natural that Kouki's awareness couldn't judge that he was being approached.

「-!？」

Even while feeling shaken against that terrifying technique, Kouki's body reflexively moved. He pulled back his right foot and shifted half his body behind while activating Ground Shrinker without going against his center of gravity that was tilting slightly behind.

The sword passed before his eyes, and next he backstepped in high speed to evade the pursuing attack that leaped at him like a living thing.

But, there,

「—<Jaw of Earth>」

A prayer resounded. The ground below the retreating Kouki's left and right



flowed and the sandy land opened a large mouth.

The earth was molded and a huge thing like a bear trap was materialized, it must be a blessing art for restraining the target. Even if for example Kouki could dodge it, it was created by moving the surrounding sand so the ground below crumbled and broke his balance.

It was a plain and small scale blessing art, but it was actually unpleasantly effective.

Perhaps having anticipated that, chief Donar charged forward. He understood Linden's intention perfectly. They were truly in harmony.

Although,

「—<Light Blade>」

「Muh」

There wasn't really any problem if he cut it apart all together. The Jaw of Earth that was closing on him from left and right was bisected right into two by light element mid-level magic <Light Blade> that had its cutting power increased explosively.

Chief Donar who saw Kouki's holy sword that could even be said to be fantastically clad in light raised his voice spontaneously, but even then as expected from the soldier chief, he unleashed his attack without even the slightest pause or hesitation.

*gakin* A high pitched sound of clashing metals resounded. Kouki felt stunning impact spreading through his arm and the area around his eyes warped slightly.

It was a heavy attack. More than a mere physical strength.

The gaze of Kouki and chief Donar who was locking sword with each other met in very close range.

「.....?」

Chief Donar knitted his eyebrows dubiously. But, that too was only for an instant.

「—<Sword of Sandstorm>」

What was produced right after that was twelve sand disks rotating in high speed. They were deployed to surround the target and assaulted violently from every direction, at the same time chief Donar leaped back at the only path of escape that was behind him.

The encirclement of the sand disks was tight, it didn't look like it could be broken out from. It was clear to see that the back of the target would be attacked using the opening when they dealt against one disk.

And so, Kouki escaped to above.

「—<Heaven Severance>」

Five layers of shining barrier materialized. One was used as foothold, and the others became floating shields around Kouki and blocked the attack of the sandstorm disks.

Considering that Kouki leaping up to the air was convenient, the other sandstorm disks attacked. It was clear that Kouki was thought to be unable to move midair.

Of course, Kouki used <Heaven Severance> to dodge that so there was no problem.

「Oo! Amazing!」

「He's flying!」

He wasn't "flying", until the end he was only "jumping", but the movement method using barrier to consecutively leaped midair might looked like flying if seen from the side. The soldiers and art users observing the battle raised their cheers.

「Midair movement using barrier as foothold, is it..... I see, the way of using it like that is.....」

Linden also opened his eyes wide at that blindspot. However, he was still attacking fiercely with the sandstorm disks even then.

The sandstorm disks that Kouki should have evaded already returned like a Frisbee. From among the four approaching disks, Kouki blocked two using <Heaven Severance>, while cutting down the other two using his sword.

Kouki saw below him chief Donar was preparing some kind of “vow”, and Linden starting to pray another blessing art further while manipulating the sandstorm disks and inside his heard he made tsukkomi 「That’s just too merciless!」.

And then, before he could be attacked by Linden with even more number, he directed one hand at Linden from midair and,

「—<Air Hammer>」

He fired a shockwave magic. *dou* Such heavy and painful sound resounded, at the same time Linden’s front was blown away. Linden might got a bad premonition by the time Kouki directed his arm at him because he already entered into an evasive maneuver, so he only ended up getting blown away.

Using that opening, Kouki let flew wind blade and shot down the sandstorm disks while entrusting his body to acceleration by gravity and rapidly approached chief Donar.

「—<Soul of Strife>-」

Blessing power from vow strengthened the flesh of chief Donar.

Instantly, chief Donar whose body was faintly shining blocked the flying kick (the falling from the sky version) Kouki launched using the flat of his blade. He firmly withstood the kick even while sliding on the ground leaving behind foot track on the ground.

「Haah!!」

「-」

Along with a loud scream of fighting spirit, the sword was swung and Kouki was sent flying. Kouki adjusted his posture midair and landed. Chief Donar approached Kouki with a speed that was incomparable from before.

The sword flash that was unleashed looked blurry with many layers. That was how fast the sword was.

Kouki blocked, repelled, or parried the attacks, handling well the surging wave-like offense of the soldier chief.

(Kuh, what skill-. I can manage the speed and power somehow-. But, this

skill.....he is at the same level with Meld-san!)

The deceased knight order leader who once acted like the classmates' older brother and taught him the fundamental of battle against human. In the end, Kouki was unable to match his sword skill even when he was turned into puppet.

The cheers of the soldiers became even louder. Their chief was pushing back the hero who was summoned from another world. Pride and trust uplifted their heart as a soldier.

But, on the other hand,

(Kuh, he isn't thrown off balance even when I'm using body reinforcement. What solid defense-. No, the terrifying thing might actually be his reflex speed, and the specs of his body-)

Chief Donar was also astonished against Kouki who used pure reflex and body strength to react against him no matter what kind of technique he used.

Of course, because this was a mock battle, although Donar was serious, but he wasn't using his full strength. Chief Donar was also still leaving enough spare for his body reinforcement.

But, even so, looking at Kouki who in a glance wasn't using any reinforcement, against him who was unable to land a single hit even with the reinforcement was something vexing as a warrior.

Furthermore,

「There-」

「What-」

A counterattack was unleashed toward chief Donar. The horizontal slash approaching his torso was blocked by chief Donar using his sword as shield. Donar had no intention at all of leaving opening, but it seemed that in this short time Kouki had obtained a slight "familiarity" against chief Donar's swordplay.

A stir occurred. The soldiers opened their eyes wide seeing the offense of chief Donar was stopped.

Kouki's counterattack was further—

That was how it supposed to be, but there the sword attack from the torso toward the neck became strangely dulled. Naturally, such sword attack wouldn't work against chief Donar, instead it was Kouki who received a tackle.

Seeing the opponent was instead stepping forward when his attack was midway toward the opponent's vital spot, Kouki's eyes opened wide while he leaped backward and rearranged his posture.

「Can you deal against this? —<Earth of Fury>」

Earth and rocks became an avalanche that assaulted Kouki who was distanced from chief Donar. If Kouki was a bit further away then the scale of the attack was about five meter in length and width, but when the attack was deployed at close range it was like a giant tidal wave that covered his whole field of vision.

「tsu, this place is to be a sanctuary, god's enemy won't pass—<Sacred Severance>!!」

Kouki's chanting was over at the same time when the avalanche swallowed him.

Kouki's figure became not visible and the surrounding was covered by cloud of sand.

「.....He, head art user. You overdid it.」

「Using that in mock battle is.....」

The art users were flustered. It seemed it was a powerful blessing art that wasn't really used for mock battle at least. Naturally the blessing art's force was adjusted to a degree, but perhaps although this was the hero-sama, he might get at least an injury.....the art users were sending anxious looks with such thought.

But, their concern was needless.

「Hou, even that kind of barrier! Splendid!」

Linden spontaneously spoke a praise.

Inside the cleared up cloud of sand, Kouki was standing unharmed inside a shining half-sphere barrier.

The <Sacred Severance> also vanished at the same time when the sand cloud cleared. Chief Donar tried to charge at that timing but,

「—Sky Soaring Flash!」

「Uoh」

A slash of light flew and blew up the ground below chief Donar. Chief Donar stumbled due to the impact and sand pebbles.

After staring still at the scar crated from the slash of light for a while, chief Donar showed a speechless expression. And then, he turned toward Linden who was doing the next prayer and told him to stop by making fist.

「.....Kouki-dono. Let's stop this here. I have seen enough of Kouki-dono's magic and way of fighting. No, it's truly splendid! I never thought that we won't be able to land a hit even with the two of us!」

Chief Donar sheathed his sword while laughing cheerfully. Linden nodded deeply while stopping his prayer, and then cheers were raised simultaneously from all the soldiers and art users.

It seemed everyone was excited about the splendid mock battle where they were able to see unknown magic in that short but deep battle. They all were really excited that their leaders were unable to reproach them. Many mouths were saying out praise toward Kouki's fight.

「Err.....thank you very much, for the mock battle.」

Kouki smiled wryly while sheathing his holy sword. He was a little bit puzzled because it felt like it started suddenly and also ended suddenly.

Chief Donar was conforming with the soldiers' feeling while giving order to them to train even more diligently so to not lose with the hero-dono, and then he slowly walked toward Kouki.

And then, with an expression that looked somewhat lost, as though he was worrying of what words he should use,

「.....Kouki-dono. Kouki-dono is—」

Donar was about to say something, but he then held his tongue and looked around briefly. And then, he approached even nearer to say something in small

volume.

At that moment,

「BAA——NN!! This is your good neighbour-, maybe! Kooneee!」

「Nuwah!? Your highness-!?!」

「Hiih!? Koone-sama again!?!」

The soldier chief and hero jumped up while hugging each other harmoniously.

When they dropped their gaze, below them there was a little girl standing still in banzai position with unchanging wide smile. Really, what elusiveness she had there.

Although, Koone's smile was gradually changing into a wondering expression, and finally her expression turned complicated. While Kouki and chief Donar were tilting their head wondering what she was thinking, Koone was,

「.....Koone don't have any prejudice. None at all but.....Hero-sama and Donar are a bit.....Koone feels like knowing something that cannot be known.」

Saying that, she stared alternately at Kouki and Donar with an upward gaze.

There the two noticed. The great shock caused Kouki and Donar to be still hugging each other. Both of them screamed 「GYAAAAAAAH」 together and jumped back. And then, they desperately appealed at Koone that she was making a terrible misunderstanding.

「.....Koone understand. Yes, Koone really understand.」

Koone was showing the two an expression of kindness that they had never seen from her before. Chief Donar's face became demonic. Koone instantly changed the topic.

「Hero-sama, chief, as well as the head art user, please return to the palace right away.」

Koone's words that were spoken with a serious atmosphere made Kouki tilted his head while the expression of chief Donar and Linden turned grave.

They were immediately led to Moana's office right after they returned to

palace.

Inside the office, other than Moana and Spenser, there was a grandpa who looked like he would croak anytime, the head civil official Bruitt Cube whose body was quaking continuously. His eyelids were mostly closed too, so it made one felt suspense that he might be falling anytime.

「Ojii-chan! I brought hero-sama and others here! Please praise Koone!」

After saying that, of all things to do Koone leaped on Bruitt's back.

Kouki raised his voice 「Ah」. 'What are you going to do if he got smashed up like glasswork with that', such thinking caused a hair-rising emotion to well up from inside.

But, Bruitt who seemed to detect Koone leaping at him waved his hand slowly, right at that moment Koone rotated once midair and her momentum was nullified, without pause she then landed on the ground lightly with her feet.

(I, I have seen that before this! That's the aikido technique Nagumo used when dodging Myuu-chan's tackle(hug)!)

This time Kouki shuddered from a different meaning. It was a movement that was exactly the same like the demon king-sama when he parried with one hand Myuu who was being playful with a force that was a bit unbecoming for a little girl.

It seemed the grandpa head civil official who looked like he would croak anytime was actually an aikido master.

Perhaps it was a usual sight because no one was paying any mind to it.

「Koone-sama. If gramps remember correctly, it should be a subordinate who I sent to call them here?」

Those were scolding words that implicitly called on her repeated willful sneakiness. From the gap of the eyelids that should be mostly closed with only thin opening, dangerous eyes were peeking out with a glare.

「The matter might be a race with time! Now, let's quickly move to the main topic! Let's do that!」



Koone changed the topic with all her might. And then, she turned the brunt of the matter to her big sister with all her might.

Moana was twitching from the stare of the eyes behind Bruitt's narrow eye slits while nodding at the correctness of Koone's words. She cleared her throat.

「The reason I asked all of you to gather here lies in the letter that arrived just now, carried by the messenger from Arquette territory.」

After saying that, she fluttered a letter with its seal opened to show them.

「Your majesty. Where is the messenger?」

Linden titled his head in puzzlement seeing that the essential messenger who brought the letter here was not in attendance. Bruitt was the one who answered.

「He entrusted the letter and then fainted after giving a simple explanation of the situation. It seemed he rushed here with almost no rest at all. I have him rest in another room. It seemed he was running the whole time until here through a distance of two and half days in just one day.」

「That's.....」

Linden hummed in amazement hearing about that extremely reckless journey. At the same time the graveness in his expression increased.

「In other words, some kind of emergency situation is happening in Arquette?」

Chief Donar asked with a grave expression.

Arquette territory was in the west territory where the desert cut off, it was a territory that was located the nearest to Synclea kingdom's capital. It was an important base on top of being the territory that carried food and other materials to the capital that became a battlefield, also Arquette territory itself also possessed a vast grain-producing area. It was an important food supply center.

For a messenger to come from that Arquette territory in emergency brought nothing but bad premonition.

Moana read aloud the content of the letter.

「According to Rothko's report, a part of the grain-producing region seem to dry up.」

「tsu, that's, however.....」

Chief Donar who almost spoke 'impossible' against his better judgment held his tongue in hurry.

In this world, when one heard the phenomenon of "dried up", they would link connect the event to the existence of miasma no matter what.

However, there should be no way for the <Dark Being> to invade at the west territory that was abundant with nature. After all monitoring force was placed at the desert area and the capital, at the northern sea and southern mountain range area to prevent that.

Message method using wind from blessing art was swift, and there was no report of any strangeness that had reached Moana yet, based from that it was difficult to think that the <Dark Being> managed to infiltrate.

But, in reality a phenomenon of crops drying out had occurred, from that it was the height of folly to discard the possibility easily.

The letter from feudal lord Rothko who was entrusted with Arquette territory by Moana also reported that the existence of <Dark Being> wasn't confirmed.

Seeing chief Donar holding his tongue, Moana continued speaking.

「The cause is unknown. But, it seems that from some time ago there was the inclination that the growth of crops was slow, I receive the report with that gist. Thinking that perhaps the fertility of the land is decreasing, I consulted Bruitt and thought to dispatch Koone at the time when the weather change but.....」

It became an event that wasn't at the level of fertility decreasing because of growing crops too much, that was how it was.

「We have to deal with this quickly and investigate the cause. Arquette's grain-producing region becoming no good is also a problem that we cannot shut our eyes to, but more than that, if the cause made this case grow until where we lose Arquette itself, that will be unacceptable.」

In a manner of speaking, it was like the front line base losing its food

warehouse. Of course, as an insurance there were also other multiple territories that shouldered the role as relay point of the food supply that supported the capital.

Even in the case that Arquette was crushed, the capital wouldn't go down.

It wouldn't, but. Even so the hard blow of the region that boasted the greatest efficiency getting crushed should at least shake the capital. That "shake" would become a certain opening.

And above all else, there wasn't even a shred of reason to leave alone the people behind them that they should protect.

「Therefore, Koone.」

「Yes, Onee-chan. It will be fine if Koone go and regenerate the dried up land right? Koone will also search for the cause while I'm at it!」

「Yeah, I'll count on you, Koone-ta—cough-, Koone. Save Arquette.」

Koone put her hands on her waist and threw out her chest with a puff as though to say to leave it to her. Moana who almost broke into a slovenly wide smile seeing that cleared her throat and maintained her queen mode. Her gaze then moved around through chief Donar and others.

「This matter require urgency. I wish to say that it's impossible, but there is still the possibility of a few number of <Dark Being> infiltrating our rear.」

「We will share the information about Arquette to the monitoring force of every places and all the neighboring territories, other than that it's best that we also send personnel to confirm directly.」

Chief Donar and Linden nodded together at the additional comment of Bruitt. In other words, they were told to select personnel that would be dispatched to every place from the soldier force and art user force.

「What about the guard for her highness? Will it be the royal guard?」

Commander Spenser nodded at the question of chief Donar.

「Yeah, I'll send the royal guard. From how the departure of her majesty to the spring was leaked, there is no way I can leave her majesty's side, but to replace me I'll organize an escort squad with the vice commander and Lilin to command

it.」

The name of the royal guard's vice commander was Spike Haim. He was the personal pupil of commander Spenser, and also his adopted child. He was blessed with talent, and while he was still at the middle of his twenty, he was an able royal guard whose sword skill was said to be approaching Spenser.

And then, it went without saying about Lilin. She had the head of art user as her father, and she was a heroic woman who was chosen to be among the most elites of the royal guard in her age of sixteen. If an escort squad was organized from the elites of the royal guard's warrior with the command entrusted to these two who were top class as vanguard and rearguard, there would be a sense of security as suited the occasion.

Although, thinking about the case where Moana was attacked before this, there was still some uneasiness.....

「In addition. Kouki. This is a personal request from me but.....can I ask you to participate in the escort squad of Koone?」

「Eh? I, am?」

Kouki reflexively pointed at himself in shock. Moana nodded briskly at him.

「I dare say that this case is a disorder in the land's blessing power and not actually because <Dark Being> is penetrating in. Even if that is actually the case, they should be few in number. I believe that they could be dealt with just by the escort squad alone.」

「Then why.....」

「In the case that few <Dark Being> possess ability beyond our anticipation or they are especially strong, Kouki's battle ability, other world magic, and then above all Kouki's special characteristic of "mostly unaffected by miasma" will be extremely reassuring. Of course, it will be dangerous compared to stay inside the protection of the capital, so I will prioritize Kouki's will in this.....what will you do?」

This was a wish from a big sister that thought of her little sister. Some degree of danger would exist no matter where he was. As for Kouki, he found it really hard to refuse, and he also didn't especially have any reason to refuse.

However, what made him hesitated was whether it was right or not for him who was seen as hero to leave the capital.

To speak further, even though there was no way the soldiers and people of capital wouldn't be affected if the hero who was especially summoned left outside, but even knowing that Moana made a judgment that prioritized her little sister. Kouki felt a delicate out of place feeling about that.

Which option was right.....?

Kouki felt troubled, but chief Donar suddenly opened his mouth.

「Your majesty, while this is presumptuous of me, it seems that Kouki-dono is a bit hesitant so I wish to express something.」

「.....I don't mind.」

「Then. ....Is your majesty trying to have Kouki-dono leave this capital temporarily, for his sake?」

「.....」

Hearing chief Donar pointing that out, Moana reflexively held her tongue. Kouki went「Eh?」 and stared at Moana in surprise.

「If I'm allowed to speak my opinion that I based from the mock battle that we did just now, then indeed, perhaps it's better if Kouki-dono leave the capital temporarily.」

「Wha-. Do, Donar-san. Di, did I do something that displease you?」

「No, that's not it at all, Kouki-dono. Rather, my apologize but it's a reason of happenstance.」

Kouki tilted his head in puzzlement of what Donar wanted to say. From the expression of Moana that he saw from the edge of his sight, he understood that somehow Moana seemed to have the same thinking with what chief Donar wanted to say.

Chief Donar told the bewildered Kouki.

「Kouki-dono is.....having a strong rejection toward fighting. Am I wrong?」

「tsu, that's.....」

Kouki was at lost for words that his innermost thought was guessed correctly.

「At first, I thought that Kouki-dono was unable to adjust your attack well because you tried to stop your strike just before it hit due to it being a mock battle, but I noticed in the middle. For Kouki-dono swinging weapon at the opponent.....is something that you reject from the bottom of your heart.」

Chief Donar's words paused for a moment was likely because what he wanted to really say was different. That was to say he wasn't going to say "reject" but「scared」.

「But, the existence of hero is already known in the capital, especially among the soldiers it is well known. The expectation toward Kouki-dono will rise whether you want it or not. ....For Kouki-dono who know about the current condition of our country, surely that must feel heavy.」

「Such.....thing is.....」

He couldn't say that it wasn't true. In fact, he felt it so heavy that he wanted to run away without worrying about his reputation or appearance.

「It seem that her majesty also has noticed already. Therefore, I'm thinking how about Kouki-dono temporarily leave the capital where the expectation toward you is rising regardless of your wish, and using this chance where there is a reason of guarding her highness that everyone can understand, you can look around at the safe territory at the rear. Perhaps, her majesty also has the same thinking like me?」

Kouki looked at Moana.

Moana also looked at Kouki and she lowered her eyebrows with a troubled look. Her expression told him more eloquently than anything of what she was thinking. That the words of chief Donar was correct.

「Ko, Koone object. Hero-sama is an important person, so we should have him safely stay in the capital with its solid protection.」

Koone who wished for Kouki to take her big sister and escaped when push came to shove hated it if Kouki left Moana's side. As though to say「This is a detestable flow of event!」, she tried to have Kouki stay in the capital with a plausible official reason.

Toward such Koone, Moana talked at her with a face not as a queen, but as a big sister.

「Koone. You understand right? Kouki don't have any duty or responsibility toward this world at all. And yet with him being at the capital, how will the voice that ask him for that will reach him? Last night, Koone talked with Kouki was in order to convey to him by yourself that there is no such thing, right?」

「Tha, that's right but.....」

Koone was a blackly scheming little girl, but it seemed that she couldn't win against her big sister. Her gaze wandered around to search for words but finally she let out a sigh and said「Can't be helped」.

「Don't worry, it's only a distance of a day if you seriously dash to here. Don't think of this that seriously, Kouki, you can just observe the really amazing territory that is abundant with nature in this world that you arrived at with great pain. Rather, this is a request from me rather than my consideration to you. Kouki, take a look at our country without fail. I will lose face as a queen if you only know about the desert and the capital of my country.」

After saying such thing, Moana showed a mischievous smile.

She said thing like request, but no matter how he saw it this was her being considerate. For Kouki too, staying behind in the capital while wracking his brain so much, thinking worriedly with irresolute mind about question without answer was also something he didn't want to do.

And above all,

「Without even looking, hearing, and feeling it myself, I'm not going to find the answer huh.....」

Kouki recalled the words that Koone said to him yesterday before she gave him a tour of the capital, and he resolved himself.

「I understand. I will join the escort squad. ....I'm thinking of going to see more about other place and people of this world.」

「Yeah, please do that without fail. What kind of feeling Kouki have toward this world, and what kind of conclusion that you reach, I want you to tell me

when the time come.」

「Yes, Moana-sama. ....I'm sorry, about various things. Also, to everyone too, thank you very much.」

Everyone inside the office gave a small smile at Kouki's word of thanks.

Three hours later. Thanks to the preparation that progressed with tremendous speed, Koone and her escort squad, as well as Kouki departed straight toward Arquette territory where the strange phenomenon occurred.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Finally, from the next chapter the story will start to move.



# Arifureta Chapter 271

## Arifureta After II Darkness in the Move

The Arquette territory that was the nearest territory to the Synclea kingdom's capital. (TN: Last chapter I wrongly used Arcnet. The correct one is Arquette.)

Due to the notification that was sent by Rothko, the feudal lord of that territory, Koone party that hurriedly arranged their preparation in the same day and departed rushed their Arous until the sun set and dashed straight toward Arquette territory.

Be that as it may, currently when the curtain of night had completely fallen, as expected they hesitated to advance through the dangerous night desert while escorting a royalty, and with the words of Spike who was charged to be the guard captain, the party camped for the night.

The night of desert had a face that was completely different from the afternoon.

In the camping ground where simple protective wall could be created using blessing art, four tents that looked simple but quite large were set up. Things like the framework and so on could be just formed from the ground using blessing art, so a tent could be created with only curtain that was excellent in heat retention despite its thinness. It was a really comfortable space with spaciousness and moderate temperature.

At the center of those four tents was a bonfire blazing up to drive away the night darkness. The bonfire was also created using blessing art where a kettle was put on a simple cooking stove.

The dinner was also over, while a part of the guard squad was acting vigilance against the surrounding, the squad captain Spike and his vice captain Lilin, Koone and Anneal who was accompanying the group as Koone's personal lady

attendant, and then Kouki, they were surrounding the bonfire.

Kouki accepted a warm drink that seemed like black tea (?) personally prepared by Anneal for after meal. He blinked when he put the drink into his mouth.

「.....This is delicious. It's bitter, but it also has a faint sweetness. Also it smell nice.」

「Fufu, thank you for the compliment, Kouki-sama. It's extracted from the leaf of a fruit called paruru. It's nutritional value is high, and it also has the effect that warm the body, so it's a necessary drink for travel that is expecting desert at night. Although Koone-sama dislike it.」

「Uu, because it's bitter. It makes Koone forget the taste of the delicious dinner. This is a medicine. Koone won't recognize paruru tea as tea. Koone declare, that Koone won't recognize it!」

Spike smiled wryly at Koone's bitter expression and insistent assertion, while Lilin was chuckling smilingly.

Koone sometimes acted mature, and actually she was really a schemer, but it seemed that her tongue was normally childish. Bitter taste and astringent taste were her natural enemy.

Drinking paruru tea was a must, so she still drank it without any rejection, but she was drinking it bit by bit while making a grimacing face. That figure of hers was indeed charming.

「.....What are you laughing at, hero-sama?」

「N, no, nothing.」

Koone glanced at Kouki with a sulky face. To that Kouki averted his face that was almost bursting into laughter. She was someone that was hard to deal with and carried out various schemes, but he couldn't hate her at all when he was showed her figure that was fitting of her age like this. Though, perhaps it was only Kouki being foolish.

Perhaps knowing that Kouki was holding his laughter, Koone was staring at him fixedly.

「Co, come to think of it, Spike-san is Spenser-san's child isn't it?」

Kouki had heard of it from Spenser already, but he didn't receive introduction of name and job before the departure from the person himself, so Kouki tried to ask for changing the topic.

Spike smiled wryly sensing Kouki was escaping using him while answering.

「Yes, we aren't related by blood though. It was a honor, or perhaps I should say a fortune, that when I was still a kid, it was discovered that I who lost my family to <Dark Being> attack had talent for sword, and I was welcomed as an adopted son.」

「Ah, I'm sorry.....」

「No no. There is no need to feel apprehension like that. Because it's not something rare to lose relative or friend from the attack of <Dark Being>.」

Saying that, Spike smiled brightly as though telling him that he really wasn't offended.

This young man possessed brown short hair and eyes. His age was 24 years old, but his trained body and the scars carved on his body, and then the atmosphere he was clad in told Kouki that this was a first class warrior.

His features didn't resemble Spenser, but the sharpness as warrior that he could caught glances of within his eyes was exactly like his adopted father, so he could accept it if he was told that the two were parent and child.

Although Spike told him to not mind it, but Kouki's expression turned awkward due to his careless topic change where he heard that this person was an adopted child.

「Hero-sama, you don't have any delicacy! Koone think that hero-sama has no delicacy!」

「Uguuh」

「Even all of Koone's family except Onee-chan had died, Anneal's grandpa and Lilin's mother also passed away at the previous battle. Aa, it hurts! Koone and also everyone are really hurt!」

「I, I'm sorry. I have been told often how I don't have delicacy. I'm really

sorry!」

「Koone is big hearted, so apology accepted. However, forgiving for “free” is just.....」

While showing her tolerance by saying that, Koone slowly held out the cup that she had drank half.

The formidable enemy of children tongue—paruru tea.

.....It seemed that her limit had came after defeating about half the content. Surely she was telling him to drink it in her place also for revenge how she was getting laughed at just now.

Guessing the intention of Koone who was holding out her cup smilingly at him, Kouki smiled wryly while accepting the cup but,

「Kouki-sama. Please don't spoil Koone-sama too much. Also, the one who doesn't has delicacy is Koone-sama.」

「Ouch ouch ouch ouch-. Annee—all, please stop stretching Koone's cheeks! Koone is whrongg! Soryyyyyy-」

Shockingly, Anneal was pinching Koone's cheeks *mugyuu*- with a nice smile on her face. Koone was apologizing with teary eyes while taking back the cup she was holding out.

Kouki was feeling chilly wondering whether it was okay that she laid her hands on a royalty. Lilin who was watching Anneal and Koone smilingly opened her mouth toward him.

「Anneal-san is the attendant of Moana-sama and Koone-sama since they were children, so they are practically like sisters. Anneal-san's grandpa was the art user head of the previous generation, and he was a close aide that was heavily trusted by the previous king. My father was the direct pupil of Anneal-san's grandfather you know?」

「Linden-san was.....」

Most likely, the granddaughter of a trusted confidant was the best choice for the playing partner of sisters who were the king's daughters. The lack of reservation that Anneal sometimes showed, and the love that she directed

toward Moana and Koone which was more than expected from a lady attendant must have come from that, Kouki thought.

But, there a doubt suddenly emerged. The daughter of the present art user head Linden, Lilin was as expected playing an active role as an art user. Then, why was Anneal who was the granddaughter of the previous generation art user head wasn't an art user?

Perhaps, like the combat maids that a certain demon king was placing in the side of princess Liliana to protect her while he wasn't at her side, keeping it a secret from the person herself, Anneal might be actually absurdly strong even while being a lady attendant?.....thinking that, Kouki stared at Anneal with a shivering expression.

By the way, the ten maid-san who were selected after their loyalty and ability were ascertained received special training straight from the demon king, and after that they were also getting training camp at Hauria clan's place, and their strength, inside, presence manipulation, *etc.* were demonically remodeled. In addition, they were armed with artifact class hidden weapons that were the demon king's quality product, if compared with the active duty knight, even alone they were at the level that could crush even enemies at battalion scale.....

Kouki who was made to realize the truth of the true state of affairs of that (or rather he was made to accompany them with training on occasion. He thought he was going to die.....) was always desperately enduring the tsukkomi that wanted to get out of his mouth when he was talking with Liliana at place like her office and so on.

'That person who is smiling gracefully behind you right now—her inside is a hyahha person, and throughout her body is loaded with awful hidden weapons all over you know'.....such tsukkomi. 'Their splendid conduct of diluting their presence so as to not be a distraction for their master—is actually directly taught to them by those dangerous head-reaping rabbits you know?', he wanted to say.

Of course, if he actually said such thing then his head would go *flop*, so he absolutely wouldn't say it.

Anneal who seemed to read Kouki's question from his gaze made a wry smile

while answering.

「I don't have the talent in blessing art to the degree that I can enter the art user force.」

「I, is that so.....」

「Fufu. Your expression turn awkward again, but please don't mind it.」

Kouki tightened his expression thinking that he had done it again. Anneal directed a kind expression to such Kouki. And then, she formed words with a gaze that was looking at a little far away.

「At the past, I also dreamed to become an art user like grandfather. One that wouldn't falter against any kind of harmful enemy, using that strength to repel them, protecting the royal family, my comrade, and then the people.....」

When Anneal's gaze returned to Kouki, she spoke with her cheeks reddening looking slightly embarrassed.

「For me my grandfather, was a hero.」 (TN: The word hero here in the raw doesn't use 'yuusha/the brave', but actually 'hero')

「Hero.....」

Suddenly, at the back of Kouki's mind the figure of his grandfather—Amanogawa Kanji emerged.

Kouki who was a grandpa boy idolized that person so much, he was a hero for Kouki.

He had never directly watched the figure of Kanji doing his work, but each time he came playing to his grandpa's house he asked his grandpa to tell him numerous tales of Kanji's experience as a capable lawyer.

Kanji who was a main character that done good and punished evil in his tales that was overflowing with human drama was truly the aspiration for Kouki, the "ideal image" that he someday would aim for.

「I cannot become like my grandfather, when I understood that, I was a bit, no, honestly speaking I was really down.」

「.....How, did you come to accept it in the end?」

Unable to become the self he wanted to become—he was able to imagine such shock, and the negative emotion that welled up with it. That was exactly why he got curious. He wondered, how was she able to smile brightly right now?

「Because even though I cannot become my ideal self, life is continuing.」

Those words were calm, but nevertheless they felt powerful. In those words, there weren't resignation toward something that couldn't be helped residing in it, but an earnest will to be more positive.

Kouki was at a loss for words. For some reason he didn't know what he should say.

In the place of Kouki who had no words, Spike spoke with a gentle expression.

「I heard that Anneal-dono's ability as a lady attendant is the best. If she doesn't go outside to accompany her majesty and her highness, it's possible for her to become the head of maid even in this young age. Besides, although her blessing art's power and scale are insufficient, but it seems her detailed control is rivaling even head Linden. Her personality is also great, with a lot of people seeing Anneal-dono as the ideal woman. With you realizing your own ideal, it's very hard to catch up to you. Please, I wish that you will stop at your current charm.」

「.....Spike-dono.」

Anneal's expression became very troubled.

As though to represent her feeling,

「Spike. That's a great guts you have there to hit on Koone's Anneal in the middle of a duty! Koone think, that it's a great guts you have there. ....Koone will report it to Spenser when we get home.」

「Wha-, Koone-sama! I, I don't have such intention!」

Spike who was starting to hastily make desperate excuse, and Koone who toyed with him half teasingly, and half seriously speaking 「Koone won't hand over Anneal!」. And then, there was Anneal who was watching over that with an even more troubled look.

The occurrence of the small chaos caused the guards who were standing guard against the surrounding, preparing for tomorrow, or taking rest to watch the ruckus with half smile.

Beside Kouki who was watching while thinking 'no matter where they are, getting involved with Koone will turn into chaos huh', Lilin got closer to him and whispered into his ear in amusement.

「Vice captain Spike has a straightforward personality, perhaps because he is raised by captain Spenser. He is too straightforward that his words also came out straightforwardly, I too has thought several times before you know, is this person hitting on me? Like that.」

Kouki wondered why, he was feeling a déjà vu at this.

「He, hee.....is that so. By any chance, is there a lot of women that he do that to?」

「Right right. Exactly. Once it became a bloodbath, and at that time it finally made him became self aware that he ought to re-examine his own speech and conduct, so recently he tried to choose his words carefully, but sometimes he did this out of nowhere. Because of that, it's like the value of his needless words increased, or the vice captain's poisonous fang toward the female who received the out of nowhere words is.....」

「That's really.....」

At the back of Kouki's mind, his ponytail childhood friend came out, pushing away his grandfather that was emerging to the surface until now. And then, that childhood friend was directing an exasperated gaze to himself.

Kouki's feeling became unable to endure that gaze for even a second longer, and unconsciously inside his heard he yelled 「Right now is different! I'm properly paying attention to my action and speech! It's true!」, he repeated his justification like a little brother whose mischief got found out by the big sister. The same like Spike in front of his eyes.

「By the way, his poisonous fang is sometimes toward the male too.....」

「That way too!?」



「Kouki-sama. Please be careful okay?」

「To what!? No, I understand what you want to tell me though!」

「Currently he is still being a bit withdrawn because of his reservation toward Kouki-sama who is the hero, but vice captain's act toward male is unreserved originally, so if by any chance he is coming on to you persistently, please speak to him clearly.」

「Speaking, about what.....」

「Of course, speak your rejection. By the way as for me, if it's now I understand that he isn't actually hitting on me but, at the time I was normally thinking 『This guy is seriously annoying huh』, and I spoke really harsh words to him. But vice captain only got a bit down before he immediately got back on his feet, so I wish that Kouki-sama won't mince your words, it's better if you will tell him things that you don't want to say. After all vice captain, he has a side that is a bit dull in human relationship.」

Kouki shuddered in fright.

Not toward Spike's weak point (lol). But toward Lilin's words 「This guy is seriously annoying huh」 that came from her heart.

Lilin Stole. She was selected as royal guard's art user at sixteen, a young talented woman to the degree that she was selected to have captain status at temporary sortie. Her long brown hair that looked similar with Kouki was tied into twintail (she said it was to make it easier to feel the wind or something), her physical feature also left a bit of immaturity, so she looked younger than her age.

Her brown eyes that were attached with long eyelashes were shining powerfully with self-confidence and resolve, while she was slender, her limbs that depicted feminine curve was charming.

Looking objectively, she was a high level beauty.

That beautiful girl was saying 「This guy is seriously annoying huh」 while smiling brightly in amusement.....

Kouki tried to ask her with a feeling of seeing something scary.

「By the way, Lilin-san.....what did you say to Spike-san?」

Lilin who was staring in puzzlement at Kouki, without any particular shyness or intention to hide anything,

「—『If you say revolting thing even more than that while we are in the middle of training, I'm going to chop up your balls you know?』 was what I said though?」

「.....」

From the back of Kouki's mind, the first wife of the demon king appeared with his ponytail childhood friend getting chased out. Her hand was in the shape of finger gun. It was beyond obvious what she was going to shoot at. After all she was the smasher who mass-produced manly woman.....

Why was it the females that Kouki were acquainted with were all totally peculiar like this he wondered.

Even his one other girl childhood friend who was supposed to be a soothing person, without noticing it when he realized she had hannya coming out on her back, and not just that when he noticed she now became able to attack at man's vital place without any hesitation.

An unknown helplessness shook Kouki in shivers.

Lilin who seemed to perceive that shaking of Kouki to be fear, or rather from feeling creeped up toward herself then made excuse a bit impatiently.

「No, see here. I too am not someone who is normally saying something like that you know? My motto is being combat ready at all times. My hobby is training. My dream for the future is to stand in the lead of extermination battle.」

Those words that were unsuitable to be coming from a girl of her age, were words that could easily be shut out by the current Kouki who somehow remembered of the many teaching to select his words carefully that was beaten up to him by his childhood friend.

And then that seemed to be the correct action for him to take.

Lilin proudly puffed up her chest and continued her words.

「Because, I was born for the sake of fighting. Not for being protected and also not for love, but for the sake of fighting to protect all those.」

She was born as a fighter. She was convinced of that. That was why, she didn't need words that would make teenage girl happy. If someone was going to praise her, then she wanted to be praised for the skill she had acquired, not her look. She didn't want praise for her hair and style, or her clothing or personality, but praise to her achievement of protecting something.

It depended on each person of how to feel toward those words that came from a girl in the middle of her teens. If it was people of a peaceful world, perhaps they would pity her thinking that those were sad words.

As for Kouki.....she looked dazzling to him. Of that figure that was convinced of her own existence and pushed forward undauntedly.

「Lilin-san, you are really cool.」

「Heh?」

Lilin was surprised at Kouki who gave words of praise toward herself who threatened his superior that she would chop up his balls when that superior was praising her.

Kouki praised after they were talking about Spike, so for a moment, Lilin wondered whether he was making fun of her, but looking at Kouki's expression, she immediately changed her thinking. There was envy emerging on Kouki's expression.

That was why, Lilin then,

「.....Thank you very much.」

Those were words of praise that made her happy after so long outside of the words of praise about her skill mastery and battle result from her seniors and Linden. She thanked Kouki back a bit bashfully.

「.....Hero-sama. That's a great guts you have there to make a pass on Koone's Lilin. As expected, here Koone need to report to Spenser and others that hero-sama messed around with Koone—」

「Koone-sama's possession is a lot! Or rather, I'm not making a pass to her at

all! Enough with this, can I please ask you to stop speaking those words without any basis and yet can possibly become fatal to me!?!」

Koone was looking!

‘While I am dealing with Spike who is making excuse, this son of a bitch is making a pass at Lilin whose age is relatively close to me and is a good friend!’ That fixed stare seemed to be saying something like that!

Kouki moved his gaze at Lilin to ask for help, but Lilin was already taking a bit of distance from Kouki and she was staring at far away direction. Her secret talk to Kouki about Spike was also over, so now she hated to become a target for that kind of talk and seemed to attempt to persist to not get dragged into it.

‘Really, there is just too many people with strong peculiarity among my female acquaintances!’ Kouki yelled that inside his heart.

But, he suddenly thought. Although Moana-sama was a siscon, a thickheaded person toward the emotion of the animal she was keeping, and some other various things, but he was able to spend warm time with her really normally.....such thought.

The positivity level inside Kouki toward Moana rose sharply.

At the same time he thought.

Toward Spike and other guards who were tilting their head saying 「Messing around like what?」, Koone suggestively said 「Yesterday, on the bed, with Oneechan and Koone and Spenser at the same time, hero-sama was—」, where hearing that Spike shudderingly said 「Not just the royal sisters, he even brought my adopted father to the bed with him!?!」. Koone was watching that with complacent smile. Kouki’s thought from seeing such Koone was,

—‘This small gangster. I’ve got to do something about her quick’

For the time being, in order to refill his paruru tea that was going to run out after a bit more, Kouki extended his hand toward the kettle hurriedly.

Next day. Just a bit before the sun reached its zenith at the sky, it came into view.

What could be seen from above a conspicuously large sand hill was a line of sand color and green color like a horizon being drawn. At the other side of the end of desert, there was a grass field spreading as far as the eye could see.

「This place is the end of desert.....」

「It's also the end of the battlefield. Fufu, hero-sama. Your eyes are opened really wide!」

World of desert—such impression was carved into Kouki's head. For such Kouki, the vast grassland where weeds were growing thickly and the verdant mountains that could be seen at far away deep in the southwest side made him couldn't help but felt moved emotionally. He was able to strongly feel it for real, that this was exactly what Moana and others were desperately protecting.

Seeing Kouki's emotional face, not just Koone, but even the guards and Anneal were letting out amused chuckles. There was even pride vaguely emerging on their expression.

Kouki who became embarrassed scratched his cheek awkwardly and asked to divert attention from him.

「Arquette is located ahead of this grassland?」

「Yes, hero-sama. At this pace we should be able to see it around noon.」

Spike's arous climbed down the sand hill in the lead.

Like that when they stepped into the grassland, Kouki felt right away as though the air changed. It was a mysterious sensation, but it felt as though he moved from a quiet place right into the middle of a festival, a sensation of his heart boiling strongly.

Now he got it. So this was the difference between a “death land” and a “living land”.....Kouki comprehended. The mysterious sensation that felt like extending through his skin surely must be the breath of life. This was surely what it meant by a place that was overflowing with blessing power.

All the arous were also advancing with somewhat pleasant steps. They advanced in such mood for a bit less than an hour.

Just like Koone said, by the time the sun reached the zenith, they came to see

a splendid protective wall that was obvious even when seen from afar.

「That's Arcquette you know, hero-sama. The protective wall made us unable to see from here, but at the other side there is grain-producing region spreading. Right now is the time for the crop to ripen up, so Koone think that it will be really impressive to see!」

They advanced for a while listening to Koone's information guidance. Several silhouettes came out from Arcquette's direction. They were heading here rapidly by riding a horse. It seemed the Arcquette's side also came out to confirm and greet Koone party.

The person advancing at the lead was a female with very short blonde hair, sharp blue eyes, and domineering air. She was wearing warrior equipment and five soldiers were following behind her.

「Excuse our impoliteness in your presence. I am Arcquette's vigilance corps captain, Ivana Borgia. We are here to welcome your highness.」

It seemed the one who introduced herself with really clear voice was the leader of the private army of Arcquette territory. It seemed that she was a person that Koone and others were well acquainted with because Koone replied with a broad smile.

「Long time no see isn't it, Ivana! Koone came to visit!」

「Yes, it has been a long time, Koone-sama. I never thought that your arrival will be beyond fast like this, I am slightly surprised.」

Koone hopped down and greeted. Ivana also smiled gently seeing that. She gave a cold feel from her first impression, but the gaze she was looking at Koone with was very kind. She was a beauty who stole people's eye in addition with that gap too.

「There is no way we won't rush here after getting told that there is abnormality in Arcquette's land. After all Koone exist for that sake.」

「Thank you very much, Koone-sama. Now, our lord is waiting. Let's go.」

Kouki reflexively stared once more at Koone who was acting seriously. He averted his eyes when Koone looked back at him with a really nice smile while

saying 「Is there something?」. While feeling embarrassed from getting snickered at by Anneal and Lilin, he entered into the city of Arcquette led by the vigilance corps.

「I never dreamed that your arrival will be beyond fast like this. My greatest gratitude for this swift response, your highness.」

Koone and others were led to the reception room of the feudal lord. The people of the guard squad were standing by in another room, but only Spike, Anneal, and then Kouki were accompanying Koone.

Like that they were enjoying the tea that was served to them for a few minutes. And the first voice that came out from the mouth of the feudal lord who was rushing into the room was that.

Rothko looked like he was still at the middle of his thirty, however, he was a person that was endowed with the appearance as a feudal lord. His moderate length dark blue hair had swept back style and he was wearing a monocle. If one had to say he was slender, and from a glance one could see that he was a civil officer rather than a soldier.

Behind him there was a woman that looked lady-like, with her strong-willed eyes expression making her distinctive. Her long blonde hair was beautifully arranged, and including her bearing, elegance could be felt from her.

「Dear.....」

Rothko's arm was pulled by that woman as though to chide him. Rothko came to his sense suddenly that he was acting too impatient. He changed his expression and fell on his knee in order to perform his greeting against a royalty.

「It has been a long time isn't it, Rothko. Also Sylia. There is no need for any stiff greeting. Rather than that, please speak in detail regarding the content of your letter.」

For Kouki whose mind couldn't let go no matter what the impression of Koone's audacious behavior in the capital, as expected, he felt an intense discomfort seeing the speech and act of Koone that was really like a royalty.

With a perceptiveness that was at the level of esper, Koone sent a glance at Kouki so he maintained his poker face.

Rothko smiled wryly saying 「I beg your pardon」 while standing up from his difficult posture. He then sat down on the sofa inside the room. Syla sat down following him.

「Hero-sama. This is Arcquette's feudal lord—Rothko Arcquette, and his wife Syla Arcquette.」

「It's an honor to meet the two of you, I am called Amanogawa Kouki.」

The gaze of Rothko and Syla turned toward the unfamiliar young man, so when Koone introduced him, the feudal lord couple both opened their eyes wide from hearing Koone's way of calling Kouki.

「Some time ago, there was a notification coming about the oracle that Foltina-sama summoned an existence that was called a hero but.....to think that it's true. It's an honor for me to catch sight of you, hero-dono.」

It seemed that they were notified beforehand only about the possibility of the summon of an existence called hero. Rothko nodded in understanding and introduced himself politely.

In panic Kouki appealed his wish to Rothko to not act so humble toward him, and so that he called him by name.

And then, Koone told them that Kouki was accompanying her also with the objective of widening his view about this world, and after that the talk finally touched the topic of the letter.

「Then, Rothko. The letter mentioned about the crops drying up though.....」

「Yes, your highness. We first confirmed it about a week ago when we received the report.」

According to Rothko's explanation that started after he said that, it seemed that from some time ago the growth of the crops was obviously slow. The growth of this world's plants was very fast due to blessing power. Therefore, if the growth slowed it would quickly become obvious.

Be that as it may, it was something natural, and it wasn't like there wasn't



precedent of the land's fertility decreasing temporarily before. They sent report to the capital, and if they saw no improvement they would ask Koone to come, it was a problem at the level where they were allowed to deal with it leisurely like that.

But, a matter occurred a week ago where they couldn't be leisurely like that.

In an area where a gold colored carpet was spreading due to the grain plants' tip ripening, there were withering plants making it like a gaping hole was opened in the carpet of plants.....

There was no such natural phenomenon that had ever been observed until now.

It was also possible that in that place there might be <Dark Being> that was clad in miasma which caused that, but in that case there should be a track—track like a path of plants dried up without any vitality—of the perpetrator's intrusion stretching until the center of the grain-producing region, however, such trace was nonexistent.

If it was possible, there was only the possibility of the perpetrator dropping from the sky, but in that case where was the falling <Dark Being> going to then?

Naturally, there was no trace of intrusion moving in toward the grain-producing region, so there was also no trace of the intruder going out.

Just in case, the vigilance corps searched the surrounding in full force, but they didn't find even a speck of shadow of the <Dark Being>.

While they were doing that, the dried up land was increasing bit by bit.

Because of that, if the cause of that wasn't <Dark Being>, they judged that this must be an abnormality in the blessing power, something that they weren't able to manage by themselves anymore, and Rothko reported it to the royal family and asked for help.

「I see, Koone don't get it at all!」

「Yo, your highnesssss」

For some reason Koone decisively said such thing with a smug look. Rothko's eyebrows hung down dejectedly at that. Sylas's expression also turned troubled.

Koone added on her speech as though to calm down the feudal lord spouses who were like that.

「There is no precedent of such phenomenon, so Koone doesn't understand of the cause just from listening to it. Going to the scene a hundred times! Investigating by foot! The matter about land can just be asked right from the land! And it's not like the cause really have to be known, the research of the cause can be postponed for later and it's fine if Koone just regenerate the land's blessing power for now.」

「It will be great if the land can be regenerated but.....」

‘The incident doesn't occur inside this room, it's occurring in the actual scene!’ saying that, Koone swiftly stood up and demanded for guide to the location. Seeing that shocking lightness of footwork, the feudal lord spouses, and even Anneal and others who should be used to Koone's attitude were making a really speechless expression.

As for Kouki, in his own way he secretly made tsukkomi 「Are you a self-made detective huh!」 inside his heart. Recently, he felt like he had become a remarkable straight-man character but.....

Kouki chose to not think deeply of that.

The grain-producing region spreading at the west of Arquette city was turned into a really splendid gold colored carpet. Perhaps it was wheat or a plant that was similar with that. The plentifully ripe plant tip was rustling from the wind, the scenery of the whole area swaying rustlingly gave anyone watching a feeling that couldn't be described.

At place like 【Ur City】, it was also near 【Nort Mountain Range Area】, so Kouki often visited the place for monster extermination. There was vast rice cultivation area nearby that city, so this was a scenery that he was familiar with but.....

Rather, it was that point of familiarity that was giving permeating feeling into Kouki's heart.

That was why, Kouki's eyes were fixed excessively at what he saw.

At the existences of gaping wide hole of withering crops everywhere, as though there were insect swarm chewing at those spots, or perhaps like failed work of crop circles.

The figure of the crops that lost their golden shine, rotting on the ground with discoloration caused him a melancholy that was comparable with the deep emotion that he felt before.

Kouki and others arrived at a spot that was withering in consciously larger size. At the center of dried ground in circle shape with diameter about 5 meter.

「Your highness, how is it?」

Rothko asked with a grave expression. Koone didn't answer right away, she was staring at the ground with an expression so serious that Kouki had never seen from her before. And then, she suddenly went down on her knees, and her hand softly caressed the ground as though in sympathy.

「.....Certainly, blessing power is gone from this place. It's in the verge of turning into desert. There is blessing power from the surrounding land, so even now the blessing power is flowing in bit by bit to recover the land.」

「That's.....then, it will go back to before someday even if we left it alone?」

「Yes. Koone think so.」

Rothko and Syla, and then Ivana and others, the vigilance corps members who were accompanying them sighed in relief and tension left their soldiers. Syla timidly asked.

「Does your highness understand the cause?」

Koone slowly shook her head to the side still with a difficult expression. It seemed she was saying that the cause was unknown. And then, as though choosing her words carefully, she opened her mouth.

「This way of drying up, the way the blessing power is lost. ....It's really similar when miasma poured down, and <Dark Being> absorbed the blessing power. Koone think, that it's similar.」

「However.....your highness. If this is the doing of <Dark Being>.....」

There was not a single trace of <Dark Being> being here except of the dried

land phenomenon. It was as though the perpetrator suddenly appeared in that spot like a ghost before suddenly vanishing, but.....

No one had ever seen or heard about such phenomenon.

Certainly, surveillance and security were carried out at night, but this was a vast grain producing region. It was impossible to illuminate everywhere with light, because of that even if for example <Dark Being>, or perhaps something else was materializing at that spot in midnight, there was high possibility that no one would notice.

But, in that case then why was that intruder appeared and then vanished without causing anything.....

How did the intruder vanish.....

As expected, it was natural to think of this as the land's abnormality.....

Koone also nodded again at Rothko's thinking.

「For the time being, Koone will try <Regeneration>。」

If perhaps the cause that made blessing power was lost from here was alive, then the land would dry up again even after the regeneration, or perhaps Koone's regeneration power would be neutralized.

In that case, there was also the possibility of understanding something by observing that process of event.

The ceremony of Koone's heaven's blessing art <Regeneration> started with such intention.

「Those who pour old blood, Koone de Shelt Synclea pray—」

With her small body, she slowly spread out both her hands as though trying to embrace the world. Her jade eyes that were half closed and peeked out slightly seemed to stare at one point, however, her eyes also looked like they weren't looking at anywhere.

The pattern that was painted on Koone's body was increasing in brightness each time she spoke the scripture that wished for good harvest.

「—Oh great will, oh our mother. Your child offer her life。」

Gently, Koone's golden twin tail fluttered. Not because of wind, but an invisible power was whirling around her.

That power could be felt flowing into the land with Koone as the center.

「Abundant crop to the land, healing to the water, ripening to the wind, will to the fire—」

The land shined. Particles that could be mistaken as spark of golden fire rose up. The boisterously dancing particles looked as though the land was displaying its delight.

「Right now one more time, to the dead world—the power of living」

Koone's wholehearted prayer and wish revived the dying land. From below the rotting crops, a new life was budding. It was not a crops but a mere grass, but without doubt nature was returning to a place that almost turned into desert.

「Amazing.....」

Kouki reflexively whispered that. Different from simple magic or blessing art, it felt like there was something sacred from Koone's art. The age of god magic his childhood friend specialized at must be able to the same thing too, but even so, the art of the small Koone who was praying wholeheartedly was something that really compelled on his heart for some reason.

「Fufuhn, isn't that right, isn't that right! Koone is amazing!」

Kouki who was in a trance came back to his senses with 'hah' when he heard that voice that sounded so smug it sounded odious.

As expected, he saw a little girl with tremendously smug face there. She was puffing up her chest so much he wondered whether she would fall behind.

The solemn and scared atmosphere was instantly dispersed.

Kouki answered with a really complicated expression.

「Haha.....yes, it's amazing. Koone-sama is really amazing.」

「Hnfufuh. It's fine you know? It's fine to praise Koone more you know? Rather Koone won't mind even if you worship Koone! Koone won't, mind it at

all!」

The princess-sama was really getting on high horse.

Kouki was feeling somewhat wanting to hit her, but seeing Koone who seemed to concentrate of the regenerated land even while getting on her high horse, he decided to praise her more for now.

Koone looked terribly in a good mood, however, her expression immediately turned serious and,

「Rothko. It looks like the land has returned to before. There is no sign of blessing power vanishing. This place need observation for a little bit more but.....」

「Is, that so..... Hmmm, just what in the world cause this..... How eerie. Although, we now understand that your highness's power can recover it. For the investigation of the cause, we will examine the land around Arquette too, but for now we can have a peace of mind. Your highness, I'm really thankful for your help in this!」

「This is Koone's role. But, there is no way we can leave alone a bizarre phenomenon of a part of land suddenly drying up, so Koone is thinking of staying in Arquette for a while to investigate. Rothko, is there a problem with that?」

Different from with Kouki, Koone interacted with Rothko seriously without any smugness.

「It doesn't matter, I'm just a mere swordsman anyway.....the other party is a feudal lord-sama after all, there is nothing wrong at all」 Kouki consoled himself inside his heart.

「That's the best I can ask for, your highness. By any means, please stay in my mansion.」

Saying that, Rothko nodded happily.

After that, Kouki and others were treated with late lunch.

At the seat of the lunch, the son of the feudal lord spouses—Rondo Arquette

(ten years old) was introduced. He was an intelligent boy with dark blue hair the same like his father, and a strong willed eyes he inherited from his mother. He had a serious personality for his age.

Although, he also had a side that was appropriate for his age. Spike and Lilin told him various heroic deeds like how Kouki was an existence that was called a hero, how using the magic of another world, in the first day he was summoned he crushed named <Dark Beings> by himself, how he fought the tag team of the soldier chief and art user head by himself and won, and so on. Hearing those stories, the eyes that he directed toward Kouki were already sparkling, causing Kouki to plainly bear damage to his heart.

And then, perhaps seeing through the inside of Kouki's heart that was like that, Koone blabbered about things that were true and things that were false, or rather most of what she blabbered was false, and in the end, she even told Rondo about the incident on the bed, and the incident of secret midnight meeting that were already nothing but scandal, so the feudal lord spouses' expression convulsed, and Kouki desperately made excuse.....

What was the most chaotic above all, was how Rondo lad was gradually starting to look enviously at the exchange between Kouki who was turned into tsukkomi machine and Koone who was fabricating incidents looking like she was absurdly enjoying it.

No, if it had to be said without any indirect expression, wasn't that already jealousy despite his young age.....

In the end, was that jealousy directed to the princess who was getting along well with the hero,

Or else, was it something directed to the hero who was getting along well with the princess,

Thinking if it was the case of the latter, Kouki yelled with all his strength inside his heart toward the Rondo lad.

'For that kind of future, you gonna need resolve for it not just about status or position, but in various meaning y'know!' Like that.

He must not be called a good for nothing for not speaking it out loud. It was

Koone-tan that was scary.....

The recovery of the land was finished for the moment, and in the preparation for the investigation that would be carried out seriously from tomorrow, Kouki and others rested their body in the feudal lord's mansion.

The time was evening.

The blazing red sun was about to sink at the west's ground. The shadow was greatly stretching to the east, the world was being dyed red.

The golden grain producing region was tinged with red color, producing superb contrast with the deepening shadow, the vibrant hue that was different from afternoon also created picturesque scenery.

There was watchtower built inside the protective wall of Arquette. Two young vigilance corps member that were charged to keep watch were looking fondly at the scenery that was always familiar, yet they never got bored to look at.

「Hey. Did you see hero-sama?」

「Ou, I saw I saw.」

「What do you think about him?」

To confirm once more that there wasn't anything unusual, even while staring at the nature's picturesque scene one of the guard devoted himself to run his gaze vigilantly around while asking that casually. The other guard showed a thinking posture for a bit before answering.

「I thought that he looked somewhat normal.」

「What an impolite guy. Should I report this to the captain.....」

「You are the one asking me. But, you also thought so right?」

「Well, he is different from my image. I thought he would be something like, someone that is more majestic or like domineering, when someone see him they are going to get 『This person ain't ordinary!』 right away, like that.」

「Right right, from what I heard he is really strong but.....somehow he doesn't look like soldier huh.」



The two guards talked to each other about their impression that if Kouki heard them, he might reflexively shouted 「Cannot deny that-」 with his hand pressing on his chest and his body fell on all four.

But, at that time, one of the guards raised his hand to stop his partner who was opening his mouth to say some more thing, and his eyes narrowed.

「What's wrong?」

「.....Oi, over there. I cannot see well because of the shadow, but is there something there?」

「Ah? Where?」

Both of them focused their sight.

There.

Something was there. Something black, clad in mist, a figure's—

「tsu, this must be a joke! Why here-」

「Sound the warning bell-」

The true identity that the guards saw through was an existence that shouldn't be here. Yes, something like an existence that was clad in black mist, there was only one such existence in this world.

The guard who took into his hand the hammer to ring the bell set up in the watchtower thought that in any case, he had to sound the alarm. While staring fixedly at that existence—the <Dark Being>, his hand was swung.....

「What, the.....what the hell is going on!」

The impossible sight made him stopped his arm reflexively.

Perhaps that was something that couldn't be helped.

After all, ahead of his gaze, they were appearing one after another. Like black ink that was sprinkled on the grain-producing region, spheres of miasma were suddenly materializing from empty air.

*bo-bo-bo-*, Deep darkness color even deeper than the shadow created by the sunset was increasing with terrific momentum everywhere in the grain-producing region. Those spheres of darkness vanished a beat later like cocoon

that was shattered from inside.

What was left behind was human shaped <Dark Being> clad in thick miasma.

It wasn't just one or two. In the blink of eye, the number was increasing into a corps, no, an army scale.

「-, -!? Ring the bell quickly!!」

「tsu!!」

The guard who forgot himself recovered his senses from his partner's yell. He immediately struck the warning bell strongly as though to shake off his fear.

Their colleague rushed toward the bottom of the watchtower to inquire what was going on. The two guards entrusted their colleague to immediately close the gate, and then to inform the feudal lord.

Even during that little bit of time, the grain producing region was invaded by beings clad in miasma.....

「Aa, Foltina-sama-」

They spontaneously implored to a great existence. Their body was petrified as though they were being bound hand and foot.

That was how much their despair was.

The golden color that Arquette's grain producing region boasted of, was currently painted over with darkness color by an army of <Dark Being>.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The story finally started to move.

Around the next chapter, I'm finally going to write combat scene.

Putting that aside, the comic version's latest chapter is published.

Oh man, Hajime-san is seriously suffering when it's turned into comic.

Who is it, who is the one that make Hajime-san suffer like that!?

Well, it's Shirakome though.....

This time the comic is also really impactful. Please read it by all means if you have interest,

Please go look at Comic Galdo in Overlap-sama's homepage!

# Arifureta Chapter 272

## Arifureta After II The Human Called Amanogawa Kouki

Grieve and despair, and then unease were filling Arquette territory to the brim.

Inside the city that was surrounded by defensive wall, all the members of the vigilance corps were running around to evacuate the people as well as preparing the city defense.

The chaos was deepening with accelerated speed.

But that was only reasonable.

After all this was a situation that was without precedent even through the long history—the army of <Dark Being> passed through the front line of the desert area and appeared in penetration into the rear territory, such situation was visiting this place.

The trust toward the capital, the safety of the rear territory, and then even in the case that the front line was actually breached, at the very least there would be notification that gave time for evacuation at minimum. The terror of seeing those common senses overturned like this was immeasurable.

The distorted expression of terror from the mass that were running about in pandemonium told the emotion they felt more eloquently than anything.

And then, the feudal lord mansion was similarly amidst such chaos, no, because they were grasping the situation more accurately than the mass, their state of being was even more terrible.

「Shit-, just what the hell this happen-」

「Isn't this some kind of illusion!? No matter what this is just strange!」

「How is the state of the defensive readiness progressing!? We won't hold with just the protective wall! Is the reinforcement by the art users not done yet!?!」

「Is it possible to retreat!? Even if it's just her majesty we have to get her to escape.....」

「Rather than that what is the capital is doing!? Don't they notice that the enemy has circled to the rear!?!」

「The enemy ain't coming here by walking don't you see ! It's too optimistic thinking that the capital noticed!」

It was a wild uproar. The excellent civil officers and vigilance corps members were raising angry yell to divert their mind from the negative emotions of despair and fear.

But, at that time,

「Don't get flustered!」

An overwhelming angry yell that excelled theirs resounded.

They who returned to their senses while going 'hah' moved their gaze. Over there they found the figure of the feudal lord Rothko. Although his expression was grim, but his posture was calm.

As though that was the signal, the next moment, the door of the temporary countermeasure room was opened with a sound *BAM*. The ones who entered were Koone, Anneal, Kouki, and then several members of the guard squad.

「Rothko. Koone sent several people from Koone's guards, especially Spike and Lilin to help with the defense preparation. The reinforcement of the defensive wall is being done by the blessing art users, you don't mind aren't you?」

「OF course. How is the understanding of the situation?」

「An army appeared and is surrounding us, that's all.」

Rothko nodded.

「From the report just now, the total number of enemy is five thousand. Even

now the number is still increasing. We are completely surrounded from four directions. The method of their appearance is unknown. It seems they are a mix of cow head species, scaled dragon species, eccentric species. Flying species and giant species aren't sighted.]

「.....Calling it a small mercy, is impossible huh.」

All the <Dark Being> that Rothko reported were <Dark Being> that didn't cross two meter. The height of Arquette's defensive wall was around ten meter, but it wouldn't be able to prevent the invasion of <Dark Being> that could fly of giant type <Dark Being>.

Therefore, they were able to avoid a situation where they would receive swift attack that penetrated to inside, however, the number of the enemy was too absurd to call it a small mercy.

Until the end Arquette was a material accumulation area in the rear. It more or less had protective wall and so on to be a temporary place for safe escape in the worst case that the capital was fallen.

But, in the first place the people of Synvlea wouldn't have a future by the point of time the capital was fallen. Therefore, there was no way that the existence of soldier force would exist when there was not even a mechanism like the oasis that weakened the <Dark Being>. Until the end this place only had "vigilance corps" that consisted from the common people.

To the end their role was to deal with dispute inside the territory, dealt with wild animal, and so on. So to speak their role was like police, their number also didn't reach a hundred.

Soldiers and art users who were really excellent went to the capital or the surrounding monitoring base that doubled as town, so it could be said to be only natural.

In other words, by the point of time they were surrounded by an army, there was no way to save Arquette.

Rothko spoke with a pained face.

「My deepest apology-, your highness. To invite you to this kind of mortal peril-」

「No one is able to predict this kind of situation. Rothko. Your decision from the beginning until the end is decisive and accurate. There is no need for you to feel responsible toward Koone.」

「Your highness.....」

Perhaps it should be said, as expected from a royalty. Even in this kind of despairing situation, Koone wasn't shaken. The fortitude of this young girl who wasn't even ten years old yet made the people inside the room who were reeling to get a hold of themselves. Their expression became resolved one after another.

「Koone wish that the people can escape somehow but.....」

Koone's grim expression conveyed how she was denying her own wish with her own prediction.

In respond to that Rothko's reply was also really concise.

「It's too late for that.」

Koone quietly nodded saying 「Isn't that right」.

「Then, the biggest problem right now, is whether the capital is noticing this abnormal situation or not.」

「Right. The underground vault of Arquette is tough. Right now goods are carried out from there in hurry. As soon as that's finished, we will evacuate the people inside. If we count the defensive wall, perhaps we will be able to hold out for about two days.」

「If the capital already know about this situation and they are already moving.....at the fastest it will be one day. If that's not the case and we send out messenger.....it will be about two and a half day. It will be just barely.」

In any case, they had to send messenger. The information that the <Dark Being> might be able to ignore the front line and appeared anywhere couldn't be let to stay "unknown" even in the worst case.

Even more important than calling for reinforcement, Moana absolutely had to be told about this fact.

While Koone and Rothko were discussing and deciding what they had to

accomplish *at the end*, the inside of Kouki's heart who was watching that was raging.

If it was himself from a bit of time ago, then he would surely go and slaughter the enemy in high spirits. He wouldn't believe even the smallest possibility that he might die, that if it hit him then it was surely possible without doubt, any other circumstances was rubbish in front of the "rightness" that protected the people. Such blind belief.

(Am I, am I going to kill again? Even when with Ragar, I was like that..... This time it will be several hundred, several thousand lives? Even though they too are also just trying to live? That kind of thinking is "mistaken". No, they are seeing human as livestock. ....Then, are they evil?)

He didn't understand, the correct choice-.

Kouki looked at his own hand. His hand was trembling was because he got a hunch of his own death. Because death was terrifying.

There was no strong soldier force here. As expected, he didn't have any confidence of surviving after taking on alone an army that surpassed five thousand strong. He didn't have any convenient principle in him. He understood that he would die when it was his time to die.

At the same time, he recalled the sensation of that time.

That vivid sensation that was more than "cutting flesh", the sensation of "cutting down life". A single life, a path of living, that will, he destroyed it with his hand and ended it.

How terrifying. He got the flashback of those eyes of Ragar that looked empty, yet made him feel his resentment. He was assaulted by an intense urge to vomit.

(If there is an ideal method where both sides won't die, where everyone is saved.....shit-, this thinking is no good-. I'm not going to be able to choose again! The result of that, I should know it already!)

Before he realized it he gritted his teeth audibly *grit*.

「Kouki-sama, are you okay? Your complexion looks bad.....」



The soft voice addressing him made him come back to his senses and when he turned toward that voice, there was the figure of Anneal looking worriedly at him there. When he looked even more carefully, Lilin and others had returned without him noticing. They were reporting with exhausted expression that must come from working their blessing art really hard.

It seemed the appearance of the <Dark Being> finally stopped. In the end, the total number swelled up until around ten thousand. It was already at the point where it wouldn't be strange if they started advancing anytime.

Right now everyone were discussing with each other about how to make the messenger to escape to the capital.

Koone was a royalty. What's more if Moana who had lost most of her power was excluded, she was the last royalty of Synclea kingdom who had power left. Also looking from how <Regeneration> was an art that displayed its true ability for the revival post war, she had to survive no matter what.

Therefore, Koone had to survive no matter what happened. The messenger had to be Koone and her guard squad—that was the claim of Rothko's side.

In contrast Koone was,

「No, Rothko. Koone will be nothing more than a burden when breaking through the encirclement net. If thinking about a method of breaking through with more certainty, then the conspicuous Koone will gather attention while hero-sama and several people as guards are breaking through is the most suitable way.」

Kouki was taken aback hearing those words. Indeed, Kouki had the strength to breakthrough, and above all else miasma didn't affect him. If Koone was among the messenger party, then the group couldn't only use all their strength to breakthrough the encirclement net, they also had to spare their strength to protect Koone.

Koone's suggestion was really rational. Except the point where she made light of the preciousness of herself a bit too much.

That was why, Kouki noticed. The meaning of the resolve dwelling at Koone's side face, in that young look.

She wanted him to take away her big sister and escape—she wanted him to grant that wish, that was what Koone was saying.

Most likely, the clever Koone understood. Seeing the <Dark Being> appearing through the distance of space, the balanced situation between the <Dark Being> and human had crumbled.

A pinpoint attack at the rear territory.

With this the soldier force of the capital would be made to send reinforcement, and their battle strength would be divided by doing that, however like that they wouldn't be able to protect what they ought to protect—like that Synclea kingdom would collapse.

Surely she was looking at such future.

Koone was currently giving up everything as hopeless, including her own life.

That was why, Koone didn't say it. In this situation, she didn't say to Kouki “fight for the sake of the people”.

That was why, Koone instead said this. She said to Kouki that she “wanted him to escape”. And then, if he was going to escape, please at least took her big sisters with him, so she said.

Looking at the little girl who was betting her own life to make the choice that he couldn't possibly do, Kouki was trembling in fear, at the same time he was harboring respect, and also hopelessly envious feeling toward her.

(Aa, no good. It's no good, if this girl doesn't survive. It's no good if she die in this kind of place-)

Therefore, he naturally thought like that. That was why,

「I can breakthrough the encirclement net while carrying Koone-sama.」

When he noticed, his mouth said that.

Rothko hung on that statement, Koone coldly rejected it, while the people at the surrounding directed surprised expression at Kouki altogether.

「If it's with my maximum firepower, I can cut open a path that break the encirclement net. If Arous's fastest running speed can break through the

encirclement, we can breakthrough. If I also put up barrier continuously, at the very least I can protect Koone-sama while at the same time not needing to do battle to breakthrough the encirclement.」

「Oo, ooh, is that really true!?!」

「He, hero-sama?」

Rothko looked delighted while Koone looked bewildered at Kouki's assertion.

Vigilance corps captain Ivana asked with a slightly hopeful expression.

「Excuse me, hero-dono. Perhaps, if that power is used toward the army—」

「.....Forgive me. To annihilate an army that is more than ten thousand, my magic power is..... The enemy will overcome me by number. Smashing the encirclement to let a few people escape is my limit.」

「Is, that so.....」

Not just Ivana, other people who thought of that “what if” scenario also got dejected and hung down their head. However, even that only passed for a moment, they immediately recovered their former resolved expression and began to accomplish their role.

「Then, Kouki-dono. Let's quickly do the escape preparation. Your highness Koone, please take care.」

「If it's the preparation, it's already finished. We will surely report Arquette's crisis to her majesty.」

Spike nodded deeply. It seemed that he already finished the escape preparation. Perhaps he was planning to take away Koone even if he had to ignore Koone's will and brought her to escape even at the cost of his life.

「Pl, please wait! There is no way Koone can escape! If a royalty turn their back to the enemy and abandon the people, the “faith” of the whole Synclea will collapse! If that kind of precedence is created even if just one, the morale of the people won't be able to be upheld!」

Seeing the flow of event where her escape look as though it was a done deal, Koone jumped up and down *pyon pyon* while making objection with her all.

Indeed, the people of Arquette might despair. The royalty abandoned them and escaped by themselves. In the current chaotic situation, there was no way they would be able to calmly understand that it was for the sake to call reinforcement, for the sake of the future.

And then, if the information that only Koone and her people escaped along with the fall of Arquette was spreading, then certainly there was a possibility that morale would be affected at the battle ahead from here on.

Rothko kneeled down on one knee, and he formed words to persuade Koone.

「Your highness. In this situation, your survival is exactly the hope of us human. Indeed, perhaps this would be thought as abandoning the people of Arquette. The people of other territory might also think like that. But, I'll dare to say this instead. —That's a trivial matter.」

「.....」

「If it's the clever your highness then you should understand. The trend is already tilting. It's impossible to protect everything. Your highness, has to survive together with her majesty under the new flame of war. Who will you protect, and who will you abandon. Even if it will be but a scant of number, for the sake of “the battle so that mankind won't extinct”, your highness must survive!」

「tsu」

Koone's distorted expression told with certainty how she herself understood that.

Koone lost all words.

But, at that time, one vigilance corps member rushed in.

「Report-. Enemy army, is starting to advance!」

Right after that, tremendous thunderous sound reverberated. It didn't even need any confirmation, it was clear that it was the offensive toward the defensive wall. The resounding thunderous sound that continued in succession without pause reverberated from all directions, stirring up the fear of the people whether they wanted it or not.

After a brief time of closing her eyes, Koone gritted her teeth *grit* and lifted her face.

「Rothko. Koone is escaping. However, please choose Rondo and two more people.」

「Your majesty, that's.....」

「If it's Koone's arous then three more people can ride it. If the protection target is children, then one or four won't change anything.」

When Koone gazed at Spike, Spike thought for a bit before nodding briskly to confirm Koone's words.

「Choose the hope of the next generation, Rothko.」

「-. Your highness is talking about something difficult. ....But, my thanks, for this kindness. I'll bring them right away, that's why, your highness please prepare.」

「Yes. ....Rothko, may the protection of Fortuna-sama be with you, and all your subordinates. Koone won't forget, the resolve and courage of all of you. Koone won't forget it, no matter what!」

「Haha, is that a farewell between us in this life? Your highness, we aren't going to get done it that easily you know?」

There was no path of survival for Arquette that didn't possess soldier force. The fastest reinforcement would come would be in two and a half day. If thinking that the reinforcement might be coming in three days, then the reinforcement wouldn't make in time without doubt as long as there was no miracle.

But, Rothko said that sentence. His subordinates were also making the same expression.

To their noble figure, Koone proudly nodded with clenched teeth.

Kouki's heart—creaked.

Was he going to abandon these people.....

Or would he murder several hundred, several thousand <Dark Being>

instead?

Those questions crossed repeatedly inside him since some time ago. His thinking was going in circle and came to a standstill in the same place time and time again.

(Both human, and also the <Dark Being>, are only trying to live. Fighting, is the way of living of this world. For someone unrelated like me to interfere, surely that must be what is truly mistaken-. In the first place, against ten thousand enemy, there is no way I can win just by fighting seriously. My magic power won't hold. Even I, don't want to die. I'm not going to be able to meet with everyone like that, I absolutely don't want something like that-)

In this cornered situation, his true feeling without falsehood raged inside his heart.

Because he didn't want to kill any side, he wanted to escape without getting involved.

He didn't want to die, so he wanted to escape.

His family, childhood friends, friends, comrades, and even “that guy” who he was still feeling lost on how he should thought about him—he wanted to meet them-. Dying in another world like this and became unable to meet them agains, he absolutely didn't want that, he wanted to run-.

「Kouki-dono, Kouki-dono-」

「tsu, eh, ah, Spike-san?」

Kouki went ‘hah’ at Spike’s call and he came back to his senses.

When he noticed, he was in front of the barn where all the aroups were kept. It seemed that he was unconsciously following Koone and others while getting trapped in his mind and arrived until the barn.

「Are you okay, Kouki-dono?」

「Ye, yes, I'm fine. And, how is it going?」

Kouki did his best to pretend composure and replied at Spike who was looking dubiously at him. He became expressionless from trying to do that instead and made Spike and others became even more worried, but the current Kouki had

no leeway to guess that.

After all, right now for the first time Kouki was trying to do an act of “abandoning”.

The reason why he once reproached “that guy” by that much, and now, he himself was going to do it.

—\*creak\*, a creaking voice came from inside Kouki.

「.....I wish to ask Kouki-dono about the detail of the attack of maximum firepower that Kouki-dono mentioned.」

「Ah, about that. ....If I have to say it, it's a bombardment. It release a high powered bombardment in a straight line. If I seriously attack with full strength, I should be able to create a path that pierce the encirclement.」

Kouki was half-convinced from his battle against Niebla and Ragar. His conviction must be conveyed to others. Spike nodded.

「However, it need a bit of time to activate it. It will be ideal to fire it at the same time with the gate's opening, so it will help if the gate can be opened at the same time with my signal.」

「Understood. I will relay it to the gatekeeper. Kouki-dono, we will entrust our fate to you.」

「.....Yes.」

Spike sent a messenger. In preparation of the worst case, Kouki carved the magic circle of on the saddle of all the arous so that 【Divine Severance】 could be activated continuously even if he didn't continue his control, and there he poured magic power and activated it.

He poured in tremendous amount of magic power so that it could hold until the capital as much as possible. Kouki took out three tubes from the pouch on his waist. That was the last magic power recovery medicine that he brought to this world.

He returned two of them back into the pouch, and drunk one after he finished pouring magic power into all the magic circles.

And then, all the arous were taken outside the barn at the same time when

he finished. Kouki and others also got out.

Thunderous sounds resounded several times, the angry yells of the vigilance corps and the trembling voices of the fearful mass pierced their ears.

—\*creak creak\*, sounds rang from inside Kouki's chest.

People came running. The son of the feudal lord—Rondo. Also two children he didn't know. A girl and a boy.

Rondo listened to Rothko's words. With a serious gaze and a face that understood what was entrusted to him right now, he gritted his teeth and endured his tears from falling. Sylia couldn't hold it in and embraced her son tightly. She strongly, strongly embraced tightly.

The chosen boy and girl also did their farewell with their family similarly while clenching their teeth.

It could be easily imagined that if other people witnessed this, they would come pleading "please save our family too". That was why, this farewell was carried out secretly in the cover of the barn. The crying voice of the girl echoed awfully inside Kouki's ears.

—Kouki felt his chest rumbling. He wanted to scratch and pluck his heart.

They moved the goods to nearby the east gate that would connect to the capital. They did it secretly so the eyes of the people wouldn't catch sight of them.

「.....」

The princess(Koone) who should be naïve and full of energy didn't say anything. Her expression stiffened as though she was paralyzed.

「Is the moving of the goods not over yet-」

「The vault only just got filled! Carrying all of them out takes time!」

「Move your hand if you've got anytime for talking! Get them in even if just one more people!」

Angry yells could be heard. It seemed the moving out of the goods from the underground vault was not finished yet. Naturally the people were also unable



to be evacuated into the most solid place of the city.

There was also other tough buildings, and people also escaped to there too, but the street was jammed with people who were impatiently waiting for the underground vault to be emptied.

The tense atmosphere of the adult and the continuously ringing thunderous sounds, the children were screaming and crying.

—It hurt. His chest hurt. The creaking sound didn't stop.

All the aroups were standing by at the cover of building. Koone and the children, and then Spike and others, the members of guard squad were also already riding on the aroup's back and put their preparation in order. With Kouki's chanting, barriers of light were deployed and enveloped each aroup.

Rothko and others backed away and vigilance corps members were standing by with tense expression.

A bombardment would be fired at the same time with the opening of the gate, and the <Dark Being> running rampant at the other side of the east gate would be blown away. Kouki would then jump at the running out aroup and rode it, then broke through the encirclement net in one go.

The tactic's preparation was all done.

Kouki who was walking toward the front of the east gate was whispering in small voice when he realized.

'There is no other way', he said.

'Even I don't want to die', he said.

'I will scatter a lot of life after this, please forgive me', he said.

'I'm sorry for abandoning the people who are trembling in fear', he said.

As though making excuses,

'What I choose, is always mistaken every time.

Surely, I'm making a mistake again,

It will result in something that I cannot taken back, so.....

I'm.....

That's why,

That's why, even I.....

Rather than “the many whose face I don't even know”, it should be fine for me to choose “people who are important for me” instead.

That's why,'

「Help-」

「-!？」

Electric jolt ran through his whole body. When Kouki noticed, he was in the middle of the street that was directly in a straight line toward the east gate. And then, his hand that was dangling down powerlessly, was pulled at repeatedly.

When Kouki's gaze moved at that direction, there was a figure of a small boy about the age of three, four years old.

「Help otou-san-」

The boy was pulling on Kouki's arm desperately. Sometimes the boy's gaze moved toward the direction of the west gate. Looking there, large dust clouds were rising up from the west side. When he focused his eyes, he could see miasma and black silhouette on top of the defensive wall.

The dust clouds might come from someone using blessing art, or perhaps the reinforcement outer wall of the protective wall—an emergency reinforcement using blessing art to make earth protrusions that were stuck on the defensive wall—was pulverized.

And then, that dark shadow that a vigilance corps member was only barely pushing off must be a <Dark Being>. Perhaps it used its comrade as stepping stool, or perhaps it crawled up using its physical strength. Kouki didn't understand, but it seemed that the defensive wall was almost climbed over.

Most likely, the father of this boy was a vigilance corps member that was assigned at the west gate. Looking at the rising up cloud dusts and <Dark Being>, the boy thought that his father was in a dire strait.

「Why, why are you asking me.....」

It was awfully hard to breath. While thinking that, Kouki asked with a scratchy voice.

「Because, Onii-chan is “hero-sama” right!?!」

「tsu, I, I’m.....not a hero.....」

「Otou-san told me! A great person is coming to this city he said! If that person is here, surely those <Dark Being> will be no threat! Please, hero-sama! Help otou-san-」

It was a selfish request.

A request that didn’t think of the feeling of the other person.

This boy didn’t know how just painful that expectation felt for him.

The inside of Kouki’s heart was overflowing with swearing that was him venting his anger.

A civil officer he remembered seeing before ran this way. Because this officer knew about Kouki’s role, he pulled and tore away the boy from Kouki with an impatient expression. Soon the boy’s mother also rushed toward the boy, she apologized at the civil officer while trying to take away the boy.

「Hero-sama! Help-」

The boy reached out his hand. He was asking for help from Kouki.

‘Aa, really.....’

「Hey, Nagumo. Perhaps, I really cannot change just as expected. Even though I understand just how stupid this is, I just cannot be like you.」

He whispered such thing with a voice that sounded giving up.....

「Reject all hostility and ill will-!! The absolute protection to the children of god! Here is the sanctuary, no enemy of god shall pass! —【Divine Severance】—!!」

A scream-like incantation thundered.

That was an absolute protection. The brilliantly shining proof of safeguarding.

Gleaming dome of light spread with Kouki as the center. It was spreading in a scale that was never seen before!

It penetrated through building, penetrated through people, however, it pushed back only the <Dark Beings>, a super large scale barrier was deployed that covered the whole city.

Suddenly, a dome of light that covered the sky materialized, people were looking up above their head dumbfounded. The crying voice of the children stopped still, and even the vigilance corps members stopped their hands and looked up to the sky.

The thunderous sounds attacking the defensive wall inevitably stopped. Even the great noises from the <Dark Beings> that shouldn't be damaged or anything also stopped. Perhaps that was also because of them being dumbfounded as expected.

「I'll protect them.」

「Eh.....」

It was unclear whose response was that. The boy, the boy's mother, and then the male civil officer who came to stop the boy returned their gaze to Kouki.

Kouki looked at the boy, and then he spoke one more time.

「I will, protect everyone. That's why, it will be fine.」

「Hero, sama.....」

The boy couldn't say his words of thanks. Because the hero who said that he would protect everyone, was making an expression that looked smiling while crying.

Kouki returned his gaze to the east gate, and then he unsheathed his holy sword with *shan-* sound.

And then, he sent his words to Koone and others who looked befuddled at the unplanned deployment of the large scale barrier.

「Koone-sama. I'm sorry. I will stay here. I'll cut open the path, so please run through.」

「What are you saying, hero-sama!?!」

Koone raised a voice that was pregnant with shock and unease. She reflexively almost jumped down from her perch although Anneal stopped her.

「Isn't it hero-sama yourself who said that you cannot defeat this many!? Are you planning to die!?!」

「.....Sorry. The truth is, I think that protecting you and delivering you until the capital safely is the "correct choice".」

「That's not what Koone is talking about-」

「Yes, but, as I thought I'm no good.」

「No good you say—」

In the middle, Kouki's way of talking became his usual casual way of talking. Noticing that, Koone's feeling was growing indescribable while she said everything she could to change Kouki's mind. But,

「As I thought, I cannot abandon people who ask me for help.」

It wasn't like he wanted to become a hero.

He didn't want, to die.

But it was impossible. Even if he was told to save the mankind, the feeling that it was real didn't really well up from inside him. When he weighed mankind and <Dark Being> on a scale, he didn't understand at all the correct side the scale should tilt toward.

However, even so.....

When someone reached out their hand asking for help in front of his eyes, calling at him with a grieving voice, it finally became impossible for him.

「I won't take no for answer. You go, Koone. ....I'll be waiting for quick reinforcement okay.」

「Hero-sa—」

Kouki glanced back across his shoulder with an expression of crying and smiling. It was filled to the brim with fear and pain, even so he couldn't draw back, wouldn't draw back.....

Before Koone could say anything,

「O god's will-, please bring about the light that annihilate all evil!」

Kouki's incantation resounded. The lifted up holy sword emitted fierce light, the people who were dumfounded from the 【Divine Severance】 moved their gaze toward Kouki.

「O breath of god-, drive away all dark clouds, please fill this world with holy purification!」

A spiral of light was generated with Kouki as the center. The shining torrent that rose up as though to stab the sky made the people closed their eyes.

「O god's mercy-, with this one attack please forgive all crime!」

The light converged into the holy sword as though it was being sucked in. The noisy sounds of <Dark Beings> could be heard from the other side of the gate. They too might be perplexed from the abnormal situation.

Kouki moved his gaze toward Spike. Beside Anneal who was holding back Koone who tried to jump down even now, Spike returned a powerful gaze at Kouki and he nodded briskly.

And then, Kouki's gaze moved toward the gatekeepers. The two gatekeepers opened the gate to left and right with determination.

Multitude black shadows squirmed at the other side.

To there,

「—【Heaven's Might】—!!!」

The world was overwritten with pure white.

It was a striking torrent of light to the degree that gave such hallucination.

At the same time, the flash of light that left behind sound advanced passed through the barrier of 【Divine Severance】 and pierced the army of <Dark Beings>.

There was no time for them to put up defense or anything. No, even defense itself was meaningless.

The bombardment of 【Heaven's Might】 that was truly ought to be called the

manifestation of god's will easily gouged the encirclement net like a hot knife going through butter, piercing out until the far away distance.

Before long the world that was dyed white returned back to normal, sound was revived, and while white flash was melting into empty air and vanished, seeing the path that was opened by annihilating <Dark Beings>, Kouki who trembled with his throat choked from what he had done was,

「-, GO-!!」

He yelled.

With Spike in the lead, all the arous started running with fierce momentum.

Beside Kouki who slumped down on his knee from the great expenditure of magic power, Spike, Lilin, the members of guard squad, and Anneal rushed through while saluting with tense expression.

「Hero-sama! If you die, Koone will kill you! If you don't absolutely stay alive-, Koone will make you meet terrible experience-!! Koone is-, a woman who will do what she say she is going to doo!!」

Koone left behind those words with desperate voice even after passing through him. Kouki made a wry smile at such Koone.

When push came to shove, Kouki thought of sniping the <Dark Beings> that would try to chase after the escaping party from above the defensive wall, but it seemed that the stunned state of the enemies from witnessing the unfairness of【Divine Severance】and 【Heaven's Might】 hadn't loosened up.

When Koone and others slipped through the last line of the encirclement net, dark being that tried to chase after them finally appeared, but at that time a distance had been opened until a range where they could shake off pursuer.

While feeling relieved that they were able to escape, Kouki took out the second magic power recovery medicine from the pouch on his waist.

One medicine remained.

This was the lifeline for Kouki, no, for Arquette during this two and a half days until three days ahead.

Kouki who stood up waved his hand to stop the gatekeepers who came back

to their senses and moved to close the gate.

And then, step by step, he walked toward the other side of the gate.

「Kouki-dono! What in the world.....why are you.....」

It was Rothko who called out to him. The figures of Syla and Ivana were also beside him.

「Rothko-san. This barrier, the more it receive attack the more it will become exhausted and the deployment time become shorter. With an unceasing attack from an army that surpass ten thousand, as expected it won't hold out until the reinforcement come.」

「Ko, Kouki-dono?」

「I'm going outside in order to reduce their.....no, the "enemy" as much as possible. Because even if they only concentrate their battle strength to me, the burden to the barrier will decrease. With the time I buy, please expand and strengthen the defensive wall and underground vault, and evacuate the people as much as possible even if just one person more. After that, tell Moana-sama and Koone-sama—」

「Kouki-dono!!」

It sounded like a last will. Rothko who thought so immediately cut in Kouki's talk.

「Don't, don't speak absurd. Are you planning to fight alone? Such thing is no different than suicide.」

「Certainly I'm heavily outnumbered. But, what if there is only one entrance into a city that is protected by a barrier? What if that entrance become a passage, where its width at best only allow two units that can enter and fight?」

After saying that Kouki thrust out his hand, and in front of the <Dark Beings> who began coming back to their senses, a part of the barrier in front of the east gate changed shape and became like a passage. Its width was around two meter, with length of seven, eight meter.

That unexpected action caused Rothko, no, all the people at that place gulped with shudder.



「I will be overrun right away in a fight of one versus ten thousand. But, what if it's one versus one for ten thousand times? .....I should be able to buy quite a lot of time with that.」

Kouki spoke to Rothko and others who was speechless.

「If the reinforcement come and I'm already hopeless at that time, please tell Moana-sama and Koone-sama this, 『Before long the demon king might arrive. There will be salvation if there is suitable compensation for him』.」

「Why, why are you going that far.....」

Rothko noticed. That the hands of Kouki who said he was going to fight were trembling. Kouki's expression that was pretending calm appearance honestly conveyed to him that the trembling wasn't trembling from excitement or anything else.

That was why he asked that, but Kouki's answer to that was,

「.....Because, I'm a great stupid idiot, I think.」

Saying that, he walked out while smiling wryly. Rothko and others had no word to stop him.

While walking, Kouki confirmed that ahead of his gaze the <Dark Beings> were resuming their offence trying to smash the barrier. The 【Heaven's Might】 just now annihilated several hundred <Dark Beings>, but if someone was looking from outside how the split sea was filled to the brim and returning back to normal, it felt only like a miniscule effort.

(.....The key is how long the Divine Severance can hold out. Rather than annihilating power, stamina for long battle is more important. In that case, it's best to refrain from using magic and only use sword skill. Even if I use magic, I should use recovery magic and not attack magic.)

He still had hesitation. Despite so, after this he was going to kill species that was trying to live. He felt disappointment from the bottom of his heart toward himself who could only choose that kind of path.

This would become a battle where he was greatly limited. If he used attack magic it was inevitable that he would run out of strength first, If he didn't use

attack magic, then painful battle would continue several hundred, several thousand times.

Perhaps, he would die. It was terrifying, terrifying, that his hands wouldn't stop trembling. *clack clack* The ringing sound was the sound of terror that his teeth were playing.

But, his feet didn't stop.

His mouth said "protect" naturally.

His body headed toward the battlefield, as though he was being controlled. Behind him were people with no strength to fight.

Even though the inside of his head was messed up, only the will of "have to protect" was resounding strongly inside him.

Going out into a battlefield without even any clear resolve, just how many times he had failed because of that? Just how many mistakes he had made because of that? Kouki's calm part was yelling at him if he was going to repeat the same mistake again.

「.....Surely, I'm going to regret this.」

The same like all the time until now.

「.....But」

But, there was only one thing that was different from everything until now.

「.....I'm risking my life. I'm not running away.」

Staring straight ahead, he crossed the gate. One step short from the 【Divine Severance】. Enemy already entered the passage. Kouki signaled the gatekeepers to close the gate. The gatekeepers saluted with face that almost burst into tear before they started closing the door.

「.....This is scary. I don't wanna.....」

But, he didn't hesitate. He didn't know if stealing the life of a lot of <Dark Beings> was the correct thing, but at the very least, the human called Amanogawa Kouki, wasn't able to brush off the hand of a children asking for help, so.....

That was the only thing that he was absolutely unable to do.

Kouki dispelled a part of the barrier that connected to the passage that was created from 【Divine Severance】. He instantly stepped in using “Ground Shrinker”, and without even letting it react, he diagonally slashed the <Dark Being> at the front.

A vivid sensation was conveyed to his hand, urge to vomit rose up, and the inside of his chest felt sharp pain.

He forcefully repressed all those, and toward the discomposed <Dark Beings>, Kouki was.....

He took a deep breath, and with a voice that could reach all the enemy surrounding him—he howled.

「Your enemy is right here-!! If you want Arquette-, try to kill me-!!!」

In order to gather attention and raise the curtain, Kouki’s last favorite technique that might be appearing for the first time in this battle—【Heaven Soaring Flash】’s shining slash bisected the enemy inside the passage while piercing through until the rear.

Kouki who was walking until the middle of the corridor made his holy sword shined while readying it in front of his eyes.

A beat later.

The <Dark Beings> rushed all at once toward the person who was overreaching by trying to face an army alone.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Serious’s turn is continuing.

I want to run away-, I want to make merry and forget my trouble-, I want to throw in outrageous scene one after another—

But, the serious will continue for a bit more.

Sorry ‘kay!

Also recently, the chapter continuously is more than ten thousand characters.

I'm thinking to curb it to 6000~8000 as much as possible but it's not really going well.....

Everyone, please rest your eyes properly.

You see, Shirakome eye recently keep twitching *piku piku*.....

Next chapter's title, In the Point between Life and Death

# Arifureta Chapter 273

## Arifureta After II In the Point Between Life and Death

Just how long he had been fighting already?

He had no sensation of time. The sun had sunk really deeply ahead. The radiance of 【Divine Severance】 was illuminating the surrounding of Arquette, but deep inside the grassland where light didn't reach was completely dark.

*rustle rustle* Great number of presences could be felt from the surrounding. In addition, the consumption speed of 【Divine Severance】 was decreasing quite much. It seemed that it went as he expected, rather than attacking the barrier, the <Dark Beings> were more eager to remove the culprit that was deploying and maintaining that barrier.

While thinking about things like whether this raised the survival rate of Arquette even by a little, Kouki tried to recall the expression showed at the end by Koone and others who might be rushing toward the capital with their all even now—

『Just die alreadyyy-!!』

「tsu!？」

The angry yell that sounded like curse made Kouki returned to his senses right away. It seemed his concentration was cut off for a moment.

In front of his eyes was a bull headed <Dark Being> that boasted super large build of two meter. Above its head there were two horns that looked like could kill human using just them, the Dark Being's blood colored eyes were shining glaringly, while its hand was holding a large sword that looked like thick Chinese cleaver.

That weapon was swung down along with a violent wind.

The holy sword that was raised without delay produced *ZUGAN*- sound that was impossible to be produced from the sword attack between fellow normal humans.

Although Kouki let go of the impact through his arm and knee, he held his breath 「guh」 reflexively, however, at the next moment he sent a kick at the knee of the bull head species, snapping the knee into ‘<’ shape and broke his balance.

The created opening was fatal.

When the bull head species resisted from screaming and tried to retake his balance, the holy sword was already drawing an arc and got sucked into his neck.

Without even minding the neck that flew away like a joke, skeleton soldiers that were of eccentric species—the so called Skeleton—leaped out from the left and right of the bull head species.

The Skeletons’ weapon was their very body that was formed from bones. Both of their hands were abnormally long, and their fingers were sharp like claw. The bone starting from their arm until their pinky grew thin and became a splendid sword hand when it was swung.

『You monster-』

『Perish!』

Kouki had never even imagined that a day would come when he got cursed at by Skeletons as a “monster”.

Kouki pulled back his body slightly while knocking down altogether the sword hands that were thrust at him from both sides. The other hand of the Skeletons sprang up as though they had predicted that.

They unleashed simultaneous attack with matched breathing as though they were mirror reflection of each other, however, Kouki whose reflexes was superior smoothly dodged and unleashed two consecutive attacks as counter.

The heads of the Skeletons danced in the air.

『Got you-』

A strong spear was thrust through the gap between the bones of the collapsing skeleton. It came from a scaled dragon species behind the skeleton. The sharp thrust that although didn't match Ragar but it was by no means inferior, was stopped by the grip of Kouki's hand.

『Wha-』

Ignoring the voice of shock, when Kouki pulled the spear strongly toward himself, the scaled dragon species instinctively tried to hold his ground. However, Kouki's physical strength didn't allow that. The Dark Being was unable to stand firm and stumbled forward, and the holy sword was thrust into his throat.

Along with a vivid sensation, a hard to describe groan 『Gube!?!』 prickled Kouki's ears. At the same time, the overflowing blood splattered dirtily on Kouki's shoulder stickily.

Although, it was meaningless to pay attention to that. After all Kouki's whole body was already dirtied by blood spurt from enemies. His state looked tragic.

The number he had defeated wasn't just several hundred. The <Dark Beings> he had defeated might already reach a thousand. The defeated <Dark Beings> were thrown away to the back by the hands of other <Dark Beings> themselves as though to say that they were in the way.

It seemed that <Dark Beings> almost held no sympathy to other species except to their own underling, so there were also several scenes of falling out between Dark Beings because the other treated their underling's corpse rudely but.....

Currently, it seemed that their head was filled to the brim of who would be the one to defeat the abnormal warrior that couldn't be defeated at all no matter how long the battle was continuing.

Both Ragal and Niebla put importance at achieving meritorious deed.

At the era after <Dark Being> ruled over the world, meritorious deed was necessary in order to make the status of their own faction a firm one. For them who were carrying out the principle of supremacy of strength and the survival of the fittest for real, the meritorious deed of defeating the warrior with

strength that could protect Arquette continuously by his lonesome must be exactly the same like “pillaging great treasure”.

Kouki thought. He thought that it was something he was thankful of. Because the more they focused on himself like this, the more the burden to the barrier decreased and as long as Kouki’s magic power was holding, then the protection toward Arquette was a sure thing, he thought.

Intense pain ran through his ankle sharply.

『I, caught you-』

One of the skeletons before this moved his hand even after losing his head and his claw was digging into Kouki’s ankle. Looking at the thick miasma flowing from his head and coiled around his body, most likely he was moving his body remotely even now when his head was sent flying.

Seeing how the red light was almost vanishing from the skeleton’s eye sockets, perhaps this was his very last act that he unleashed with all his strength.

Right after that, Kouki’s field of vision was blanketed by barrage of miasma swords.

He swung the holy sword and deflected, deflected deflected deflected deflected!

「tsu, kuh, aAAAAAAAAAAAH」

The tremendous amount caused Kouki to raise a roar when he noticed. He swung the holy sword with all his strength and slipped through the barrage of death. The last act of the Skeleton was certainly effective. His wound dulled his footwork, and Kouki was forced to focus his undivided attention into defense using his sword skill by necessity.

The miasma sword that he couldn’t handle, or he purposefully neglected in order to avoid lethal wound created countless small wounds all over Kouki’s body. Small sharp pains stimulated Kouki’s consciousness from throughout his body, as though his body was giving alert messages.

The barrage that he thought might be continuing for eternity stopped still.



He shook off the claw that was still grasping his foot and then he tried to chant recovery magic, but <Dark Beings> pushed and shoved each other and charged toward him.

『He is wounded see-, now-』

『Kill-, Kill-, Kill-!!』

「tsu, shit-」

Even while swearing out, Kouki desperately slashed his holy sword and cut down the enemies.

What entered his ears were only words that wished for his death, or vilification, or voice of resentment that even resembled curse.

That was natural. Just how many <Dark Being> he had killed already. Right now he was a sworn enemy for them, a bitter enemy that had to be killed no matter what.

Even though he understood that, even though he understood that he had not the slightest qualification to think about such thing, but his heart was growing cold. It felt like his heart was getting torn from his body as much as he killed, as much as he almost got killed.

The sensation of cutting flesh, the feedback of bone severed, the blood spurt showering him, the more he got used to them, it felt like he was getting farther from being human—becoming a “monster” just like what they screamed at him.

『ZEAAAAAAAAH!!』

「Gaah!？」

A loud scream of fighting spirit burst. Right at the next moment after that, he felt heat on his flank.

Although he barely dodged instinctually, his side was lightly gouged. If he was late in evading just by a moment more, it would be a fatal wound. Cold sweat trickled while he pierced the enemy’s heart with a returning slash.

The sensation of the shadow of death steadily creeping near was invading Kouki’s heart.

From before this there was moment when his concentration cut off and his thought was diverted. It was the proof of exhaustion. Mental exhaustion was accelerating the physical exhaustion.

Honestly speaking, the time was already past late at night. It was enough to call his stamina as unworldly.

But, even so, the time limit was approaching him.

Kouki scolded himself, that it was too early. He wasn't holding out for even half a day yet. If he spouted out big talk like "protecting", then it was still too early for him to collapse.

「—【Heav—】

『Become the offering of our species-!!』

He tried to chant recovery magic, however, he was obstructed by <Dark Beings> whose fighting spirit wasn't withering even for a bit no matter how many hundreds he was defeating.

'This is bad', his unease grew violent. If he shed blood, then his stamina would decrease quickly by that much.

He recalled his experience of chasing after monsters of Holy Precincts by continuously wandering for three days at【Northern Mountain Range Area】without taking rest or meal. With the body of hero, such recklessness was possible if he at least made water to drink using magic.

But, nothing could be done if he shed too much blood. Recovery magic couldn't go as far as recovering the lost blood too, his thought would dull and his body would get exhausted easily the more blood he lost.

And, at that opening when he recalled his reckless adventure at Tortus like that, this time it was his shoulder that was lightly sliced.

Seeing his thought getting diverted again, Kouki gritted his teeth while continuing to kill one, and then one more enemy.

(Shit-, damn it-. What the hell me-, am I just this much-. You are a hero aren't you! You should be able to still go on! Don't think about unnecessary thing-. Just concentrate! You said that you are going to protect right!)

Slash. Slash. Slash. Slash. Slashed.

Slash. Slash. Slash. Slash. Gouged.

Slash. Slash. Slash. Slash. Punched.

With his wounds still unhealed, his wounds were gradually increasing.

Seeing such Kouki, the expression of the <Dark Beings> who were attacking while stepping on their compatriots was showing slight ecstasy that said「We will overcome him at this rate」.....

「Kouki-dono-」

At the same time with such call, Kouki's body was enveloped in faint light.

When he looked back across his shoulder after sending flying one enemy in front of his eyes, Ivana and several vigilance corps members' figures were on the defensive wall of eastern gate looking like they were going to cry.

One of them was offering a prayer wholeheartedly. He must be using blessing art of healing.

Pain was receding gradually from his body. The little wounds other than his ankle, side, and shoulder were healing in visible progress even if slowly.

「Two third of the citizens had been sheltered-. In order to evacuate the rest, we are expanding the space right now-」

It seemed that more than half of the citizens could be evacuated into the underground space. If he could buy more time like this, then perhaps all the citizens could be evacuated into the tough shelter.

Kouki made a small smile.

「Please retreat for the moment! With the exception of the vigilance corps members that are essential for the evacuation, we will hold that place with all our force! At this rate-, you will-」

Ivana pleaded at him to take a rest.

But, he couldn't do what she said. Because the vigilance corps' strength was insufficient to be entrusted with this battlefield. If such thing was possible, then from the beginning he would have told them the strategy of taking turn.

The vigilance corps members weren't soldier. Even if they had the will for it, but their talent didn't permit them to fight. Just like that Anneal. They themselves should understand that.

At present, this blessing art of healing too, if this was performed by the art user of the capital, then his ankle, side, and shoulder's wound should have recovered completely already. The face of the vigilance corpse member who was using the art was distorted in frustration seeing how slow Kouki's wound was healing.

And so, that being the case, they must be trying to buy time for Kouki to rest exactly with the resolve of being annihilated to the last man.

That was why, he couldn't entrust it. He couldn't entrust this battlefield to them.

「Here is my battlefield! I won't entrust it to you all!」

「That's.....」

Ivana's expression warped in grief.

While signing the enemies to oblivion, however, the feeling of Ivana and others who tried to be his strength somehow saved Kouki's heart.

「Haah!!」

『Guah!?!』

『This guy-, still!?!』

An attack with all his strength blown away two enemies altogether.

Using that opening, Kouki filled his voice with dominating aura and sent out his words.

「I can still fight! That's why—please back me up. Even if just healing me continuously help me a lot! When I give the signal, arrow or blessing art or anything is fine so attack the front line at that time!」

If he could make an opening even if just a little, he could heal large wound at that time. He could also create water ball using magic and replenish his rehydration. With the blessing art's healing, he would be able to not get

bothered from small wounds.

Although Ivana and others were stunned for a moment from Kouki's words, they immediately made a determined expression. Even they had something they could do, they could be useful for the protector who was standing alone in the battlefield. Those facts encouraged their heart.

「Leave it to us-」

The voice of the trembling Ivana resounded.

Kouki roared while staring at the endless attacks.

「I won't withdraw no matter what-」

He wondered how much time had passed since the vigilance corps were starting to back him up.

Kouki who was continuing to fight determinedly didn't notice that the backup had stopped abruptly before he knew it.

He already had no composure to look back, his consciousness was half hazy. Therefore, he couldn't even confirm that Ivana and others were already spending their strength from using art until their life was at risk.

Also, the matter when Rothko and others tried to make Kouki retreat to the shelter which he then refused was also already far beyond at the corner of his memory.

Rothko and others persuaded Kouki that if they bought time using the defensive wall and the underground warehouse, then Kouki would also be able to rest enough, but Kouki judged that doing that was impossible.

The defensive wall could be climbed over by the <Dark Beings> physical capabilities and by using each other as stepping stone as had been proved at the beginning. If someone was overcome by the creeping up <Dark Being> then they wouldn't be able to buy enough time.

And above all else, if he went into rest right now.....

Kouki had no confidence at all that he could stand back up again before the

underground warehouse was destroyed. With his extreme exhaustion, once his tension and fighting spirit were loosened up, they wouldn't come back to normal easily. He wasn't able to deny the possibility that he wouldn't be able to move satisfactorily or that his consciousness would keep sleeping.

He feared that above all else.

That was why, in order to not let them come toward him in order to take him back, he cut off his own path of retreat.

If they came until here, then even if Kouki created barrier behind him, the <Dark Beings> wouldn't care.

They would only kill Kouki.

They would bring certain death to this sworn enemy that was a threat that couldn't be finished off with an army even now. Right now, rather than bringing down Arquette, removing this abnormality standing in their way was far more important.

Kouki mostly didn't even reply, he was merely showing his will using his action. Rothko and others were shedding tears while continuing to pray earnestly while lamenting that it was the only thing that they could do.

One time the【Divine Severance】almost vanished and he drank his last magic power recovery medicine, but Kouki had no remembrance at all of doing that. He used the medicine from his subconscious sense of danger.

The backup stopped, he was already at a point where taking rest would lead to death, he had also used up his recovery method. He was merely swinging his sword toward the threat before his eyes.

Before he noticed, Kouki was inside a mysterious sensation.

The resenting voice and angry yell of the enemies became unclear and muffled as though time was slowing down, every single movement of them were also slow as though they were moving underwater.

However, that didn't mean that Kouki was speeding up.

Kouki himself was also feeling heaviness coiling around his whole body as though he was underwater. Just like how the opponents were slow, he was also slow.

Inside the world where everything was slow, however, it was only his thought that was strangely getting clearer.

Everything that happened until now was passing through his mind naturally.

If there was a third person, they might say that it was a revolving lantern phenomenon, but Kouki didn't realize that and he abandoned his thought into the emerging memories.

What emerged first, was the first person he encountered in this world.

—Kouki, is really kind huh

He yelled back angrily when he was told that. When he thought back now, it felt like he had vented his anger at that beautiful and strong queen a lot.

For some reason he easily exposed the deep part of his heart that he normally repressed to her. For some reason every single word of hers resounded in his heart and he became unable to keep up his façade.

—At the very least, that feeling of yours that think about other is “right”. I will assert that

Even though he only came in contact with her for a short time, she was always giving affirmation to Kouki. Even though he actually had weakness and complex, the words that she gave to Kouki at the end were always kind.

(The feeling of wanting to save, wanting to protect—is right. If you assert that, then is it okay for me to think that the fight I'm doing right now is “right”?)

He pierced the heart of the bull head species in front of him, then using the holy sword that he pulled out while turning around, he lopped off the head of the scaled dragon species beside him. While bathed in blood spurt, the next memory that emerged was the little sister princess with strong peculiarity.

—Rather than the many that Koone loved, Koone treasure my only dear family

Just like “that guy”, rather than the many people with unknown face, she

would pick the person that was important to her. While condemning herself that she had no qualification to introduce herself as a royalty, even so she yelled that she wouldn't yield.

Even though she was in a position that was far more significant than himself, but that way of living that spoke of such thought without hesitation, he harbored much envy toward it.

(Surely, as a royalty.....that is "mistaken". Picking a choice of not making use of me is a "mistake".)

Then, was that girl "evil"?

Kouki didn't think so. Because, that child, wasn't she resolved to die?, he thought. In exchange of making her big sister as priority, wasn't she resolved to receive everything by herself?, he thought.

Then, in the first place, just what was a "mistaken choice" then.

As though to pierce the emerging question, a conspicuously large Skeleton lunged with a sharp hand sword and lightly gouged Kouki's cheek. Without even minding that, Kouki grasped tight the Skeleton's head in an eagle grasp and smashed it into the ground, he then pulverized the head further with a step of his foot while diagonally slashing a second bull head species.

In the interval of blood splash, the people of the capital were floating like illusion.

—There were husband and wife who fought in order to let anyone ate kukuri.

—There was a young man of the weapon shop who spoke of his dream that the weapon he made would help the soldiers.

—There was a ferryman who would rush around the battlefield transporting soldier in emergency.

Everyone wasn't thinking things like "no matter what we do, it's already impossible anyway" in the slightest.

That wasn't optimism, but a determination to accomplish the resolve of opposition. If the path that they picked rolled to a bad direction, wouldn't that decision make their important people unhappy.....such unease, it didn't look



like they were harboring such feeling in the slightest.

At the very least, they weren't people who would stop walking because of that.

(When I asked if they feel scared, everyone said the same thing—that they are scared. And yet, everyone smiled when saying that. Because that's something that they decide themselves they said.)

A huge spear made from miasma was flying near clad in wind of miasma like a tornado. When he tried to knock it down forcefully, Kouki's foot slipped. He couldn't raise his blade, and even though he knocked down the spear, it caused pain on his wrist.

He became unable to stand his ground. The hand that swung his sword was starting to shake from a reason other than fear—exhaustion. He felt something that chilled his heart from death that was approaching him one step closer.

—Because, I was born for the sake of fighting

A younger girl who declared the meaning of her birth with pride in her heart.

Her way of living that believed there was no mistake in her path, he felt much envy toward that.

—For me my grandfather, was a hero

Becoming like the idolized hero, having things went ideally.....was impossible, such fact was thrust before her, however, she said 「Even so life is continuing」 with a smile. She found what she could do, and built up herself to be more than top-notch.

(Aa, come to think of it, I thought of Jii-chan for the first time in a while huh)

Finally, the holy sword was deflected. Until now, Kouki's attack that finished off most of the enemy in one swing finally defeated the enemy after two, three slashes.

Enemies that were observing Kouki's movement at the rear must also be starting to get used to Kouki's movement. But, more than that, his pure strength and speed were decreasing.

The dragon scaled species that he sent flying raised a warbled cry and stood

back up. Beside it, this time the illusion of his grandfather—Amanogawa Kanji appeared.

—Kouki can become anything, you can do anything

That was Kanji's answer toward young Kouki who was asking him 'Can I perhaps become like Jii-chan?'.

'Really?' When Kouki asked that,

—Really, I told you. That's why you are named Kouki (TN: Kouki means brightness or splendor)

Name is the representation of body. That's why,

(The path that Kouki decide and advance through by yourself, will surely shine bright..... I have forgotten that all this time huh. Jii-chan's words) (TN: The word shine bright here use the exact same kanji like Kouki's name)

*GON*, graphic sound of bone breaking resounded from Kouki's body. The tail of a scaled dragon species sunk into his side. Without even being conscious of it, Kouki breathed out *kahah* while letting out a thrust at the nape of the scaled dragon species.

At last he received a damage that was hard to be overlooked. Even Kouki whose natural recovery rate was high couldn't immediately heal broken bone without magic.

Perhaps seeing the limit of strength of Kouki whose body was staggering, the <Dark Beings> showed expression of wild joy.

But, in contrast to the fierceness in the outside world, Kouki's inside was really calm. Quietly, but surely, something was connecting inside Kouki.

The many encounters, his experiences until now, the many worries, all of them were connecting in the middle of this extreme situation.

The girl childhood friend who brought him back even by hitting him yelled at the back of his mind.

—It shouldn't be like this? Something like that is obvious! There is no such thing like a life that will go as you want! Everyone, they gritted their teeth and endured, they held their head in worry, but they will say "even so" and then

keep at it!

That's right huh, exactly like that. Even the people of this world, everyone is the same.

—If your path is mistaken, then punching and stopping you is the role of best friend right?

Aah, that's right. Just what is it I'm scared about? If I'm mistaken, you will punch and stop me, and yet

—Liar

Aa, Eri. It's exactly like you said. I'm a liar.

At that day, at that time, at that place, I indeed told you "I'll protect Eri", and yet.

I believed that by making the choice of "protecting", it was over just with that.

I believed that I had saved you just by stopping you from jumping down.

Even though there is no such thing like a life that will go as one wanted.

Even though life will continue even then.

Even though you were still going mad, and kept asking for help the whole time.

That's right.

I was always, finishing with just "choosing".

Even though what is truly important, is the "after choosing".

That's all there is to it.

Whether that choice is right, or mistaken, there is no way to understand because we cannot see the future.

I was frightened against such trivial thing, said thing like "I cannot believe myself", and in the end, I hesitated in even choosing.....

*GOU* The atmosphere roared.

Kouki went 'hah' and his consciousness returned from the mysterious world of thought back to reality, and he became aware of the huge bull approaching before his eyes. The combat bull created from muddy black miasma was so big it filled the whole path with its body.

If it was Kouki who still had spare strength, he would be able to thrust his holy sword and destroy it.

But, his flesh that already welcomed the limit had insufficient strength to meet that charge.

「Gahah!？」

Although he barely evaded just the combat bull's horn, his torso got hit by the headbutt and he was sent flying. The impact that made his body felt like it would come apart shook his consciousness. Air was forcefully expelled from his lung and he couldn't breath.

He wrung out his willpower, thrust down the holy sword and defeated the combat bull, but he couldn't stop from falling on his knee.

Thinking that this time was the end for sure, the <Dark Beings> rushed forward like a flood in order to raise distinguished service.

The eyes of Kouki who raised his face weren't focused as though his mind was hazy. His blurry sight could see the approaching <Dark Beings> raising war cry in slow motion.

(Is it the end.....in this kind of place.....)

Even though, I found the answer.....

He finally understood.

In feeling, wish, prayer, there was no such thing like mistake.

If one was serious, then everything was the real deal, what was important was sincerity.

After choosing, one must not run away from that feeling. One must not avert their eyes from the wish. One must not give up praying. That was the true

battle.

Even though he finally understood.

(Will it end, without me unable to protect?)

‘I’ll protect everyone’, he said. Toward the young boy, toward the feudal lord who thought about his people, toward everyone of the vigilance corps.

(Will I, lie again?)

Because, I have done my best? Because I risked my life? That’s why, it’s fine even if I give up already right?

(Don’t-, screw around-!!)

「aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

『tsu!? You bastard-!?』

The large sword that was swung down by a bull head species was deflected back by the holy sword of Kouki who was screaming as though his throat was going to burst.

‘Just where in the hell such strength is coming from’, the expression of the bull head species was cramping with such meaning that could easily be understand despite his grotesque feature.

(Fight-, fight-, fight!! You want to protect even if you have to kill them aren’t you! You chose that right! Then fight-)

He scolded himself.

Something snapped inside Kouki. It was a feeling that he had tasted several times, however, Kouki had no leeway to pay that any mind.

But, if he could see his status plate, then he would surely notice that there was one addition of derivative skill there.

—Limit Break’s special derivation War Demon

Originally, Limit Break raised up the whole specs by several times along with the increase of magic power, but this <War Demon> didn’t have magic power increase. His specs also didn’t increase. However, no matter how broken up the body was, the magic power inside the body would be used to reinforce the

body as though it was replacement for plaster cast, and the user would only continue to fight intently with this special derivative skill.

Because it was almost like a self-destructing technique, almost nobody was awakened to this skill.

This was the crystallization of feeling that bloomed exactly because Kouki's heart shouted in this extreme situation.

That scream was,

—Fight! Fight! To the end of that choice, following your wish, fight until this body become trash!

「oOOOOOOOOO-!!」

『Thi, this monster-』

For the first time since the beginning until now, the <Dark Beings> were backing away. The loud pressuring scream and fighting spirit that could only be described as ghastly almost swallowed them up.

(My body, is moving-. I can still, fight-)

He didn't understand why his body was moving.

But, such thing didn't matter.

(Step in, more. Look at the whole. As long as they aren't a beast, the movement of human body is mostly decided!)

More efficiently. To the necessary place, at the necessary time, using the necessary strength, accurately.

‘That was what you were taught right’, he told himself.

(.....Aa, so I forgot even this kind of thing)

His memories of until now that flowed in like revolving lantern. The things that he forgot, that he lost sight of were resurrected.

He learned the sword style of knight because he was the hero of the kingdom. However, there was the sword that he learned side by side with his childhood friend farther in the past. Caught by his position as hero and his mistaken impression, or perhaps because of his guilt of betrayal, he buried it at the

bottom of his heart all this time.

A bull head species swung down a large sword.

If it was the him so far until now, he would use his specs as hero and deflected back the attack. But, he already didn't have the spare strength for that so.....

The moment he received the opponent's sword, he averted the sword attack using the shift of his wrist, and at the same time he changed the hand holding the sword to his other hand and cut up.

—Yaegashi-style sword art Otoha Nagashi (TN: Sound Blade Flow)

The name was because the moment the sword attack was averted, two swords scraping against each other produced a clear tone.

The bull head species didn't feel any recoil from his sword, and when he noticed himself was already cut with his life ended, his eyes opened still.

A scaled dragon species unleashed a mowing down attack using a huge spear.

If it was before, he would knock down the attack or dodge.

Now he kept the point of his sword pointed straight while shifting his upper body, however, he didn't retreat but stepped forward and thrust the sword.

—Yaegashi-style sword art Kasumiugachi (TN: Haze Pierce)

By shifting the distance perception using the upper body's back and forth movement and shoulder's motion, the huge spear's horizontal mow ended up striking empty air. The scaled dragon species whose eyes were opened wide lost his life with his last sight being an attack that looked like three thrust unleashed at the same time.

A Skeleton came lunging using his sword hand.

If it was before Kouki would meet the attack using his holy sword.

He grasped the sword hand with one hand and made the skeleton floated in the air using a twisting throw and body movement.

—Yaegashi style martial art Kyourai (TN: Mirror Lightning)

This technique threw the opponent using Aikido move and then attacked

while the opponent was midair. But, this time it was used to hold back a second Skeleton, and the moment the two Skeletons collided, he mowed down the two altogether using his holy sword.

The kingdom's knight sword art wasn't bad by any means. Rather, a transcendent ability and the knight sword art—especially the strong sword style of Meld Logins had good compatibility.

But, for his current self whose specs were degrading.....the ancient martial arts of Yaegashi-style that he learned for a long time, a style for the sake of “the weak overthrowing the strong” was the most optimum.

Not relying on physical strength to the utmost of his ability, not burdening his body, while getting the better of the enemy using technique.

Because of the strange movement that was different from before, the <Dark Beings> could be seen clearly that they were perplexed.

(Although, it's hard doing it with western sword. How long I can fight while being conscious? Can my consciousness last—)

Kouki was concerned with the feeling of discrepancy that came from using Yaegashi-style with a weapon that wasn't katana, but.....

At that moment, the holy sword was enveloped in faint light.

The <Dark Beings> were on guard wondering what Kouki was planning, but Kouki's feeling of amazement was more than what they were feeling.

Kouki reflexively closed his eyes toward the holy sword that was enveloped in light despite him not doing anything. He couldn't even see the sword blade because of the light.

If the time was counted it was only several seconds.

Before long the light settled down. And there,

「Ka, katana.....」

Yes, the holy sword changed shape. Although there wasn't wave pattern on the sword blade, but what was there was certainly a katana with single edge and curving shape. Looking closely, when he noticed even the sheath had changed shape.



「Ha, hahah」

A smile emerged on his mouth unconsciously. The figure that was bathed in blood spurt and yet looked smiling looked gruesome that even the <Dark Beings> looked backing away.

But, Kouki didn't even pay attention to that.

(Come to think of it, no matter what happen you keep lending me your strength huh)

Even if he let go of it, it would come flying if he raised his hand. Even when he tried to return it, it flew to him by its own will. Even when he got carried away, even when he was a betrayer, even when he was lost, it never forsook him and continued to choose him as its wielder.

And then, now it even changed shape to respond to Kouki's wish.

‘Aah’, he thought.

His consciousness was still hazy, and everywhere in his body was screaming, however.....

「There is a holy sword(partner) in my hand. Then, there is no way, I'll lose」

If he was defeated, his holy sword(partner) might fall into enemy's hand. Only that he wouldn't allow.

He found one more reason to fight.

He suddenly noticed. Without him knowing, there was a sun ray alighting down from the sky. From the gap of the cloudy sky, the sunlight looked like a stair that was continuing to heaven—it was likely that the morning sun was shining in.

The night, had ended.

Seeing that, Kouki's smile deepened further and,

「If you choose the path of survival then I won't pursue. But, if you choose to fight—」

Slowly he put the holy sword into the sheath, and he lowered his waist. His hand, was still touching the handle loosely.

「I won't ask for forgiveness. I will.....kill you all until I perish.」

A tranquil fighting spirit, and grand words of resolve, spread through the battlefield.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This might be, a story where the heroine is the holy sword.....

Next time, the reinforcement arrives. What they will see there is

PS

It seems that comic version of Arifureta entered the Top 30 of Nikoniko's first half of the year ranking.

This too is thanks to everyone who read it! And then thanks to RoGa-sensei!

Really thank you very much. Please take care of me from now on too!

Nevertheless, this year too, half a year has passed huh.....haee

# Arifureta Chapter 274

## Arifureta After II Reinforcement Army Corps

「What's the status with the sortie preparation-」

The harsh voice of Moana who was wrapped in battle outfit was reverberating in the palace's corridor. She was walking fast with her footsteps making clapping sound as though to express her impatient feeling. Beside her, her close aides with Spenser, Donar, and Linden in the lead were accompanying her.

Spenser replied to Moana's question with a stern expression.

「It's possible for three thousand to sortie in our state. However, the number of arous is insufficient, we are also mobilizing soldiers from the neighboring monitoring base, but we will need at the very least one day to reach the expected number.」

「That's no good. Too slow. Three thousand is fine. We are departing right away.」

「Don't speak unreasonably.」

When Spenser said that chidingly, Moana stopped walking and turned her gaze.

「There is no other way than pushing through recklessly. Right now, even in this very moment Arquette is in the verge of being annihilated!」

That voice contained grief. It was something rare to come from Moana who always endeavored to be composed no matter the time. That was just how abnormal and dangerous the situation was, but for Spenser who had been at Moana's side since she was born, he could guess that wasn't all.

Koone and others who should have departed from the capital at noon the day

before yesterday to head toward Arquette returned back at the forenoon today in a desperate state even while being exhausted. Thinking about the distance between the capital and Arquette, their return was too early even if they were taking day trip. Most likely they were rushing back through the night without resting.

Koone and others who returned back looked like they were going to collapse. When they asked Koone and others just what in the world was going on that caused their state to be abnormal like that, the answer they were given was about a situation that was hard to believe.

After making Koone and others rest, Moana naturally wasted no time to assemble her close aides in hurry and instructed them for sortie preparation to reinforce Arquette.

But, there were two problems regarding the sortie preparation.

First was the number of the enemy that was a large army of ten thousand.

The other problem was that they were fighting against time.

The battle strength that was permanently stationed in the capital was twenty thousand in total. The total battle strength from the citizens of the capital was less than thirty thousand. There were several cities set up at the boundary line between the desert and grassland and along the coastline. These cities doubled as surveillance base. If all the soldier force in those cities were mobilized, their number would barely reach a hundred thousand.

It looked enough for a battle force, but the matter wasn't that simple.

After all, the situation this time was a completely abnormal situation. The <Dark Being> had obtained a method to attack the rear while ignoring the front line.

In that case, there was no way they could left the capital unguarded. In this situation where the early detection of enemy using the unobstructed view of the desert was rendered meaningless, enough battle force had to be left behind in the capital no matter what.

In addition, seeing how it would be meaningless unless they reinforced Arquette before the city fell, they had to mobilize using arous no matter what.

Because they definitely wouldn't make it in time if the soldier walked by foot to go there.

But, naturally the number of aros available was fewer than the number of soldier.

With aros that were trained to not fear battle, and including the aros that were collected from the capital's citizens, and by also further preparing not to carry any luggage as much as possible, and even after using method where multiple people would ride one aros in place of the luggage, they still couldn't secure aros in the number that could transport ten thousand soldiers.

Even the number three thousand that Spenser said was already an amazing response to be able to prepare that many in this short time.

Nevertheless, challenging ten thousand enemies with three thousand was still too rash.

Spenser had to admonish that action as the royal guard captain.

「Your majesty. However, speaking realistically, we cannot challenge an army of ten thousand with three thousand.」

「Spenser. Certainly I think that's reckless. But, I'm not merely saying that without making any calculation at all.」

Moana started walking again while speaking her thought.

「If Arquette's defensive wall is functioning, it will be possible for us charge through the enemy and enter the city. After that we will hole up there while waiting for the infantry and soldiers from the surveillance bases to arrive, before launching pincer attack from outside and inside the city.」

It was a strategy that was riddled with problem.

Certainly, if they could enter Arquette and then holing up inside, it would be possible for them to endure until the soldier force that was the combination from every area arrived. If it was the art users of the capital, they could easily reinforce and repair the defensive wall, while it would be easy for the soldiers to defeat the <Dark Beings> that sporadically crossed the defensive wall.

The greatest bottleneck of being in the defensive side of a siege that was the

food supply was also not a problem seeing that Arquette was a city where harvest was accumulated in there.

But,

「The gate must be closed right now. How are we going to go in?」

「We can use art to send notification for them to open the gate by matching our timing, or we can even use art to create a huge slope to cross the defensive wall. There are many ways that can be used.」

「If we lagged even just for a bit, we will get surrounded and then annihilated. It's a gamble that is really bad for heart. Even if for example we managed that.....the plan can only work assuming they are still outside the wall you know? What are we going to do in the case the city has fallen?」

「.....If that's the case, we will retreat. We will wait until the infantry and soldiers from every area link up with us.」

Spenser nodded while saying 「Hmm」. If she was able to choose the option of retreat there, then he guessed that she was still calm.

But, that too was undoubtedly also a gamble. It was doubtful whether they could really retreat after approaching the enemy until the range where they came into view. There wasn't any guarantee that the enemy wouldn't lying in ambush for their arrival after taking down Arquette.

Not to mention the <Dark Beings> should have realized that some people had escaped.

Honestly speaking, Spenser had judged that Arquette's situation was "despairing". It was a rear base with only defensive wall without even any decent soldier. It was impossible for the city to hold out for several days under the attack of a large army of ten thousand.

In that case, even if taking back the city was something they inevitable had to do, the royal guard captain, Spenser ought to think about the safety of the queen. A decision where they should refrain from departing until they could secure enough force had to be made.

However, he also understood Moana's feeling really well. For Spenser,

knowing that the people they had to protect was in a crisis made him unable to be calm. Rather, he felt his stomach getting churned up when thinking that even now Arquette was being trampled.

Perhaps perceiving that indecision of Spenser, Moana added her words with a heavy and compelling voice.

「We have to depart right now. Am I wrong, Spenser?」

「.....It's about Kouki-dono, isn't it?」

「Yeah.」

‘As I thought’, Spenser thought while closing his eyes.

「I understand your worry. You are wondering whether I'm getting rash, or that I'm losing my calm because of Kouki, right?」

「.....Yes.」

Moana nodded while smiling bitterly.

「Certainly, my personal feeling is wanting to go to help Kouki. He is weak even though he is that strong, he torment himself, causing him to be unable to make his decision, but even so he desperately wished to advance forward and keep struggling.....I want to help him. I want to become his aid.」

That mysterious young man who was imprisoned by his own mysterious feeling. Even though she had known him only for a few days, but he strangely left impression in her memory, as a person with broken heart.

「Something must had happened in his past. I don't know much about him. Just what happened that he is tormenting himself so much like that? That he can be so disappointed with himself like that?」

Kouki sometimes spoke out his feeling as though he was venting his anger. She could make a guess from that, but Moana instead didn't think too deep about it. Because she wanted to hear it from his own mouth someday, when he wanted to talk to her about it.

「He avoided killing, he is scared of getting killed, he is unable to believe his own decision.....however, even though he might not notice it himself, but in the end, he cannot help but saving the people beside him. Because, he is kind.」

Perhaps, that was exactly why he was called as hero. She thought like that.

「Hey, Spenser. When someone who surely ought to be the person who is the most unrelated to fighting said that he will remain behind in an extremely dangerous place, just what is that person actually thinking?」

「.....I am a soldier. I don't know the answer. But.....I understand the degree of his resolve. I think that he is an owner of resolve that is worthy of respect.」

Moana nodded in agreement.

「That's right. Then we have to meet his expectation.」

Her personal feeling affected her decision. But, her feeling as queen also affected that decision to the same degree.

「An unrelated man without any obligation or duty is risking his life for the sake of our people by himself alone. He is fighting while believing that we are rushing there as reinforcement.」

Not only Spenser, the complexion of all the close aides who were thinking of remonstrating Moana changed.

「This isn't about logic. Am I wrong?」

It was dangerous to go with small force. The safety of the queen had to be prioritized. Arquette's situation was already hopeless. One ought to be rational in front of real problem.

Indeed, all those reasons could just eat shit.

「Indeed. Anything other than that will rot our warrior's soul.」

Spenser smiled while nodding. He had said what he should said as a royal guard. But the queen that he loved and respected still gave her command even then. In that case, taking action by following his soul wasn't something to be sad about. His smile naturally changed into a fearless smile.

「We will depart with three thousand. We will force ourselves to push through. However, we won't do anything thoughtless. Entrust the warrior soul of all of you to me. Spenser, spread my command!」

「By your will-」



Spenser gave his greatest salute to Moana before dashing away.

「The title as soldier chief is a troubling thing in this kind of time. I'm envious toward Spenser.」

「It's just as you said.」

Soldier chief Donar and head art user Linden breathed out a sigh simultaneously. They would stay behind to guard the capital and organized the following force. But, they themselves also wanted to rush out right now without delay.

「Don't say that. It's because you two are staying behind that we can depart without any worry about the future. Besides, the new threat of the <Dark Being>.....it's likely that in the battle from now on, base defense will become meaningless. I'll have all of you rush around to my heart's content too.」

「Hahah, we are looking forward to that. However.....sudden appearance from empty air, is it.....」

Soldier chief Donar groaned with a grim expression. That expression looked as though it was directed toward different matter rather than that threatening phenomenon itself.

Moana who sensed that nodded with a loathing expression.

「.....Only "that guy" can do such thing.」

Linden continued after her.

「It must be the <Dark King>. Making miasma materialize at far away distance. It also happened at the battle five years ago. But, he should be able to do it within only fifty meter at best. Also even though he was able to manipulate miasma, he shouldn't have the ability to teleport other <Dark Being>.」

「It looks like all this time he isn't just healing his wound.」

Moana's loathing expression changed into an even more bitter expression. But, she shook her head and showed a determined face,

「From here on a war even fiercer than five years ago will start. This time for sure, one side will win and gain the right of survival, whether it's mankind or the <Dark Being>. It will become a war to decide that. All of you, take care of

Koone.」

「.....Your will.」

「.....As your majesty will it.」

Both Donar and Linden also closed their eyes after a brief silence. They reflected upon Moana's resolve and wish.

She commanded them to prioritize her little sister rather than herself who had lost most of her strength.

They silently accepted the resolve of her who had already like their own daughter, who at the same time had also splendidly grown to become a respectful king.

The outer edge part of the oasis river of Synclea royal capital. Three thousand soldiers were standing by there while mounting arous.

In order to stand in front of them, Moana also approached toward her personal mount Haumu who was made to stand by in front of the stable. The old man who was taking care of Haumu bowed his head reverently and handed over the rein.

Moana said her thanks to the old man and he gently stroked Haumu's nose tip. Even Haumu who usually would frolic(bite) at her currently was only staring still at Moana without showing any reluctant behavior.

「Even Haumu somehow understand it huh.....」

Moana whispered while narrowing her eyes with her way of speaking turning casual. She pressed her forehead on Haumu's nose tip and closed her eyes.

「You are my mount. Most likely the time of your death will be the same like me. And then, that time is already nearing. No doubt about that.」

「Fuhn」

Haumu let out a huff, the glint of his eyes showering down Moana as though to say 'so what'. He was the one and only mount of the king. He didn't fear death or anything, such dominating aura was conveyed even without any

spoken words.

Moana smiled widely toward such Haumu. And then, in order to bestow a worthy accessory for the mount of king, she took out a ribbon from her pocket—

「Onee-chan!」

「Koone?」

When she turned around, Koone was there. Not only Koone, Spike, Lilin, and others, the members who followed Koone to Arquette were all there.

Moana who somehow guessed what Koone was going to say opened her mouth before Koone could say anything.

「You must not, Koone. You stay here.」

「But—」

「There is no way it can be allowed that not a single royalty is staying at the capital in this situation. You understand right?」

She understood. Even Koone understood something like that. However, it was exactly because it was this kind of situation that her heart couldn't allow her big sister to go to a battlefield where she might die. Fierce unease and feeling of despair where it felt like the ground under her was crumbling attacked Koone.

And then, unexpectedly even for herself, she wanted to obtain the confirmation as quickly as possible with a feeling that was as strong as her concern toward her big sister. The confirmation of Kouki's safety.

「Onee-chan, Koone is—」

Koone tried to vehemently argue further, but as expected her words were interrupted, by the index finger of her big sister that touched her lips softly.

「Koone, be reasonable. Both I and Koone has duty as royalty. As your onee-chan, I am really happy with Koone's feeling. But—I will accomplish what I ought to fulfill. Until that time when I used up this life.」

「tsu」

Moana's words weren't the usual kind and pampering words. She didn't say

“It will be fine” or “Onee-chan won’t leave Koone”.

Fulfilling one’s duty. She would do that. You too do that. Those were the words of queen. The time where she could just be the kind onee-chan for Koone was over.

「You understand right? After all Koone is the little sister I’m proud of.」

「tsu, tsu.....under, stand. Koone, understand-」

Perhaps, this would be their last meeting in this life. Koone nodded while desperately holding back her tear duct from bursting.

Moana strongly hugged Koone whose expression distorted from holding back from crying as though she was hugging a treasure. Koone too also hugged back tightly, really tightly.

「I’ll leave the capital in your hand, Koone.」

「Yes, Onee-cha—your majesty. May luck be with you.」

Hearing her beloved little sister changing how she was calling her, Moana was feeling like she was going to cry despite it was herself who was causing Koone to do that.

Moana made a smile so that Koone wouldn’t notice that, but seeing Koone’s faint smile and gaze, it seemed that she had been seen through. “As expected from my Koone-tan”, she used that way of calling only inside her heart.

「Your majesty, we—」

Spike who was at a loss for word from seeing the exchange between Moana and Koone asked hesitantly.

「Of course, all of you stay behind. With how Spenser is accompanying me, the leader of the royal guard in the capital is now Spike. Protect Koone.」

「tsu, by your will.」

Actually, he wanted to turn around and returned to Arquette. Even while biting his lips, Spike returned a salute in order to accomplish his role.

It seemed that all the members of Koone’s escort party shared that feeling. Every single one of them was making the same expression.

Especially Lilin, the expression of the girl who was boasting 「I was born for the sake of fighting」 was filled to the brim with shame because of turning her back toward the enemy regardless of how she managed to accomplish her role of protecting Koone.

Even so she didn't say anything the same like Spike. That was why, Koone opened her mouth in their place.

「Onee-cha—your majesty. Can you allow to let at least Lilin to accompany you?」

「Hm? Lilin?」

Not just Moana, even Lilin was gazing in wonderment at Koone's suggestion.

「Yes. Lilin is Spenser's direct subordinate in the first place. She joined Koone's escort squad in case of unexpected situation. And most of all, Koone think that it's better that someone who know about Arquette's current situation to accompany your majesty just in case.」

It was a reasonable suggestion. And above all else, Koone's feeling behind her words that wanted Moana to bring at least one person from her escort squad into the battle could be really felt.

Moana said 「I see」 and nodded, then

「How is your exhaustion? You will be going back to Arquette non-stop without even a wink of sleep. You also lent your strength for Arquette's defense correct?」

「There is no problem. Your majesty, I beg you to take me into the battlefield. Please give me the chance to slaughter the enemy in the front line.」

The words of Lilin who were bowing her head made Moana smiled wryly reflexively. Spike and others also seemed to feel the same. They made wry smile toward vigorous fighting spirit of the youngest girl of the escort squad.

「Fine then. Lilin, return to your home unit for now. I'm looking forward to your performance in battle.」

「I thank your majesty. I will display my wind for your majesty to see, carving apart the enemies that got away from hero-sama no matter how many they

are.」

Spike and others called at Lilin 「Kill a lot for our part too」. Beside them, Koone spoke to Moana.

「Can Koone ask your majesty to give message to hero-sa—to Kouki-sama?」

「.....Yeah.」

「—Tell him, 『How dare you did as you please without even asking Koone for permission! You better prepare yourself!』」

「Fuh, fufufuh, go, got it. I will convey the message without fail.」

Kouki was surely alive. The message with a content that was based on such premise caused Moana to be unable to hold her laughter down while thinking that it would surely be hell for Kouki even if he was alive.

Like that, not even thirty minute after that, the soldier force led by Moana departed for Arquette.

Less than two days since the force departed from the capital.

Perhaps it should be said as expected, almost three days had passed since Koone and others escaped from Arquette.

The aros were running with everything they had, even so they are putting up with sprinting while carrying two or three adult men who were fully equipped, so they needed rest no matter what. In addition, as expected marching with three thousand troops even by riding aros lowered their speed compared to marching with only several dozen troops.

The time was several minutes passed the noon. It was about the afternoon of the sixth day since the day Kouki was summoned.

For an army with number of more than a thousand to be able to cross the distance that normally would take one day and a half in that time could be said to be fast enough already.

The army already entered the grassland area and all the aros became

animated and increased their speed even further.

「Lilin. If I remember correctly, Kouki deployed a barrier of light that covered the whole Arquette right?」

Moana asked while repressing her impatient feeling.

「Yes, Moana-sama. ....It was a solemn and mystical barrier, not letting the whole army of ten thousand to pass. It was an amazing sight.」

Lilin answered while her eye glint glittered with fighting spirit toward the nearing battlefield. Spenser who was riding at Moana's side shook his head and opened his mouth.

「At that time when we were attacked by Ragar, we were also covered by shining half sphere barrier. It's likely to be the same technique. It had toughness that wouldn't twitch even with the full strength attack of Ragar but.....for the same technique to cover the whole city.....it's hard to even imagine, a truly miraculous work.」

Spenser's expression seemed to want to say 「What an unbelievable power」.

「Light of protection.....then, we should be able to see it from afar before long. Spenser, what about the lookout at the surrounding?」

「There is no gap in our lookout. I have already sent out scouts to every directions. It should be about time for them to return temporarily.....」

Before Spenser could finish speaking, one arous showed itself crossing a small hill and joined up into the rank.

Spenser's eyes were scrutinizing the scout's conspicuous act of crossing the hill. The scout was a young soldier who had returned from confirming the situation of Arquette. He was approaching Spenser's position.

Spenser was thinking whether he should scold the scout's rash act, also for focusing everyone's mind, but he stopped from speaking after seeing the scout's eyes that were wavering in bewilderment.

「Commander. Re, reporting」

「Muh, from your look, is there something ahead? Let's hear it.」

The scouts resolved himself and opened his mouth while Moana and others were also listening carefully.

「Yes-. Regarding the barrier of light that we heard beforehand.....I couldn't confirm it's existence.」

*hyuh* The sound of breath caught in the throat rang out. It came from Moana. Her complexion turned pale. Beside her Lilin was gritting her teeth audibly and her expression warped in vexation.

There was no barrier of light. That was to say, it was the proof that the person who casted the barrier had ran out of strength.

Holding back Moana from reflexively trying to ask for reconfirmation, Spenser told the scout to continue his report. The most important information was the approximate amount of enemy's current number and whether Arquette had fallen or not—putting it another way, it was the evaluation standard to decide whether they should withdraw the army or kept advancing.

「.....Is Arquette fallen?」

「That's.....that.....I don't know.」

「What?」

Spenser didn't understand what the scout meant. The scout should have seen Arquette's situation from afar. The scout should be able to see how many <Dark Being> was surrounding Arquette, and whether the gate was already destroyed or not. Spenser's eyes narrowed like a hawk that was fixed toward the scout, asking what he meant.

The scout gulped, and then he continued speaking a bit rapidly to convey the situation that he witnessed as it was.

「It looks like the gate was destroyed! However, around Arquette, there are only a great number of Dark Beings' corpses, I practically cannot catch sight of any moving thing! The number of the corpses, I didn't confirm it from every directions, but at the very least in the east side there were—」

「What, say it clearly! Was it several hundred?」

If that was the case, then the possibility was that the large army of <Dark



Being> had already subdued Arquette and occupied the city and right now they were hiding inside, or they were advancing toward the neighboring territory, or perhaps they were standing by somewhere in order to launch ambush.

But, as though to blow away that doubt of Spenser, a shocking report with content that was indeed worthy to bewilder the scout was given.

「Sir-, based from my observation, it was roughly—around six thousand, I think.」

「.....Ha?」

Spenser unconsciously leaked out a stupid sounding voice. But not just him, even Moana and others also showed an expression that wanted to ask just what this person was saying.

「It, it's true. There is really a great number of corpses lying around, even I myself don't know just what is.....」

「.....Calm down. Were the corpses really the corpse of those guys? What about the possibility of some kind of fake body?」

「Still, I didn't mistake fake corpses as the real thing. All those are certainly dead <Dark Beings>. Even corpses just from species that we knew like bull head species, scaled dragon species, eccentric species.....all those are.....」

Spenser said 「Good work」 and told the scout to withdraw, and then he looked back at Moana.

「What do you think, your majesty?」

「.....Do you think Kouki did that?」

「.....I don't know. It's hard to believe that so suddenly. In Koone-sama's report, Kouki-dono himself said that he would run out of strength first against such number. Currently there is no barrier and the gate is opened. Frankly, it's impossible to decide with this unexpected situation. Perhaps we should think that this is some kind of trap by the enemy.」

Certainly it was just as Spenser said. Moana nodded at Spenser's concern and she closed her eyes for a while.

And then she put her thought in order and opened her eyes.

「We are advancing. If there is no enemy and Arquette's gate is opened, then it's fortuitous. We have to make sure of the city's situation.」

「.....By your will. We will increase the lookout to the surrounding.」

Regardless of the enemy's nonexistence, there was no way they could withdraw without ascertaining the safety of the citizens. Spenser also agreed with that decision.

The army fastened their pace while being on guard and hurried toward Arquette.

Before long Arquette's state came into view. Moana and the others held their breath.

Just as the scout said, a great number of <Dark Beings> were lying down nearby the east gate. It was clear even from afar that they were dead with lack of body part or severed into two. The cause was undoubtedly from slash attack. It seemed that the cause of the <Dark Beings>' death wasn't from unforeseen circumstance.

「We are continuing ahead.」

The army rushed through the corpses on Moana's order. The corpses were lying on top of each other so much that there was no empty place to step on.

「The blood trace, the position of loss body part, the way they fell.....your majesty. It seems these guys were thrown away after getting cut down around the gate.」

「.....The north part and southern part looks clean.」

「From the scout's report, it looks like that the west part only have the grain farm area getting ruined but there is mostly no trace of fighting there.」

Moana and others approached quite near the gate before long.

There were also traces of fierce fighting around there too. Everywhere there were the expired bodies of <Dark Being>.

But, at that time, their ears suddenly caught sound of tumult.

「tsu, let's go-」

They passed through the gate. The sound of tumult was getting louder. While the army was spreading through the city with Spenser's instruction, the main force was running toward the tumult following Moana's order.

Houses were destroyed into a tragic state that was clear even just from a glance. The street was messed up as though the ground had been plowed through. And then there were the countless expired <Dark Beings>.

But, they still hadn't found even a single corpse of human.

「Moana-sama! The underground vault is ahead from here! It's at the other side of that big warehouse!」

「I know!」

Moana nodded at Lilin's report. The tumultuous sound was gradually getting louder. The number of expired <Dark Being> was also getting more numerous. The number might reach a thousand even just inside the city.

「The direction ahead! Enemy sighted! Vanguard, charge!」

The moment they turned around the corner from the street that stretched straight from the east gate, they caught sight of countless <Dark Beings>. Although, it appeared that they weren't taking position in order to meet the advance of Moana and the others.

The <Dark Beings> were crowding the street, they were even spreading on the buildings' rooftop. All of them were facing toward a single direction. They only finally noticed Moana and others at the same time when they came into view.

Moana and others felt question seeing that. Even so, there was no need to hesitate with enemy in front of their eyes.

They charged the <Dark Beings> from behind and routed the enemy. A squad climbed to the rooftops following Spenser's instruction and they opened combat against the enemies on the rooftops.

It was hard to use large force inside a limited space. Moana's main force divided further into small units, spreading into alleys and streets like water pervading into countless ditches.

The <Dark Beings> fought back, but the momentum of the soldiers who were driven by rage was tremendous and the enemies were routed one after another. The reinforcement army was advancing forward and forward.

The army didn't hesitate in their path.

Because they could just charge forward toward the direction where the several thousand <Dark Beings> were crowding into.

Like that Moana and others advanced for a while.

Before long, Moana and others arrived at the center of the tumult, they came out at the other side of the large building—the large warehouse that still had its walls standing strong despite having its roof destroyed. There they saw it.

A place that became a mountain of rubble, where most of the surrounding buildings were collapsed.

At that place that was becoming like a large plaza, there were several hundred <Dark Beings> who were tightly forming a round besiegement, and about the same number of expired <Dark Beings> at the surrounding.

And then, at the center, was him.

Surrounded by enemy from all directions, assaulted continuously without any pause.....

It was difficult to search any spot on his body that was safe. He had literally become wounded all over his body.....

However, under his feet there was a solid looking door made from metal.....

—Aa

That was a sigh that was leaked out by someone.

Determination.

That figure which was the embodiment of that word shook the soul of the warriors.

And then, the <Dark Beings> who were only concentrating at the enemy before their eyes finally noticed the existence of Moana and others.

They all stiffened for a moment.

The one who moved first was her majesty the queen whose soul was shaken.

「tsu, Roar-, oh warriors! Annihilate the enemy! Save him—Save Kouki!!」

—oOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOH!!!

The war cry of the warriors' soul shook Arquette.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Sorry that this chapter feel half-baked. It feels like I will receive scolding 'Isn't this only barely fulfilling the advance notice of previous chapter, or rather it hasn't reached even that', but I'm thinking of splitting the chapter because of the word number, I'm sorry (sweat)

Forgive Shirakome who is generally unable to follow the plan

Also, regarding the descend of that guy, I'm thinking of lengthening the number of day of Liliana's speech by two, three days.

It's inexcusable toward those who is looking forward to it, but as expected I want to make Kouki do it until the end here.

PS:

At Comic Galdo, a spinoff called 「Arifureta Nichijou de Sekai Saikyou」was starting serialization.

It can be seen at Overlap-sama's homepage, so please have a look if it pleases you.

The view point is the serious Yue, but the key point was from Shirakome's pov lol

# Arifureta Chapter 275

## Arifureta After II The Fight is Over

Looking at the number, both sides were about equal. The battle strength between the kingdom army and the <Dark Being> army should be in balance against each other.

But, in reality it wasn't like that at all.

It was just like a clump of weed getting swallowed by muddy stream.

That could only be said to be natural. After all in this place, everything in every senses were working in the kingdom army's favor.

First, thanks to almost all the <Dark Beings> congregated at the surrounding of Arquette's underground vault, it was possible to surround them despite the location being in the middle of city.

Second, the kingdom army had the geographical advantage that was urban warfare.

Third, there was already no more blessing power that could be eaten at the surrounding, although only for a bit but the <Dark Beings> looked exhausted.

Fourth, it was only within a part of the <Dark Beings>, but because they had been continuously losing fighting against only one person, fear against human was starting to grow in them.

And then, above all else, the bloodcurdling fighting spirit of the kingdom army soldiers were increasing without any end in sight, the pressure from that beaten down the moral of the enemies. Without doubt that was the greatest cause of the curbstomp.

The righteous indignation of Arquette getting attacked. The vindication of honor for five years ago. Hatred toward the very race of <Dark Being> itself.

Just one person—

Even though he bore no duty or responsibility whatsoever, he continued to fight for three whole days while getting worn out. The soldiers' feeling toward that person couldn't be expressed with words.

For a soldier, after witnessing such an exalted gallant figure, there was no way they couldn't be shaken. There was no way they could stop their soul from roaring.

Fierce.

A fighting spirit where there was no need for hesitation to use that word to represent it was exterminating the <Dark Beings> one after another.

『Re, Retreat-! Retreat-!』

Someone unknown among the <Dark Being> yelled that.

If their opponent was only one person, their obstinacy could hold on. If they were against one man who looked like he would collapse anytime now, they could passionately rage and fought, thinking that the next attack for sure would finish the fight, that they would be the one who would bring down the enemy who caused this much damage toward them.

They were like gambler who felt that the jackpot would come out at the next one for sure and lost sight of when to quit.

「Rout them! Chase any that run away and kill them! Prioritize pulling them away from Kouki's nearby!」

Moana's command thundered. The soldiers chased and routed the enemies one after another.

Seeing that, perhaps deciding that the battle had been decided, the <Dark Beings> were running away from Kouki's surrounding altogether.

Among them, there were also <Dark Beings> who realized that they were already unable to escape and launched suicide attack at Kouki, but before Moana and others could even say 「Ah」, Kouki who were swaying in place cut them down with a single stroke of katana.

It was sword skill that would make anyone shudder seeing it. Heads were

flying like a joke.

The veteran Spenser who was watching felt as though he couldn't recognize the moment when the katana was swung, and the process of cutting the head. When he noticed it was already over.

Kouki kept standing imposingly, his head looking down with both his hands dangling down. His expression couldn't be seen, but even though Moana had been calling at him many times since a while ago, he showed no reaction in response.

His state was uncommon.

And yet despite so, with that state where he wasn't even taking stance, he was swaying back and fro while slaughtering <Dark Beings> that leaped at him with sword attack that couldn't be perceived.

「The sword's.....summit—sword saint」

Spenser whispered with a hoarse voice. It was a legend that his father told him when he was but a child.

An unseen and unavoidable sword strike. One of the summits that a swordsman ought to aim for.

In the far past, that technique was considered as the king's sword, the character of the legend was extolled and people were calling him <Sword Saint>.

The current Kouki, he looked just like the second coming of the legend.

「Kouki!」

When Spenser went 'hah' and came back to his senses, there weren't any more figure of <Dark Being> at the surrounding. The tumultuous sound of the soldiers fighting could be heard from the direction of the west gate.

And then, Moana took the healing art users with her and rushed toward Kouki.

She was rushing toward Kouki with great momentum, just like what the <Dark Beings> doing before this.



「Don't-, your majesty! Back away-」

「Eh?」

Kouki who was still standing silently with both his hands dangling down and his face looking down was swaying.

Moana who heard Spenser's voice and looked back—was already in Kouki's range.

「-!!!」

「Gua!?!」

A hair's breadth. Lilin pulled Moana back. The two fell behind and rolled around. 「What are you doing」 Moana said while her voice was stifled from the impact of falling. In the field of vision of Moana who lifted her face, white strings were fluttering down in the air.....

「Eh?」

「Are you safe, Moana-sama!?!」

「Your majesty-, are you injured!?!」

Lilin asked with a pale expression while Spenser called with an impatient expression, but the astonished Moana didn't pay them any attention.

The fluttering down white strings.

Those were—her hair.

The tips of Moana's white hair were slightly cut and fluttered in the air.

Who cut those hairs?

That was obvious.

「Kouki?」

There was no answer to her call.

Kouki were standing still on his original position—above the door of the underground vault.

Thanks to rolling down on the ground, Moana finally could see the face of Kouki that was looking down. At the same time, she noticed the abnormality.

「Kou, ki.....」

There was no light in those half closed eyes. Those eyes were empty, they weren't looking at anywhere.

「It looks like.....he is alive. But, he is unconscious. What the.....」

「Unbelievable.....」

Both Spenser and Lilin lost their words. Moana too also the same.

That was understandable.

Just who in the world could possibly imagine *someone fighting while being unconscious*.

Looking at him once more, Kouki's state was really atrocious.

There was all kind of sizes of wounds throughout his body. Few places were unharmed. He was blood drenched all over his body, his brown hair was dyed dark red by his own blood and enemy's blood. His breathing was shallow and faint, it sounded like it would stop anytime now. His side that could be seen from the gap of his torn clothes was warped, perhaps it was because his ribcage was broken and changed shape.....

The sword that changed shape was gripped in only one hand, because his other arm was broken all over from the shoulder until the fist.

Looking closer, the hand that was grasping the sword was wrapped in several layer of cloth scraps, so that even if the hand lost gripping strength, the sword wouldn't slip down.

*jijiji-, jijiji-* The holy sword was flickering with light like a lamp that was almost cut off from electricity, as though expressing the light of Kouki's life as it was.

Just how long he had been fighting continuously in this state?

His figure that was continuing to fight even when he was unconscious.

Moana sent his gaze toward the spot where Kouki was standing. The entrance of the underground vault.

She understood just from seeing that.

—I won't let anyone touch even a single hair of them

An emotion that couldn't possibly be expressed with words became tear and overflowed.

「You are, you are protecting them until you become like that.....you are protecting them until the end aren't you, Kouki.....」

Moana stood up. Spenser and Lilin tried to stop her, but Moana told them no need with a smile.

Spenser and Lilin tried to say that it was dangerous to get near the current Kouki who would remove anyone who approached. However, they became unable to say anything seeing that smile. Both of them were also unable to stop the trembling inside their chest from seeing Kouki's figure.

The two of them were watching attentively in silent. No, it wasn't just the two of them, before they realized they were surrounded by soldiers who were watching attentively with the same expression on their faces. Moana advanced under their gaze.

Two meter left until Kouki's sword boundary.

「Kouki. Kouki, it's me. It's Moana you see. I'm coming toward you now. I'm sorry that I'm late okay?」

One meter remaining.

「Everything is all right already. Because you have protected to the very end. There is no more enemy here.」

Thirty centimeter remaining.

Kouki reacted with swaying.

Spenser was about to move, but Lilin caught his arm and she shook her head. Her gaze was directed straight at Kouki. Trust at the utmost filled that gaze. Spenser also relaxed his body.

「That's why, you can rest already. It's okay to not fight.....that's why-」

Remaining distance—zero.

The holy sword vanished. That was how the unseen sword strike looked like when it approached Moana's neck—when it stopped still right above the skin.

Even if he was unconscious, but if someone called at him wholeheartedly, the kind him would surely respond without fail.

If “I’m right here” was conveyed to him, he absolutely wouldn’t harm someone who wished to protect.

Moana who was convinced of that gently embraced Kouki without even a shred of discomposure.

「Kouki.....」

「.....u.....a?」

A faint groan. When Moana peered into Kouki’s face while supporting him, there was his eyes there that were reflecting Moana’s face. Those eyes were faintly like lamp with light returning in it.

「.....Mo.....a.....」

「Yes, it’s me right here, Kouki.」

「.....I have.....to.....protect」

It was a hoarse voice that almost couldn’t be heard. Moana gently whispered with her tears overflowing once more.

「It’s all right. It’s over already. Everyone is safe. You protected them. That’s why, it’s all right already.」

「.....I.....pro, tected?」

Kouki’s eyes were slightly opened wide, it was like he wanted to say 「Unbelievable」 even though it was something that he did himself.

That was why, Moana stared straight into Kouki’s eyes with a strong gaze while telling him.

「Yes, you protected them. Thank yo「u, Kouki. Everyone, is saved by you.」

Kouki who received those words was.....

「.....I’m.....glad」

Saying that, he smiled slightly and closed his eyes.

The body slumped and lost strength. The holy sword lose even its faint light as

though to say that its role was over. Moana who was glued closely to Kouki understood, that something unseen but important was dispersing from Kouki's body.

That figure that was quietly losing strength, was as though.....

「Quick-, heal him! Hurry! This person absolutely must not be let to die!」

A command that sounded like scream was yelled. The art users who stiffened from Kouki's heroic state assembled altogether and began applying their art.

The expression of the art users of the capital who excelled in healing grew worse with impatience. That told the reality of the precariousness of the current Kouki.

「Please, I beg you don't die.....Kouki.....」

Moana's prayer resounded among the sound of fighting that still reverberated from afar, and between the soldiers who were moving around in order to get the people of Arquette out from the underground vault.

He felt a sensation as though he was floating from the bottom of dark water.

It was as though something terribly heavy was coiling around him. His vision was pitch dark and couldn't see anything. His voice too, his throat stung and couldn't really make voice.

(What.....the world after death is really simple huh.....)

If place like hell or heaven really existed, he must be heading toward hell without doubt. If he waited here, before long even king Yama might come to judge him.

This time for sure, there would be no one that could chase after him like that time in the 【Holy Precincts】.

(Even though Shizuku and others had saved me after much trouble.....even though I finally found my answer.....even though it finally felt like I can live by facing forward.....how unfortunate)

Loneliness, sadness, frustration.

When he thought that he wouldn't be able to meet his family and friends anymore, those feelings welled up like flood.

At the same time, he thought of that girl who he felt like he was seeing at the very end like a miracle.

(Moana, sama. ....Was that an illusion? I don't remember how long I was fighting but.....I wonder if I was able to protect everyone?)

He protected them. That was how he felt. He had no basis for thinking so, but deep inside Kouki he was convinced of that. That he surely achieved that.

(Though, I killed as many as I protected)

It was impossible to save "both sides". However, if he pursued for "one side" and didn't fail in doing that.....then as he thought, it must be one answer.

Thinking that he had scattered a great number of lives, then without doubt he would be going to hell. Was king Yama not here yet? Getting kept in suspense like this was.....honestly felt scary, so he wished that he would quickly come.

While thinking of such uncontrollable imagination, what surfaced at the back of Kouki's mind was about "that guy".

(If it's "that guy", surely he will point his gun even to king Yama and asked 「Are you enemy, or ally」 instead. If the answer to that is enemy, he will surely pull the trigger.)

What a really simple evaluation standard.

As expected it was a way of living that he couldn't possibly do.

Thinking that, for some reason Kouki found it extremely funny that he spontaneously almost laughed.

He almost laughed but,

(Nnn!? It hurts!? For some reason my whole body feel so painful it feels like I'm gonna dieeeeeee!?)

'Why is there still flesh pain even after death huh!' When he directed such unreasonable outburst of anger to the king Yama in his heart, for some reason he felt a sensation as though his consciousness was surfacing.

Furthermore, inside the pitch black darkness was even starting to be shined with faint light.

(Eh? Don't tell me, I'm.....)

Thinking that it was impossible, Kouki opened his eyes—

The field of vision of Kouki who opened his eyes in reality was completely filled with the close-up face of a middle aged man. It was at a very close range where their nose almost touched each other.

「Hih, -a!? Ngh, it hurt-, scary-!? Scary hurt!?!」

「Oo!? Kouki-dono! You woke up!」

A stern middle-aged man. The look of his eyes was that of a veteran warrior. The criminal of the close-up face at the waking up was Spenser.

In addition, when his body jerked from surprise, intense pain instantly assaulted his whole body.

This was the worst waking up.

Spenser said 「I will call her majesty here immediately! Please wait for a second!」 and dashed out of the room.

For the time being the “scary” thing left, so Kouki calmed down and looked at his surrounding with teary eyes from pain.

He had recollection of the room's make up. It was really similar with the guest room in the feudal lord's mansion that he was guided into when he first arrived at Arquette. Or rather, it was exactly that guest room. When he focused his hearing, he could hear the hustle and bustle of people outside the window.

「I'm, alive? I'm, still alive.....」

Bit by bit, that fact seeped into him. Unconsciously his tear duct loosened and tears spilled out emotionally. He really thought that his life was lost as the compensation of his wish and the atonement of his crime.

He thought, that he wouldn't be able to meet anyone else anymore.

It was scary. It was painful.

However, he was alive.

What he did, what he accomplished, and then how he was alive right now.

All of that pressed on his heart. Kouki simply cried.

*zudadadadada*- The terrific sound of footsteps resounded in the ears of such Kouki.

Recalling that just now Spenser said 「I will call her majesty」, Kouki guessed that it was Moana coming his way. He wiped his tears in hurry. Somehow, he didn't want to show her his pathetic side even more than this.

Right after he finished wiping up his eyes, *BAA———NN!!* the door was blown off and Moana arrived.

Why was it he wondered. Kouki felt an immense feeling of déjà vu. He wondered if these two sisters similarly held some kind of grudge toward door.

「Kouki.」

「Moana, sama.....as I thought it wasn't some kind of illusion then.」

Moana who was amazed seeing the awakened Kouki let out tears seeping out from hearing those words of Kouki, she then ran toward him with small steps and without pause she sat down snugly on the bed.

She sat down with her back facing Kouki, and with her long hair acting as veil he also couldn't see her face from the side.

「Excuse me, Moana-sama? What about the people of Arquette? How long it has been since then?」

「.....」

Kouki felt a bit anxious seeing the silent Moana. He wondered if something happened, something that wasn't good.

But, before he could speak out his anxiety, Moana slowly tilted her body toward Kouki. Without pause she embraced Kouki's body as though she was covering him, gently so that it wouldn't affect Kouki's wounds.

「Mo, Mo Mo Mo, Moana-sama!?!」

Sweet fragrance like kukuri fruit tickled Kouki's nose. A sensation that was clearly soft even through the sheet covering his body caused him to feel



agitated against his wish.

「.....The people of Arquette are all safe. I told you right? You protected everyone.」

「Ah.....yes.」

There was Moana's face right beside his own face as though she was burying her face on his body. Her voice was slightly shaking from the various emotions filling it, reaching his ear along with her breath.

「It has only been a day since then. Really, just what kind of body you have to be able to wake up even though you almost died.」

「Ahaha.....that's because of the hero's specs.」

Influenced by Moana who was talking in a casual way, Kouki also responded to her with a casual way of talking.

Moana lifted her face, and then she stared at Kouki with her nose tip kept close to him.

「But, you will die when it's time to die.」

「.....You're right.」

「Even your healing, several times it looked hopeless in the middle of it.」

「.....I too, thought that this is it many times.」

If it wasn't Kouki then surely it would be beyond any help. The life force that was vitalized by blessing art, magic power that would recover when resting, and skill that elevated healing power as long as there was magic power. And then, the art users who continuously used healing art until they collapsed.

All those barely saved Kouki's life.

「Just, why are you making that kind of eyes?」

There were a lot, really a lot of things she wanted to say. She wanted to say that she didn't ask him for dedication to the degree he would throw away his life. She wanted to ask why he didn't come back together with Koone. She wanted to ask him just what was he thought about his own life. There were a lot that she wanted to say as worried as she was.

However, seeing Kouki's clear gaze, Moana became unable to say anything.

Kouki made a small smile and spoke.

「I found, my answer.」

Kouki who wavered about his way of living. He held distrust toward himself and was unable to choose anything. He was wandering, looking for what was right, which was right, "the right choice".

He said that he found the answer, within the verge of death.

It was something that one ought to be happy about but.....Moana's expression turned complicated.

「Then with that, you won't hesitate anymore? You can live without feeling suffering?」

Kouki shook his head quietly.

「I will still waver from now on too, I think that it surely will be painful. Because the answer that I found, is something like that.」

He was unable to come to a clear decision like "that guy".

Enemy and ally. Dividing the world into two such colors, that was something he couldn't do. He couldn't swing his sword while still not knowing anything.

Surely he would struggling and floundering dreaming for the ideal. If there wasn't such path, he would surely be anguished when reality was thrust toward him.

But, so what.

He would struggle. He would worry in anguish. Bring it on.

At those times, he would just make his choice, believing that it would surely lead to the best result.

Surely, nine out of ten he would regret the result, but he absolutely wouldn't give up the future that resulted after he made his choice no matter what.

If the ideal was impossible, the second best then. Even if that was also beyond him, he would continue to fight in order to haul in a future that was better even if for just a bit.

Yes, the world couldn't be divided into two colors.

Right, or wrong.

From whose point of view it was decided?

There was no such thing as the right solution.

「I idolized my grandfather. Because Jii-chan is my hero, because hero has to be right.....I, was imprisoned by the “right thing” unnoticed by myself.」

「Right now it's different?」

「Yeah. I want to do the right thing, but I'm not imprisoned by that anymore. Because, whether it's right or wrong, but in the end, I'm unable to slap away that hand.」

For the <Dark Being>, Kouki was unmistakably “evil”, he was in the wrong for killing them.

But, even so Kouki was unable to slap away that boy's hand. He absolutely didn't want to do that. No matter how much he wished for the path where both sides could live. No matter even if it became he cut down one side.

「I'll keep worrying until the time limit. But, I will surely make my choice. Even if it won't go as I want it at the end of my choice, I'll continue to struggle. I cannot stop dreaming. Even if it won't come true.」

‘In the end, I don't really change huh’, Kouki made a wry smile.

Moana stared fixedly at Kouki's eyes, and then she smiled gently.

「I see.....if that's Kouki's answer, then I'll root for you. If it's needed, I'll lend you my strength as much as you need. It's not because you have saved Arquette. It's because I want to be your strength.」

「Moana, sama.....」

With her own nose tip, Moana poked at Kouki's nose tip chidingly so that he corrected the way he was calling her.

That adding “-sama”, was unnecessary.

Kouki also smiled quietly while feeling as though he was pulled in by Moana's eyes.

「Moana. Right now there are a lot of problem and there is also not really time but.....someday, will you hear a story about my massive failure?」

「I want to hear no matter what kind of story. Let me listen, absolutely.」

Moana nodded happily hearing Kouki's words telling her that he wanted her to know about him.

A silence that wasn't awkward in the least filled the room.

With their gazes still intertwined with each other, they became closer bit by bit—

Kouki's excellent hero ears finally caught the small, yet a lot of breathing sound that was countless.

He stiffened like rock, and then Kouki looked to the side *gigigi* like a machine that ran out of oil. Following that motion, Moana also moved her gaze—

At the entrance of the room that had its door blown away, she saw countless silhouette of people watching attentively while holding their breath.

With Spenser and Lilin at the forefront, a lot of soldiers, and furthermore the feudal lord Rothko and his wife Syla, the vigilance corps captain Ivana and her subordinates, and then the civil officials.....

They were pouring their gaze with all the space packed full with people.

「—!? Eeh-eeh-ehem-! Ko, Ko Ko, Kouki seems to be fine already! I'm relieved!」

Moana stood up in a flash with her stance like a soldier's "at ease" position to cover up the situation. Seeing that, Kouki made tsukkomi inside his heart 「There is no keeping up appearance anymore you know」 seeing such Moana. Moana's cheeks were bright red.

After that, Rothko and others came in with awkward expression that said 「We are being nuisance in her majesty's tryst」. They spoke their joy at Kouki's safety, and then they expressed their gratitude for saving the city.

Midway, the recovered healers arrived in order to continue their treatment toward Kouki, but because the room was cramped with everyone who came wanting to say their thanks even for just a bit and caused the room to be noisy,

the healers finally ran out of patience and they raged 「We cannot concentrate here-」, and they kicked out everyone including Rothko. Such strange occurrence happened.

Rothko was literally kicked out despite being the feudal lord. The soldiers, including Rothko who received such treatment were all acting despondent. That sight could be said to be really surreal.

There was one more unusual occurrence, or rather an incident that caused all the soldiers who knew the girl to feel so shocked their eyeballs might leaped out from their eye sockets.

「Kouki-sama. Your figure that continued to fight even while unconscious—was mesmerizing. You are exactly a man among man, a warrior among warrior.」

Saying such thing, she—Lilin kissed Kouki's cheek.

As far as Moana, Spenser, and everyone else knew, that should be her “first” kiss.

The true feeling of the girl who then returned to her work as though nothing had happened was unknown. Or rather, everyone present wanted to leave it as something unknown for the time being.

The reason was, because her majesty's eyes were turning round and round after that.

In addition, it was only for a moment but a beastly gaze where in her heart “Right now while Kouki cannot move.....” showed through transparently was directed toward Kouki.

Kouki who was dumbfounded from Lilin's kiss twitched went 「Hah, killing intent!？」 while springing up on the spot. Seeing such Kouki, Spenser and others reached a tacit agreement between each other to do watchful waiting in regard to this case.

It seemed that even the brawny soldiers were bad against the “war of woman” that might resulted by any chance. To the degree that they averted their gaze from the savior that saved the city while offering their prayer.

Throughout all those, with Kouki's astounding recovery power and the healing of multiple excellent healers, Kouki was forced to a complete bed rest for a week at least but.....

The situation was already moving.

—Reinforcement request from the neighboring territory of Arquette

—A news from the capital with gist that a large army led by <Dark King> was confirmed marching forward

The bad news brought by messengers rushing to Arquette.

However, those news didn't enter the ear of Kouki who was sleeping once more.

No one tried to tell him.

Because if Kouki knew about it, he absolutely would move right now.

That was why, Kouki didn't notice.

That Moana and others had departed toward the battlefield.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Next chapter, the demon king finally arrives...I think

# Arifureta Chapter 276

## Arifureta After II The Finally Arriving Absurdity

「.....Nn」

Letting out a small groan, the sleeping Kouki opened his eyes.

He stared absentmindedly at the ceiling, it was the unchanging guest room of Arquette feudal lord's mansion.

「.....I'm glad.」

Kouki who was uneasy that perhaps that time he spent with Moana, the uproar with Rothko and others, all of those might be only a dream and he was actually dead as he thought, he leaked out that whisper and sighed in relief.

He looked around, but there was no one in the room. The door that was tragically blown away by Moana was also back just like before.

Kouki tried ascertaining his body's condition.

(-, I'm still far away from complete recovery..... My right arm and left side are in the worst condition. My bones aren't completely fixed too yet. But the small wounds are healed. As for my physical exhaustion.....perhaps, it's about forty percent recovered? My magic power.....it's used for healing so, it's still barely at twenty percent.)

Kouki let out a large sigh in exasperation and his body sunk into the bed.

Looking at outside the window, the sun was slightly sinking. It would be evening in just a few more hours. He remembered that when he first woke up the sunlight was the same like this, so he must have been sleeping for a full day.

He stared at the sky from the window for a while.

It was really quiet.

Kouki's heart was also at ease like the silence of the room.

(Since I came to this world, this is the eight days I think? Even though it's only a week, I had spent a really deep time here. ....Nagumo too, did he feel like this when he was at the abyss? No, from what I saw at the image in the ice and snow cavern, it was worse for him. He also got his arm eaten right from the start. It's already lucky that I still have all my limbs.)

That guy was someone who he held an extremely complicated feeling against, but since he dropped out from school and traveled across Tortus, Kouki frequently thought about Hajime.

That was also the case when he decided to stay behind at Arquette.

No matter what, he couldn't help but be conscious of that man.

It wouldn't be an exaggeration even if he called him someone who changed his everything.

He wondered how he should think about him, or perhaps just like how Hajime didn't think anything—or feeling indifferent about Kouki if speaking frankly, perhaps he should also be like that and stopped worrying about it.

He had also found the answer about his feeling toward Hajime where he didn't have any conclusion about it before. No, he was finally able to recognize his feeling where he had been averting his eyes all this time.

(That guy surely doesn't give a damn at all about me but.....I absolutely will meet him one more time and talk to him.)

A small smile surfaced on his lips. It was a smile without any gloominess in it, it could even be called a fearless smile. It was a truly manly smile that Kouki had never made until now.

「At any rate.....」

He was really hungry. No, honestly speaking he was feeling abnormally hungry.

There was a water pitcher nearby filled with fruit juice that was giving off good smell, so it was likely he could replenish his body fluid and nutrition from it, but as expected his stomach seemed to demand solid food.



The moment he became conscious of it, his stomach howled *guuo-*.

Kouki somehow lifted his body that was wrapped in pain and terrible fatigue and sat up on the bed. He pulled off the blanket and Kouki's body that became exposed was covered all over with bandage and gauze.

Kouki instantly felt dizziness right after he stood up, but he shook his head slightly and endured it with effort. He made a wry smile seeing his body was shaky more than he imagined before he wore the clothes that were put nearby.

His old clothes must have been disposed with how ragged they had become. It wasn't anywhere nearby, but in their place was soldier clothing with white as the base. The size fit him snugly. The smooth texture felt pleasant on his skin.

Kouki put his clothes in order for the time being before he slowly headed toward the door.

He opened the door and came out into the corridor.

「Ah」

「Ah」

His eyes met another's. Sitting on a chair placed at the corridor was—Lilin.

A memory surfaced in his mind The approaching face of the girl. And then, the soft sensation that his cheek felt. And then, an instant of beastly nature that Moana showed after that.

Kouki's body shivered all over.

That look, that look was something he had seen before. Those eyes were..... yes those eyes. Those were the same eyes with the eyes showed by the wife's of the demon king when they were targeting their husband.

‘That's absurd’, Kouki shook his head while thinking so.

「Kouki-sama, are you all right? It's no good unless you rest peacefully. Now, please return to the room and lie down.」

Lilin seemed to think that Kouki's condition was still not good seeing him shivering like that. She worriedly walked toward Kouki and gently supported his body.

「Ah, no, I'm fine already, Lilin-san. For some reason I'm feeling really hungry, so I'm wondering if I can ask for some kind of food.」

Kouki wished that she would move away a bit from him because he was really all right. Lilin was supporting Kouki with her hand naturally circling around Kouki's waist to rest on his stomach, so her body was sticking close to him. She was a girl with slender body type, but her body had enough feminine softness in it.

However, Lilin's sense of distance didn't change.

「Understood. Then I will go to bring the food. That's why, please take a rest Kouki-sama. The healers said that you absolutely must rest for a week.」

After saying that, Lilin urged him to go back into the room. Her tone was just like usual, but it somehow felt like it allowed no argument from him. Kouki obediently followed her.

「Err, Lilin-san is—」

「It's fine to just call me Lilin. It's also fine to not speak politely like that with me.」

「Eh? But—」

「Call me Lilin.」

「Wh, why are you suddenly—」

「Lilin」

「I, I understand. Lili—」

「Understand?」

「I, I got it already, Lilin.」

Lilin nodded in satisfaction! Kouki wilted down!

Wanting to change the atmosphere somehow, Kouki spoke the continuation of his interrupted question.

「Then Lilin, why were you in front of my room?」

「.....It's Moana-sama's order. She told me to take care of Kouki-san.」

「? Then isn't it fine if you stay normally inside the roo.....」

「I also thought the same. But Moana-sama told me 『It will be problematic if a mistake happen, so you must not enter the room when Kouki is unconscious. Breach of order will be punished strictly, keep that in mind』. So it can't be helped.」

「I, I see. Then it really can't be helped!」

Speaking about a mistake that might happen when Kouki was unconscious.....

Kouki got the feeling that he must not pursue that line of thought deeper, and he expressed his agreement 「Can't be helped!」 strongly.

Kouki attempted to change the topic. For some reason Lilin let out a small snigger while looking at Kouki with a sidelong glance.

「And then, about that Moana, and also Rothko-san and others, what are they doing right now?」

「.....Both of them, they are busy with various things like repairing Arquette, making contact with the capital, and so on. They are rushing around everywhere.」

「I see.....about the <Dark Being>, do they appear again since then?」

「No, everything's fine. Now, I'll go ask for food, so Kouki-san please go to sleep right away. Right now the most important thing is for you to rest. After all you really almost died.」

Lilin pushed Kouki to the bed while saying that before walking quickly to exit the room.

There, Kouki suddenly noticed.

Yes, right now the citizens could also go outside and they should be running around to repair Arquette. In this feudal lord mansion there should be civil officers and vigilance corps rushing around busily.

And yet,

(.....It's too quiet?)

He focused his hearing. There wasn't a single sound.

「.....Lilin.」

「Yes?」

Lilin who was about to go out to the corridor turned around and replied at Kouki casually.

「What's with the soundproofing?」

「—tsu」

Lilin stopped still with her gaze going stiff. Kouki didn't overlook that.

「Bull's eye huh. Is it the work of wind art?」

「.....Yes, right. It's my blessing art.」

「Why? Why are you applying soundproofing?」

「It's so Kouki-san can rest peacefully.」

Certainly, that must be the truth. Currently Lilin showed no sign of agitation. However, if that was the case then she should be able answer without getting shaken when she was asked the reason of the soundproofing.

Kouki's instinct was sounding the alarm bell that there was something, that something not good happened.

「If that's so then dispel the art for me. I'm awake already, so it's fine right? No, I also want to look at how everyone is doing, as I thought I'll go myself to ask for the meal.」

「Ple, please wait, Kouki-san. I told you already that you still need a peaceful rest for now!」

Lilin rushed back toward him looking slightly panicked and pushed down Kouki who was trying to get up from the bed.

Kouki sent a straightforward gaze toward Lilin who was putting her hands on his shoulders to make him lie back down.

「What's going on?」

「No, nothing—」

「Lilin, tell me. Right now, what is happening? What are you hiding from me?」

「.....」

Kouki grasped Lilin's shoulders instead and pressed her with his question. Receiving the strong gaze that didn't let her to beg off the question, Lilin's eyebrows lowered down with a troubled look.

「If I tell you.....will you promise to rest quietly?」

「.....In other words, there is something going on that will make me unable to rest quietly and rush out instead?」

「Uu, please stop reading behind the line!」

Kouki's hands that were tightly grasping Lilin's shoulders became stronger. His will to not let her ran away could be seen clearly. The more time passed, the more Lilin's gaze swam around everywhere.

「If Lilin doesn't tell me, then I'll run out by myself and ask someone else.」

「Aah geez-. I'll tell you already-, so please promise to not act as you please!」

「Got it, tell me.」

Lilin's shoulders dropped in dejection, then a beat later, she began talking with a serious and grim expression.

「There was notification from the capital. Right after we sent reinforcement here, an army of <Dark Being> invaded the capital. The <Dark King> seemed to be confirmed among the army.」

「-, so he recovered.....」

Lilin nodded.

「Not just that, two territories near Arquette were also assaulted at the same time. In order to dispatch the soldiers, messenger to tell the nearest surveillance base to dispatch their soldiers were sent out, but it can be said that the situation of the defense is as dangerous as this place before.」

It seemed that other than sending request for reinforcement from the capital, the feudal lords of the two territories also sent messenger to Arquette to notify this place about the danger.

「In order to prepare for the time when Arquette is attacked again, Rothko-

sama is preparing to further strengthen of the defense wall and the underground vault. By Moana-sama's command, two thousand of the soldiers are to stay here.」

「Wait. "Of the soldiers"? You mean there are still others then? What's the rest doing? And Moana?」

Even while half guessing it already, Kouki still asked while feeling uneasiness to the degree that was uncanny even for himself. A bad premonition encroached inside his heart, like an ink that dripped on a white paper and seeped in.

「Moana-sama, she led the remaining soldiers accompanied by Spenser-sama. They already set out to return back. Because there is no way the king can be absent when facing an army that is led by the <Dark King>, she said.」

「-. I, see.....」

There was the greatest protection that was the oasis at the capital. On top of that, there were also more than ten thousand soldiers led by chief Donar and head art user Linden. There was no way they would be defeated that easily.

Even so, his bad premonition was swelling up.

For some reason, he couldn't help but had glimpses of Moana's face in his mind.

「Then, let's catch up to them right away. They left from here yesterday right? If we departed quickly, we should be able to go to the capital without getting left behind too much.」

There was soldier force staying behind at Arquette. He was also concerned with the other territories, but soldiers were already dispatched there, so right now it was the <Dark King> that was most concerning and had to be dealt with.

Thinking that, Kouki said that he would go at where Moana was even for a second faster, but Lilin shook her head toward him.

「You must not. You were told that you absolutely still have to rest for one week! Just why do you think Moana-sama left me behind here for!」

A person that could use blessing art of wind which had skill like soundproofing

*for several days*, a powerful person with strength that could suppress Kouki while he was wounded, and also a person that Kouki knew. Lilin satisfied all those conditions.

「I cannot sleep for one more week in this kind of time!」

「It's only for four more days!」

「.....Eh?」

Kouki showed a dumbfounded expression toward Lilin who seemed to say that unintentionally.

「Four more days? Wait a second. The time when I woke up once was yesterday right?」

「.....No, you are mistaken. Three whole days had passed since then. Kouki-san was sleeping the whole time until now. That's how much your body is demanding for rest. You were even staggering only just now.」

Kouki was dumbfounded without even listening at Lilin's frank opinion. He whispered 「Three days.....」.

In other words, Moana and others were already in the middle of war.

The bad premonition that he was feeling from some time ago swelled up explosively.

「I've got to go, to help them.」

「There is nothing you can do in that kind of state. It was because I thought that Kouki-san will force yourself that I even applied soundproofing so that your sleep wouldn't be disturbed you know? Even if you are going to go help them, first please heal your body!」

It was a sound advice. What Lilin was saying was completely correct without any mistake.

But, if everything became too late because of that.....

When he thought that, words and reasoning—couldn't stop him.

「Lilin. Even you actually want to go right? Because, you are a fighter. The front line is exactly the place you are looking for. Isn't that right? Bring me with

you too.」

「-. Wha, what titillating words in this time.....nnh」

It was a serious scene, but for some reason Lilin was writhing. Her long brown twintail was fluttering unrulily.

「I, I won't be swayed by those sweet words, so please give up.」

Just where did she find any sweet factor from his words? Kouki thought that for an instant, but right wasn't the time for that so Kouki ignored it.

「I see.....then there is no other way. As I thought I'm going to act by myself.」

「Tha, that's why I'm saying I won't let—」

Using “Ground Shrinker” from the bed! Kouki instantly went around Lilin behind her. His body was screaming but he didn't let his expression showed it at the slightest.

His hand chopped lightly *ton-* on Lilin's shoulder and Kouki said to Lilin who was dumbfounded while saying 「Eh?」.

「Certainly I'm not fully recovered, but not so much that I can be overcome by a rearguard at this range. I cannot be held back by Lilin just so you know.」

「Tha, that's really amazing.」

Lilin broke out in a cold sweat. When she slowly looked behind, she found a strong gaze pressuring her there.

Actually from the time when she first met him, she somehow thought of him like 「What an irresolute person. Smile a bit more crisply」, but right now she couldn't catch any sight of his smile that looked as though he was enduring pain or his insecure gaze.

「I'm going. If Lilin want how about you also go with me? I think that the place I'm going to is a place that you are looking for.」

「Ye, yes-. It's Moana-sama's command after all! There is no way I can let Kouki-san leave from my sight!」

Lilin writhed even more, perhaps because Kouki's words touched her heart string. Kouki ignored her abnormal state with his all and nodded once before



going out of the room.

The blessing art was dispelled and bustling sound entered his hearing. As he thought, it was a furor all over the place.

Before long he could see the figures of the civil officers. They all showed astonishment for an instant when they saw Kouki's figure, but they then immediately gave their most respectful salute before moving aside to open a path for him.

If it was Kouki from before, then on the surface he would act awkward and modest, but inside he would bask in the pleasant feeling that he was the hero. But, right now his feeling was really calm.

The person that he passed would bow silently with a moved expression. But even seeing that, his heart didn't ripple. Rather, only the feeling of solemnly accepting their respect and expectation was filling his chest.

Before long he reached the room that was used as the emergency countermeasure room. The door was left open. When he peeked inside, there were Rothko, Ivana, and others there as expected.

「Rothko-san.」

「Hm? Oo, Kouki-dono! .....Is it all right for you to stay up already?」

Rothko showed joy when he noticed Kouki, however, seeing Lilin who was close behind Kouki, he sent Kouki an inquisitive gaze.

It seemed that Rothko and others were also aware of the "Kouki's absolutely peaceful rest operation".

「I heard about the situation. Please don't blame Lilin. I was the one asking her forcefully.」

「That's.....certainly there is no way she cannot not answer if pressed by Kouki-dono.」

Rothko sent a gaze filled with some kind significance toward Lilin who wilted and looked down before his expression turned serious and he asked Kouki.

「And, what are you planning to do?」

「Of course, I will head to the capital.」

「With your current condition?」

「There is no problem.」

It was a lie, which everyone there knew. Just from a glance it was clear that his complexion was still bad. The healer who examined Kouki this morning also said that Kouki's bones were still fractured, and above all else Kouki hadn't recovered from his weakened state.

He really wasn't in a state that could fight.

「It doesn't look like I can stop you.....I'll prepare the fastest arous. Please, I beg you to take care of her majesty and the capital. Don't worry about Arquette.」

「Thank you very much. I will surely return here again.」

Rothko, Ivana, and everyone inside the room, they all partly closed their eyes as though looking at something really dazzling before they bowed reverently.

After that, the members of vigilance corps quickly prepared arous and necessary luggage. During that time Kouki stuffed his stomach to the bursting with simple meal before departing, accompanied by Lilin.

Rothko and his wife Syla, and also Ivana and others of the vigilance corps gathered to see them off. Seeing that, the people of Arquette also stopped working and gathered one after another.

Words of gratitude that was filled with feeling that they wanted to convey as much as possible showered Kouki.

From among the gathered people, one small silhouette rushed out.

「Hero-sama!」

「Ah, you are.....」

That silhouette was the boy that at that time became the impetus that decided Kouki's path. From behind that boy, his mother and a man in vigilance corps attire—his father run after him in panic.

「Thank you, hero-sama! You save father, and everyone! Thank you!」

「tsu—」

Kouki didn't know what to call his current emotion. He didn't understand.

He scattered a lot of lives. He couldn't see it within his field of vision, but surely outside the defensive wall a lot of corpses were piled up. The weight of that was tremendous, pushing down on Kouki even now.

His creaking body and the weariness assaulting his whole body weren't only because his wound and fatigue.

But, even so,

「I'm the one thanking you.」

「Eh?」

Not just the boy, the boy's father and mother who ran after him and tried to pull him back also let out such stupid sounding voice.

Kouki kneeled down on one knee and spoke with a faint smile.

「At that time, if you didn't ask me for help, my heart would surely die. I was, actually a pathetic guy. So pathetic I cannot walk forward without someone pushing my back. That's why.....thank you, for saying "help me".」

「.....I don't, really get it but.....I, was useful for hero-sama?」

Kouki answered 「Yeah」 toward the boy who was asking him in wonder.

The boy's expression turned bright. The father and mother made a shocked expression at Kouki's confession, but their expression quickly turned gentle and kind and they said their thanks once more.

Kouki watched the boy led away by his parents while he was waving his hand at Kouki.

Lilin who was standing beside Kouki asked him expression of delight or perhaps happiness.

「You aren't denying it even when you are called hero-sama aren't you?」

「.....He is still a small kid. I won't expressly do something like that.」

Kouki averted his face to dodge the question. Lilin raised a chuckle seeing

that. Because if it was Kouki from before, he would still deny it no matter what.

Surely that three days of battle brought a change into something important inside Kouki. For Lilin, Kouki looked like he had really changed. She would be troubled if she was asked “where”, but she somehow felt that Kouki’s whole strength was different.

Reliable. Lilin thought so while prompting Kouki to mount the arous.

「See you later Rothko-san. Much obliged for everything.」

「That’s my line. We the people of Arquette won’t forget you until the next life. We will convey our unending gratitude to the next generation too.」

Kouki nodded 「Thank you」, then together with Lilin he ran past the gate.

Loud cheering resounded from behind.

Those cheers too also felt like a push on Kouki’s back.

They advanced silently for a while. The borrowed arous seemed excellent with how swift it was. Kouki’s feeling that was impatient from the loss of three days was also softened more or less.

「Kouki-san. How is your body? This child’s running is also stable, it’s fine even if you sit down in a way that is more relaxed.」

「Aah, look’s like it. At the very least I need my bones to recover before we arrived in the capital.」

Lilin nodded even while thinking of how amazing Kouki’s line that was saying of healing bone even while traveling in a great hurry.

Kouki dried up his little remaining magic power and performed healing on the heavily wounded area by chanting basic recovery magic while paying meticulous attention so that he wouldn’t become unable to move because of getting even more exhausted than now.

Lilin was gritting her teeth in vexation of her inability of using healing blessing art while making a dangerous oath that at the very least if enemy appeared midway she would carve them up and not let them do anything to Kouki.

Like that they advanced forward and entered the desert area. A little while after that

「Hm? Lilin, something is coming from ahead! That's.....」

「Arous? It's coming from the capital direction? That number is.....」

They could confirm multiple arous running with speed that raised up dust cloud behind.

Looking at the gradually approaching arous, the two could see the arous breathing roughly with their long neck that was usually stretching up straight was now hanging down. Those were the proof of the arous's fatigue.

Even so looking from how their speed didn't relax down at all, it could be seen that it was something so urgent to the degree that the riders didn't hesitate to use the arous until they expired.

It seemed the group also noticed Kouki and Lilin. One rider waved his hand while other riders were pointing at the person at the center of their formation and reported something.

And then, a small silhouette that was unseen from being hidden at the shadow of the arous's neck showed up their face abruptly.

The identity of that silhouette was clear just from that.

「!? Koone!?!」

Kouki let out a hysteric voice.

Yes, it was Koone who was fiercely rushing their way. When the distance between both sides had decreased considerably into a range where they could differentiate the other party's faces, Kouki and Lilin could see that the people around Koone were the members of escort squad that was led by Spike.

「Kouki-sama!」

「Koone!」

The way both of them called each other mutually changed. It seemed that Koone didn't even bother with how Kouki called her without any honorific.

Both sides' arous came to a stop with circle motion like drifting. The arous of

Koone and others looked like they would faint anytime now because they had continued to dash in full speed from until just now.

「Koone, why are you here? Are you heading to Arquette?」

Koone heard about Kouki's safety and Arquette's situation from Moana, even so for a moment she held her breath seeing Kouki's expression that was completely different from before.

However, she immediately pulled herself together and nodded in response.

「Koone, Koone was, let escape once more-」

Looking at Koone who was talking with a face that could break into tears anytime, it seemed that the battle between the army that was led by <Dark King> against the kingdom army had started.

It seemed it was a strategy where Arquette and its neighboring territories that had the role as material accumulation place would be crushed first before opening battle against the capital that would become isolated after that.

That phenomenon where <Dark Beings> suddenly appeared also seemed to be the new ability of the <Dark King>, so to speak it seemed to be a teleportation ability. It seemed that the use became rough the farther the distance was, but the ability could teleport through considerable distance.

And then, currently the capital was in a state where they could somehow fight with the barrier of the oasis, but even there it became a predicament due to the <Dark King>'s new ability.

Of all thing, the characteristic of the oasis was being nullified by the <Dark King> even though it was only bit by bit. The oasis was encroached by miasma and turned into mere water.

It seemed with the oasis in between, the teleportation couldn't work well, so that could be said as fortunate. The ability must have been tested from quite some time ago. Different from the grain producing region of Arquette, the capital's surrounding was desert, so the attempt wasn't noticed at all because it didn't leave behind any trace.

A part of the oasis was already nullified and it seemed one group of soldier

was shaken by that and they were annihilated after their opening got taken advantage of.

The total force of the enemy was seventy thousand. Even now, it seemed that even more branch force was teleported to the rear territory. It seemed that the Dark King received notice that Arquette was safe just before Koone escaped, by using messenger of <Dark Being> that was teleported, an army from the nearest territory that had been destroyed was commanded to head to Arquette. Timewise, the army was likely to arrive within today.

Currently, because of the effort of nullifying the oasis, the strength poured to dispatch branch force, and how the <Dark King> was refraining from fighting directly, the worst situation where the capital was fallen could barely be avoided but.....

Because of the teleportation of <Dark Being>'s branch force, the dispatched soldiers couldn't return and the capital couldn't hope for reinforcement.

Far from that, by having <Dark Being> teleported to other place right before the soldiers' eyes, the fact that the people in the rear territory that they ought to protect was being attacked without them being unable to do anything about it was thrust to their face. The soldiers were starting to lose spirit from despair and anxiety.....

「Like this if even the <Dark King> start moving.....the capital won't-, onee-chan won't-」

Moana who gave up the capital as hopeless had Koone escaped even if she had to pay great sacrifice for it. She told Koone, to go at where Kouki was at.

Koone refused, but by Moana's command, Spike made Koone faint and when she woke up she was already above arous.

Koone understood that she had to survive. However, she didn't want to leave no matter what. One of her reasons was of course because she simply loved her big sister.

But, there was something more than that which made Koone fearful.

「Onee-chan is planning to die-. She is planning to use her own life to end the war, and beg so the people's life is spared!」

Kouki was taken aback with realization.

He understood the true shape of the anxiety swelling up in his chest.

Koone was the same like him.

The battle was decided. Then what would Moana do in that case? That was obvious.

The <Dark Being> didn't wish to annihilate mankind at any cost. Their final objective was to raise human as livestock.

In order to give human despair, in order to crush their defiance, the <Dark Being> wouldn't hesitate to crush the capital including the nearby cities. But, if the opponent surrendered then there wasn't any need to especially kill them.

If the people there wasn't killed right now, then the chance for mankind to rise once more wouldn't vanish.

If the seed of rebellion led by Koone made good of their escape, then the hope wouldn't disappear no matter how small their number was.

Right now, in order to not let more life disappear, Moana would offer her own life as compensation.

It was the last thing she could use the life of herself who had mostly lost her strength.

Such scenario was possible enough. No, Kouki was convinced. Moana would choose that path.

「Uaa.....」

A groan leaked out from Kouki.

Was it from anxiety? From the fear of losing Moana?

No.

「Kouki-sama! Save onee-chan! Please-. Koone will do anything-, please! Save onee-chan-」

It was the same like that time, a begging voice that was pleading for help.

That was why, he despaired.



The reason was, because Kouki couldn't choose it.

「I.....」

「Kouki, sama?」

If Moana sacrificed her life, then most of the people of the capital wouldn't have their life taken away to turn them into livestock. After all, compared to the people of the rear territory, the people of the capital were there exactly because they possessed abundant blessing power that let them fought. From the viewpoint of the <Dark Being>, the capital citizen was without a doubt the sort they would want to breed and had a stable supply of.

Conversely speaking, the neighboring territories that were currently attacked, and Arquette that would be attacked once more today would be destroyed before the notification that the queen surrendered and the war was over could reach them.

Therefore, right now, the place that really needed help—wasn't the capital but the rear territories.

In addition, just as he heard it was only the <Dark King> who could use teleport. If the situation at the teleport destination could only be reported back by messenger that returned by foot, then right now it should be possible to shave the <Dark Being>'s battle force by destroying their branch forces one by one. By doing that, the people of each territory could be gathered in one place as much as possible to make it easier to protect them.....perhaps.

Therefore, who he should save wasn't his "important person", but "the many who he didn't even know their face of".

It was ideal if he could save both.

However, the reality was always shitty at any time.

If only one side could be saved, then the human called Amanogawa Kouki would—

「Sorry.....I'm sorry-, Koone. Sorry-」

「.....」

With that Koone understood. Koone too also knew, what kind of person the

human called Kouki was.

In the end, he was the same like her big sister. Rather than their own life or their important people, they couldn't help but choose the many, they were that kind of human.

Koone's expression was dyed with despair.

She wondered, why her important person wouldn't be more selfish?

She wondered, why the person she thought as important would be gone?

The color of emotion slipped off from the face of the young Koone. Even so, she tried to somehow swallow Kouki's answer, she made a misshapen smile and tried to reply back, but she couldn't form any word.....

Seeing that Kouki heard the sound of a part deep inside him cracked. It was hard to breath. He felt dizzy. His chest felt like it would burst apart.

However, he couldn't abandon people. If it was between just one person against the many, he couldn't abandon the many.

He would dream. However, he wouldn't stop still by getting caught up in that dream. He decided so.

Kouki would first protect Arquette, after that he would save the rear territories as many as possible even just by one more—he conveyed his intention to Spike and Lilin with his gaze.

They closed their eyes for a bit, then the silently accepted that conclusion. Their teeth that was gritting hard was exposing their ashamed feeling.

But, at that time, a situation that felt as though mocking even the determination of such Kouki could be seen from afar, approaching their way while raising dust cloud.

「Do, Don't screw with me-, don't screw with me-! Why the hell!」

Kouki spontaneously spat out curses.

Ahead of his gaze, there was a crowd of <Dark Being> that was likely to be Koone's pursuer. The number was roughly about a thousand.

It was enough number to crush the current Kouki and group.

「Are you-, are you unable to stomach me that much huh-. Even though-, I decide to save people even if I have to abandon Moana-, abandon that kind person-, you are going to deny even that-!! Don't screw with meee-」

It was as though the world was baring it's fang maliciously.

Kouki's roar of rage was something that was directed exactly at the world, or perhaps at something that ought to be called as fate.

「That person's beloved-, she is entrusted to me-. Don't you dare thinking to take away this child!!」

「Kouki-sama.....」

It was a rage that Kouki never showed even once until now.

Without even caring of Koone and others who were gazing at him in astonishment, without hesitation Kouki firmly moved forward and protected the other behind his back.

He wasn't in a state that could fight. Anyway right now they should make a bet sink or swim to escape. Lilin's mouth was opening to say that.

But, she was made to swallow her words.

She saw the torrent of light whirling around Kouki. That was, the proof of surpassing the limit.

「I won't let only this child to be taken away.」

As it was his magic power was already little. However, if his magic power was strengthened temporarily, there was a possibility he could annihilate the enemy by activating a high powered magic. If there was only leftover enemy after that, then Lilin and others would be able to manage somehow.

Although he wouldn't even be able to stand after the fight, but.....

In front of the absurdity that was too much, Kouki couldn't think about the aftermath to himself or anything else. If it was necessary, then he would fight again until he turned into trash! Only that fighting spirit was heightening.

Like that, Kouki was,

「Here I go—<Limit Bre—」

In trying to crush absurdity with recklessness and impulsiveness, he was going to pull the trigger that might break his body.....

*hyuu~~~* With such stupid sounding sound, something rained down on the approaching army right after that. The next moment terrific flame blast and shockwave that looked like the end of the world blew up everything. Such absurd scene entered Kouki's eyes.

「Eh?」

Kouki's mouth opened wide in astonishment without closing, even his chanting of Limit Break was interrupted.

While behind him the mouth of Koone and others was also gaping open in astonishment, Kouki inadvertently looked up to the sky—

He saw meteor shower.

However, there was no meteor, but missile.

Missiles were flying with orange fire trail trailing behind them along with *pashuuuuu-* sound.

And then impact.

The <Dark Beings> who were running about in chaos were quickly turning into mere meat scraps.

「Ha, hahahah. As I thought, you are just too absurd」

With great joy, relief, and then a bit of resentful complaint in his voice, Kouki's called out the name of him.

「Right, Nagumo?」

The demon king-sama—Hajime who fell from the sky with *zun-* sound snorted「Hmph」in a bad mood with a huge weapon on his shoulder.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Ba, barely made it.

I'm intending to content myself to receive tsukkomi of 'Ain't that just a tiny bit there!'.

Next chapter is the conversation between the demon king and hero I think.....

PS

The newest chapter of manga version and [Arifureta Nichijou] were updated at Gardo Comic!

With Nichijou exactly being comedy, Shia is shining bright (lol)

Most of all the drawn male camp of Hauria is...nasty

If you have interest, then by all means please go take a look at Overlap-sama's homepage!

# Arifureta Chapter 277

## Arifureta After II Hero And Demon King

AN: Sorry, but it's short.

Even though the chapter is a bit packed, but the end is good.

There is only dialogue. The battle will be from next week.

---

*zudon-*, the demon king-sama fell from the sky with speed and impact like a falling meteor.

The bizarreness of the Agni – Orkan his shoulder carried was excessively eye-catching.

Starting from Koone, Lilin, Spike, and also all the other escort squad members similarly had their mouth gaping open. Their gaze was busily moving from the explosion hypocenter where there was a mushroom shaped cloud generated, then to Kouki, and then to the incarnation of absurdity.

「Nagumo.....」

Kouki murmured his name. Hajime stored back Agni – Orkan into his treasure warehouse while walking up toward Kouki, and then he asked with a tone that sounded like it was only an afterthought.

「Anyway, they looked like they are going to be nuisance so I killed them but.....they aren't your acquaintance right?」

That question was asked while glancing at Koone and co. It seemed that Hajime couldn't deny the possibility that perhaps the <Dark Being> was rushing toward Kouki and group in a scene like 「O~i, sorry we're late for the appointme~nt」.

For now, Kouki thought this.

That question should be asked before moving to killing, was his thought.

「Ye, yeah. That was dangerous and we might get killed, so you saved us just now. You came, to pick me up right? Thanks, Nagumo.」

「Hmph?」

Hajime raised an eyebrow hearing the words “might get killed” and then he stared scrutinizingly at Kouki. Just from that it seemed he perceived Kouki’s unfit state. And then, perhaps he guessed something because for a moment he made an expression of feeling unpleasant and then looked at Koone and co.

「.....Well, doesn’t matter. If it’s thanks say it too Shizuku and others. If they didn’t ask me I won’t purposefully spent magic power like stupid to come here. This world is absurdly far just so you know.」

「Is that so.....as expected it’s Shizuku and others. Are they coming?」

「Just as you can see, it’s only me who came *here*.」

Kouki felt something out of place from that strange roundabout sentence, but right now wasn’t the time to pry so he shelved it away.

「I see.....」

「Come on, we’re going back right away.」

Hajime turned around on his heel with an atmosphere of wanting to finish the troublesome matter right away.

Koone didn’t really understand about the matter of Hajime, even so she guessed that the “going home prospect” that Kouki once mentioned had finally arrived and she grasped Kouki’s sleeve with an expression that was going to cry.

Kouki smiled to such Koone to reassure her, and then he conveyed his will toward the back of Hajime who was taking out Crystal Key and about to point it to an empty space.

「Sorry, I cannot go back.」

「.....What?」

Hajime looked back across his shoulder. And then, seeing Koone holding Kouki’s sleeve, he showed an exasperated face that said 「This guy’s hero

sickness relapse back again」.

「This is troublesome. If it's like this I'll call someone here to lecture—」

「No matter who it is and what they are going to say to me, I have made my decision. Even if you for example tell me that this is my last chance to go back home, I won't go back. I believe I understand what will Shizuku and also my family feel about that but still.....sorry.」

「You.....」

The situation just now, and then the very young girl who while looking childish but also gave off dignity vaguely, and also the tough looking men who appeared to be the girl's guards. If all those factors were combined, it could be imagined how Kouki was poking his nose into a troublesome conflict.

If this was only like before, when Kouki got worked up saying 「I swear I'll save everything!」 in mere heroic aspiration, Hajime would just say 「I don't give a damn」 before punching Kouki and then dragging his unconscious body back, but.....

Hajime couldn't make that prompt decision.

Because Kouki's eyes were determined.

It wasn't a gaze that was carried away, hesitating, or looking at a dream far away. Those were eyes that showed determination which was created while his feet was stepping firmly on reality, with resolve to accept the caused result. The eyes of a person who was struggling without giving up.

Hajime wondered just what had happened. He couldn't see the "lightness" from when they were summoned to Tortus or the "insecurity" after the decisive battle from Kouki.

「I had killed a lot. They also had their own will, it was necessary to survive, that was why I was fighting.....but, I was unable to abandon the people of the city and I fought. I cut down several thousand lives.」

「.....」

Hajime looked at Kouki once more. Kouki's weakened state, his body that was wounded all over told Hajime more eloquently than anything the carnage that



Kouki had experienced to the extreme.

「Many times I thought I was going to die. While fighting, I also saw past images like revolving lantern. And then—I found my answer.」

「Answer?」

Kouki nodded while feeling surprise and happiness that Hajime was listening to his talk.

「I cannot stop dreaming. I want to save everything. But if I'm forced to choose no matter what—I will choose “the many” rather than “one important person”. I'll choose, but even so I'll continue to dream and struggle without giving up.」

「.....Idiot. Are you planning to suffer until you die? You might be masochist huh.」

「Haha, it's certainly idiotic. But I'll deny being a masochist.」

Hajime looked at Kouki with eyes as though he was looking at a genuine idiot after hearing Kouki deciding a way of living of hardship.

Then, at that timing, Koone who had been silently watching the conversation between Kouki and Hajime all this time raised her words by throwing away her usual audaciousness, and spoke as a mere young little girl.

「E, excuse me, Nagumo-sama? I beg you, please I ask you to save my one-chan! Please.」

「Aa? Onee-chan?」

Koone letting out a sigh of relieve seeing that she wasn't ignored, and then she explained to Hajime about the situation in general and about Kouki's choice.

「Kouki-sama is still not giving up. He is going to save the people at the rear, and after that he is planning to save onee-chan.」

She didn't notice it before. She only felt despair thinking that Kouki abandoned her big sister.

Indeed, speaking pragmatically Kouki wouldn't make it in time. Therefore,

Koone's conclusion that he was abandoning Moana wasn't mistaken. However, when she recalled back how Kouki repeatedly said 「Sorry」 looking as though he was going to vomit blood while clenching his fist so hard, she understood that Kouki's heart was demanding him to go to where Moana was quickly for even a second faster.

However, right now light could be seen in that pragmatic problem. Kouki's connection brought about hope.

The curbstomp just now. A power that annihilated a thousand <Dark Beings> in the blink of eye. If there was such power in their side, then perhaps her big sister could still be saved.

Koone pleaded. In order to save her big sister, and Kouki who injured his own heart by swinging down blade of penance and resolve toward himself who was unable to choose Moana.

「Please lend your strength in order to grant the dream of Kouki-sama. Nagumo-sama is Kouki-sama's friend correct? Please—」

「Don't say such corny thing. There is no way I'm his friend.」

「Eh?」

Koone was astonished. She didn't know about the how, but this person came here by crossing world like this in order to pick Kouki and the first thing he did when he arrived was to remove the danger that was approaching Kouki. It seemed that they knew each other, and Kouki was expressing out his feeling toward him without hiding anything, Koone completely thought that the two of them had close relationship but.....

Ignoring the shaken up Koone, Hajime moved his gaze toward Kouki. His eyes were cold without emotion in it. Kouki reflexively held his breath.

「You are close with this so called “big sister”?」

「.....She is my benefactor. Since I came to this world, she was kind to me who only kept hesitating. Because of reasons I couldn't control myself and vented angrily at her several times, and yet she accepted the hesitating me. ....I made a promise with her, that I'll talk more to her someday.」

「And you abandoned her?」

「.....Yeah, that's right-. Right now, even in this moment, she is trying to end the war by offering her own life. But at the same time, a lot of people is in the verge of dying right in this moment. That's why, I—」

「And so rather than “one important person”, you chose “the many that you don't even know their face”.」

From Kouki's fist that was clenched once more, and then from the lip that he was biting, blood was trickling down. From his eyes that looked like they would break down crying anytime, perhaps there would even be blood flowing from there.

Seeing such Kouki, Hajime calmly asked.

「You aren't going to beg me?」

「Will you move if I beg you? Even though I don't have anything to compensate you!? I'll do anything if you save Moana! I'll even be your slave! But, you aren't going to move by something like that right!?」

「.....」

Hajime stared still at Kouki. And then, his expression turned complicated, no, a bit of displeased feeling seeped out from his face, before he suddenly started talking to empty air.

『Can you hear me? The situation is somewhat unpleasant though.....yeah, right, well, I already know you all are going to say that. In that case inevitably—what? You want me to decide? Why.....don't say disgusting thing. Even if you ask me how about the current Amanogawa.....』

Koone and co were dumbfounded seeing Hajime suddenly started talking to empty air, but Kouki guessed that Hajime was talking with Shizuku and others and his eyes blinked.

If he remembered correctly, he had heard about the development of smartphone that could connect to even another world, but he didn't hear that such thing could be done just by using telepathy.

In that case, right, the strange roundabout way of talking before.

Most likely, Shizuku and others came to this world. And then, just in case that there was an existence like Ehito in this world, they must be hiding somewhere so as to not attract attention as much as possible. That was Kouki's guess about the situation.

As a matter of fact, that guess was right on the spot. For caution's sake, there were only Shizuku, Kaori, Yue, Shia, Tio, Ryutaro, and Suzu, the Holy Precincts members here, they already arrived in this world. Right now, while Hajime was going out to observe the situation, the others were hiding in concealed state in the middle of a mountain at the south.

Furthermore, about a certain abyss-san whose forte was in reconnaissance, it should rather be left unsaid that Hajime only recalled him after arriving in this world where he then whispered 「Ah...the scout role.....」.

With a displeased expression where this time Hajime didn't even bother to hide it, he faced Kouki and then asked after a bit of indecision.

「Amanogawa. There are a lots of things that I should confirm but, in this occasion, I'll put them aside. That's why, just answer me this—that choice of yours, is it “the right choice” for you?」

‘Aa’, Kouki thought. If it was called unexpected, then it was unexpected. If it was called not so unexpected, it was also not really unexpected. He had been conscious toward this person to that degree, and he had also obstinately picked a quarrel with him to that degree. It wasn't strange even if this person accurately grasped about his bottleneck.

However, if he was asked that here—he keenly felt that to the end, he really couldn't help but be conscious of this unreasonable man.

Kouki answered along with feeling some amount of happiness.

「Something like that, doesn't matter.」

「Hah」

Perhaps Kouki's feeling was transmitted. Even Hajime let out a laugh that sounded happy from hearing that answer. It felt like he could hear a voice that sounded like「Fine」.

Hajime shook his head once, and then his hand took out a compass. And then, he ascertained something while turning his back on Kouki once more.

「Nagumo?」

「This is the first and the last. I'll eradicate the worry about the future.」

「tsu, you.....」

Kouki's face warped when he guessed the meaning of that sentence.

The direction Hajime was facing was toward the rear territory. That was to say, that he was taking responsibility for the many territories that were being attacked. What he meant by the first and the last, was surely about Kouki being able to go saving his "one important person".

Kouki silently turned his back toward Hajime. He faced toward the direction of the capital.

「A farewell gift. I'll kill you if you make a blunder even after I set up the table to this degree.」

「What unreasonableness.」

Around Kouki who was making a small smile, possessing upper body and wings of eagle, and torso of lion—Gryphon(Grim Reaper), ten of them appeared. Hajime must meant for them to be the ride until the capital.

For Hajime to expressly prepare even the share for Koone and others, Kouki thought that it seemed Hajime had really mellowed up. It appeared that while himself was spending days of brutality in Tortus, Nagumo was also doing his best to acclimate himself to peace. Laughter welled up inside Kouki even more.

Thinking that if it was now he could say it, Kouki called at Hajime with a bright expression.

「Hey, Nagumo. Actually while I was about to die, I was thinking that there is something that I'm absolutely going to say to you if I could survive.」

「Aa?」

Hajime who seemed to be confirming the battlefield using the compass raised his face and looked back across his shoulder.

Kouki slightly looked up to the sky with his back still facing Hajime,

「As I thought, I really hate you.」

This man was able to do what he was unable to do like it was nothing. He was able to push his way through his own path without hesitation.

Truly enviable. He helplessly admired that. The way of living that he couldn't possibly imitate was so dazzling it burned his eyes.

Such emotion was included inside Kouki's words.

Hajime who heard those words clicked his tongue. He returned his gaze forward and while staring at the far rear direction,

「What a coincidence. Actually I also thought the same just a little while ago.」

Kouki's eyes instantly opened wide.

And then,

「I, I see-. So you hate me! Ahahahahah」

The coldest reaction in relationship with people was "apathy".

Kouki couldn't hold it, he couldn't endure it. He raised a laughter that was bright and clear like a cloudless sky.

Normally it was an exchange of words that would cause the atmosphere to turn stormy. And yet, for some reason he even felt his feeling was cool and clear.

Koone and others couldn't do anything except looking alternately at Hajime and Kouki with totally no idea of what was going on.

Kouki climbed up on a mechanized gryphon while prompting Koone and others to follow. Koone and co were timidly climbing on the back of the bizarre mythical beasts that they had never seen before.

With Koone at his front and Lilin who for some reason was getting on gleefully behind him, Kouki corrected his sitting posture without looking back. At that time, Koone who was looking up at Kouki's expression gulped seeing his solemn expression and atmosphere.

Kouki took a deep breath, and then with a heavy emotion in his voice,

「Take care of the rear—demon king.」

In response Hajime opened a gate while also without looking back,

「Just face to the front—hero.」

He said that with a voice that sounded a bit different with how he said that word until now—

The hero went to the sky, while the demon king vanished into a gate.

Hero and demon king.

The thinking of the two couldn't complement each other, their path ran parallel from the other. Their back facing each other was only natural.

However, two paths running parallel to each other arriving at the same place, and also two backs kept facing each other while pushing aside innumerable obstacles without worrying about their back, might be something that could possibly happen.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It seems there are a lot of voices asking about Hajime offing the dark king (sweat)

My apologize for not fulfilling that expectation, but this is Kouki's tale so it's the plan for Kouki to do the boss fight.

Also Shirakome is a fellow that will make it long when he start writing battle description, so I'm thinking to do the musou battle of Hajime and co in the shortened style like in Myuu's chapters.

The plan is like that, but it will make me happy if you readers will be able to enjoy that.

# Arifureta Chapter 278

## Arifureta After II Demon King Army Finally Arrived!

「.....What's with you guys?」

What was waiting for Hajime who teleported after parting with Kouki into the middle of a mountain where Yue and others were waiting, were faces that were smiling happily or smirking.

「Nooo, it's nothing at all yeah? We ain't thinking anything like, that Nagumo and Kouki really hit it off, none at all yeah?」

Ryutaro who had the widest smirk among the members who arrived in this world approached Hajime and tried to place his arm around Hajime's shoulder over-familiarly.

*DOPAN-*

‘It's non lethal so it's fine!’ As though to say that, a godspeed quick draw without shred of hesitation in it splendidly impacted Ryutaro's forehead, causing him to accomplished an artistic backflip and fainting dogeza.

「Taniguchi, my bad. Your boyfriend passes away in another world at his first day of getting a lover.」

「Hiiih, Ryu-ku~~~nn! Hang in thereee!」

Suzu who came back to her senses moved to nurse Ryutaro while losing her composure in panic.

「I don't have any intention to end up like Ryutaro.....but, it's honestly unexpected, I'm really happy.」

「You're right, Shizuku-chan!」

Shizuku smiled happily just like she said. Kaori was also the same.



They were coming to pick up Kouki who was summoned into another world. Just from doing that they were forced with terrible burden as the cost.

When the compass was used to search the location, they found out that it was a very far distance. Honestly speaking, if they didn't have the new technology—converting electricity into magic power—that was used to economize the cost of magic power for opening gate to Tortus from earth, they wouldn't be able to come here right away.

On top of that, something like Kouki's wish to interfere with this world's strife wasn't something that could be requested from Hajime at all. It didn't matter how indulgent Hajime was with his relatives, even if for example that if Shizuku and others were unable to abandon the people here and joined the fight, it could be guessed that Hajime too would move and help out, but still.

Exactly because Hajime was someone like that, that Shizuku and others wouldn't make request to him so easily.

For that reason, they thought that Hajime would surely make Kouki fainted and dragged him back forcefully. Hajime wouldn't choose the option of abandoning Kouki because he wouldn't make Shizuku and others to feel anxious. They thought that if it was for the sake of the peace of mind of Shizuku and others, Hajime would discard something like Kouki's wish as rubbish.

But, when the lid of the situation was opened it turned out like this.

Shizuku and Kaori looked like they wanted to know about the reason of his action. Hajime made a disgruntled face seeing that while answering half-heartedly.

「It's just a whim.」

「.....Nn. Hajime feel a bit curious where Kouki who obtain an answer that is exactly opposite from him will end up, that's what he is saying.」

「Yue!?!」

There was nothing impossible in front of the first wife power. Yue-sama splendidly saw through the inside of the heart of the husband.

「Also~, forsaking something because of apathy won't make Hajime-san think

twice, but forsaking something because of reluctance as the reason will make him feel like that his caliber as a person is too small, that's seem to be another reason desuu. After all Hajime-san, he is really particular about the strangest things.」

「Shia.....」

「Though for goshujin-sama it's only obvious to ignore someone that he dislike. Well, this must be that. Doing that kind of conversation with that kind of character art chuuni-ish—」

*DOPAN-*

Tio accomplished an artistic backflip and fainted dogeza. Not a single person rushed to nurse her.

Hajime cleared his throat to change the atmosphere, then he approached Ryutaro with brisk footsteps and kicked him.

「Oi, what are you doing fainting like that. Wake up right now you muscle lump.」

「Wai-, he fainted because of Nagumo-kun's fault right!? No matter what that's just too unreasonable.」

Suzu deployed a barrier with healing effect inside in order to protect her boyfriend.

Ryutaro opened his eyes before long. At the same time, Tio woke up from the pleasure of two shots shooting her butt.

「Oh maaan, it's been too long since I got hit with that yeah.」

「If you aren't even able to evade stun bullet by sight, you won't be able to serve as vanguard you know?」

A severe notification came from Shia toward Ryutaro who stood up while feeling nostalgic.

Ryutaro thought.

‘In the first place, you are the strange one for being able to evade bullet by sight’, was his thought. ‘Don't confuse me with a bugged rabbit that normally

dodge even railgun', he thought.

「Now then, there isn't much time. I'm going to explain the situation okay?」

When Hajime changed his voice tone and said that, everyone tensed their expression and looked at Hajime.

Like that according to the explanation that Hajime started, there were six towns that were receiving attack even now, and there was also one more place that was going to get attacked before long.

「The information about the enemy is few. From what I glimpsed through the reconnaissance drone, they have the ability to think, regulation, and cooperation. They are clad with unknown black mist, and it seem they can use that as weapon to a certain degree. For their defensive power, there is no problem with using launcher class to deal with them.」

Everyone nodded while going 'I see'. Hajime also told them that it appeared that there was an army of five until seven thousand at the very least deployed in each of the six places that were being attacked currently. The seventh place—Arquette was being approached by a force that was deployed from city that had already perished, added with reinforcement midway that force grew to a number around fifteen thousand.

Hajime gave out instruction for Ryutaro and Suzu to form a tag team that was responsible for one city, while the rest would be responsible for one city for each of them.

「Why are the two of us grouped up? Well yeah, compared to Nagumo and others our fighting strength must be low though.」

Ryutaro asked looking a bit dissatisfied. Hajime told him that it was to make their number fit the number of the attacked places, and it was also better for the two of them to be together just in case of something unexpected. What's more,

「I'm not that savage that I'll pull apart two people who just publicly become lovers in the battlefield.」

「Nagumooo」

「Ahaha. Thank you, Nagumo-kun.」

The two of them greatly wanted to deny the part of “not a savage”, but this was a kindness that was hard to come by from Hajime, so they thanked him honestly.

They also ignored Hajime’s whisper of 「Forgetting Endo is a blunder. If he is here, I would throw him right in the middle of the army at the capital just in case but.....」.

After quickly explaining until that point, at the end Hajime spoke what had to be said.

「Now then, I think that you all had heard, but it appears that the opponent has their own will. I don’t know about the detail, but it seem that attacking human and eating them has meaning for those bunches.」

Everyone, especially Ryutaro, Suzu, Shizuku, and Kaori made a grave expression.

「Right now is the time if you want to back away. It’s not like we really have to split up, I can just do it alone. If you have hesitations then wait here.」

The ones that answered right away were Yue, Shia, and Tio. Shizuku and Kaori closed their eyes for a bit before showing a determined gaze.

Ryutaro opened his mouth while making a troubled expression.

「That Kouki see, he has resolved himself right? Then see, there ain’t no way I who am his best friend can cower. I too am also thinking about my path ahead from here on.」

「I too. That resolve.....I have finished it before fighting Eri.」

Suzu was nestling close to Ryutaro, however she spoke that with a really mature expression.

Seeing the two, Hajime concluded that they would be fine and he immediately showed a fearless smile and opened gates one after another using crystal key.

「Okay then. Well even though I say that, it’s not like I’m telling you ‘don’t even show mercy’ or anything. As long as you aren’t half-assed about it, do

whatever you like in regard about that. I'll send along Ornis to each battlefield. If the battle end contact me—then, let's go.」

Along with Hajime's signal, everyone in that place leaped into the gate.

At that day. The people in a lot of the rear territories of Synclea kingdom became witness of the miracle that would be told to the future generation as legend.

—The southernmost territory Rashvet

A certain soldier A's monologue

「At that day, a part of the defensive wall finally crumbled and those monsters were rushing in. I thought that this is it. It was at that time, suddenly, cloud covered the sky. I was surprised that it suddenly became dark and when I looked up—that person, a goddess was there. She was, beautiful. To the degree that I couldn't think of her as a being of this world. Even though there were enemies in front of my eyes, I kept looking up to the sky.」

A certain soldier B's monologue

「That person, had three layers of shining halo on her back. That was already a divine sight..... But what was really surprising, it wasn't that person's beauty or her sublimity, it was how she summoned something that was like a snake of lightning from inside the thundercloud. ....It was an otherworldly sight.」

A certain soldier C's monologue

「The raining down light and also the great snake of lightning slaughtered those monsters in the blink of eye. No, was that really killing? For me, for me it looked like suicide. Those monsters, they were throwing themselves in by their own wish, that was how it looked like to me. My comrades were all praising that person but, no, I'm also thankful but.....actually, I'm still shaking even now from recalling that. Because I cannot think of that as fighting. I'm, sacred of that person.」

A certain soldier D's astonishment

「Eh? Her true identity? There is no way I know—what? She is surely the angel sent by Foltina-sama to us? You, are you a genius!?!」

A certain soldier E's misunderstanding

「You ask me if I've heard the rumor? What rumor huh? Eh? The messiah of that time, is actually Foltina-sama herself you say!? .....I see, so that was how Foltina-sama looked like huh. Kuu, what a thankful story! Iii, am crying for some reason!」

The conclusion of certain bunch of soldiers

「It looks like Foltina-sama is sublimely beautiful woman with golden hair and crimson eyes, she fly freely in the sky, with three layers of halo on her back, control the weather, and served by giant snake of lightning.」

A certain painter's work

「I have to leave behind the figure of Foltina-sama for future generation!」

A vampire princess in later time

「.....I'm, not, Foltina」

A certain incarnation of nature-sama

「.....The hurdle is high, desu」

—The center of trade Vialattea

Excerpt from a part of information journal

Due to the attack of giant race, the defensive wall of Vialattea was destroyed in less than an hour.

Those giants, they didn't invade right away as though to thrust despair right before our eyes. They were deliberately watching as we, the citizens of Vialattea were falling into panic or falling down in despair.

Looking at the result, that saved our life.

In order to grant us even more despair, the giant race took a step forward. At that moment, 「SHAORAAAAAAAAAAAA-」 such war cry resounded, and right after

that, the giant body of that giant race was blown away to the horizon.

While everyone were dumbfounded, a being landed on top of the defensive wall. It was a mystery of how that being should be looked as.

It was certain that being wasn't human. The reason was the splendid rabbit ears attached on her head. There was also a tail just a bit above her bottom. It was clear to see that those weren't artificial accessory seeing how they were moving about with irregular motion.

That fantastic looking person should be called as a <Dark Being> if thinking rationally.

However what this writer is writing here is not fantasy but the truth.

That woman with fantastic appearance was exactly the savior of this Vialattea. The huge iron hammer she swung around blew away several thousand of <Dark Being>. It didn't matter whether they were giant race or anything else, they were all blown away the same.

Surely Vialattea would talk about her for the long time to come.

That girl with thin clothing, rabbit ears, and that wonderful body!

I'm digressing but, some company appears to be already setting out to make the product of rabbit ear attachment and rabbit tail attachment. While this is truly being presumptuous, this writer is earnestly wishing that this enterprise will succeed.

Walking through the city where the lovely girls of Vialattea are wearing rabbit ears and tail.

I believe that will be an amazing sight.

—Coastland territory Pallagrello

The feudal lord's reminiscence.

It was unbelievable.

Who would ever imagine that this rear territory would be surrounded by an army in the blink of eye and be struck by an invasion.

The deployment of the soldiers couldn't possibly make it in time. Far from that, it was even unclear whether the capital would notice about this Pallagrello's annihilation.

I thought that this is the end.

After all, even the defensive wall was in the state that wasn't really meaningful. Because among those <Dark Beings> there were also flying type species.

From how there wasn't any excellent blessing art caster here, we were unable to even resist when we were aimed at from the sky.

It was unbelievable. How this beloved territory would be annihilated in my generation.

It was unbelievable. How when I gazed at the sea from my room's window for the last time, a monster appeared.

It was unbelievable. How I peed myself in this age when I almost became an old man already.

It was unbelievable. How despite its appearance that was of a flying type <Dark Being>, however the black monster that were many times larger breathed out something like a light ray and blew away the an army.

It was unbelievable. How the monster was talking with a voice that sounded as though it was echoing inside my head, something like 『.....Why didst goshujin-sama throw me into the sea.....does he liketh Gooira that much』.

It was unbelievable. How when inside my heart I retorted 'This thing is absolutely stronger than the <Dark King>!', a disgusting voice and rough breathing 『Ho, however, after having mine forehead and butt shot at, I was then thrown into the sea.....haa haa. Mayhaps, in the dawn of mine hardwork, there wouldst be even more reward!? Nnnh』entered into my ear!

.....When this battle is over, I'll retire.....

—The second supply accumulation territory Rizgal

The testimony of a <Dark Being> that became prisoner



What? Is it finally the time for execution? Huh? That's not it? You're telling me to talk about that day?

Hmph, you humans also saw it right? Just as—

Chih. I got it. I just need to talk right? It.....doesn't matter. I don't even feel like resisting. Who.....who can win against that kind of monster-.

Tsu, fuu fuuh. Ye, yeah, I'm all right. Though when I'm recalling it, it feels like my head will turn strange.

That was, that was, right, it was something silver. The appearance looked like human female but.....it wasn't human by any means. It was also not some kind of race of us. It was clad in silver light, swallowing everything in.....

Tsu. There were also some guys that somehow slipped through and tried close quarter. But, it was impossible. It wasn't about being fast. It was more, something that is outside our common sense. When I came to myself, every single one was split into two without exception.

And yet, if I got to say what is the most terrifying, it was how that thing kept cutting, and annihilating without hesitation.....and yet, it kept calling out for our surrender.

I somehow understood. That wasn't a warrior. It was only coming out to battlefield, driven by necessity.

Hahah, do you get it human?

That thing devastated us because it was necessary. Something that wasn't even a warrior fought while being considerate to that degree, and we ended up like this.

Also, I saw it.

Human, all of you also saw it right? The soldiers and other bunches that we should have killed already—they came back to live! I remember it! The soldier that I killed, the man who introduced himself as platoon captain! I should have blown up his head right from the front! And yet, and yet when that silver light spread like wave, it was like I have never done anything!

Aa, shit-. What the hell-, what was I fighting there!

What.....what was it we had turned into enemy.....

—Northwest relay territory Andreal

A retired old soldier's memorandum

An invasion of more than five thousand <Dark Being>. Even in my long life, something like that didn't happen that many times.

To say nothing about how they appeared in the rear territory without even any advance warning.....

In the end, is the capital, is her majesty safe? Even while worrying like that, I felt it that this will be the place where I die, I shook off my surrounding that is holding me back and got out to the outside of the defensive wall.

My old equipment felt really heavy. But, my feeling was calm.

Now then, I'm going to bring as many enemy as possible to accompany me to hell. It happened right after I thought so.

She appeared.

Her black glamorous hair was tied into one bundle. She was a girl with an air like a stretched taut string. She was really young.

A question arose inside myself since when she was beside me, but for the time being, I thought that surely this girl had backbone and came out here with the same thinking like me, and so I told her to go back disregarding what I myself was doing.

However, the girl smiled sweetly and said a brief sentence, 「I'm glad I made it in time」 before she gracefully walked toward the army approaching from the front.

I was a bit astonished, but unable to leave her alone, I chased after her to take her back.

It was at that time. The girl calmly lowered her form, with a slender sword sheathed on her waist, she took a stance where her sword kept being unsheathed.

‘What’s with that? Doesn’t she even know how to unsheathe a sword? Was it as I thought, she discerned her death just like me and came out here with only strong spirit?’, I was half in admiration like that, and was also half ashamed with this situation that caused a young woman like her to make such determination. I hesitated in what I should do.

The enemy’s formation had approached quite near, it was impossible to even just throw her into the town after this late.

Good grief, she was too great of a companion for the journey to the next world, but at the same time it was too sad. Like that I was about to draw out my sword.

Yes, I stopped only at an attempt to draw out sword. More accurately, the situation became one where I didn’t need to continue that action.

But surely it couldn’t be helped correct? Because, it went *supan*- y’know. It went *supa~nn* in a horizontal straight line like this.

Several hundred <Dark Beings>, had their upper body and lower body parted from each other y’know.

I don’t comprehend. Perhaps by any chance, I’m still sleeping right now? Am I dreaming? I was rubbing my eyes many times thinking like that.

When I looked at the girl, she whispered something like 「.....Like this I can be rushed huh. This is still in practice but, can’t be helped」.

But, I couldn’t ask or anything. Because, after blinking, behind me and her there were several hundred, no, I felt like she whispered that might sounded like 「Senjin – Kokutou(Thousand Blades – Black Katana)」, so I believed it was a thousand, that was how many black swords were lining up there in orderly fashion.

It was a magnificent spectacle.

When I noticed, something came out from the thousand swords. With that something messed up those Dark Beings and cut them.

When I whispered ‘awesomeee~’, before I knew it there were only those bunches that expired pitifully, while the girl had vanished.

I went home normally then.

Somehow there was messenger from the feudal lord saying 「Report what happened~」, but it wasn't my business. I'm sleeping already.

—The largest territory for fruit growing Erlach

The written report of a certain vigilance corps captain before revision –  
excerpt from a part

The army of <Dark Being> that appeared from the west cultivation area destroyed a part of the defensive wall before the sun completely sank.

The vigilance corps members were fighting hard. Due to the many number of the dead and injured, their fighting strength was reduced by half at that point of time.

We collapsed the houses around the destroyed area to turn them into improvised barricade.

Many of the invading <Dark Being>—the carapace race had high defensive power, the best the vigilance corps members could do was stopping them in their track. The many legged race that also invaded at the same time had fast and complicated movement that gave difficulty for the defenders to deal with them.

The evacuation was still unfinished at this time.

Surpassing the ability of the vigilance corps members to deal with the situation, it seemed that the carapace race and many legged race would manage to circle at the rear of the defenders, but then a situation that was unexpected for both us and the <Dark Beings> averted us from that encirclement.

Suddenly, a shining bright half dome membrane spread from the center of the city. It pushed back the <Dark Beings> and ejected them to outside the defensive wall.

In order to grasp the situation, I went outside from the destroyed part of the wall to scout ahead.

There a tiny girl yelled 「Everyoneee! Do itttt—!」.

Right away, bugs that numbered in frightful amount and also huge sized came out in creepy crawly movement. I would be troubled even if you ask me from where they came from. Because, the bugs came out from around the girl y'know. I can only say it like that.

The bugs' appearance wasn't really different from the carapace race and many legged race, however, that was a parade of monsters that were many time more brutal than the enemy! Hyahha! This is the end of the world yeah!

I served in the vigilance corpse for twenty years. I served as captain for ten years. I will be 47 this year, but I've never seen this kind of hell ever. It was gross you know, so gross that I've got no more words for it.

Somehow a part of the bugs, they secretly devoured those <Dark Being> bunches. That was the first time ever I saw <Dark Being> got preyed on. I was traumatized. I'm seeing it in my dream even now. Honestly speaking, I can only see both sides as the nemesis of humanity that has to be annihilated.....

「He, hey! You must not eat them! Spit it out! Spit it!」 That girl said that with pale face, so it must not be that girl's order. That was the only silver lining. Something like a girl who order predation with smiling face.....that would make me unable to look straight at my daughter's face from now on if that happen.

In a sense, a situation where monster that isn't listening to their master's order doing a parade of predation, I'm trying to not think about it.

Putting that aside, the membrane of light was amazing. Nothing went through.

For example, when a young man with naked upper body suddenly turned into monster in the middle of the battlefield and tore those <Dark Being> bunches into shreds, punched them, threw them away, and those guys that didn't even retain their original form got splattered messily on the light membrane, the light membrane still did its job perfectly.

.....Right in front of my eye one of those guys flew at me and went splat at the light membrane, his empty eyes that were opened wide as though to say 'I saw something unbelievable!', it was really traumatic but, I think that the

membrane of light was doing a great job.

The small girl urged those guys to surrender but, honestly, I think those guys didn't have any leeway to consider it.

At that time they must be thinking, of how to run away from the encounter with the unknown.

Despite myself, I completely understand how those guys were feeling. I absolutely won't say it out loud but, inside my heart I was yelling 「Stop it alreadyyyyy!」 while crying.

I never even imagined, that in my life a day will come where I'm going to pray for the sake of the <Dark Being> although it was only inside my heart.....you will never know what is going to happen in life.

When it reached the endgame, the girl noticed me and our eyes met. I thought she had a cute face, but the gruesome battlefield entered the corner of my sight, so frankly, it was scary. It didn't feel like I was alive.

Even so I'm the captain of the vigilance corps. I had to asked them, just who they are.

Feudal lord-sama, please praise me. Please praise a lot this me who wrung out my courage and was diligent in my duties! Also, please raise my wage!

Well, I know that's a hopeless request. Because, I cannot write about their identity in this written report.

It cannot be helped. We are talking about the limit of human being here.

Because, surely anyone will jump in fright if monster leap in front of your eyes right?

That thing, it had greenish skin that seem impossible for most living thing to have, a giant body that was higher than two meter, its whole body was covered with savage muscles, with fangs in its mouth, and with crimson eyes that looked like beast, it was fiercely breathing out with *fushuu*~ sound, while grinning so wiiiiidely-.

Smiling face was one of the important things in social life. I also grinned back.

Though my memory cut off there. Can't be helped, my heart was at its limit.

That kind of scary face, although I was behind that membrane of light, I was still going to faint no matter what.

And so, I don't really understand anything about them!

That's all!

—The nearest supply accumulation territory to the capital Arquette

According to the situation at that time

「Rothko-sama! An army from the north!」

「.....So it's as expected.」

While it's a shocking news that entered my ears, at the same time it is also something that I have anticipated. I can feel how my eyebrows are frowning.

Three days ago when her majesty received the notification of the dire situation, the northern territory that was called with alias "The Third Supply Accumulation Territory" —Radice was already being attacked.

Radice wasn't like Arquette that was blessed with the good fortune of "his" presence, they had no prospect of getting saved, in that case, it can be easily predicted where those <Dark Being> bunches would head toward after they finished with Radice.

I don't know what happened with the soldiers that should be heading here as reinforcement from the capital.

But, if by any chance they clashed with the <Dark Beings>, then their battle strength should more or less get decreased. He had already departed, but if there are the two thousand soldiers I received from her majesty, then perhaps.....

「Then, how many their number is?」

「According to the report from the scout that patrolled the outskirts.....it's more than ten thousand.」

「Tsu. I see.....Orlage-kun. Can your troops drive them away?」

Toward my question, the regimental commander who is entrusted with the

troop of two thousand—Still Orlage-kun made a grave expression.

「The reinforcement to the defensive wall is finished. If their army has the same composition with the previous attack, then I swear we will repel them back even if their number is five times more. However.....」

I guessed it with a sour expression as though I am swallowing a bitter bug. When I confirmed it, just as expected, not just flying species, there is even giant race among the enemy.

The defensive wall has become tough. The underground vault is also flawless, now that it's the second time we should be able to do evacuation of the people smoothly too. But, we cannot expect for reinforcement at all. Because right now her majesty and he aren't here exactly due to the danger the capital is in.

「It appears, that fate wish for this land to perish no matter what.....」

Fortunately it seems that Orlage-kun didn't hear the grumble that unconsciously came out from my mouth.

I quickly give the instruction for the people to evacuate. I make the preparation to give some brief words to brush away their anxiety even for just a little.

I exchange bitter smile with my wife Sylia thinking, 'even though we were holding hope that perhaps we can meet our beloved child one more time, and yet...'. She who is able to smile like that even in this kind of situation is really an able wife in my opinion.

When I go outside, I can see the figures of people carrying their feet toward the underground vault in line. The previous fight caused the surrounding of the underground vault to become an empty lot, so the progress is really smooth.

Suddenly, my ears catch the voice of the children. Their voices even sound bright despite this kind of situation.

「I'm telling you it will be fine! After all we have hero-sama!」

「But, hero-sama has gone away somewhere you know?」

「There is that but.....but, it's absolutely going to be fine! Surely hero-sama will come to save us!」



It seems that even though he isn't here, he is still bringing about hope.

Thinking of him who continued to keep fighting even while losing consciousness, driven only by the feeling of having to protect us no matter what, the corner of my eyes become warm, because of regret, because of mortification. I am unable to protect the people that he protected by putting his life at risk.

When he someday come back here, what will he think when he see this ruined land. Just from imagining that, it feels like my heart will get crushed.

「Rothko-sama, let's hurry the evacuation of the people. The enemy's movement is faster than our anticipation.」

「Hm, is that so. I got it.」

It seems that the enemy's movement is faster than we imagined. Could it be that the matter of Arquette not falling was also conveyed to the <Dark King>?

While feeling the sensation as though the fighting spirit of those <Dark Being> bunches are being transmitted to here from afar, we are doing what we ought to be doing.

We managed to finish the evacuation of the people. The placement of the soldiers is also finished. What ought to be done—is done.

Sound like ground rumbling, or perhaps like something exploding is resounding from afar. Hahah, it seems that the fighting spirit of those <Dark Being> bunches is the real thing.

At this time it won't be strange even if they appear into sight anytime.

.....

.....

.....

They are unexpectedly slow huh.....

Although explosion sounds are resounding.....

.....

.....

.....

They are really slow! Time spend waiting like this is unexpectedly also distressful!

Don't tell me, are they lost? If that's the case, when those lots finally arrived I'm going to grandly provoke them 「Yaa~ii you idiooots! You all are actually getting lost in this vast desert huh~」 before dying.....

Don't tell me.....the soldiers from the capital are holding them back? No, that's impossible. If that's the case they should be coming to Arquette. Something like clashing against <Dark Being> at a flat plain without anything in it will only be suicide.

Or perhaps, the reinforcement has a number that can crush an army of more than ten thousand from the front? No, It's clear that the capital is lacking arous. A soldier force of infantry in such number couldn't possibly come to interrupt at this timing. Either way, it's strange that no messenger come to Arquette if that's actually the case.

.....Hmm? The explosion sound stopped?

What is going on....., shit-, we are lacking information!

Then at that time, as though my irritated feeling goes through, I can see a scouting soldier desperately running over a hill at the north.

When I meet him right away, his expression looks like he had seen the end of this world. He gives me his report with inarticulate speech.

「A, a demon! A monster! Something like that isn't human!」

Ri, right. It's true that <Dark Being> isn't human.

The scout soldier guessed that we aren't getting what does he mean, so he calm down his breathing a bit before speaking out a shocking report.

Let's see, someone with the appearance of a human young man is mowing down an army of ten thousand by himself? Streaks of crimson light is trampling the battlefield, and each time those <Dark Beings> got blown away? Countless huge animals suddenly appeared, and then right after a part of their body transformed and fired flash of light, or else they looked like they were firing

something that looked like a tube, and at the next moment, flame blast spread and turned the enemies into dust? Shower of blood and flesh?

.....Orlage-kun. Did you make a mistake with the selection of personnel? Or perhaps, aren't you overworking this man too much?

Eh? It's not a lie? Please believe what you said?

That young man is trampling down the enemy while giving advice to surrender, and the enemy that ignored that and escaped was finished off with a shot of light even though there was distance of several kilometer? And then..... he caught sight of you who were hiding at the shadow of the hill from quite far off distance and your eyes met each other?

What's that, scary.

Ah, yep, you, come on, don't cry. Just from listening I can understand how much fear you must have experienced.

Hm~m, however, that young man is opposing the <Dark Being>, so he is our ally.....I think.

Yosh, Orlage-kun. We are going there to confirm it!

Orlage-kun tried to stop me, but if it's really the truth that young man has repelled the enemy army then as a feudal lord there is no way I cannot give him my thanks. Besides, for that young man to have such power.....perhaps that young man is his ally.

If that's the case, we have to treat him with the greatest respect.

I push away the protests and head toward the scene with Orlage-kun and the soldiers as guards.

Let's say the conclusion. It was hell.

The earth is all turned up with countless craters on the surface. The corpses of <Dark Beings> that aren't keeping their original form. The bits of flesh scattered all over. Here and there are flames that are dying the blazing world crimson. A sinister atmosphere is running rampant in the battlefield, wafting off from the great number of monsters with strange appearance.

And then, on top of the corpses of <Dark Beings> that were somehow piled up into a huge mound, a young man is standing while glaring down at everything. Crimson sparks are surging from all over his body while his shoulder is shouldering some kind of austere object.

Aa, certainly, I'll recognize it. If hell really exist, then surely it will be this kind of sight without a doubt.

The young man turned his face toward us who are dumbfounded and cannot move.

The moment I saw his eyes, I guessed it.

—Before long the demon king might arrive. There will be salvation if there is suitable compensation for him

Aa, those words, so it refer to this! This person is truly the demon king! The king of hell! Crushing absurdity with even more absurdity, a being that surpassed human knowledge!

There I suddenly come to my senses. The demon king-sama became our salvation. In other words, it shows that we possess something that is suitable to compensate him.

Blood leaves from my face quickly. Who paid the compensation? It's obvious. It's him. Then how much is the compensation? A compensation at minimum has to balance the work being done. Then, this is about that person who risked his life for Arquette's sake we are talking about here. Even if he cannot pay it right now, someday as the compensation he will use his own—

「Demon king-sama!! It is truly our greatest honor and delight to be bestowed with your presence heree!! I am the feudal lord of Arquette, Rothko Arquette-!! First allow me to say our greatest gratitude for repelling the enemy army——!!」

It looks like the demon king-sama is perplexed while commenting 「O, ou?」 for some reason, but I'm desperate here. Anyway I'll just say what I have to say! While rubbing my forehead on the ground at the same time!

「For the demon king-sama to be here, my foolish self here dare say that you received a compensation regarding this matter from him!」

It feels like demon king-sama is getting creeped out while saying 「Eh, what is this old man is saying? It's a bit scary though」, but I'm desperate!

「I am truly being presumptuous here but-, I beg you-, I'll offer you my life, so please be merciful to him! I beg you, I beg you with everything that I ammmmmmm」

「No, I don't need something like the life of an old man.」

I was dismissed so bluntly. He don't need the life of an old man.....hah, don't tell me!

「O, only my wife! Please at least forgive only my wife!」

「Ha? Wai-, what are you sayi—」

「I beg you for your mercy-! Please forgive at least the life of my wifeeeeeeeeee-」

The demon king-sama said 「Why, am I completely the villain? When I came to help because of getting asked, why did I then become a fiend that is trying to steal the feudal lord's wife? I just don't get it.....」 while looking like he is holding his head but, I'm desperate here!

「Furthermore, he is even doing dogeza while yelling desperately, it's déjà vu..... Like this, I don't care anymore. Let's go home.....I really want to meet Yue.」

Hearing the voice with the dreadfulness in it thinning down for some reason, I slowly raise my head.

The figure of the demon king-sama isn't there anymore.

When I asked Orlage-kun who is coldly sweating, the demon king-sama vanish at the other side of space with a sullen look.

At that time, although I couldn't hear it, but according to Orlage-kun who has good hearing, just before the demon king-sama vanished, it seemed like he whispered 「Offering his life for the sake of that guy.....I see. This is that guy's.....」 with his lips slackening just for a bit.

It's only a hunch but, it seems that the demon king-sama won't be taking the life of Kouki-dono.

Perhaps I have been doing something really rude.

Someday, I'll ask about him from Kouki-dono. And then, I'll ask to be allowed to express my thanks once more.

Of course, I'll also thank Kouki-dono too for sending him as reinforcement.

For the sake of that too, Kouki-dono. Please be safe. I'll believe that I'll be able to reunite again with you along with her majesty.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It's the turn for the serious to rest for a bit.

The next chapter will be the last battle of Kouki arc.

Now then, this time I have various notice, so I uploaded an activity report.

If I have to convey the summary,

- Arifureta Nichijou is updated
- The sale announcement of comic volume 2
- Looks like an official portal site of Arifureta is created
- Things like spin-off or drama CD will come out

Something like that.

If you have interest, please check the activity report too by all mean.

Please treat me well.

# Arifureta Chapter 279

## Arifureta After II The Meaning of Hero

「PYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

Such weird shriek was echoing through the vast sky.

The voice's owner was Koone. Her blonde twintail was turned unruly from the wind.

Kouki was going to call at her, thinking that she was being scared.

However, before he could do that, it was proved to him that it was impossible for this princess with outrageously light footwork and had energetic spirit like it was a cloth she was wearing to walk around with to feel scared from this precious first experience in her life.

「Ko, Ko-Ko, Kouki-samaaa! We are flying in the skyyyy! Koone, has become a bird! Koone, feels like she is becoming a bird!!」

「So, so you are only getting high spirited huh.....」

According to the explanation of Lilin who was hugging him from behind and brought her lips closer to his ear, it seemed that Koone going 'pyaa pyaa' was her habit when she was getting the most excited.

「Kouki-sama! Kouki-sama! Just what in the world this animal is!?!」

Naturally there was no way Koone knew about a legendary mythical beast of earth. She asked Kouki while touching the soft feathers of the gallant griffon repeatedly. Koone wasn't turning her head around, she was looking at up at him from his chest. Kouki showed a small smile at such Koone while starting to explain.

But,

「You see—」

「.....Kouki-sama, does your injury hurt?」

It seemed he put too much strength into his side when his body stirred a bit. Kouki's breathing was disordered just for an instant from pain. Seeing that, not just Koone, but Lilin behind him was also peering at Kouki with a worried expression.

Kouki was about to bluff by saying 「I'm fine」.

But then, the griffon's moved its head and looked back as though it was seeing through Kouki's thinking.

『Kuee』

「!? .....Since when it can let out a cry like a real griffon like that?」

From the griffon's appearance, it couldn't be seen at all that it was a golem made from metal. Even so, the last time he saw this thing it shouldn't be able to produce an animal cry if he remembered correctly. Kouki's cheeks were twitching looking at the death god that was evolving continuously day by day.

Right after that, *kashun!* there was such sound from how a part of its back that was located between Koone's legs was splitting into two. More *kashun*-sound came from there and three test tubes that were supported by an arm flew out.

「—」

Koone stiffened still. Until now she was thinking that it was a living thing, but now she stiffened with her eyes opened wide seeing the fact that it wasn't so thrust before her eyes.

「This is.....I see. So even the grim reaper is always stocked with healing magic medicine just in case. As expected from Nagumo, he leaves nothing to chance.」

Kouki smiled wryly and took the test tubes, guessing that the “farewell gift” Hajime said also included this meaning. Koone was still staring fixedly at the strangeness coming out from between her legs.

With *kashun*- sound, the back returned to normal. Koone jumped on the spot with a twitch. The back's appearance was already back to the fluffy feathers.



Koone's finger timidly reached out and poked.

*kashun-*. It opened for some reason!

「Hiih!?!」

Koone screamed and backed away. Her face finally turned into a scared expression that said 「This isn't a living thing!」 from facing the reality.

While that was happening, the special recovery medicine “Dr Fix It V2” that had the effect of high level recovery magic due to Hajime's work that turned it into the highest class of magic medicine healed Kouki's body in the blink of eye.

「Tsu, this is intense. With this I can recover enough in less than an hour before we arrive.」

‘Aa, so this is why he provided transportation using grim reaper instead of gate’, Kouki made a wry smile once more at Hajime's detailed consideration.

「Ko, Ko-ko-ko, Kouki-samaaa!? This animal, it's not a living thing! Koone believes, that it's not a living thinggg!!」

「Kouki-san. Just what are we riding right now? As expected, it's a bit scary that my bottom feels itchy.」

Both Koone and Lilin asked Kouki with twitching face.

Spike and others who were also riding the same thing also felt the same nervousness. They were in a flying state where it was completely entrusted to the ride, if they were dropped off then at that point they would lose their life. And above all else, the griffons were flying with great speed so the best they could do were clinging tightly.

Thinking that it couldn't be helped for them to act like that, Kouki felt a bit of sympathy for Koone and co while answering.

「Actually, these things have body of metal that is applied with disguise to look like a living thing—they are weapons of slaughter.」

「Slaugh, ter?」

「Wea, pon?」

Koone and Lilin tilted their head until their head flopped on Kouki's chest and

shoulder respectively. The dangerous words caused their speech to become somewhat halting.

When Kouki was going to explain more, a shadow came into view at the sky ahead. It appeared that flying type <Dark Beings> were heading their way. Perhaps they were the patrol around the capital's outskirts, or perhaps a squad that chased late after Koone and co.

Their number was roughly thirty.

At the other hand this side had ten griffons. The enemy's force was three times more but.....

「Kouki-dono! Ahead there is—」

Spike who was riding the griffon that was flying parallel with Kouki let out a warning voice, at that instant,

『KUEEE!!』

The griffon's beak opened wide. Inside was a large caliber rifle barrel installed.....

Instantly, a crimson flash cut through the sky. *zudon зудон*- A sound that sounded like bombardment shook the sky. That attack which destroyed the target of several kilometer ahead electromagnetically accelerated anti object sniper cannon.

Surely even the enemy would never even dream that it would be hit by an attack from such distance that reached them in less than a second. It didn't even have time to perform emergency evasion. Various things scattered from its body and it was falling to the desert below.

While the speechless Koone and co were seeing that, there was a sound of something opening *kashun* from below the excessively thick and splendid wing. They turned their gaze at there. An arm holding six rods came out. Those rods—missiles made *bashuh* sound and flew away with orange fire trail left behind.

A total of sixty missiles became a wall of death that approached the enemies. The <Dark Beings> started evading in panic, but the missiles were following

them by detecting heat source. Seeing the countless something following them by changing trajectory sharply.....there was feeling of despair that could be felt somehow even from this far.

—Crimson flowers were blooming profusely in the sky

「Slaugh, ter」

「Wea, pon」

As expected from Koone and Lilin. They were completely in harmony. Their speech was still halting, and their body was trembling all over.

Kouki spoke while making a thousand-yard stare.

「They are, the mechanical servants of the demon king. An army that can even compete against the god's apostles. They are called grim reaper.」

Kouki added more explanation toward Koone who was wordlessly asking him 'And what is grim reaper?' with an upward teary gaze.

「It means, the death god you know?」

「Koone, won't go against that person. Koone swear, that Koone won't go against him.」

「Lilin also swear. Lilin declare, that Lilin won't go against that person.」

Putting aside Lilin who copied Koone's way of speaking because of feeling shaken, Kouki made a wry smile while responding 「That's the safe way」.

Before long, by the time Kouki was feeling that his body was getting mostly recovered from the bad condition, their eyes finally could see the capital and the battlefield.

「Aa.....」

The one who leaked out that voice that even resembled a moan was Koone. Kouki could also feel from his back that Lilin had stiffened.

That was only natural. The capital of water in the middle of desert that once couldn't be described enough even with the word magnificent had fallen into an atrocious state that was clear from a glance.

The river barrier that surrounded the capital had ended up muddy from

getting mixed with miasma that invaded from most of the surrounding. There were even spots where the citizens of the capital were already fighting in an urban warfare.

The deepest place of the palace was half destroyed by some kind of attack.

Currently, the casters were going all out in manipulating the water current of the oasis around the palace that had barrier effect remaining. The oasis was barely working as “moving defensive wall” due to that.

The soldier force deployed at the four directions of the capital was constructing encampment, but it could be seen that it was only a matter of time until they were pushed back. The reinforcement from the moving water defensive wall was barely preventing the collapse of the battle line.

The corpses of the soldiers were scattered all over the place.

And the most tragic thing must be how the whole capital was being covered by darkness colored miasma, just like【Haltina Sea of Trees】. It wasn't so thick that it should be called as dense fog, but the miasma that gnawed at human life was covering the whole battlefield.

In the end, it was a matter of how many miasma stone the defender possessed. It could be thought that among the collapsed people, especially the people collapsed in the city at the rear there should be some who were done in by the miasma.

The capital was almost swallowed by a thick cloud of despair.

The situation was such that could only be seen like that.

「Where is Moana-」

「-, Onee-chan.....」

Koone returned to her senses from Kouki's words. Seeing the battle hadn't ended meant that Moana hadn't surrendered yet. In that case, there was enough possibility that she was alive.

They gradually approached the battlefield while they looked over the battlefield with eyes opened wide.

When the number of people who were looking up to the sky and noticed the

appearance of Kouki and co increased, Lilin yelled.

「Kouki-sama! Over there!」

Kouki looked at the direction where Lilin was pointing at.

「—tsu」

There. Moana was there.

Her neck was being grasped by a large <Dark Being> whose body was covered with full armor. She was wounded all over with her body being totally limp. Perhaps she didn't even have any more strength to resist because she didn't even look struggling.

「Onee-cha—」

Koone was going to yell. But, her voice that was about to call at her big sister stopped midway. There was a reason for that.

「—」

It was because she was pressured by Kouki.

The strength of the hand that was circled around her stomach. It was only through that hand that she noticed the slight change. It was a strange change.

—She didn't, feel anything.

Yes, Kouki was only being quiet. He wasn't showing anger or even agitation. The large presence she was feeling on her back was gradually turning tranquil. So tranquil to a scary degree.

Koone couldn't bear it and looked behind. Then she saw it.

Kouki's eyes.

Koone thought that they looked like the spring inside the forest.

「Koone. Lilin. Don't let go of the griffon. I'm going to save Moana.」

His voice was also calm. No emotion could be read from that, no, it was so tranquil that it was even doubtful whether there was emotion in it.

The sound of gulping saliva could be heard. It was unknown who was the one that made the sound.

Kouki jumped down from the griffon lightly, as though he was only going for a walk.

After looking on dumbfounded, Koone immediately returned to her senses and gave instruction to the other guards while timidly asking the griffon to land down.

The pain throughout the whole body, the pressure on her neck.

She was enduring those, however, Moana's heart was feeling pain that broke her heart at the scene ahead of her gaze that was hard to endure.

「Your-, majesty-. We are, coming-」

「Kuh, only this much-」

Spenser whose whole body was smeared with blood was swinging sword with a demonic look.

Linden who lost one arm while looking like he could fall anytime was using blessing art with a pale face.

Donar was already lying down without even a twitch with a hole opened in his stomach.

The royal guards, the elites of the soldier force and blessing art company, ahead of Moana's gaze they were currently being tormented as though their body was shaved from the edge.

However, Moana couldn't do anything.

Moana wondered why it turned out like this while gritting her teeth.

Was it because the soldiers, the people of the capital loved her more than she imagined?

Or else, was it because she was unable to predict the depth of the <Dark King>'s grudge toward the royal family?

Defeat was inevitable. When Moana understood that, Moana picked the choice of surrender. She would end the war by offering her life.

This option was something she had considered since a long time ago. It was

something she had conveyed to Spenser, Donar, Linden, and all the other top brass.

Naturally, such option was fiercely opposed at the time, but by her continuous persuasion that as a queen she had to think about the realistic option, it was an option that they also accepted.

There were also people who wished to accompany her, but that would depend on the <Dark King>. At the very least, she wouldn't allow anyone to wish for death, that was the only thing that was out of question.

The reason for that?

That was obvious. Because there was her beloved little sister—Koone that was their hope.

By launching a diversion that was paid with a lot of sacrifice, Koone was brought to escape through a hidden path that was constructed underground with the bought time. It seemed there was also pursuer chasing after them, but the one in question here was the clever Koone, Moana believed that she surely would hide herself skillfully.

Like that they then negotiated with the coming <Dark King>.

But, the result was this.

The depth of the grudge of the <Dark King> against the royal family of Synclea, the resentment from the five years ago surpassed the prediction of Moana and others.

That was to say, all the people in the capital regardless whether they were soldier or citizen would be slaughtered.

The queen Moana would watch that scene while going through agony.

Spenser and others were enraged. The option of surrender or retreat was casted away from inside their mind. Even the people of the capital who knew about the situation decided that this place would be their grave. They couldn't possibly turn their back toward their beloved queen no matter the cost.

Like that, the momentum of the invasion increased, and right now even Spenser and others were in the verge of death.

If it was her big brother who became king, or perhaps if it was someone else who wasn't her, would the situation turn out to be better? Would it ended without the situation turning out like this?

Vexation finally emerged as tears while—Moana wrung out her strength and opened her hands. The last heaven's blessing art that would cause her to die if it was used—<Divine Protection>

The blessing art <Wind Sword> came to her hand. Putting the last of her strength into it, she would at least strike back with an attack. It might be just a pointless struggle. No, nine out of ten, this would only end up futilely.

But, she would never despair here. She wouldn't stay meek while grieving no matter what!

She was the warrior's, Synclea's queen! If her head had no worth for the enemy, then she would fight to the end and died!

Perhaps noticing Moana's pressure, the <Dark King>'s gaze turned toward Moana. The red ominous eyes were peering from behind the slit of the helmet. Those eyes narrowed as though in enjoyment of Moana's struggle.

「Your majesty-, don't-」

「Moana-sama-」

Spenser and Linden, and then the soldiers guessed that this would be Moana's last struggle and they raised up sorrowful voice.

Perhaps for the <Dark King> even those voices were side attraction that he delighted from. A joyful stifled laughing voice echoed.

Inside her heart Moana spat out 'I don't give a damn'.

Something like regret.....there was no way she didn't have it. No, rather she had a lot of it. Death was scary, she didn't know how many people would be spared, and thinking of how harsh the path that her people would surely continuously walk for long after this made her felt like her heart would burst.

Above all else, she had a thought that even she felt was improper as a queen. She understood that in actuality she should think of her soldiers and people until the end, even so, if Moana was asked what was her greatest regret



currently, and if she answered it following her heart without any falsehood, then the answer would be—how she was unable to protect the promise.

Yes, the promise with him. When she heard his story, and when she talked about herself, she made that promise.

However, that promise wouldn't be fulfilled anymore.

Moana thought. Would he get angry? Or else would he feel proud for the choice she made?

It was a mysterious feeling. For some reason he was in her mind since she first saw him, since they exchanged words. The frail him who despite having a phenomenal strength yet looked like he would crumble down anytime now.

She felt it, that the more she talked with him, his existence became bigger inside her.

He was kind but cowardly, strong but weak.

Aa, since when she was getting this taken to him she wondered.

She noticed her feeling was when she saw him continuing to fight even while losing consciousness.

It was a feeling as though the inside of her chest was constricted.

He would surely continue to fight from here on too. And she wished to become a person who would support him when he was tired and let go of his tension.

(Sorry, Kouki.)

The last <Divine Protection> was invoked. She felt it, the sensation of the last important thing that was like something beaten up slipping out from inside her body.

Moana smiled. She smiled fearlessly.

The <Dark King> stirred slightly. His laughing voice changed into a displeased groan.

「Your majesty-」

「Moana-sama-」

Even the sorrowful voice of the soldiers, she responded 'sorry' to them inside her heart.

Spenser and others discarded their defense and tried to rush toward Moana. The <Dark Beings> stood on their way, blocking their path as though telling them to watch quietly. During that time, Moana wrung out her life and put the last attack—

—\*ton-\*

A light, a very light footstep echoed excessively clearly.

The place, right, it was right in the middle of the <Dark Beings> who were blocking the path of Spenser and co, taking formation right in the middle between them and the <Dark King>.

It was a single human who suddenly fell down as though he too was also a member of the formation.

The <Dark Beings> stiffened.

「—<Light Blade>」

*rin-* sound rang. Instantly, a circle of light that penetrated the <Dark Beings> was drawn.

The human who suddenly fell from the sky—Kouki passed through the <Dark Beings> around him calmly, as though it was only something natural to do, and without pause he confronted the <Dark King>.

The <Dark Beings> who were supposed to be the elites still stiffened.

And then, the katana was sheathed back.

At the same time the upper body and the lower body of the <Dark Beings> were severed from each other and all the body parts fallen down simultaneously. The number easily surpassed a hundred.

With just one attack, the most elite enemies numbered in three digits were cut down.

Starting from Spenser, the soldiers stopped walking and opened their eyes wide in astonishment seeing that fact. The surrounding <Dark Beings> were also getting noisy.

「I'll have you release her.」

A calm voice was declaring so.

The <Dark King> comprehended it a bit late that the voice was directed toward him. He spat out 『The servant of Foltina that was in the report huh』 with a displeased voice and the next moment, he created several hundred lined up spears.

The spears surrounded Kouki from 360 degree direction without any gap.

「-, Kou, ki!!」

Moana's pained voice resounded.

Half-dome of death of spears. This was one of the <Dark King>'s ability. Place that was covered with miasma was all his territory. He could create weapon and beast anywhere and as many as he liked.

『A nuisance. Disappear.』

He shortly said only that, and then those words of the <Dark King> were said without any doubt that it would come to pass.

With an emotion as much as crushing a bug, the barrier of spears flew out to crush the person inside.

『Ah?』

A confused voice. It came from the <Dark King>.

Because his technique was endured—wasn't the reason.

It was because his right arm became light.

「I have certainly received her back.」

『You, bastard-』

Something moved at the corner of his view. It was his arm dancing in the air, and the figure of Kouki that was right in front of him without him noticing. The

queen.....was already within the arm of the opponent. The lines of spears..... several were cut down. Only the spears that were in the way and could hit Kouki were cut to forcefully create a path—

The <Dark King> could only follow until that far.

『Goah!?!』

Right after that, a severe impact that was produced at his stomach area thoroughly blew away the <Dark King> who had been continuously acted calm without pause since this war began.

The <Dark Beings> behind the <Dark King> were blown away like bowling pins. The <Dark King> who was flying horizontally above the ground landed a few hundred meters ahead while raising up dust cloud.

「Healing far and wide to the children—<Revolving Heaven>!」

Kouki chanted multiple target recovery magic without being mindful toward the flying <Dark King>.

Starting from Spenser, the soldiers were healed from their wound with shocking speed, including Moana. Linden too, although his arm wasn't regenerated but his bleeding stopped completely, the pain was also receding so his complexion became better.

「Kou, ki」

「Yes. It's me, Moana.」

Moana slowly reached out her arm and touched Kouki's cheek to ascertain the presence of the person who she recalled only just now.

「Why.....」

It was a “why” that was filled with various meaning.

How did he come to this battlefield? Who Kouki should protect wasn't her, shouldn't it be the people at the rear instead? It was a question that was asked exactly because she understood Kouki's way of living.

Or, why did he come to this battlefield? The strength of the <Dark King> was abnormal. Even five years ago the kingdom met catastrophic hardship. And now

the <Dark King> had become even stronger. She didn't wish for Kouki who was supposed to still be unhealthy to fight such <Dark King>.

Was his body okay? What happened with Koone? What happened with Arquette, with the rear territories? Every kind of worry surfaced within her.....

「It's fine.」

「Ah—」

Her anxiety quietly vanished. The dam inside her heart that she desperately built so she wouldn't cry burst. Even without any proof, she was convinced that it was all right already. Tears overflowed.

「Leave the rest to me.」

「Yes.....please-」

She paid no mind to her appearance, her shame, or her pride. She only said words that entrusted everything to him. It was something that she had never done by any means since she was enthroned as queen.

As expected, the <Dark Beings> at the surrounding who returned to their senses began to move to steal back the queen. But, at that instant, the raining down pencil missiles blew them away.

「ONEE-CHAAAAAAAAAAAAAN-」

「KOONE!?!」

The princess descended from the sky riding a huge mythical beast. And then Lilin and Spike and the others, the guard squad members too.

Seeing the unexpected entrance of his son, Spenser raised a shocked voice 「Spike!?! What are you doing!?!」. Spike made a thousand-yard stare despite being in a battlefield and his answer 「Chichi-ue, even I don't understand it myself」 entered Spenser's ears.

Lilin held her breath for a moment after seeing her father's condition, and then for some reason she made a thumb up saying 「Otou-san! Nice guts!」. With a twitching face Linden retorted 「What in the world you are straddling there!?!」.

While the griffons were holding the surrounding in check, or rather while a part of the griffons were shooting missiles like they were candy at the area where the <Dark King> was flying at to hold back (?) and dealt additional blow (?), Kouki was entrusting Moana to Koone. Even with the healing of her wound, she was still a step away from death most likely from using the heaven's blessing art, Moana was unable to even stand.

「Koone. Take care of Moana okay? I'm—going to end this.」

「.....Yes, Kouki-sama. Koone will pray for your victory.」

Receiving Moana, Koone hugged her tightttttly while giving her words to Kouki with her expression filled with gentleness and kindness that Kouki had never seen before until now.

And then Moana was,

「Kouki」

Yes, she called Kouki's name and pulled at Kouki's collar. Kouki felt a soft sensation on his lips. It was a happening that happened only for a moment.

Kouki was taken aback. Moana narrowed her gaze lovingly at such Kouki and,

「I'll wait, right here.」

Kouki smiled softly, then he made a small nod before standing up.

At the same time, the griffons stopped attacking. And then, they skillfully moved their wing and sharply pointed with 『Kue!』 cry. It was as though they were giving him a thumb up while saying 『We have bought you time yeah. Do whatever you want now!』.

Inside his heart Kouki was thinking 「These guys are really just golem right? There is no strange soul entering inside them right?」 while shaking his head unable to say anything anymore.

「Can I ask you guys to guard them and back up the other places?」

He tried asking them that.

The griffons made a somewhat irritating gesture with skillful movement of their wings as though to say 『Good grief this kid』 before they flew away with

only three staying behind to guard Moana and others. Kouki thought that these guys were exactly just like their owner.

*DON*- Dust cloud spurted up, at the same time a spiral of dark miasma pierced to the sky. The thickness of the miasma covering the capital increased. The <Dark King> seemed to be trying to strengthen his territory further.

The <Dark King> scattered so much miasma with what seemed to be an inexhaustible supply. He made his right arm to be clad in miasma. And then, his arm that should have been cleaved away regenerated instantly.

In addition, a huge sword took shape at the end of that hand. It was an ominous large sword that looked as though it was the anger of the <Dark King> taking shape.

The thickness of the miasma was increasing second by second, turning into thickness that ought to be called as thick fog. If it was inside this territory, if the <Dark King> could make weapon anywhere he liked here just like before, that it seemed that the whole capital had been taken hostage.

To prove that, the <Dark King> was going to create countless spear behind Kouki—at the place where Moana and others were at—

「I'm not going to hold back. I won't let you touch them. Here I go—<Limit Break – Supreme Destruction>」

*GOU*- Pure white light pierced the sky. The pillar of light drew spiral trajectory that instantly blew away the surrounding miasma.

『What?』

An agitated voice leaked out for the first time from the <Dark King>. The pure white torrent that pierced the sky instantly exterminated the miasma at the back, overwriting the territory of the <Dark King> into the territory of human.

『You bastard-. The like of Faltina's servant is powerful to this degree-』

Even more miasma spurted out from the <Dark King>.

Gigantic darkness approached to swallow everything.

The pure white light that increased further in radiance prevented that.

That scene was like the clash between two giant sandstorms of black and white. If it was seen from afar, it might even looked like the sky had been split.

It was the contest between darkness and light. Everyone forgot that this place was a battlefield from gazing at that sight that seemed to come from legend.

The fact that he was unable to take back the territory no matter how much miasma he scattered caused the <Dark King> to ask with an angry voice as though to reject the reality.

『You bastard-, just what the hell are you!?!』

From the reports that he heard until now, he thought that the one who hindered him was a warrior that was bestowed with Faltina's divine protection. If that was the case, then even if that warrior was more or less strong, but in the end he would be nothing but a warrior that obtained the cooperation of the incarnation of the blessing power, such being wouldn't be his match who was able to erode blessing power.

And yet, the situation was like this.

What was this light?

It was a power he had never felt before, different from blessing power. A pure white light that was tremendous, vast, and was even somewhat divine. There was a pressure as though his existence was going to get crushed and overwritten just from looking at it.

Kouki who was being looked at as though he was someone that shouldn't be existing ruminated the question of the <Dark King> inside his mind.

What was he?

The answer, was recorded on his status plate since a long time ago.

He thought of the question for the first time when he arrived in this world. What was the meaning of "that", he wondered.

If it meant to be someone who possessed courage, then everyone in this world was like that. Even the people of Tortus, even his classmate comrades, everyone was like that.

He didn't understand the truth.



But surely, yes surely.....

“That” must be referring to someone that couldn’t choose the few.

It must be referring to a person who left behind their important person for the sake of the many.

Someone with a difficult personality, who kept taking detour, unable to discard the ideal, and yet when the time came he would make the choice, and then grieved and writhed as they pleased.....

It must be referring to such stupid idiot.

(This time where I’m saved by the demon king and can choose the few, is surely something like a miracle.)

Inside his heart Kouki was exasperated at himself thinking 「I got no face to introduce myself like that」, however, Kouki looked straight at the <Dark King>.

Toward the <Dark King> who looked slightly faltering,

「You are asking me what I am—」

‘Fine then’, he thought.

Although, he actually didn’t understand what kind of person “that” referred to.

If by introducing himself as “that”, he would be able to support someone, he would be able to save someone’s heart.

‘Aa, that’s fine.

I’ll introduce myself like that.

After all if it’s resolve, I’ve already made it.

Now, listen.

I am—

「Amanogawa Kouki——a hero.」

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Next time, last chapter of Kouki arc.

Actually I also wanted to write the another world arc of Hajime and Kouki, but this story became long more than expected, no, in a sense it was just as expected, so I'm thinking that I'll write it at another chance.

And so, for now, Kouki arc will be only until next week.

Also, terribly sorry for those who looked forward to it every week but...

After Kouki arc ended, I'm thinking of wanting to rest throughout the whole September, until around mid-October.

I'm busy with various things like revising for publication and so on, doesn't feel like I have any leeway.

But, I still have tale that I want to write, so I promise I will start again.

It will make me happy if you can wait patiently.

Please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

# Arifureta Chapter 280

## Arifureta After II Take Care of the Next World Too Pleaa~se!

「Amanogawa Kouki——a hero.」

Hearing Kouki's declaration, the <Dark King> let out a dubious voice.

『A hero, you said?』

It was likely that he was demanding for a word that could substantiate Kouki's strength more specifically.

‘I guess that's too abstract huh’, Kouki smiled wryly inside his heart while asking back in return this time.

「<Dark King>. Human and <Dark Being>, won't you help me looking for a way where both sides can coexist?」

『What?』

Bafflement—that wasn't it. The emotion that was filling that voice was as expected.....ridicule.

『In this end of the war, where I'm about to get my hand on my longstanding desire, and you are asking me to discard it? Hah』

Out of the question, was what he conveyed. But, Kouki continued his words without faltering.

「You're only about to get your hand on your desire, but you won't be able to obtain it for real.」

『.....Hou. Why do you think so?』

「Because I'm here.」

This time it was wrath. A terrific wrath was emitted from the <Dark King>. He

thought that Kouki was telling him that the <Dark King> couldn't win against the <hero>, that he was inferior than him.

『Are you mocking me?』

「No. It's my determination.」

The words that replied back concisely contained a clearness that couldn't be ignored.

The <Dark King> looked up to the sky. His miasma was completely blocked by the torrent of light. It was the proof that the being confronting him right now was a being that possessed extraordinary strength.

There was a still silence. The <Dark King>'s answer was—

「—!!」

A thunderous sound resounded.

That was the sound of clash played by the sheathed holy sword that Kouki lifted up with both hands clashing against the large sword that was swung down vertically. The attack was a powerful one that caused a hallucination as though the ground was split.

『Hou, that's really something.』

The voice came from the *back*. At the same time a giant jaw assaulted from left and right!

Kouki immediately tried to jump forward to escape from the unknown, but he saw black beasts assaulted him from all directions simultaneously.

Kouki immediately created multiple barriers using <Heaven Severance> to block while continuing his question. It was the same question that he once asked Ragal.

「Why? Why won't you take a path where everyone can survive!? If your race can survive by other way, then there should be no need for human to be livestock! It's fine even if it's only mutual non-interference with each other! Just what meaning there is in a world where both sides are merely continuing to kill each other!？」

『—』

The <Dark King> didn't reply. But, it could be seen how the red eyes peeking out from behind his helm's slit warped in mockery. He was really not seeing any worth from Kouki's wish except as trash.

Kouki continued to argue vehemently even while gritting his teeth.

「There will be spark of hatred remaining for sure if you turn human into livestock. Discord will occur without fail if you rule through fear. If mankind rebel once more in the future, a lot of <Dark Beings> might die. A lot of lives will be scattered if a war occur! You are their king aren't you!? Aren't you thinking to look for a path where no sacrifice will result for the sake of the future, for the sake of your compatriots!？」

The <Dark King> seemed to be able to teleport in short range even when he wasn't in the territory of miasma. Surprise attacks came one after another. It was truly a storm of great sword. And then, every single attack possessed terrific might. If it was an average soldier then they would get cut down without even noticing it, or even if they could defend there was no doubt they would still get cut down along with their defense.

In fact, he was barely blocking the attacks by placing <Heaven Severance> at his blind spots, but small wounds from unavoidable attacks that cut through those <Heaven Severance> were increasing continuously.

In addition, the countless beasts that suddenly appeared from empty air became numerous murderous weapons. They used miasma to explode or became blades that constantly attacked from his blind spot.

There was no opening to perform defense to all directions using <Heaven Severance>.

Kouki used <Heaven Severance> and <Light Halo> to hold back the beasts, and used <Light Blade> and <Light Explosion> to forcefully take some distance. Only then he was barely able to evade or block everything.

The <Dark King> was responding with ridiculing laugh as expected toward Kouki's desperate words.

『Not at all.』

Kouki's expression distorted in grief.

「Why, how could.....」

『War? The bigger the better. Strife itself is something like a delicious food. What meaning is there in a life where there isn't even one entertainment?』

「Enter, tainment?」

Kouki's expression changed slightly. His desperation thinned down and his expression was turning vaguely calm.

『Conflict, rule, the livestock's rebellion, they are side show. All of those are indispensable “entertainment” for living don't you think?』

Kouki understood. Completely. About the nature of the race called <Dark Being>. He understood for sure this time.

So to speak they were the same like a species of migratory fish that would die if they didn't continue to swim. Conflict was exactly their motivation for living. They couldn't help but fight. They couldn't help but conquer. They would invade until the ends of earth if it was for the sake of that. They would scatter the spark of hatred themselves.

If was the way of living for survival, and at the same time it was also something to fill their heart.

Evil—it would be easy if <Dark Being> could just be labeled like that.

But it was if from the viewpoint of Kouki, no, from the view point of the great majority of human.

But, from the viewpoint of the <Dark Being>, perhaps it was Kouki's insistence for coexistence that was exactly an evil that was trampling on their nature.

Their viewpoint was decisively too different.

『Are you finished with your questions? Then let's end this. You have allowed me to enjoy this somewhat, but even that torrent of light won't match the strength that I have continued to stock for this whole five years.』

The air shook greatly. Raging miasma converged behind the <Dark King> with fierce momentum.

『Power is everything in this world. The strong rule everything. I'll teach your body the meaning of kingship.』

The miasma formed shape. The darkness colored miasma was forming into a giant that was about fifty meter tall from the ground. Arms were formed, a head was formed, a great sword was formed, and then the whole body was covered with armor. It was truly the avatar of <Dark King>. The figure of the strongest king that wouldn't perish as long as miasma existed was there.

『How about you create your barrier of light? You almost died protecting a town of the livestock using that didn't you?』

In respond Kouki closed his eyes slightly. He wrapped his body in silence and the tranquility of a clear spring resided in his eyes.

Once more, he chose.

He imagined along with his resolve. Once, he escaped from reality, and at the end of it he was bestowed with that form of strength. Since that time, no matter how many times he attempted it he was always unable to do it anymore—if it was now he would be able to do it. With such conviction he declared.

「No, there is no need. I'll defeat you and end this—<Heaven's Might – Light Dragon>」

A calm voice resounded.

But, the occurring phenomenon right after it was something tremendous and grand.

A gigantic torrent of light converged behind Kouki. It formed a shape in the blink of eye—what appeared was the form of radiantly shining dragon with size that rivaled even the miasma giant.

『You, how far you are going to—』

「.....Because you are a king, I had to ask. I wanted to hear, the words of the king of <Dark Beings>. I thought that perhaps, there still might be other different path. I didn't want to discard that possibility. However, I had heard your answer. The time had come. That's why—I won't let you do anything

anymore. I won't let you.」

『Tsu, don't look down on me-』

The miasma giant swung down its great sword. The air screamed from its overwhelming pressure.

But,

「—<Breath>」

Instantly the world was dyed white.

The light dragon's breath blew away anything and everything. It wasn't at the level like the air was screaming anymore. It was a might that annihilated the air. That was truly the manifestation of heaven's might. The very light of ruination itself.

The giant's great sword was instantly vaporized. The body's upper half that was hit by the breath showed that it was enduring. But, that too was only for a moment. The body's upper half was erased as though it was gouged up.

The breath that stabbed at the ground far away caused a localized earthquake. Just its after wave blew away the warriors of <Dark Being> without them being able to stand their ground.

But even amidst of that, just as expected, although one of his trump card was easily annihilated, the <Dark King> repressed his turmoil and teleported behind Kouki in order to take advantage of Kouki's stiffening post using the technique.

A sound like the clear ring of a bell rang out.

『—tsu. You bastard!』

「.....」

Even though he should have taken the enemy by surprise from a blind spot, when he noticed his hand that was holding the great sword was cut away and sent flying.

(When was it slashed? No, was it just a coincidence?)

The <Dark King> teleported again and took some distance while pondering about the attack just now. It was a method of defense that was different from



the beginning of battle where Kouki was obviously defending using his instinct or deploying barrier at his blind spots beforehand. This time he was intercepted with pin point accuracy.....

He made dark beasts attacked from Kouki's blind spot also with the intention of observation.

—The head of the dark beasts were already lobbed off when he noticed.

He regenerated his arm and large sword while attacking with line of spears from all directions.

—Kouki deflected only a few spears and evaded everything by moving only a step.

He teleported to a blind spot. He swung his great sword horizontally.

—\*shan\* Such clear sound rang. At the same time the trajectory of his great sword was averted, and when he noticed his body was already slashed diagonally.

Different from before, these sword attacks were calm. He was unable to perceive the process for even once. He could see how dreadful the skill behind these attacks. And yet, he didn't feel anything from the person himself. Whether it was killing intent, or fighting spirit, or hatred, nothing.....

『You-, just what the hell are you doing!?!』

The <Dark King> finally couldn't hide his turmoil and shouted.

At the same time, as though to say that if he was slashed if he approached, then he would just pulverize everything altogether, he reformed his miasma giant and ordered it to punch down.

—It was blown away by the giant light dragon.

Even when he attacked from the blind spot, everything was slashed off. While area attack was annihilated by the giant dragon standing by behind the enemy.

『Then I'll use number! I'll crush you with number!』

The <Dark King> created a hundred miasma warriors that resembled bull head species with height of three meter in one breath. He formed them in a way that

surrounded Kouki and made them charge. If the opponent was the soldiers of the kingdom, they would be easily blown away even if they hardened their defense with twice the number. This was a charge of monsters that allowed gruesome trampling with their rush momentum and physical strength.

Kouki swayed relaxedly, and two heads flew.

The moment the <Dark King> perceived that, three more heads already danced in the air.

No matter how powerful the miasma warrior he created—they were cut.

Some rushed ahead using their comrade as shield. They were cut altogether.

Some was covered wholly with armor. They were cut together with their armor.

Some swung down their large sword. They were cut together with their large sword.

[illegible]

There was no room for resistance, the miasma warriors who weren't supposed to even feel pain were cut away without even feeling it at all. Everything was with one attack. There wasn't even the sound of cutting wind when the sword was swung.

And then, the smoothly flowing movement was approaching to where the <Dark King> was little by little. The miasma warriors were cut away with easiness as though an afterthought while strolling casually.

『Tsu, what's this? You bastard, what's with your gaze!?!』

No one would believe it. Within that <Dark King>'s voice, there was a definite "flinch" filling it.

What he was fearing wasn't how everything he was doing was getting cut down. It also wasn't how his trump card the miasma giant was being completely helpless from the breath and the storm of light bullets that were like meteor shower unleashed by the giant light dragon.

It was those eyes.

There was no hostility in them. No killing intent. No hatred. No desperation. No fighting spirit. No emotion. Most things that could be called will couldn't be found there at all.

Those eyes were tranquil like a spring sleeping deep inside an untrodden and unexplored region.

It looked like he was looking somewhere, but it was also as if he wasn't looking anywhere.

Within those slightly opened eyelids there was only tranquility.

At the end after stepping foot into his territory, there was only one result waiting after going through all the process.

That was—being cut.

The moment he drew out his katana couldn't be seen. The trajectory of the sword couldn't be seen. Everything was already over without anything that could be seen.

It was the furthest land of sword skill that Moana and others witnessed at that day.

—The last derivation of skill 【Sword Art】 【Serene Mind】

With feeling inside the heart, one swung the sword in the state of complete trance. Because it was in a state of nothingness, the process of the sword being swung was remarkably difficult to perceive.

If one didn't have omnipresent consciousness that could notice the sway of the grass below even while crossing sword in a battlefield, this sword strike would be extremely difficult to be evaded with how very naturally it was done.

It was one of the summits of being a swordsman that Kouki obtained in the end of his continuous battle that was driven with only a single thought of “I have to protect” even while he wasn't conscious.

Against this abnormal opponent that was responding against his attack while giving him no impression at all, the <Dark King> finally ordered the <Dark Beings> at the surrounding to attack.

『All of you-, don't just stand there! Kill him!』

『—, yes-』

For a moment, the <Dark Beings> made an expression that was filled with faint suspicion of 'Is the king about to get defeated?' before they rushed Kouki.

But, the soldiers of the kingdom who were similarly continuing to watch the battle of the <Dark King> and the <Hero> wouldn't allow that.

「Don't let them interfere with Kouki-dono!」

「This is the critical moment! Fight with the intention of making this place your grave!」

The one that gave such order while rushing at the forefront was Spike and Lilin.

Spenser and Linden looked at each other for a moment seeing their children taking the initiative. They made an expression that seemed to want to say how the both of them had grown so old before heading out to reinforce Kouki while leading the surviving soldiers.

「E, errr. Death god-san! Please listen to Koone's wish! I hope you can attack violently at the crowd over there!」

「Eh? Koone? Death god-san?」

Even while Moana was looking surprised, the griffons seemed to say 『Kue! (Order acknowledged yeah, missy!)』 at Koone's request and they turned the enemies into meat scraps using missiles or small gatling gun that came out from under their belly.

Moana stared with her pupil turning into dot at the agonizing cries of the <Dark Beings>.

Then, at that time.

Silver light shined and rippled through all the other battlefields with the exception of the battlefield at the capital's front where Kouki and others were at. If Kouki didn't enter his trance state, then he would realize that it was the cheat healing that his one other childhood friend unleashed.

Wind of agitation ran through the battlefields. That was only natural. After all the people's wounds were healed in the blink of eye without caring of how

heavy the wounds were or even how miasma had eroded inside, in addition their comrade in arms who should be died already snapped their eyes open and stood up.

The chaotic battlefield made it went unnoticed, but the revival was limited to those whose time of death was within half a day more or less.....even so what was happening around them was nothing but a “miracle”.

A miracle that was brought at the battlefield where the <Hero> was standing on.

The confusion immediately settled down and their fighting spirit rose with a terrific momentum. Their despair was swept away and a momentum to the degree that pushed back the <Dark Beings> at all battlefront was born.

『Again-, am I going to taste that humiliation again-』

The <Dark King> raised a voice of rage. Five years ago, he ate a painful retaliation just when it would only take a bit more to destroy his enemy. Because of that he was attacked many times by his compatriots who were thinking 「Perhaps I can become king if it's now?」.

Perhaps they could win.

That was the greatest humiliation for the <Dark King> that other could think so about him. He was the strongest, the king that possessed the ultimate strength. Those who doubted that and also those who caused such doubt couldn't be allowed to live no matter what.

That was why, he endured the humiliation, crushed the attack of his compatriots, saved his strength determinedly, and he even created a new skill, biding his time before marching with his army, and yet...

『Even if I have to retreat this time, I'll at least kill you betting my title as king!』

The miasma giant dispersed. Just when it looked like that, the miasma converged into the <Dark King>. It was just like when Kouki was going to unleash <Heaven's Might>.

「I accept the challenge. I'll end you who are unable to choose living with

various race.」

The giant light dragon converged into the holy sword.

『You hope of the livestock. Perish!』

What was unleashed was a darkness colored bombardment.

Facing against that was naturally,

「This is my choice—<Heaven's Might>!!」

A pure white bombardment. That attack that was unleashed with Limit Break state boasted a scale and might that was easily several times the one he unleashed in Arquette. It was pure destruction.

The dark and light bombardments that clashed in the middle blew away the surrounding thoroughly with terrific impact. A crater was created at the desert land.

The two bombardments looked like they were equal, but that too was only for a few seconds.

The holy sword shined even brighter.

And then—

The light of destruction swallowed the darkness and went straight ahead.

『Impossib—』

The air rumbled, the world was dyed pure white, the sound vanished. Kouki felt like he heard that word inside such world.

Before long, the light of Heaven's Might thinned down and vanished as though it was melting into the air.

There was nothing left behind.

Silence visited the battlefield.

In a brief time, the <Dark Beings> whose number had been reduced considerably, and also the soldiers who were riddled with wounds, everyone was watching the spot where the <Dark King> was at.

Kouki's shoulders were heaving with heavy breath. He wasn't clad in light

anymore. Actually he was forcefully activating <Limit Break – Supreme Break> continuously using <War Demon>, so his body was considerably burdened. Honestly speaking, he was gravely exhausted that it felt like he was going to faint anytime now.

But, he didn't allow his expression to show such thing. Kouki scolded himself—

He slowly lifted up the holy sword above his head.

Even without words, it was still the most eloquent victory declaration there was. It was the prove that the strongest <Dark Being> in history—the <Dark King> was defeated.

A beat later.

Intense cheers spread through the battlefield.

After that, the morale of the <Dark Beings> declined with the <Dark King>'s defeat, furthermore after witnessing the absurdity of the soldiers who should have died already coming back to life, even the <Dark Beings> who loved conflict and domination chose to retreat as expected.

And yet, the soldiers with Lilin in the lead went to pursue them with amazing vigor and morale, in the end just how many of them could escape.....

At any rate, it could be imagined that it would be less than several thousand, it was a catastrophic state if looking back how it was an army of seventy thousand at first. Surely they wouldn't be able to make any move for a while.

Kouki who was desperately staying awake for the sake of his ally's morale also secretly consumed a magic medicine from the Grim Reaper's stock and now he was recovering bit by bit somehow.

Even so, it looked like it would take a while before he was recovered to the degree where he could immediately fight. The use of <Limit Break – Supreme Break> and <Limit Break – War Demon> in conjunction forced a harsh burden on him that it actually wouldn't be strange even if he dropped dead right after.

Kouki slowly sheathed his sword and let out a long sigh.

And then, he scolded his staggering body while turning around.

At that moment,

「Kouki-sama!」

「Gofuh!?!」

A flying brutal small headbutt exploded on his solar plexus. The body Kouki who was relatively at his limit doubled over and then he collapsed down as though he was pushed down.

Koone tilted her head going 「Eh?!」. She thought that Kouki would catch her, but unexpectedly Kouki was easily brought down.

「O, oi! Koone! It's obvious that Kouki is tired if you look carefully!」

「So, sorry, Kouki-sama!」

Moana who approached with Spenser's support dropped down her fist *poka-* on Koone. Koone who came back to her senses from that fist hurriedly get down from straddling Kouki. She then moved to his side and looked at him worriedly.

Moana also sat down at Kouki's side.

「Kouki.....」

「Aa, Moana.」

Both of them stared still at each other. Moana was praising him with a unfathomable smile that looked as though she was going to cry, worried, loving, and happy. The tears gathering at the corners of her eyes were falling down drop by drop.

「You are, really okay aren't you?」

「You didn't believe in me?」

Kouki spoke jokingly while laying down still. Moana shook her head at such Kouki.

「I believed. But, I doubted a little whether inside the “okay” that you said you included yourself properly.」



「.....It has no credence what's with my previous offense huh.」

「Fufu. ....The rear territories are all right aren't they?」

「Yeah. Because some guys who are so disgustingly reliable took over for me, those places are absolutely all right.」

Moana guessed it when she heard those words that Kouki said with wry smile.

「Your pick up.....has arrived then?」

「.....yeah.」

「You're going home?」

「I, guess.」

Moana's expression strained. However, she didn't say anything to make him stay, she only slowly grasped Kouki's hand tightly, as though enduring her gratitude and her feeling that were overflowing from inside.

Kouki also closed his mouth. The parting, felt really regrettable. To the degree that he couldn't express it with word.

He wanted to watch over this world's future for a bit more. If possible he wanted to lend his help until the problem with <Dark Being> was resolved. He also had such feeling, but right now he was only thinking that he didn't want to let go of the hand of the slightly older woman before him.

However, the matter of going home completely depended on "that guy". That guy came here to pick him up, and he even already gave him his cooperation, and the matter was more or less settled, however because he still wasn't satisfied, so came again later to pick him up when he finished his business..... there was no way Kouki could ask for such convenience. If he was going to stay behind longer than this, then he would need a resolve to stay in this world for his whole life.

He had family, friends, comrades, and also things left undone in Tortus.

It was a really difficult choice. He couldn't answer easily. That was why Kouki naturally closed his mouth. While grasping back at Moana's hand.

The queen and the hero was staring at each other wholeheartedly from really

close distance, their hand grasping each other's hand.

.....It was really picture perfect.

If the matter about the place being a battlefield welcoming its end was excluded.

「.....Onee-chan, and also Kouki-sama, do the two of you forget that Koone and others are here?」

「「Hah!?!」」

The two released each other's hand in a flash and took a bit of distance. Koone's eyes were staring still.

Spenser was watching over them with a really complicated expression. Linden who had arrived at their side unnoticed, Donar whose life seemed to retain his life from that healing light, and then the soldiers were making bright expression that was looking on smilingly and joyously.

Kouki's gaze was wandering around from the rapidly increasing embarrassment he was feeling. Spenser and others conveyed their praise and gratitude from their mouth to him. Loud cheers resounded from throughout the capital. There was a lot of words praising Kouki inside the far away voice too.

Kouki was feeling shaken at the interstice between his feeling that wanted to go home and his feeling that wanted to stay.

Seeing such Kouki, Moana was also feeling shaken between her loneliness and her wish of seeing off Kouki with a smile after thanking him representing the whole country.

In the end, the two of them kept stealing glances at each other with complicated feeling while at loss for words.

「Haa~~~~~」

Koone was sighing loudly amidst such atmosphere.

「Aa, geez. If Onee-chan loves Kouki-sama that much, then Onee-chan can just go together with him. Kouki-sama too, you have done enough already, so it's fine for you to take Onee-chan with you and go home. Seeing the two of you keep fidgeting and fidgeting and fidgeting make us feel embarrassed here. The

two of you aren't some brat in puberty anyway!」

‘Little girl shouldn't say that’, no such retort came.

Moana's cheeks reddened and she objected in a hurry.

「Eh, ah, no, Koone-tan? Look here, Onee-chan is the queen, so—」

「The war is over. From here on it's Koone's era! Someone like her majesty who is just a step from dying is fired!」

The objection was suppressed decisively.

Certainly, skirmish between the two sides would still continue from here on, but large scale battle wouldn't occur anymore. In the recovering world postwar, rather than Moana who not only used up her strength and unable to walk by her own strength, but even her life span was uncertain, it was obvious that it would be better for Koone to take the throne just as planned.

Above all else, Koone wanted Moana who was already that ragged to at least spent her remaining life for her own sake.

Moana who was told that she was fired was shocked 「Ko, Koone-tan is in rebellious age.....」 and she hung her head down.

Kouki who was unable to watch quietly spoke out hesitatingly.

「Bu, but see, Koone. The method to cross over world, is only possible by asking that guy. That guy is fundamentally a fiendish and inhuman guy, that's why perhaps after I crossed world with Moana, it will be your last meeting with Moana in this life—」

「Your repetitive prattling is noisy. Indeed, that person is truly a brutish and scary person, but Kouki-sama isn't a person who will give up just because of “maybe” right? Koone won't say something like come visit here frequently. It's enough if we someday, we can meet again even if it's only once. Until that time, Koone will surely return this world into its former state that is abundant with nature!」

From nearby 「Aa?」 such dangerous voice, and voices like 「Don't! Hold back Hajime-kun here!」 or 「Hajime, please read the atmosphere!」 resounded faintly, but no one noticed.

Kouki's eyes opened wide at Koone's speech and her tremendous faith on him.

「What's with that look? It's vexing. Koone protest, that it's vexing! .....Even like this, Koone dearly love you just as much as Koone love Onee-sama you know, Kouki-sama?」

For Koone who said that she was leaning toward her big sister when weighing her against the world, those words showed the best just how much faith she had to him.

.....Kouki felt like she heard Moana whispering 「Koone-tan? It feels like you're making a woman's face somehow.....that's just Onee-chan's imagination right?」 with a slightly flustered expression, and voices like 「.....Kouki-kun, is lolicon?」 or 「Kouki. Am I gonna have to punch him again? With just Nagumo being lolicon—bubeh!?」 accompanied with crashing sound from nearby, but Kouki ignored it.

Koone took the hand of Moana and Kouki that separated from each other and connected them again. She then corrected her sitting posture before she opened her mouth with a shockingly gentle expression.

「Your majesty Moana. I thank you from the bottom of my heart for staking your life to guide us since that day. This Koone de Shelt Synclea will take over for the future from here on. Please take care of your health with peace of mind.」

「Koone.....」

Moana opened her eyes wide. Behind Koone, the soldiers including Spenser, Donar, and Linden were lining up. They respectfully kneeled in unison. Their stance was filled with their gratitude, and their wish for her to rest because it was enough already.

Moana's let out tears falling through her cheeks once more. Her various feelings until now became an immense heat that overflowed out.

With a gaze that already emitted an atmosphere as queen, this time Koone turned at Kouki.

「Hero-sama. As the representative of mankind, I express you our deep

thanks. The grand exploit that you accomplish, it will surely be carved deeply into the annal of history along with our respect and gratitude. The path to the future that you grant us, we swear that we will make it into something glorious. Please I beg you, move forward through the path you desire without worry.」

「.....You keep on surprising me since from the beginning huh.」

The path to the future could be seen. The despair was cleared away. For the rest they would do their best by their own, so Kouki didn't need to abandon his precious people for the sake of this world. Hearing those words of Koone that was telling him so, Kouki looked up to the sky with a giving up expression.

And then, he grasped Moana's hand tightly. Moana twitched for a moment, but after she closed her eyes for a bit, she grasped back at Kouki's hand still with a crying face.

「And? Looks like you guys finished talking already but, is it all right that you are taking along that woman too?」

「Uoh!？」

「Hoa!？」

「Hiih, he came out!？」

The presence and voice that suddenly appeared right beside Kouki and Moana caused the two to harmoniously hugged each other, and then Koone who turned into queen mode rolled backward while her twintail went wild.

「Na, Nagumo! Since when you are there!？」

「Around the time you ate that brat's headbutt and fell down I guess. By the way, everyone is here too.」

Hajime snapped his finger while saying that. Right away, the barrier of camouflage from Pencil Cross Velt was dispelled and Yue, Shia, Tio, Kaori, Shizuku, Ryutaro, and Suzu's figures showed up.

「We divided the rear between us and took care of it. Be really grateful until you die.」

「Ye, yeah. Thank you. I'm seriously grateful for that.」

Kouki lowered his head with a soft smile not to just Hajime, but to all the other members who also cooperated. Moana and others sent Kouki a question with their gaze.

「Kouki, these people.....」

「Yes, I'll introduce them. They are the people coming to pick me up.....my friends from my original world.」

There was a bit of pause because he was hesitating whether it was okay for him to call Hajime that. However, it would be too complicated in various things if he talked about their relation accurately, so he put Hajime in friend grouping while averting his gaze a bit.

Hajime grinned.

「Nice to meet you, I'm Nagumo Hajime, the one who is fundamentally fiendish and inhuman according to hero-kun's introduction. If you like, you can also think of me as a brutish and scary person too.」

At the same time, the returning griffons were neighing while circling around above Hajime's head. His appearance was awfully demon king-like.

Koone went「Hiih, forgive me!!」 while casually hiding at a position that turned Kouki into a shield.

Kouki let out a dry laugh to divert from the topic. Shizuku, Kaori, Ryutaro, and Suzu dashed toward such Kouki.

「Uwaa, Kouki-kun. Your inside is worn out you know? You over there, err, Moana-sama, that's her name right? That person also feels a bit horrible, I'll regenerate the two of you okay?」

Kaori who at first rushed toward the two used age of god magic <Regeneration> to heal Kouki and Moana instantly. While she was at it she also healed the warriors like Linden who were injured with loss of body part.

Linden whose arm was restored the moment he was wrapped in light as though going through a video playback opened his eyes wide. Kouki already knew about Kaori's cheat-like effect of Kaori's regeneration magic, so he wasn't especially surprised. He could say「Thanks Kaori」calmly, but Moana couldn't be

like him.

「Wha, wha wha, wha!?!」

Seeing Moana's shaken expression, the gaze of Spenser and others turned grave and caught Kaori with question 'Is she doing no good thing to Moana's body!?!'.

But, before they could do anything, a change happened to Moana.

「Onee-chan.....your hair.....」

Yes, Moana's hair that lost its color was recovering its radiance that was really similar with Koone's hair. It seemed her hair coloring was a bit thinner than Koone, so perhaps it should be called as platinum blond.

Moana scooped up her own hair and stared at it while opening her mouth in a daze.

「.....I feel, it. My strength returned.....」

Saying that, she lifted Kouki's hand to her chest and offered a prayer. Right after that, Kouki was wrapped in faint platinum light. What Moana invoked without any difficulty or even any considerable burden was naturally the heaven's blessing art <Divine Protection>.

Putting aside the healing cheat who said「Something like this I think?」 with really light tone at the side, Shizuku and others started talking to Kouki.

「Kouki.....」

「Shizuku.....」

「Fufu. Looks like you had a nice encounter. I'm hardly recognizing you right now.」

「.....Yeah. After all I won't have the face to look at my big sister if I keep being an unworthy little brother forever.」

Moana instantly recovered from her turmoil. And then she moved on to a new turmoil. 「Thi, this person is Kouki's big sister!? In other words, sister-in-law!?!」

Looks like Shizuku got another younger stepsister in a different sense than the

soul sisters.

「Yo, Kouki. I was seriously shocked when I heard that you got summoned again yeah? Well, no matter where you got sent to, in the end it looks like you are completely yourself huh. ....However, spare me from having a lolicon best friend yeah?」

「Geez, Ryu-kun! There is no way such thing can happen with Kouki-kun, don't say something like that!」

「Ryutaro, Suzu. ....Thank you for coming. But....."Ryu-kun"?」

The distance between the two was strangely close. And then the changed way of calling. Kouki looked on dubiously, but before he could receive an explanation, Hajime who was heading to take back the Grim Reapers that were landing simultaneously slightly some way away asked Kouki.

「So, what're you going to do? Going home, or not?」

「.....」

Kouki stood up and he looked at Koone and others. Koone and also Spenser and co were saying「At least stay here until we can express our gratitude somehow」, they weren't telling him not to go home.

He looked at Moana.

「It appears that I'm just get dismissed from my duty. Following you back..... might be fine I think?」

「.....Yes. It's fine if Moana want it.」

Kouki smiled while nodding. He was doing his utmost to not pay attention at his childhood friends who were grinning at him and Yue and co who were unexpectedly watching with great interest while he headed toward Hajime.

Behind Hajime who had finished taking back the Grim Reapers into the Treasure Warehouse, Kouki was about to tell him about his intention of taking Moana back with him and also to ask something like「If I ask you to open a gate to this world again, about how much it will cost me?」.

「Hey, Nagumo. Moana and—」



It was right at that moment.

Hajime noticed a strange presence and he turned around. At the same time, space whirled right above Kouki's head. It was like a black hole that instantly tried to capture and suck in Kouki!

「Do, don't tell me, this is.....」

An intense power aimed at Kouki. Even though the sand below him wasn't getting sucked at all, yet the space vortex was fiercely shining while pulling insistently at Kouki as though saying 「Take care of the next world too pleaa~se!」.

Kouki looked at Hajime.

As expected Hajime who seemed to be surprised also looked at Kouki.

Hajime made a thumb up. Seeing that, Kouki was convinced that Hajime had the same thinking like him.

That was to say, 「This must be summoning.....」 he thought.

The moment Kouki's feet floated lightly from the ground, various emotion exploded inside Kouki and he.....

「N, no-, NO MOREEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE—!!!」

“Serene Mind” as well as “Limit Break” activated! With a step method that was remarkably difficult to perceive as though slipping between the gap of consciousness, he leaped at Hajime.

「Wai-, yo—」

The hero and demon king floated to the air. Without pause the two floated to the sky like dusts that were sucked by vacuum cleaner.

「You bastard-, this son of a bitch! Let go of meee-, THIS SHITTY HEROOOOOOOOOOOO-」

「I'm not gonna let go of you no matter what-, DEMON KINGGGGGGGG-」

They were vanishing amiably into the other side of the sky.

The people who were left behind, including even Yue and Shizuku who were usually always calm were staring blankly with their mouth gaping wide. And

then they all simultaneously,

「「「「「Eee~~~~~?」」」」」

They were raising a voice that seemed really want to say 「Something like that, is just not done in this kind of timing~」.

After that, because the Crystal Key was held by Hajime, Yue and others were waiting patiently at Synclea. Hajime returned to them about one week later.

And then, when they talked about what happened, they heard from Hajime how Kouki was going to save the world for a bit together with the goddess, furthermore Hajime said that it seemed the goddess was pleased with Kouki. Hearing that, the light vanished from Moana's eyes.

It went without saying that when Kouki returned, it became a bloodbath.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

With this Kouki's arc is temporarily over.

I'm thinking of someday writing the tag battle of demon king and hero too.

Now then, just like I previously mentioned, I will take a bit of rest.

I'm thinking that I'll restart writing again around the middle of October at the slowest, so please take care of [Arifureta] again at that time.

PS

Arifureta Nichijou's newest chapter is updated at Comic Galdo.

This time is interesting too! And then the illustration of Mori Misaki-sensei is cute.

You can go there through Overlap-sama's homepage, so please go take a look by all means.

PS 2

I pretty much was allowed to write one of Historia Garden (The side store of Garden series) but,

It's also made available to the public. You can go there from Overlap-sama's homepage.

Please read it if you're interested as a mean to kill some time.

# Arifureta Chapter 281

## Character Introduction Part II

AN: It's character introduction.

This is a rare chance, so I consolidate it a bit.

I don't have time so it feels half-assed, pardon me.

---

<After I>

- Nagumo Sumire

Hajime's mother. A famous shoujo mangaka who is a skillful user of numerous artifacts for housewife use. Her forte is party trick.

- Nagumo Shuu

Hajime's father. He manages a game company. The originator who beaten up the otaku nature into Hajime.

- The trio junior boys

The male juniors who got the terror of Hajime-senpai carved into them. One of them revealed with a loud voice at a certain fastfood restaurant that his preference was for widow or female teacher, he was put into the blacklist.

- The wicked bunches

The people who were beaten up black and blue by Hajime. Every time

something happened, they showed up their face at Hajime's place to give report.

- Hide-chan

The delinquent who was turned into scrap rag by Hajime. He found employment in a detective agency with Hajime's referral. He is doing work related with information broker. Idolized Hajime.

- Sonobe Yuuka

A girl high school student who is able to pierce smartphone with vegetable stick. Scheduled to be the second generation of the western restaurant 『Wisteria』. Hajime frequently came there for relaxing, so she is thought as a mistress by the surrounding. When she noticed she became magical girl.

- Sonobe Hiroyuki

Yuuka's father. The current manager of 『Wisteria』. He is worrying about his daughter's mistress trait while wishing that she would marry normally.

- Sonobe Yuuri

Yuuka's mother. A gentle person, but at the same time she is also a type of person who will drop a bomb of words unaware.

- Shirasaki Tomoichi

Kaori's father. He is really doting to the degree that he calls Kaori angel. Even while harboring gratitude that Hajime brought Kaori back home, he often pick up a fight with Hajime from his jealous feeling that his daughter is taken by a harem bastard. Each time Kaori got the Hannyu out and then he would dogeza.

- Shirasaki Kaoruko

Kaori's mother. Possess a Stand of Yaksha. Super skilled cook. Generally Tomoichi will dogeza to her.

- Shirasaki Sakura

Kaori's cousin. A frank female college student who Kaori idolizes like her real big sister. In general she is a victim who often got caught between the father-daughter fight of Kaori and Tomoichi.

- Yaegashi Shuuzou

Shizuku's grandfather. The current head of Yaegashi-style. Other than sword he specialize in kusarigama(sickle and chain). He is generally going in offense.

- Yaegashi Koichi

Shizuku's father. A good looking middle aged man with scar on his cheek. He is generally going in offense.

- Yaegashi Kirino

Shizuku's mother. She made her entrance gracefully from the ceiling. She will serve poison with elegant smile.

- The disciples of Yaegashi dojo

They are ninja in general.

- Hatayama Akiko

Aiko's mother. She has guessed the general picture.

- Hatayama family

Aiko's two parents and the grandparents from the mother side. The father was adopted into the family. Fruit farmer. The family is making a killing with Aiko Power.

- Old man Yamashiro

102 years old. He is able to reproduce any kind of carving using cotton candy.

- Furukawa Taichi

Aiko's childhood friend. He survives even after approaching Aiko.

- Umeko-san

The helper in Taniguchi house. Her selling point is hearty consolation. Created the mood-maker Suzu. (Her name overlapped with Sugahara Taeko, so author nonchalantly revised it)

- Karashio

Sakagami family's dog. Won't lose in feeling even against werewolf. His heart is always that of a wolf.

- Sakagami family

Consist of Ryutaro and two parents and an elder sister. The mother was frightened and then mostly fainted. The father was a hero who could face a werewolf with a bat. The big sis lost strength in her waist and mostly peed herself.

- Old man Fuji

The neighbor of Sakagami family. Love fire extinguisher greatly.

- Amanogawa family

Consist of Kouki and two parents and a little sister. The father was frightened and then mostly fainted. The mother was a hero who could face a werewolf with a kitchen knife. The little sister is a soul sister. Also she relatively peed herself.

<Myuu Arc>

- Myuu

Able to summon various kind of existences, and also with a unique innate

characteristic to be liked as well. Inherited every fighting style and equipment from demon king family and is evolving toward superhuman rapidly.

#### ※ Possession in After Story

1. Donnerr & Schlaagg
2. This is a Weapon
3. Don't Touch, Pervert
4. Piko-Piko Hammer
5. Muuramasa – Kotetsuu
6. Yue-oneechan's Love
7. Tomcat-tan, Franka-tan,

#### ※ Friends

1. The “something” inside Demon Ranger (seven people)
2. *Ia! Ia!*—
3. The “something” living at the river inside Japan's mountain
4. “That guy” who was once almost get killed by the demon king, lurking inside the western sea region in Tortus

- Natalia

The daughter of a high government official of USA. Nicknamed Nac-chan. Myuu devotee. Can launch golden right straight limited to people who harbor affection to Myuu.

- Emil

Kidnapped blond haired young boy. As the result of boy meets girl, he barely thrust aside Hajime's memory manipulation and is trying to approach Myuu. In general he ate Natalia's golden right straight.

- The kidnapped children of USA government official or army officer.

All of them are Myuu devotee.

- Artold Schwarnenegger



USA President. So devoted to Valkyrie to the degree he got struck with the slap in the face from the first lady. The president of Valkyrie fanclub. Former commando.

- Everyone in secret service

George, Chris, Bacchus, Keyes, Neil, Hank. Devoted to Valkyrie. The upper echelons of Valkyrie fanclub with single digit membership number. Recently their enjoyment is having Valkyrie discussion with president.

- Armando Aston

Demon king worshipper. Tentatively a general in the army.

<Lord Abyssgate arc>

- Lord Abyssgate (Endo Kousuke)

The scout of former hero party. Possess innate “thin shadow” that was unrelated with the another world summoning. Casually the mankind’s strongest class.

After the decisive battle, he publicly get a rabbit eared big sis Rana (Inferina) Hauria as lover. His abyss mode was deepening mostly because of her fault.

After returning home, he is working hard aiming to enroll into a medical university in order to bring modern medical technology into Tortus.....but, he is blazing through the underworld of earth because of demon king-sama’s directive.

Can brag as the demon king’s right hand despite acting relatively reluctant.

- Emily Grant

Blonde side tail + almond shaped eyes + peeing girl + chariso guard + genius lab coat girl + easy heroine + tsukkomi attribute + loyal dog attribute, *etc.*

The young genius girl who is increasing her attributes day by day. Unintentionally created Berserk that change people into monster and got dragged into an incident that originated from Berserk.

Saved by “Kousuke”, she easily fell for him.

Kousuke’s second wife (?). Her newest objective is to cure Kousuke’s abyss mode and Hauria’s chuunibyou.

Although, the more she work hard, the more her popularity among Hauria clan as mascot increase.

- Vanessa Paradis

Nicknamed Danessa. She is a skilled agent of security bureau, but an otaku to a degree that she remodeled her own residence chuunibyou style. She is mostly pouring chaos to her surrounding with her serious attitude. The self-proclaimed third wife of “Kousuke-san”.

- Reginald Down

A professor at Percival University. He had raised a lot of excellent student until now that he was called as superior educator. Emily was also one of those students and he was also her benefactor.

However, he was deeply fixated with “great work that can leave behind history” and betrayed Emily.

- Hendricks Wesk

A student of professor Down. The “senior” that Emily trusted the most. When Berserk rampaged inside the research building, he become bait to protect Lizzie and Emily and unable to go back home.

- Lizzie Aston

A student of professor Down. Someone with tsundere trait and held romantic feeling toward Hendricks, a “big sister” that Emily trusted the most. In Berserk incident, just like Hendricks she became bait in order to save Emily who was like an important little sister to her and she was temporarily missing then.

- Rod Hurst

A student of professor Down. A mood maker with light hearted attitude. His relationship with Dennis was like a quarreling friend and it became a common sight in Down classroom how the tow of them were quarreling with each other. He died leaving behind the last words 「Live on properly okay」 to Emily.

- Dennis Litton

A student of Down classroom. An intellectual and the most serious person. The quarreling friend of Rod. When he was changing into Berserker, he cut off his own life.

- Jessica Cubit

A student of Down classroom. A beautiful woman who can put her effort more into playing rather than research. She remodeled the doctor coat Emily was always wearing to make her have more interest to fashion. Emily's one other "big sister". She was killed by Sam who was infected with Berserk.

- Sam Redman

A student of Down classroom. A man with big built. After he got infected with Berserk, he died.

- Milo Ieny

A student of Down classroom. The one among Down classroom's student who died the very first at the Berserk incident.

- Kimberly Warren

An agent of security bureau. An expert at army hand-to-hand fighting. He was Vanessa's coworker, but he betrayed his comrades in order to earn money with Berserk and aimed at Emily. He got hit with Vanessa's punch to the face (strengthened by Lord Abyss version) and got injured to the level where his face collapsed, after that her was infected with Berserk as the demonstration of the mastermind and died.

- Sharon Magdanese

The chief of Britain national security bureau. A woman past her middle aged. A coolheaded pragmatist that possessed both good and evil within. An iron woman who is married with Britain, a living legend who is even called as the cornerstone of Britain's protection.

However, in front of Myuu she is "Sharon-obaachan", She is terribly dere then.

- Allen Parker

An agent of security bureau's not existing "JD Agency". His code name is K. A virtuoso hitman. Normally he is a joker, an uninteresting analyst who is always complaining. He is always looking for encounter with girl. Recently it seems he is a getting a bit of good vibe from "Aby-san's girl friend" that he got acquainted with in a certain case.

- Bernard Pace

The commander of security bureau's special assault force. He raised death flag as easy as breathing, however, for some reason he was helped with good luck, a person who is loved by the death god and goddess of fortune at the same time. He called Kousuke as Aby friendlily. He have a six year old daughter.

- Kaysis Wentworks

The director of Gamma Pharmacy, and a top brass of a secret cult society Hydra. One of the masterminds of Berserk incident. In order to remake Hydra from a cult society into an influential society that exert its influence to the surface world from the dark and then stand on the society's top, he caused the Berserk incident. A type of person who can call himself name like Odin and so on.

Currently he is a splendid villager.

- Jefferson Allgrey

The leader of secret cult society Hydra. At the surface he is the real estate king of Britain and an authority at political world.

Currently a splendid villager. His popularity is rising drastically and someday might become the prime minister.....

- Weiss Ingram

A mercenary group leader who would do anything as long as she received money. Hired by Kaysis, he worked as the one in charge of the research place's security and the guard of professor Down. A tough soldier who once survived tangling with an agent of "JD Agency". Cornered by Allen, he injected a refined version Berserk into himself and died later.

- Rana (Inferina) Hauria

A rabbit eared big sis from a clan of rabbit people tribe, Hauria clan (big breasted beauty). Moved by the fierce approach of Kousuke, she tried forcing unreasonable demands that would make even princess Kaguya went pale. And yet Kousuke cleared them all and she accepted him as lover. Although, she is planning for Kousuke who is the right hand of the demon king to have seven wives. She is calling Kousuke "Kou-kun".

Every single time Kousuke acted rash, reckless, and impulsive, generally it was this girl's fault.

- Woody

A former unlawful employee of Gamma Pharmacy who was working the dirty work. He was awakened to salmon sandwich because of Kousuke. Currently he is managing a restaurant that specialized in salmon sandwich, and also acting as information broker by making use of his connection with the underworld.

- Samantha

The former employee of the restaurant where Woody awakened to salmon sandwich. She was fired because she was loudly declaring that 「Our salmon sandwich isn't that delicious」. When she came into Woody's restaurant by chance, she was awakened to salmon sandwich. Currently she is doing missionary work for salmon sandwich at Woody's place.

<Liliana arc>

- Heliotrope

Liliana's exclusive attendant. Actually she was selected by demon king-sama and then given special training Hauria style, now she was the leader of the combat maid group—Fleur Knights. She could take on one battalion of knight order right from the front alone.

There was also a princess who is envious of the relationship between the demon king and her because they are more like a master and servant than the princess with her. Her real name was sealed.

- Nakano Shinji

The representative of a security company that specialized in celebrity. God of the otagei(fans cheering at concert) world. His video of doing otagei with stylish move and black suits was creating a stir, making him more of a celebrity than the real celebrity. His dream was having a shotgun wedding with and idol someday but there was still no sign of it coming true.

- Saitou Yoshiki

The number two of a security company that specialized in celebrity. Similarly he is also a god of otagei world. Recently he was attempting the expansion of the business thinking 「If Japan is no good it's foreign idol then」.

- Davis-kun

The friend of Liliana's heart.

- Sandra Winchester

The woman who is serving as Liliana's secretary in earth. She is actually Heliotrope-san in disguise.

<Tio arc>

- Nagumo family's grandfather and grandmother

Habitual repeater of out of body experience.

- Roze Phiris Avenst

The queen of dragon country Avenst. Her country was stolen when she was a baby, since then she was doing air pirate imitation at the country above ship Avenst. She retook her country with the cooperation of Hajime and Tio, and now she is waiting for the visit of Hajime and Tio along with battleship Avenst that was turned into an extravagant passenger boat. A lecher with quiet exterior.

- Kuwaibel

A silver little dragon. The last king of the dragon race and Roze's partner. Can manipulate extreme light. Idolize Tio as mother.

- Sabastian Orto

Roze's loyal butler. Formerly a royal guard but his current retired self was stronger than before. Can dodge bullet normally. Or deflected it with a tray. Can overwhelm a fully armed squad with only tableware and martial art.

- Olga Crow

The captain of Roze's royal guard. The direct pupil of Sabas. A beauty with semi long blond hair.

- Jean Crow

The vice captain of Roze's royal guard. Olga's little brother. Stronger than Olga in bare handed fight.

- Cline

Avenst's captain.

- Cutter Gilton

The captain of flying warship Rozeria.

- Oaks

The captain of flying warship Averia.

- Gregor Cluzet Qwailent

The king of sky divine country Qwailent. A former air pirate and the man that usurped dragon kingdom Avenst. Went poof from breath attack.

- Silas

The high official of sky divine country Qwailent. He was entrusted to take charge during Gregor's absence, but Sabas talked to him and he cooperated gladly. It seemed that later on he got terribly scared of the living being called a butler.

- Higgs

Former sky battlecraft pilot of sky divine country Qwailent. A trauma was planted thoroughly into him by the demon king-sama, and in the end he was tortured by his comrade under the name of questioning, he went full circle and became an amazingly courageous sky battlecraft pilot. Currently a pious dragon believer. Although for some reason dragons wouldn't get near him because he felt unpleasant.

- Helmut

One of the king dragons that guarded the dragon kingdom in the past. The big brother of Kuwaibel. He despaired with human and lost his sanity from losing his family, turning into an evil dragon. He filled the world with corrosion rain and polluted the ground. He picked a fight with the demon king and went poof.

- Serio/Pike/Weber/Raymond/Olson

Royal guard members. Absurdly gutsy.



## <Shizuku arc>

- Kohai-chan(Junior-chan)

If you saw one in the open, that means there are thirty that you haven't seen. One of the step sisters(soul sisters). Have innate characteristics of meeting trouble. A mysterious girl who can have adventure in the modern day Japan in the same level like adventurer in Tortus. Twintail. Raise the flag of revolt to overthrow Hajime, but generally she got tormented affectionately where in the end she will run away while spouting out parting threat.

The regrettableness of her behavior is like Shia in the past, unexpectedly Hajime and others are receiving her in favorable light. At the root she is a diligent and earnest girl, but she is slipping bit by bit.

- Fudou Akari

A female kendo athlete at the same grade with Shizuku. She had inferiority complex with her appearance that was like Fudou Myouou, so she staked her life in kendo. Because of that, she harbored jealousy to Shizuku who stopped doing kendo after returning, become Lord Vado, and for some reason received Chrystabel's evilish remodeling and became a beautiful girl.

- Chrystabel

The manly woman haunting the clothes shop at Brook city. She shaves Hajime's SAN status just by existing. Can deflect bullet with her muscle if it's just stun bullet. Ask for a favor from Yue and others secretly from Hajime in the attempt to expand to earth.

According to Hajime, it's not an expansion but "erosion".

In front of the manly women, Hajime job changed from demon king into hero.

## <Kouki arc>

- Amanogawa Kouki

Hero with many worries. He was awakened to <Limit Break – War Demon> that enable him to continue fighting until his body is smashed apart, and <Serene Mind> that make his sword attack very hard to be perceived, he achieved a growth that it won't even be an exaggeration to say that as a swordsman he is in the furthest level one can reach.

Mostly he is getting summoned.

- Female knight

Formerly a member of royal guard knight order attached to Liliana. She is too much of Shizuku's soul sister and got demoted as normal knight. After the decisive battle, she followed Kouki in his extermination of the monsters from Holy Precinct as observer and helper. She is fundamentally following Shizuku supremacy doctrine, so she won't have motivation in matter that isn't related to Shizuku, but she will be overdoing it in matter that is related. Her specialty is in plainly unpleasant prank magic using her darkness element magic. Once she schemed to give emperor Gahard athlete's foot before she was sent flying with a punch by her captain.

- Sona Masaka

The elusive daughter of an inn. This girl—is watching!

- Moana de Shelt Synclea

The queen of Synclea kingdom. A beauty with white hair that lost its color and brown skin. Older than Kouki. She is endeavoring to use male way of speaking to be more like a queen, but her way of speaking will return to her original feminine way when something unexpected happen. She is doting on her little sister and add “tan” when calling her name, has a regrettable side on her with how she is misunderstanding that she is liked by animal when she is actually hated from how she is too affectionate to the animal. Her personality is fundamentally gentle while also valorous.

- Koone de Shelt Synclea

Moana's little sister. Blonde twintail and brown skin, a little girl with black heart (eight years old). She is doting on her big sister, to the degree that she declare her big sister is more important than the world. She is skilled in reading the direction of the other party's thinking and perception, she often draw near unnoticed without any presence and surprised people. If there is uproar happening in the capital, generally it's this girl's fault.

After Moana abdicated, she is currently the queen of Synclea kingdom.

- Anneal

The attendant of the royal sisters. She is the equal of chief caster Linden in regard of the use of precise blessing art.

- Spenser Haim

The captain of the royal guard. Somewhat has the attribute of idiot parent toward the royal sisters. However, his eyes will become like dead fish when he heard about Koone's mischief.

- Spike Haim

Spenser's adopted child. In his twenty he is already the equal of Spenser if it's just in sword art, a young genius swordsman. The leader of Koone's guard squad. His attitude is too straight that he often get misunderstood by woman. Has experience getting threatened by Lilin 「I'll chop up your ball y'know」.

- Lilin Stohl

A soldier of the royal guard. A talented woman that possess the strength in the level of the captain in her sixteen. A beautiful girl with long chestnut colored twintail as her characteristic. Her speech is polite but the majority of her consciousness is geared toward battle, she will drop mind blowing words in respond toward smooth talking against her.

- Linden Stohl

The chief of blessing art user group. The father of Lilin.

- Donar Quin

The leader of the soldier force.

- Bruitt Cube

The head of civil official. A tottering gramps who looks like he will fall to pieces anytime soon. But he has dignity that even Moana and Koone cannot go against.

- Rothko Arquette

The feudal lord of Arquette territory. His wife is Syla. His son is Rondo (ten years old). A user of dogeza complete with splendid shout that resembled Hajime in the past. It seems that his son Rondo is conscious of Koone.

- Ivana Borgia

The vigilance corps leader of Arquette territory.

- The spouses of fruit shop

A well-known store of a fruit named kukuri. Actually when the capital was at war, the two were people of valor that exterminated a platoon of <Dark Beings>.

- Dark King

The strongest <Dark Being> in history. His body was clad with full plate armor made from miasma, possessed abilities like teleportation, erosion, weapon creation within his territory, subordinate beast creation, generating giant, and so on.

- Niebla

A black wolf species <Dark Being>. The first opponent that Kouki fought.

- Ragal

A scaled dragon species <Dark Being>. The first opponent with will that Kouki killed.

### <Others>

- Inaba

The kick rabbit that possess the nickname Leg Assault King. He originated from the first floor of the abyss, but by accidentally drinking the god water that Hajime accidentally spilled, he obtained thinking ability and strength, an irregular monster.

After the decisive battle he went out in a training journey. He is a battle junkie. There is almost no monster in Tortus that is his match anymore. A friend with Lee-san.

The two of them were chasing after a mysterious object that appeared in the western sea region, after that, they went missing.

For some reason he talk in Kansai dialogue.

- Leeman

Nicknamed Lee-san. As “the friend of the godslaying demon king”, he is acknowledged by human. Presented by the demon king with Triaina (v.2), a small submarine that can be used underwater or in the air, using that he was protecting the west sea.

He displayed his chivalrous spirit and went in a journey with Inaba. There is no guarantee that he will be able to go home again.

- Hamada Shouta

A freelancer journalist. Yuuka’s fan. The originator that made Yuuka into magical girl. Since then, each time he went to the restaurant it was only him who was served coldly, but he was a person that is painful to look at with how he misunderstood 「Perhaps she has feeling for me!?’ instead.

- His majesty Randell

The boy king who faced much hardship, this time he fell in love with Myuu. Inside his heart was the thinking 'One day I'll punch that guy flying!', and he would yell it out loud when the person wasn't nearby.

- Vice principal

The wig who is tsundere toward Aiko.

# Arifureta Chapter 282

## Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ②

AN: Warning: This isn't the resumption of the update.

It's the advertisement for the release of the comic's second volume (25 September)!

Although, I'll feel guilty if it's just advertisement, so I wrote this in a real rush, a brief chapter without any particular content but,

Allow me to post it.

---

「Everyone! It's sudden, but there will be a school trip tomorrow! All of you must be still unprepared! Let's hurry with it through this day!」

The morning homeroom. The class's homeroom teacher——Hatayama Aiko-sensei was arriving with brisk footsteps that sounded unusually restless. The first voice she said was that sentence that was declared energetically with forced momentum while her face was pale and twitching.

Naturally, an overwhelming silence ruled over the morning classroom.

Even Hajime who was commonly acknowledged as the class's demon king was looking at Aiko with his mouth gaping open. It was extremely unusual for him to look like that.

Shizuku who seemed to guess the situation instantly covered her eyes with her hand and looked up to the ceiling. But, as the common sense person of the class, her status was that of a proper leader, different from Hajime. She immediately raised her hand and took the stance of 「I have question!」.

Aiko jumped.

「.....Yaegashi-san.」

「Yes, sensei. Please spit out everything without glossing over anything.」

It wasn't a question, but an interrogation. Aiko was shivering all over like a small animal.

While the fixed gaze of the whole class was directed at her, Aiko averted her gaze with a complicated look before explaining while staring at the stain in the classroom's corner.

According to her, it was somehow overlooked, but the school trip was already finished being carried out.

According to her, due to the disappearance case, it was only this class that didn't have the trip.

According to her, the school officials were going 'If the fact that it's only "them" that haven't gone is leaked to the mass media, won't the school get criticized again? Dealing with that is seriously a pain in the ass y'know. That's why see, let's adjust the schedule in this occasion and shove in "their" school trip in between', and so this event was ordered from the above.

According to Aiko, the order had been given since two months ago.

According to her, there were various things and so she completely forgot to tell them about it and so sorry, seriously sorry!

Aiko-chan-sensei did a beautiful prostration above the teacher desk.

「This is the first time I saw a teacher prostrating on the teacher's desk.」

「In the first place for a teacher to prostrate is already unusual though.」

Tamai Atsushi and Nimura Akito spoke with twitching face.

「We, well, we know that Ai-chan is pretty busy, because the brunt of the "returnee uproar" is directed at her, right?」

「Ye, yep. That's why raise your face already, Ai-chan-sensei.」

After Sonobe Yuuka spoke consolingly with her face was also twitching as expected, Sugawara Taeko also expressed her agreement in hurry.

「Getting on top of the desk like that, she is strangely haughty huh.」



「Hajime-kun, just shut up for a bit!」

Kaori said 「Don't corner Ai-chan even more than this」 to warn Hajime for his statement.

For the time being, in order to do something about Ai-chan who was in the middle of prostrating, the students, mainly the girls did their best to drag her down from the desk before the whole class comforted Aiko whose movement was jittery from her sense of responsibility while saying 「For a working adult to forget getting in touch.....」.

Certainly it was really a failure in her part, but all of them knew about her daily activity to protect them the “returnee”, her getting treated like a tumor among the teachers, and how recently she was troubled because the vice principal who was heavily suspected of wearing wig was acting like tsundere toward her.

And so, seeing how the person herself was extremely remorseful, and how there would be no problem at all about a matter of this degree if they dealt with it, the whole class was immersing themselves in recovering Aiko's emotional state.

「.....Hajime. Give Aiko some comfort.」

Yue displayed her first wife power. She understood that Hajime's words would affect Aiko the most. Hajime smiled wryly while saying 「Can't be helped」, and then he went toward Aiko.

‘It's the husband's arrival!’ The classmates parted to left and right like a sea in front of Moses.

「Aiko.」

「Uu, I'm a useless teacher. A useless female teacher. It's like I'm a completely useless female teacher. In short Madao」 (TN: Completely useless female teacher = **dame dame onna** kyoushi = madao. Anyone watched Gintama?)

While thinking that she was seriously ill, Hajime spoke with a gentle voice.

「Is there no guidebook or something for the school trip? We know nothing at all about it here.」

「Hah!? Guidebook!? I forgot it in the staff room! I'll go bring it here!」

The truth was that there wasn't really much time, so the school trip would follow the same arrangement with this year's school trip and the guidebook for the trip was prepared already but.....

It seemed that Aiko whose head was full with apologizing splendidly forgot it. She was falling deeper and deeper into a vicious circle.

Everyone saw off Aiko rushing out with *patapatapata* footsteps sound.

「For the time being, she had at least recovered to the degree where she can run around.」

「.....Hajime. That's not it.」

Hajime-san was hit with tsukkomi retort from Yue. Hajime shrugged his shoulders saying that he got it, and then he went out of the classroom alone in order to help Aiko carrying the guidebook.

The next day.

The class of Hajime and co that barely managed to finish their preparation assembled at the gathering place——at the parking lot nearby the station from early morning.

The bus had already arrived. Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki were talking with the bus guide. The bus guide was really young and looked lovely. Though her expression was slightly twitching.

Actually, her face was twitching wasn't just because she was getting hit on since the morning.

There was one main cause. The job of being the guide of “those returnees” was pushed on her just “because she was the youngest”. Inside her heart she was filled with trepidation. For the time being the bus driver was pushing down his hat deeply that it was covering his eyes.

‘You don't want to meet my eyes that much.....?’ The gaze of the rookie bus guide stabbed into the driver.

「Onee-sama-, I beg you, please-, be safe! If something happen, by all means please use that man as decoy while you escape!」

「That sounded like this is our last meeting in this life, so can you stop that? It's really embarrassing.」

The one who arrived at the gathering spot earlier than anyone in the class, kouhai-chan (TN: Kouhao=junior). Saying 「This might be our last meeting」, the girl buried her face into Shizuku's chest and rubbed her face there.

For the time being, Hajime caught the back of kouhai-chan's head with iron claw. (TN: Not real iron claw, I guess it's like wrestling technique where you grab the head of someone like you're going to crush apple with your grip)

「So, you come out huh, senpai! Are you satisfied tearing me apart from Onee-sama!? Are you satisfied!?!」

「Your tension is high right from the morning huh, oi.」

Hajime yawned while grinding his fingers on the forehead of kouhai-chan who was causing a ruckus. It seemed that the sight of kouhai-chan writhing in agony 「Aa~~h, my head-, my head feels like it's going to spliit」 didn't even enter his eyes.

「As I thought, Onee-sama must not be let to go to a school trip with this kind of man! At the very least, I have to come along to!」

Turning what she spoke out into action was kouhai-chan quality. Annoyed, Hajime fixed a mouth gag on kouhai-chan and then he fastened her on the nearby electric pole with wire.

And then, he took out a signboard from who know where and gently hung it down on the neck of kouhai-chan who was struggling while going 「Muu~h, muu~!」. The signboard was written with 「In the middle of morning training. Please don't talk to me.」.

Even though there was a high school girl getting tied on an electric people, yet there wasn't anyone who said anything, far from that, everyone was watching it with a warm gaze. This situation——the SAN value of the rookie bus guide decreased until 90.

「Sa, say, say-. Hatayama-sensei? That girl is.....」

「Err, err, after this, when we depart.....it's going to be this at there, after that.....」

The rookie bus guide was quietly distancing herself from the small animal teacher who was confirming the trip program with extreme desperation for some reason. It's no good to bother her isn't it, sorry.

「A-ha-ha, everything is all right you know, bus guide-san! That girl, she will manage somehow against a mere wire after all.」

「This happens every time! Rather than something like that, is it okay for me to call you by your first name?」

Shinji and Yoshiki were shadowing the bus guide around. The rookie bus guide's expression turned troubled. Calling the sight of a girl tied on an electric pole with wire as something that “happened every time” .....inside her heart, she yelled 「Is this, the returnee quality!?!」.

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 87

Then, at that time, a childish voice suddenly resounded from the traffic circle.

「Papaaa~~!」

「! Myuu! Even Remia too. What is it you two?」

The girl running *sutetetete*- with rapid footsteps——Myuu leaped into Hajime's arms without pause. From behind her, Remia was going 「My my」 while walking near with her usual lax and gentle atmosphere.

For the time being, the rookie bus guide opened her eyes wide. 「Papa-!? Just now, that girl said papa!? And then, no one here is surprised by that!?!」 She screamed inside her heart.

The rookie bus guide knew. At the morning, the young man who was called papa was coming to this place with his hand intimately holding the hand of an extraordinarily blond haired girl. There was also one other girl who was also beautiful, hopping up and down closely around the two at that time like a rabbit, but no matter how anyone looked at it, at the very least the two of them were a pair of lovers.

And yet, papa.....

The imagination of the indulgent livelihood of a boy high school student emerged inside her head, her eyes couldn't move away anymore. It was a real soap opera right from the early morning! The rookie bus guide loved soap opera, to the degree she would video tape it to watch later!

「I'm sorry dear. Myuu won't listen to me, saying that she don't want to see you off from home as expected, but from your departure instead.....」

「I see..... Well, it's fine. Thanks for coming her to see us off, Myuu. Look forward for souvenir later.」

「Nmyu!」

Myuu who happily hugged tightly, and Hajime whose expression loosened up.

And then, the classmates who were watching over them warmly.....

(Why, is there no one who question this situation!? Shouldn't this be a carnage!? No, wait, that child is around five, six years old no matter how you cut it. That means, that boy when in elementary school, with that beautiful woman he was.....sensei-, Hatayama-sensei! An outrageous situation, is right before us right now! Isn't there something you have to do as an educator!?)

「Fufuh, Myuu-chan is really liking Haji——cough-, Nagumo-kun isn't it?」

Nonchalantly~.

Seeing no reaction that she was expecting, the rookie bus guide whispered 「Damn itt!」 with a small voice. Or rather, just now, this teacher, she almost called a student with his name before she corrected herself hastily.....

The soap opera lover rookie bus guide eye-activate!

.....

.....

.....

No way, this was no way. It was something with that feel..... Looking carefully, the other female students were also the same. This class, the human relationship in it was overly bad news! But, the worst thing was, the classmates

who were accepting it as though it was natural!

Whyyyyy!? Just what's going on!?

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 83

「The expression of Onee-sama when staring at senpai who is holding a small kid, Priceless-!」

「Chih. The binding almost come off already. ——Here, extra」

Kouha-chan was almost slipping off from the electric pole wire with slipper movement. A “Bola” that was taken out from out of nowhere flew. It whirled round and round and round and round from the weight's centrifugal force.

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 80

「.....You. Isn't it about the time soon?」

The driver with his hat deeply lowered over his eyes as though to say 「I absolutely cannot see anything right from the beginning yeah?」 was informing the rookie bus guide in a whisper.

「Tha, that's right! Hatayama-sensei! It's any time now! Please start with the roll-call!」

「Ah, yes. Right away!」

When the rookie bus driver urged looking somewhat in desperation, the small animal teacher started to move while darting about like a small animal.

Before long, everyone boarded inside the bus.

On the seat at the farthest back. Straight at the end of the pathway, Hajime-san occupied the position in the middle immovably.

A thought entered the rookie bus guide's mind for some reason.

‘He looked like a demon king sitting on the throne’, she thought.

And then, ahead of the pathway, right in front of him was herself.....

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 73

The bus started running without any problem.

Outside the window, Myuu was waving around her hand energetically inside

Remia's embrace. All the classmates were waving back.

Kouhai-chan slipped out from her restraint and came running in pursuit. The scream of 「OO~~NEEE~~SAMAA~~~!」 was ignored by all the classmates. And then as though she was purposefully aiming for the cliché, after chasing for five hundred meter, kouhai-chan performed asphalt dive face first hard and her figure vanished far behind.

The rookie bus guide told herself that she didn't see anything. She performed her greeting and self-introduction. She especially emphasized the name of the driver. It felt like the steering wheel handling was out of control for a moment, but surely it was just her imagination.

Shinji and Yoshiki got carried away and they called the rookie bus guide with her first name. The scolding of Aiko-sensei came flying at them there.

While all those were happening, 「Ah」 the voice of one boy student resounded. The voice's owner was Nomura Kentarou. He was staring fixedly at the neighboring seat, and then

「Ai-chan-sensei! Kousuke isn't here!」

「What did you sayyy!?!」

Rustle rustle. 「Kousuke? Ah, Endo-kun?」 「Eh? Endo isn't here?」 「Or rather, was he at the gathering place?」 「Feels like I saw him, or perhaps not.....」 「That Aby, Kousuke, maybe he is actually around here?」 「Oi oi, that lord, is he left behind.....as expected ain't it?」 The indifferent voices of the students resounded.

「Eh? Eh? Err, Hatayama-sensei, could it be there is one student that is not here?」

「Please wait a second. Everyoo~~ne! Look around you very carefully! By any chance, is Endo-kun at the corner or somewhere? Or perhaps, he is right beside you but you just don't notice him! First let's double check for sure!」

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 71

All the classmates simultaneously started observing inside the bus attentively.

The conclusion altogether was 「He isn't heree~~!」

「Nomura-kun! Fine play you did there! How amazing to be able to be the first one noticing about the nonexistence of that Endo-kun! Someone, contact Endo-kun——」

「Sensei, that guy is right above.」

「Eh?」

Hearing Hajime's words, everyone looked up while saying 「Above?」. They were thinking that perhaps Kousuke was clinging at the ceiling. But, they couldn't see any ninja clinging on the ceiling above.

「Above the bus, above. It's this guy we are talking about, perhaps, the bus departed while he went to toilet or something, and with no other option he jumped on the roof, something like that?」

「That Kousuke, just what the hell he is doing?」

The rookie bus guide couldn't follow the content of the conversation.

Kentarou sent a glance at her while opening the window near his seat.

There,

「Ah, the window opened?」

A student smoothly entered inside the bus from the rooftop along with such muttering——Endo Kousuke.

「Oh man, Kentarou. Thanks. I was thinking about throwing in clone to tell someone, but with the guide here I thought that will cause commotion, so I waited for someone to open the window.」

「What are you gonna do if no one opened the window huh?」

「Until we stop at the rest area, I was going to spend time above..... When you get used to it, it was unexpectedly pleasant up there.」

The one normally taking his seat beside Kentarou and started a conversation normally, was a student who was on the rooftop of a running bus all this time.

And then, a retort of 「You can just phone someone to open the window right?」, and the shocked voice 「Ah」 that Kousuke leaked, and the roar of laughter 「As expected from Abyssgate!」 「The lord blundered right from the



beginning huuh!」 toward such Kousuke came from the students.

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 68

Inside the bus that was wrapped with delightfully bright atmosphere that was fitting for the start of a school trip, the rookie bus guide thought.

‘I wonder, in the end will I be able to I hold on my sanity until the last.....?’  
She thought.

The tribulation of the rookie bus guide continued.....?

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I uploaded the activity report.

It's about the release of the comic's second volume.

Thanks to everyone paying the first volume from your pocket, the second volume could be released without incident.

Really, thank you very much!

Please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

Also, I mentioned it at my activity report too but, I'm thinking that I want to restart my update at 21 October.

I'm undecided about the content that I'll write, but for the time being, before I write a long extra story, I want to write several short stories first.

It will please me if you all can enjoy it together with me again.

Please take care of me from here on too!

# Arifureta Chapter 283

## Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ③

AN: I have returned.

From here on I will be updating Arifureta bit by bit basically like usual at 6 PM Saturday.

It's a story that is being done as though for Shirakome to have fun, but I'll be happy if I can have fun with you readers again.

About the story of school trip at the previous chapter, unexpectedly there were a lot of voices asking to continue it, so I tried to write a bit.

Although, it's not a story that can continue for that much so, (or rather, I don't even think about the chronological order and so on of this story)

It feels somewhat half-hearted (sweat)

Maybe I'll write it properly again somewhere.

Also, the Cthulhu term and rule that appear here are different from the actual thing. I prioritize the mood. I'm sorry.

It turned out long so I split the chapter.

After this I'll upload one more chapter at 7 PM.

---

The school trip that they were only told just yesterday.

Their destination was Kyoto. The travel of several hours using bus ended in no time at all.

The rookie bus guide had taken out all the plans for killing time mid journey she had prepared and her cheek muscles were starting to cramp from making

twitching smile too much. She was relieved from the bottom of her heart that they finally arrived.

It helped that the students had good mood. The students this day were relatively cold, they wouldn't react even when she prepared things like karaoke or quiz, but the students here (especially Nakano and Saitou) were really hyped up.

Although they frequently showed speech and conduct that were far removed from common sense, it was relatively endurable if she persisted in seeing and hearing nothing. The bus driver who was similarly seeing and hearing nothing casually giving her follow-up(mental analysis) was also a great help.

And so, even after watching the party trick (?) of the students that began from some time ago, even when currently right beside her there was a female student juggling countless knives in a level that the video of it could be uploaded to the "World Shocking Video" even while looking like she felt it troublesome, the rookie bus guide was still enduring!

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 50

「Sonobe~. You're finished with just ten? You can do more aren't you?」

Tamai Atsushi said such thing with a disappointed look. It seemed that he wasn't satisfied with the juggling of ten knives.

The rookie bus guide thought.

In the first place it's already out for a student to carry knife! Sensei! That child is carrying knife see! What's more it's a lot! Why are you making face as though it's normal!?

「Well, if I get serious then I can do around thirty, but the ceiling is low so that's impossible.」

「Sonobe-san, that's amazing~」

Sensei! What do you mean 「That's amazing~」!? What's with that carefree expression! Sure it looks cute, sheesh. But! Your cute student look like she is going to spend a sharp cutting life you know!? Please give her your guidance!

The rookie bus guide acted the straight man in her heart and stared at Aiko.

Reach, this unsaid feeling!

「??」

Aiko tilted her head in puzzlement. A beat later she smiled carefreely for some reason.

The rookie bus guide whispered 「Damn iiit」. It didn't reach. But she was cute——how should she deal with this helpless feeling.....

But, there a small whisper entered the rookie bus guide's ear.

「Ten more minutes.....」

「Ah, yes.」

The bus driver was wearing his hat so low over his eyes that it was unclear how he could see the front, giving other nothing but anxiety seeing it. According to such bus driver, it seemed that they would reach the first sightseeing area for today in ten more minutes.

The rookie bus guide cleared her throat with a cough and pulled herself together, then she urged Yuuka who had moved to juggle playing cards without her noticing to return to her seat.

The cards weren't only juggled up, they also flew horizontally, furthermore they returned back like boomerang. Although the rookie bus guide was entranced by the artistic juggling of dozens of card moving like that, but she forced herself to do her job properly.

Yuuka returned to her seat while getting applause from everyone. Her cheeks were slightly red from feeling a bit embarrassed.

「Sonobe-san, thank you very much. Everyone else also have amazing skill. This is the first time for me seeing students this amazing.」

She smiled sweetly. Inside her heart she was trembling with fear, thunderstruck, and on the verge of madness, but as a bus guide she couldn't forget to smile. Muscular pain of facial muscles? Bring it on!

Saitou and Nakano reacted.

「Please say that “This is the first time for me” one more time!」

「Put your heart into it! Please say it while looking a bit embarrassed!」

Truly a straight sexual harassment. The rookie bus guide's expression was screaming.

Anyway, card abruptly stabbed into the forehead of the two. 「My head, my heaaad-」 The two idiots were writhing around on their seat.

「Chih, it got dirty.」

Blood stuck to the card. Yuuka treated it like a dirty thing just as she said by wiping the card on Saitou's cloth. Her eyes were completely cold that if anyone faint of heart saw her they would become weak in the knees. Though all the other female students also had the same eyes.

「Guide-san, sorry. The girls in the class will firmly punish these two idiots.」

「Be, before that, blood is going spu~rt, spu~~rt out from their forehead like fountain though-. The hospital-」

It was a sudden bloodshed. The rookie bus guide was flustered.

There Kaori sighed while coming their way. Her gaze was unusually cold. She slapped a large band-aid on the two's forehead. 「Higii!?」 Saitou and Nakano screamed in harmony. *twitch twitch*.

「Geez, you shouldn't dirty the bus with blood! Nakano-kun and Saitou-kun is also playing too much!」

Seeing Kaori giving a scolding, the rookie bus guide had a thought. 「No, that's not the problem!」 She thought.

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 46

「I, I'm sorry for my students behavior! I'll scold them for this later. I'm really sorry!」

The small animal teacher bowed her head repeatedly. Her figure apologizing for her students who were screwing around too much really looked like a teacher, but as expected it seemed like she wasn't concerned by the bloodshed itself.

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 43

For a moment the bus guide was assaulted by a feeling that wanted to scream loudly while escaping by crashing through the window, but she would die if she did that so she barely desisted from doing it. Above all else, as a bus guide, there was no way she could abandon the guest!

「E, e~rr, everyone, looks like you all are full of energy there! After this, in less than ten minutes, we will arrive at our first sightseeing area for today, the Fushimi Inari Shrine. After that, we will go around several sightseeing area just as written in the guidebook before we head toward our hotel for today.」

‘Yee~~s!’ The students replied back energetically again with liveliness that was different from student these days. The rookie bus guide’s mind that was almost toppled was slightly healed from that. These students were actually welcomed guest for a bus guide if the supernatural something they nonchalantly showed frequently wasn’t counted.

‘I’ll do my best!’ The rookie bus guide fired up herself while taking a bold action of releasing her personal information in order to shrink the distance a little between herself and the students.

「Honestly speaking, I came from Kyoto. I lived at the area slightly north from here, near famous places like Kurama hot spring and Kuramadera that everyone surely has heard before. Because of that, I know about various things like the good hidden places and so on, so please ask me anything without reservation.」

‘Ooo~’ The students immediately showed surprise good-spiritedly. How should she say it, this calls had an amazing sense of unity, they looked like they really got along with each other.

She was putting her guard up because they were the “returnees”, and in actuality their many speech and conduct were removed from common sense, but it was completely unthinkable to see them as an object to be avoided.

Perhaps the rookie bus guide had also got a bit used to the students because her shoulders relaxed a bit. It felt like her willpower was recovering.

「Kurama hot spring and Kuramadera? Are they famous place desu~?」

Shia raised her hand *pyon* and quickly threw a question.

Seeing from how the other students weren’t making wondering face, certainly

it seemed those places were quite popular, but for Shia it was a name that her rabbit ears heard for the first time. It seemed Yue was also the same because she was going 「Nn?」 with tilted head.

From the face of the two that were obviously foreigner, the rookie bus guide thought 「It's not unreasonable that they don't know」, she smiled sweetly while giving more explanation.

「It's a really lovely inn that is surrounded by nature. The winter hot spring that is surrounded by trees with winter make-up is especially recommended. Kuramadera is known as a power spot that is famous even in Kyoto. It's also introduced as the home of the tengu(long-nosed goblin) and so on. About the detail of the history, I will tell it at another chance if you are interested but.....」

The rookie bus guide chose her words so that even youngster from foreign country could easily understood and also pickled their curiosity at the same time. She then continued speaking full of playfulness.

「It was also said that far in the past, “the demon king descended” there or something, it's a lovely place.」

All the students without a single exception sent their gaze toward the back seat.

「E, eh? Everyone? Wha, what's the matter?」

Their reaction was different from what she had in mind. Or rather, their reaction was more than she expected! Furthermore it was an incomprehensible reaction!

The rookie bus guide was confused!

When she followed the gaze of the students, she reached the center of the back seat——a single male student who sat firmly like a mountain right in front of the rookie bus guide.

The eyes of the rookie bus guide and him——Hajime met.

If one had to give an allusion about Hajime's mental state here, then Hajime-san in Japan was relatively high-tensioned. Actually, he also nonchalantly joined in at all the energetic replies until now. Even when they were doing karaoke he

was enthusiastically singing out anime song.

If the gazes that were saying things like 「She said the demon king descended there」 「In other words, Nagumo descended there?」 were directed toward such unusually high-tensioned Hajime, how would he react.....

He grinned widely, and released a tiny bit of “Pressure”! Indeed, I am the demon king-sama!

The students got roused up saying 「Oo! Nagumo played along!」 「Yoo, our demon king-sama!」!

However, even though it was only a pressure that was nothing for the students who had been trained at another world, the rookie bus guide who was right at the front of that demon king was completely a different case.....

「くぁ(kua)w世(se)drftgyふじこ(fujiko)lp ! ? 」

Such weird shriek resounded through the parking lot of the Kyoto’s Fushimi Inari Shrine they had just arrived at.

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value 23

Liberated from the long bus travel, the students stretched their body.

Perhaps because it was a school trip that was a bit out of season, the surrounding was throwing glances at the students because it was rare for a group of students to visit at this period of time.

Amidst that atmosphere, the female students were gathering around the rookie bus guide. For some reason Kaori and Shizuku were holding her left and right hand respectively, while other girls like Yuuka, Taeko, Nana and so on were surrounding them like guards. It was a bit of harem situation in a sense.

「E, err, everyone? I’ll be leading, so if possible stay behind me.....or rather, why do I have my hand being hold?」

「It’s fine, it’s fine okay?」

「We are at your side.」

「Err.....guide-san. You want candy? It’s sweet milk taste. I think it will surely



heal you.」

Kaori, Shizuku, and Yuka were sending extremely considerate expression and voice toward the rookie bus guide. The other female students were also sending her kind words one after another.

She was really happy that they would get along with her. Especially because it was the female students and not the male students.

However, still however.

As expected she couldn't hide her bewilderment toward this strange consideration and kindness. Rather, it felt a bit scary instead because they were too kind.

「E, excuse me. Everyone, did I do something? Everyone seems to act a little different compared to before.....eh? Come to think of it, since when we arrived at the parking lot? Eh? Eeeh? I remember talking about the local.....after that.....」

「It's fine if you don't remember!」

「Now now, guide-san. Let's go ahead, okay? Okay?」

Kaori panicked while Shizuku hurriedly pulled at her hand and asked her for being area guide.

Certainly, right now it was time to work. For some reason her memory of a few minutes ago was a bit fuzzy, but the students were hoping for the area guide. Her guide soul would die out if she didn't respond enthusiastically!

The rookie bus guide switched her attitude and walked. All the female students moved simultaneously with her like a colony. Behind them the male students were following in groups.

「Say, Yue. Is that person really okay? I don't think we need to go as far as erasing her memory though.」

At the back of the group, Hajime asked Yue with a really awkward expression.

The demon king-sama never expected that the guide would go mad just from that degree of Pressure. The speech and conduct of the whole class until then that considerably lowered the SAN value of the rookie bus guide was also one

cause, but it was himself who dealt the finishing blow, so as expected Hajime was unusually in the middle of introspection of fooling around too much.

Though the biggest cause of his introspection was because Yue said 「Bad!」 to him.

「.....Nn. She should be okay because she was healed with Soul Magic. In the first place, it looks like she have an amazingly strong willpower that is rare for an ordinary person.....perhaps, she even have some kind of amazing experience in the past?」

It was as though the rookie bus guide possessed toughness as if she even had the skill of Fear Resistance. Yue was looking at the rookie bus guide with eyes as though she was seeing a mysterious thing.

「What kind of amazing experience that would make a rookie bus guide obtain Fear Resistance.....that would be too amazing for the work of bus guide.」

「.....By the way, I didn't manipulate her memory. She has resistance, but it seems that her memory was normally blown away.」

「.....Perhaps I'll give her something later as apology.」

A rookie bus guide who was given apology present from the demon king. There was no doubt that if the people of Tortus heard about it they would get a distant look.

From a glance, it looked like the bus guide-san was greatly popular with the students. The group looked around Fushimi Inari Shrine like that.

Yue and Shia reflexively leaked out voice of admiration toward place that gave off history and mystique like the famous “Torii Corridor” and so on.

The rookie bus guide stood still at a certain place.

「Everyone, this here is called “Omokaru Stone”. If you lift the head of the stone lantern, it's said that your wish will come true if the stone is lighter than you thought, but your wish won't come true if you think it's heavy. Does anyone want to try~」

When the students turned their gaze following those words, there were two stone lanterns. The students made racket with chitter-chatter while trying it out

one after another.

「I wish to get a girlfriend today!」

Nakano yelled a wish that was extremely reckless without shame while sending a glance toward the rookie bus guide and lifted the stone.

「-!? .....It, it's lightttt! Very lliight!」

It seemed that it was really heavy far than what he thought. Even though he had another world cheat, but he still felt that it was heavy for some reason..... Perhaps his wish was just that “impossible~”.

Sympathizing gazes gathered toward Nakano. Saitou who saw that gave up giving a try and quietly took distance from Nakano.

The next who reached out his hand was Nomura Kentarou who showed a fine play when the bus departed at the beginning, and his party member who took the healing role, Tsuji Ayako. Both of them glanced at each other while reaching their hand, and slowly lifted up the stones.

「Tsuji, how's yours?」

「U, uh. I thought that it's normally light though.....Nomura-kun, you?」

「Me too, I think it's light. ....Tsuji, your wish is.....」

「That's a secret!」

Both of them blushed slightly while glancing at each other with their hand still holding the stone.

「Can you believe it? Those two, they aren't going out even like that you know?」

「Who cares, put down the stone quickly already, Nomura. Or I'm going to crush your head along with the stone.」

Atsushi and Noboru were peevish. Seeing the two who were both conscious of each other since returning to earth and yet still hadn't gone out with each other, not just Atsushi and Noboru, the other classmates were also making doubtful expression.

The students were making noise like that while at the end Shizuku and Kaori

made their attempt. Shia asked the two with an excited voice.

「What kind of wish the two of you want to have come true? Please tell me before lifting up the stone desu.」

「I.....as I thought, I want to be able to keep being together with Hajime-kun from here on forever, I think?」

「Let's see.....I wish, that my family will be a bit more quiet, something like that.」

Kaori looked a bit embarrassed while Shizuku got a distant look when saying their wish. Pitying gazes gathered at Shizuku.

Like that, Kaori and Shizuku reached their hand toward the Omokaru Stone.....

「My, it's light. I wonder if my family will restrain themselves a bit with this?」

Shizuku lightly lifted up and down the Omokaru Stone really happily. Even more pitying gazes gathered toward her.

But, beside her an abnormal situation occurred. Kaori wasn't trying to lift up the Omokaru Stone from above the stone lantern.

No, looking at how she was shaking all over, it wasn't that she wasn't lifting up the stone, it looked like she "couldn't lift up the stone".

「Nnnnnnnnnnnh!? What's this!? Why is it this heavy!? It doesn't twitch for even an inch though!?」

‘Could it be, the stone is glued?’ In her confusion Kaori-san even forgot the fact that just before this everyone was normally lifting up the stone.

「Is it getting stuck.....」

The rookie bus guide who was watching over the students smilingly picked up the Omokaru Stone with a bewildered expression.

‘Hyo-i-’, it was lifted up really lightly.

「.....」

「.....」

An inexpressible atmosphere was flowing. The air felt even heavier from the fact that Kaori had spoken out her wish before this.

「This, this time it will surely be okay!」

「Tha, that's right!」

The rookie bus guide desperately followed up. Kaori was getting teary eyed while reaching her hand toward the Omokaru Stone once more.

It didn't even twitch.

「WHYYYYYYYY!? Is my wish that difficult!? Is it really that impossible of a wish, so much so that the weight isn't just simply heavy anymore!? UWAAAAAAAAHN」

Kaori's posture was already clinging on the stone lantern, trying to somehow lift up the Omokaru Stone at the head part. Naturally, she very much gathered pitying gazes.

Amidst that, Yue-sama came forward with trotting steps.

She sent a warm gaze at Kaori who was struggling hard to lift up the Omokaru Stone with tear-stained face and then,

「.....Kaori. Do you know the words, knowing your place?」

「What does that mean!?」

‘Wanting to be at Hajime's side is a wish that is beyond you, you know?’, those words implicitly conveyed that.

The strange situation where the Omokaru Stone couldn't be lifted up no matter what she tried even began to gather curious attention from the surrounding people who came for sightseeing.

「Err, Hajime-san. Could it be.....」

「Aa~, yep. It's absurdly concealed skillfully but, from what I see with my magic stone eye, it's that Yue's doing.」

Just as Shia's instinct told her, it was Yue-sama's doing.

Yes, in front of the public she was concealing her magic power while activating gravity magic in a miraculous feat!

The proof of that was how the weight was added in proportion with the strength Kaori used. The stone lantern where the Omokaru Stone was placed was starting to make ominous sound *crack crack*.

Even Kaori seemed to notice from that sound.

「This is.....YUU~~EE~~~!! You are bullying me again! What are you thinking doing that in this kind of place!? Dispel it quickly! Now, right away!」

「.....I don't understand what are you talking about desu.」

‘Pyu~pyu pyuh pyu pyu~~~’ Yue averted her gaze while whistling unnaturally. If it was for the sake of bullying Kaori, then she wouldn't shirk from doing miraculous feat!

Kaori who sensed that Yue had no intention of dispelling the gravity magic had a vein emerged angrily on her forehead.

The classmates who guessed the situation from the two's conversation showed exasperated face or amused face. Amidst that, Kaori took a dee~~p breath one more time.

「Tha, that, Kaori? I know what's going on but, there are a lot of people here, it's better to give up.....」

「Shizuku-chan. There is battle that a woman cannot withdraw from.」

Shizuku thought ‘At the very least don't fight using body reinforcement at a sightseeing area, seriously’, but Kaori was already——activating her charging maiden mode!

「THIS STONEEEEEEEEEEEEE!! I'LL ABSOLUU~~~TELY, LIFT YOU  
UUUUUUUUUUUP」

A surging war cry! Kaori displayed the physical strength of god's apostle all out, pouring her all into conquering the Omokaru Stone! It seemed she still have some reasoning left to at least suppress the visualization of her magic power light, it was fortunate at that point but.....

「.....Muh. Unreasonably stubborn!」

「Watch me-, Hajime-kun! I'm, not going to lose!」

‘I cannot watch this in various sense’, Hajime’s straight man retort didn’t enter the ear of the two.

Shizuku and Aiko tried to stop them in panic.

However, before they could *crack*, an ominous sound resounded and the two reflexively stopped moving.

Looking carefully, the stone lantern finally couldn’t endure the super heavy weight and had crack entered it!

「Please spare me from sudden destruction of tourist area~~a!」

「A, anyway everyone! Form a wall! Become human wall so that other tourists cannot see!」

Aiko tried to stop the two while half-crying, while Shizuku gave instruction to the students to form a crowd.

Kaori didn’t yield against the attention from around her, she didn’t even yield against the super heavy weight, finally she succeeded to hold the Omokaru Stone in her arms. And then, she raised it high above her head with the cry ‘DAAA———!’ even while shaking all over.

Her pose looked like an athlete of barbell weight lifting, or perhaps like a combat race that went “Share your strength with me!”. (TN: This is Dragon Ball reference I think.)

At the same time, a depression formed at the ground under Kaori’s feet in radial shape. Countless fissures spread outward like spider web.

「Look, look-, Hajime-kun! I properly lifted it! My wish will come true!」

「.....Nuu. Damn Kaori. She did it.」

It seemed that Kaori-san who was immersed in her sense of accomplishment already forgot. About the fact of “It’s out if it feel heavier than what you imagined”. It was already out for her right from the beginning.

But, no one could say that to her looking at that brightly glowing expression.

Anyway, while the classmates were blocking people’s gaze, Hajime punished the two with Shockwave attached forehead flick while fixing the ground and

stone lantern with transmutation.

Everything was fixed in the blink of eye so there shouldn't be any witness.

Yes, no one except the rookie bus guide who was among the students.

The rookie bus guide who witnessed the whole sequence of events was making twitching smile for a while before,

「.....fuhih」

She fainted, leaving behind a strange snicker.

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 18

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

There is one more chapter posting after this!

It's a story that I wrote without thinking of the setting or anything, so the chronological order is also vague.

And so, I won't make any allusion regarding Kouki.

Whether he is there or not, please see it with your eye of the heart.

PS

Arifureta Nichijou chapter 6 is updated at Overlap-sama's homepage.

Please take a look if you like.



# Arifureta Chapter 284

## Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ④

AN: I posted Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ③ before this.

Please take a look there first

---

Even after that, the sanity level of the rookie bus guide was shaved hard every time they went to other sightseeing area, but because of her professional spirit that was beaten into her despite her status as rookie, her inherent willpower, and then the follow-up of the terrifyingly kind students, she managed to somehow overcome the difficult situation.

After they arrived at their inn, a dispute revolving around who would share the room with Hajime ensued, there was an outbreak of TALKING physically with Yue and Kaori as the main offender, the youth was peeved, Aiko-sensei tried to abuse her authority, as the result, there was the unexpected occurrence of her getting scold(choke sleeper)-ed by Shia occurring.....

For the rookie bus guide, something at the level of the commanding teacher getting strangled by a student was already not a big deal. Compared to her own condition where there were already instances in double digit number where her memory was spotty just from this one day, it was something trivial.

However, seeing the bus driver who still wore his hat very low over his eyes that half his face was hidden even indoor, acting like it wasn't any concern of him, it caused killing intent to boil up from inside her.

Perhaps noticing the gaze of the rookie bus guide that was teeming with killing intent, the bus driver presented her with a canned coffee but.....

The rookie bus guide was someone who was overly fond of sweets. To the degree that sugar content was life for her. If she had to hold back from sugar

content, she would rather woke up early in the morning and ran marathon for ten kilometer to maintain her body style even if she had to suffer lack of sleep. That was how much she loved sugar content. To the degree that she would pour down the sugar for business use down into her throat as they were if she was so inclined.

Even though the bus driver should know that about her, he intentionally gave her a black coffee. The rookie bus guide swore to herself, 'I absolutely gonna murder you one day'.

Like that, she finished her dinner even while being completely exhausted in body and mind, and then it was time for the students to enter bath.

The rookie bus guide headed to the inn's lobby by herself. Her body was demanding for sweets. Eating sweets at night wasn't something good, but she couldn't hold on if she didn't replenish her sugar content.

「Haa~, I'm tired.....where is the sugar.....is there café au lait of Gloco I wonder.....」 (TN: It refers to Glico brand I think)

Like a sugar content zombie wandering in the search of brutal sweetness, the rookie bus guide was walking unsteadily. Then she saw on the chair ahead of the corridor, Aiko was sitting snugly.

When she saw the hanging sign of the bath on the other side further ahead, she realized that she was keeping a lookout as a teacher.

「Good evening Hatayama-sensei. It must be hard having to take care everything alone.」

For some reason the rookie bus guide called out to that figure sitting alone while her legs were dangling back and forth from the chair. Perhaps Aiko had nothing to do because smiled happily when she was called out.

「Ahaha, well, it can't be helped. The circumstance is like this. Besides, it's not as hard as you think. Haji——Nagumo-kun is constructing a surveillance system inside the inn so, well, I don't think it will happen, but even if the boys think about doing anything not good, a warning will reach my smartphone.」

「Is that so.」

‘Don’t look down on the ignoring skill that has been polished through this whole day okay?’ As though to say that, the rookie bus guide smiled sweetly and overlooked what Aiko said.

「Rather, I’m more worried whether Nagumo-kun is going to get ambushed by the girls——」

「Tomorrow will be free activity isn’t it! What will Hatayama-sensei do!?!」

「Hiih!? What’s with the sudden loud voice!?!」

‘It’s so that the unfathomable world of you all doesn’t encroach into mine’, Of course she didn’t say that out loud.

The figure of Aiko-sensei twitching like a shivering small animal caused her to feel 「I won!」 for some reason, the rookie bus guide was about to go in a journey searching for sugar content once more.

At that moment,

——\*DOPAN-DOPAN-DOPAN-DOPAN-\*

Sudden gunshots!

「Hiih!? What’s that!?!」

The rookie bus guide embraced herself with both her hands while jumping up. It was a sound that people couldn’t possibly hear in Japan, however, it was a sound that people had certainly heard from movie or the like. The rookie bus guide couldn’t hide her shaken up feeling!

「Na, Nagumo-ku~~n! What’s going oonn!?!」

Aiko raised her voice in front of the hanging sign of the male’s bath. Then, from inside the bath,

——I’m currently teaching my classmates the meaning of recklessness~. Especially at these guys’ crotch!

Such voice came.

It seemed there was man among man who knew no fear there. The countdown to job change into manly woman had begun.

——The dream-, we only want to see the dream! That’s all there is to it!

—Fuh. We're resolved from the start!

Such manly (?) roar could be heard, then a beat later.

— — \*DOPAN-, DOPAN-\*

— — AAA — — !

— — AAA — — !

Two scream of death agony echoed.

「I don't hear anything. I don't hear anything. I don't hear anything. I don't  
hear anything. I don't hear anything. I don't hear anything. I don't hear  
anything. I don't hear anything. I don't hear anything. I don't hear anything. I  
don't hear anything. I don't hear anything. I don't hear anything. I don't hear  
anything.」

「Hah!? A, are you okay!? Eh!? Your eyes look empty!? Someone! Someone please he~~~lp!」

The rookie bus guide covered both her ears. She curled into herself while wholeheartedly whispered the same thing repeatedly. Aiko looked after her while getting panicked.

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 4

When the bath time was over, the students wearing yukata were clamoring at places like the shop in the lobby and so on.

The rookie bus guide was lying down on the sofa of such bustling lobby while diligently replenishing her sugar content slurping through a long straw an extremely sweet café au lait. She was making her own arm as pillow replacement, so if one changed the angle they viewed her, it would look like she was connected with intravenous drip of café au lait.

「.....Guide-san, are you all right?」

「Kaori has put recovery magic on her and even Yue had used her soul magic, so I think she is fine but.....」

When Kaori whispered so worriedly, Shizuku said so with the same

expression.

At a sofa slight distance away in the same lobby, the usual members with Hajime as the center (other than Yue and co, there were Ryutaro and Suzu) were sitting there. Other than them, the Ai-chan bodyguard party was also sitting there. In addition, it was only Yuka who were pulled by other girls for some reason and right now she was going somewhere.

The gaze of everyone was directed toward the rookie bus guide who was limply lying down while continuing to slurp the brown liquid *slurp slurp* without resting, and Aiko who was worriedly staying at her side.

「.....Nn. That child is a strong child. She is an outstanding material whose mental strength can rival even Tio if she is trained.」

「That's a completely unexpected evaluation from Yue-san. Is that person really a bus guide?」

Rookie bus guide-san, she received a tremendously great evaluation from the strongest vampire princess of another world.....

Shia was directing a gaze at the rookie bus guide whose intake amount of extremely sweet café au lait had reached liter unit as though she was seeing something amazing. The bus guide's complexion had become far better than before. Was sugar content something like a recovery medicine for her?

By the way, Nakano and Saitou were collapsing with the white of their eyes exposed on the sofa in front the rookie bus guide. Their posture was strangely bow-legged.

Like that for a while everyone amused themselves with whimsical chat before suddenly Hajime stood up with a smartphone in one hand.

「I'll call home for a bit.」

Saying that he left his seat. Different from Yue and co who had an idea of what that was about, Ryutaro and Suzu and others were puzzled about what Hajime's business was. Shizuku who noticed their question spoke the answer with smiling expression.

「He is going to say good night to Myuu-chan.」

‘Aaa!’ Voices of understanding were raised.

When they looked around, there was the figure of Hajime leaning on a pillar of the lobby, listening on the phone while nodding frequently toward the voice that came from the other side of the phone. His expression was gentle and very kind, overflowing with affection and love.

「He looks like a completely different person than when he was at the other world.」

「He looks like the former Nagumo-kun isn't he?」

Ryutaro and Suzu didn't even hide their astonishment. They whispered such thing with wide eyes.

「Though he looks far more adult compared to that time.」

「Somehow, he feels like a real “father”.」

「Looking at him like that, certainly that's true.」

「Thinking carefully, a classmate being a father is really out there.」

Nana and Taeko were looking at Hajime with smiling expression that was filled with warm and fluffy admiration. Atsushi, Akito, and Noboru were also the same. Yue and others too, they must be used to seeing this side of Hajime because they were staring at their beloved with an extremely soft expression.

Before long Hajime finished his phone call and returned. It seemed that he was taken aback that everyone was watching him, but he immediately guessed the reason. He averted his gaze somewhat embarrassingly while sitting back on the sofa.

「It's souvenir request from Myuu. Do you all remember how we promised before we depart that each one of us will give her one souvenir?」

「.....Nn. If I remember right, anything is fine, but something lasting will be better than food she said.」

「She said that there is nothing she particularly want in the house but..... Myuu-chan, was there something she wanted?」

「Yeah, it seems she really want “something rare”. Also, she made a bet with

Kaa-san about who will give her the rarest and also the most interesting souvenir. Looks like there will be a return present from Myuu that is filled with her gratitude for the first place.」

Thinking with common sense, in that kind of time someone should say ‘What’s with a little child making a bet!’, but for those who knew about the mother(criminal) of Nagumo family, it was something usual. In the first place, it was already too~ late when there were also others teaching that child how to handle firearm and lethal weapon, and even combat skill.

Now then, regarding the present that would be given as token of appreciation from the princess of Nagumo family.

Hajime’s gaze was really provocative. His state was openly being a doting parent that seemed to say「Well, Myuu’s number one is always me though」without hiding it. The color of the eyes of Yue and others changed toward that provocation.

「.....Hajime. You are too conceited. I’ll show you proof that for Myuu, Hajime isn’t always the number one.」

「For a girl, there is point that can only be understand by another girl desu. After all my father too once confidently gave me present that I was trouble about how to react to it.」

「That’s troubling isn’t it? The mistaken impression of father who think “If it’s girl then surely they will be happy with this”. Just what did he mean by giving me something like assassin blade?」

「Shizuku-chan.....did Oji-san(uncle) really gave you something like that as present?」

「Or rather, Shizushizu. I think the troubling point isn’t the “father’s mistaken impression”, but Shizushizu’s own family themselves.」

Yue stood up. It seemed she was going to scour through shops. Sightseeing areas were also abundant with souvenir, but the request was for “something rare”. Perhaps there would be something like that in his inn’s shop.

Thinking to follow that action, Shia and others also stood up and they headed toward the shop while scrambling to be the first to arrive. Nana and Taeko were

following behind them saying「It's getting more and more interesting~」.

There, Atsushi went

「Could it be, if we also buy souvenir that Myuu-chan recognize, that means it will be our victory against Nagumo.....」

Hearing that, Akito and Noboru looked at each other. Ryutaro grinned.

「Smearing mud on Nagumo's invincible and undefeated legend.....that sounds hot blooded no matter what kind of shape the victory is yeah!」

「Even if we cannot win physically, we can win in sense of souvenir huh.....that might be acceptable!」

「Yosh, let's get going too!」

Ryutaro and others also got heated up for some reason and they rushed toward the shop.

It seemed that the princess of Nagumo family would be presented with a lot more tribute than expected.

When he noticed Hajime was alone on the sofa. He smiled wryly and went 'good grief' while taking out several souvenirs that he impulsively bought today. Most of them were small articles like key holder and the like.

Hajime was a type of person who for some reason couldn't help but buy meaningless and hard to place thing like pennant and so on. If it was curious small articles than it was even more so.

Like that, he lined up the small articles on the table and scrutinized whether there was anything that could attract Myuu's interest, it was then,

「.....Eh? Where are Nana and others?」

Yuka returned. Her brown hair that usually wasn't particularly tied or decorated was currently worn in fluffy braid that was gently hanging on her shoulder. Perhaps because she had just got out of bath, also coupled with her relaxed atmosphere and eyes that were filled with enthusiasm, she looked younger than usual.

Hajime talked about the battle of souvenir for Myuu.



「Ahaha, I see. But, I don't think there will be anything that can satisfy Myuu-chan in hotel's shop though.....」

「Half of their motivation must be looking for side entertainment. Sitting and chatting is also not bad, but this is a school trip that is rare to come by after all.」

「Then, perhaps I should join in too. And, what are you doing Nagumo?」

「Me? I'm sorting the unclear small articles that I was buying without realizing it today, while also scrutinizing if there is something that will make Myuu happy among them.」

「What do you mean buying without realizing it huh? You're talking like a spendthrift there.」

「It's a bad habit I inherited from my mother. I'm properly putting on the brake if it's something expensive, but when I saw cheap and unusual small thing, my hand would unconsciously reached out.」

「Aa, come to think of it, Yue-san and others talked about it I think. Nagumo you, eerr, what was it again, you like pointless technology? Something that is pointlessly pointless? Something like that they said.」

「Do you mean, pointlessly refined pointless technology without any pointlessness? The way you said it just now, it was already something simply pointless.」

「You attached "pointless" at the technology there, so in the end it's still pointless isn't it?」

「.....」

Hajime lost the argument. Hajime's lips closed tightly and formed a thin line, inside his heart he was making a meager objection「Perhaps it's pointless but, it's romance. Exactly because it's pointless that life is interesting」.

Hajime fell silent so the conversation cut off.

There, Yuka suddenly noticed. The sofa space that was fairly spacious had suddenly become barren of people, while the surrounding was deserted. At slight distance away, Aiko was stuffing her cheeks with absurdly sweet sweets together with the rookie bus guide without the slightest care in the world.

In other word, right now, it was a situation where it was mostly just the two of them.....

「.....」

Yuka's gaze wandered around. *fidget fidget, fidget fidget*. She twirled and toyed around the tip of her braided brown hair.

Suddenly Yuka lost any calm and she conscientiously fixed the cuff and collar of her yukata meaninglessly. Hajime directed a questioning expression toward such Yuka. But, his thinking immediately turned like「Well, doesn't matter」and he called out to Yuka.

「Hey, Sonobe.」

「! .....What?」

For some reason Yuka-chan replied with a piercing glare.

「No, why do you suddenly snap?」

「I don't snap. I'm normal. I'm so relaxed you won't be able to believe it.」

「I, I see. Well, that's fine but.....rather than that, among these things, in your opinion, which one of them a girl's sense will want?」

When she dropped her gaze on the table, strange objects were lining up there. They were small articles with shape that were really hard to describe. It wasn't like they didn't look like living thing, but at the very least they weren't based on existing living thing. If she had to say, were they apparition model or something?

「I want to refuse receiving any of them with my whole being.」

「Don't forget the prerequisite of the present being something rare. Make your judgment based on that.」

「Ee~. Even if you told me that, I can only call them disgusting though.....」

What's with these things? Just from looking at those numerous small articles made her felt uneasy. She wondered since when Hajime purchased this kind of weird things.

Furthermore, he was thinking to present this kind of object X to his beloved

daughter. Yuka spontaneously sent a suspicious gaze to Hajime.

「Hey, Nagumo. Let me ask, right now, we are talking about souvenir for Myuu-chan right?」

「That's right, why?」

「I won't say anything bad. Go to Kaori and get yourself healed right away. Especially your head.」

「What do you mean by that, huh?」

The glaring gaze of Hajime and Yuka collided with each other.

Yuka let out a sigh, then she began to stare at all the object X while groaning 'uu~n'. The more she looked at them, the more she felt unease welling up inside her for some reason.

「This one. This slime thingy. Isn't this the most better? Like, it's disgustingly cute, or it barely can allow you to trick yourself?」

「The most better, doesn't that mean that it's not the rarest? Or rather, is it that bad that you need to trick yourself?」

「Anyway, if Myuu-chan is happy when you give her this, then I think you should open a grand family meeting with all your strength to discuss it.」

「.....I see.」

Hajime-san didn't look like he could accept it. In the end, he kept aside the object X that Yuka called「I don't want to even see it!」 as the tentative souvenir candidate.

And then, he quietly held out the slime thingy toward Yuka.

「.....What?」

「I'll give it to you as the consultation fee.」

「Did you listen to what I said?」

Yuka's extremely reproachful glare conveyed how she refused to accept it. Toward that, Hajime said「I guess that's so」laughingly while he took back his hand that was holding the slime thingy. It seemed that he was joking.

Yuka stroked down her chest in relieve.

But,

「.....Sonobe? So you actually want it just as I thought?」

「Eh?」

Yuka was puzzled by what Hajime said. When she turned her gaze, without her noticing her own hand was placed on Hajime's hand that was pulling back the slime thingy. It was as though she was reluctant to let go of the present that Hajime expressly offered to her.

Yuka's face softly blushed.

「Eerr, this is, that.....」

*mutter mutter. fidget fidget.*

Honestly speaking, she could assert that the slimy thingy object X was disgusting.

However, still. This was that Nagumo Hajime they were talking about. That person gave it to her. Though tentatively speaking, it wasn't like it was the first present he gave her what with the various equipment like artifacts, telepathic communication device, and so on that he gave her to deal with the situation when they had just returned home.

Although, if one had to say than those things were "provision". They were a bit different from "present".

「Well, I'll give it to you if you are fine with it.....so, do you want it?」

With a doubtful expression, Hajime tried confirming it once more with Yuka.

Yuka's gaze busily swam around, after that she gave a small nod.

The presentation ceremony of Object X: Slime thingy.

Yuka looked alternately at Hajime and that thing that was placed on her palm, then she spoke her thanks「Thank you」 with a small voice. Hajime's expression turned even more doubtful.

Hajime began to sort the other object X while keeping silent, while Yuka was staring closely at the slime thingy once more.

And then, her mouth slackened slightly.

「.....Yu, Yuka-chi is, staring at something disgusting while grinning happily!」

「Yu, Yuka? You okay? Are you tired?」

Nana and Taeko who returned without anyone noticing were staring at Yuka with fear and unease in their expression. Certainly, it was only natural that they would get worried if their friend was grinning while staring at hard to describe object.

「Eh, wai-, that's not-. This is, that's-」

Yuka stood up with bright red face while still holding the slime thingy, then she stepped toward Nana and Taeko to make excuse.

Nana and Taeko retreated backward in proportion with the step forward Yuka took.

Yuka stood still. Nana and Taeko also stopped retreating.

Yuka took a step forward. Nana and Taeko took a step back.

Yuka was slowly approaching. Nana and Taeko were slowly backing away.

A vein emerged on Yuka's forehead. She dashed forward fiercely. Her two best friends escaped away like rabbit on fire.

「Why are you two running awaaay!?!」

「Because you're carrying something strange thereee!」

「Nooo! Don't get closeee!」

The three close friends vanished inside the inn.

「.....They're exaggerating.」

Hajime was staring at the remaining object X while letting out a faintly sad whisper.

By the way, when he showed it to Yue and others too, don't mention giving it too Myuu, he was even prohibited from showing it to her. As expected, it seemed those things possessed disgustingness that couldn't be described.

It also became obvious when the rookie bus guide who had accomplished

recovery from finishing her sugar content replenishment passed through and saw the armful of object X Hajime was carrying, she raised a shriek 「Kuee~~」 that sounded like an ominous bird before she fainted.

The rookie bus guide who slept like a log until the next morning of course had her memory blown away from the shock.

There was time when her mental state was driven to a dangerous state, but it seemed last night she saw a happy dream where she ate a candy house to her heart content, so her condition was extremely excellent.

Her mental self-defense and recovery power was tremendously capable.

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 52

Throughout all those, where Hajime and others sometimes had fun, sometimes went through craziness, sometimes escaped from reality, and sometimes concealed an uproar with their all while digesting the school trip program, currently they were sitting silently inside the bus that was returning home while musing about the memory they made.

Several students were relaxing flaccidly and entered a light sleep. Aiko-sensei was completely traveling into the world of dream. Her mouth was mumbling 'munya munya' while drool was dripping in her deep sleep. She must have anxiety piling up inside her.

「Nevertheless, just what in the world that person is?」

Shia was starting on that topic from her seat in the back that was near the window.

「Aah, that woman who came talking to us at Ujibashi Bridge huh.」

「.....She was really beautiful but, she might be a bit similar with Kaori.」

When it was time for free activity, Hajime and others went to Ujibashi Bridge. While Hajime and co were harmoniously having fun there, that woman was there without anyone noticing. The unfamiliar beauty was sending them dark gaze and whispered 「How envious.....」 while approaching them.

Ten out of ten people would surely turn around seeing that woman's

beautiful face, so Kaori felt a bit bashful hearing what Yue said——

「.....with how ill that woman felt.」

「I'm not ill! I'm in perfect health!」

Yue and Kaori sat with Hajime between them, but they grappled with both their hands locked with each other through Hajime.

「Rather than that, Hajime. You really don't know that person? The other side know about you though.」

Shizuku left alone Yue and Kaori who were raising their friendship physically and asked Hajime.

Just as Shizuku said, when that beauty who approached with a dangerous look arrived at a distance where her hand could reach, her eyes opened wide as though she noticed something and she began to stare hard at Hajime. And then, neglecting the bewildered Hajime and co, the beauty nodded as though in understanding of something and whispered 「For us to meet in this kind of place.....」.

「No, I don't remember her at all. But, from what she said at the end there, that's」

——I'll turn a blind eye in deference to that child

That child....."A child" that was related with Hajime.

「Actually, a while ago I made a minor Crystal Key for Myuu. It's so that she can come home right away no matter what happen. And then, one day that Myuu, she saw a special coverage of Kyoto in TV and the next day, she said 『That's right! I'll go to Kyoto nano!』, and she went strolling alone. Such thing happened before.」

「.....I, is that so. Wait, you let her go alone?」

「More accurately, she only left a letter which said that and went as she pleased.」

「What a light footwork.」

Shizuku showed a dry smile. But, at the same time she guessed what Hajime

wanted to say.

In other words, at that time, Myuu attracted a strange thing again, and on top of that she easily formed friendly relationship with them.

「I'm curious. That woman, was she human or not?」

「Sto, stop it. I'm getting goosebumps here.」

Not just Shizuku, even Kaori who was in the middle of conflict and Shia shuddered from chill.

「Because remember, a woman clad in disturbing atmosphere like that, and yet I couldn't detect her until she approached in that close range? This me couldn't detect her.」

「No, now that Hajime-san said it, I also didn't notice her desuu!」

Kaori and Shizuku felt shuddering chill on their back. Though it seemed only Yue who didn't think much about it.

「Well, even if she is really Myuu's "friend", she pulled back because of that, so I don't think there is any reason to make this that big of a problem.」

Hajime concluded like that, but inside his heart he was at his wits' end. A speech of 「Don't pick up that kind of thing! Return it to where you found it!」 toward children was something relatively common, but in Myuu's case, it was really "that kind of thing". She only ever found "something" with true identity that hadn't been grasped yet.

As a papa, he wondered how far he should interfere with his daughter's strange friend relationship. It was a problem that gave him terrible headache.

Perhaps noticing the inside of Hajime's heart, Yue began to pat Hajime's head to comfort him.

The atmosphere inside the bus was laid-back.

The time flowed peacefully like that, and by the time there was only around one hour until they arrived, Kentarou suddenly yelled.

「Se, sensei! Ai-chan-senseiii! Kousuke isn't here!」

「What did you sayyyy!?!」



Aiko who was fast asleep leaped up.

‘Again in this timing!?’ The inside of the bus was thrown into uproar.

「E, err Hatayama-sensei? Is there one student who isn’t here?」

Even the drowsy rookie bus guide also asked uneasily. Aiko told the rookie bus guide 「I’ll confirm it!」 before she raised her voice.

「Everyo~~ne! Look around you rea~lly carefully! Check that perhaps Endo-kun is in place like a crack or something! Or perhaps, he is right beside you but you just don’t notice him! Is he holding on the roof, or maybe he is hanging down under the bus!?!」

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value 49

The students looked every which way. Commotion like 「That guy Aby did it again」, 「Wait, did you ever see that guy in the middle of the school trip?」, 「Eh, come to think of it I didn’t see Endo-kun at all.....」, or 「As expected from the lord huh」 could be heard.

The conclusion,

「Ai-chan-sensei! Kousuke isn’t here!」

「Ee!? What to do!? Come to think of it, when it was time for roll-call, I don’t remember calling Endo-kun’s name! Uu, this is teacher’s responsibility.....」

The lord who was forgotten even at the roll-call. Aiko felt responsible and she turned pale and she blew up her fuse. She impulsively began to speak to the driver to turn back the bus.

But before she could finish, Hajime raised his voice.

「For now, let’s try calling his phone and ask him where he is. If needed then I’ll bring him back here.」

「Hajime-kun.....I’m sorry to trouble you.」

Aiko sent Hajime a teary gaze as though she was staring at the messiah. Hajime waved his hand lightly in response and told Aiko 「Don’t worry about it. Against the Abyss Lord, it can’t be helped that you completely forgot.」

Hajime called the phone. A beat later, it seemed Kousuke answered his

phone.

「Oi, Endo. Where are yo—eh? What did you say? It's pretty noisy over there I cannot hear you. Ha? What are you saying.....」

After a long silence, Hajime suddenly switched his smartphone into speaker mode.

Immediately, explosive sound resounded from the other side of the phone.

『I'm telling you-, right now, I'm in the middle of battle against an unknown group! Shit-, what the hell, these guys!』

「「「「「.....」」」」」

Not just Hajime, all the classmates simultaneously made expression that seemed to say 「Uwaaa」.

Right after that, a voice of a girl that sounded childish somehow resounded.

『Endo-sama! Just leave me behind! Their objective is me! Please escape by yourself!』

『You think I can just say ‘ok, bye’ and left behind a child in this kind of place! Wait, what? Talisman? What are you planning taking out that kind of—wait, that's a lie right!? Onmyouji-, are you an onmyouji!? I saw this kind of scene in a movie before! Dowah, that's dangerous! You asshole, something like fantasy is just cowardly!』

‘Which mouth is saying that huh’, such straight man retort entered the heart of Hajime and co.

『Shit-, enemy reinforcement!』

『Endo-sama, I'm already.....』

『Don't worry about it, just shut up! I was shocked, but just something like this is no problem—kuku-, I don't know the circumstance but, ganging up on a child like this, that nature of yours is something that I really cannot stomach. It looks like you lowlifes are in need of education huh.』

『Endo-sama?』

『Fuh. I'm not Endo. Call me like this. Kousuke E Aby—』

There the call cut off *pushu*. Hajime was the one who cut it off.

Inside the bus was silent as grave. In the middle of that, Hajime carefully put back his smartphone inside his pocket and then spoke as though nothing had happened.

「Sensei. There's no problem.」

「I think you're right. Haa, I'm glad.」

Aiko-sensei sat down on her seat snugly after saying that. The other students too were also as expected, they sat down again as though nothing had happened.

Inside the bus that had recovered its peaceful atmosphere, only one person,

「.....uboa」

After hearing the incomprehensible thing from the other side of the phone call, and seeing the weird atmosphere that accepted that happening as common sense, the rookie bus guide was injured with mental damage and left behind a weird groan.

### Omake(Extra)

The rookie bus guide safely weathered the school trip of the “returnees” and she received a welcome like the hero's triumphal return at her workplace.

The senior bus guide who pushed the responsibility this time to her suddenly noticed the keyholder that was attached on the rookie bus guide's bag. It was a really beautiful crystal that had geometrical circle pattern engraved within it.

「My, it's a beautiful accessory. I don't remember, was it already there from before?」

「No. Actually this is a present from the students of the school trip this time. They said it's their thanks for everything.」

「Myy! That's great! There are various rumor about them, so I wondered whether something might happen, but for them to give that kind of present to show their gratitude, it seems that rumor is just a rumor isn't it?」

‘So you pushed this responsibility to me even after knowing about those rumors.....’

The rookie bus guide had such thought while putting a smile on the outside. If it was now she felt like she could unleash the greatest right straight of her life.

Urged by the superior, their talk ended. The rookie bus guide who took her own seat breathed out 「fuu」 while taking the crystal keyholder in her hand once more.

And then, she recalled about what she was told when she received this present.

「At time when you really need help, if you take this into your hand and strongly thought then you will have help, huh.....those students, they looked really full of confidence but.....is this thing really that effective?」

She dangled it at the height of her eye and stared at the dazzling crystal for a while.

Like that, the rookie bus guide giggled, and then with a very small voice so that no one could hear——

「I wish that I won't encounter any evil god or mythological being anymore.」

She still didn't understand whether this thing really had any effect or not.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I wrote an idle story with length of just a few chapters, but the result was that it almost entered a long arc after story again.

Please take care of Arifureta from here on too!

# Arifureta Chapter 285

## Arifureta After Ill Yue's Diary ②

Inside one of the room in Nagumo house, *scratch scratch* the sound of a fountain pen composing letters was resounding faintly.

There was a chair and desk that was made from glossy wood. The one who was sitting snugly on that chair writing into some kind of notebook with leather cover was Yue.

For a while, the scratching sound resounded wordlessly, sometimes, Yue threw her gaze to empty air thinking of something and smiled a for just a smidgen before she began to write *scratch scratch* once more.

Before long it seemed she was satisfied already. Yue put down her fountain pen carefully, then she stretched her back while moaning 'u~~~n'.

It was the time before going to bed, so Yue was wearing negligee. Her white smooth limbs were stretched tautly while getting exposed generously.

「.....Nn. This is it for today.」

She whispered with a small voice before hopping down *pyon* from the chair where her feet didn't reach the floor.

The room of Nagumo house that was assigned to Yue was the room with the calmest atmosphere in a sense. Perhaps it could even be said that it was "solemn".

There was basically only wooden furniture with aged feeling in it, so the coloring also possessed depth that was calming and natural. To call it as a room of a historical European mansion was an appropriate expression for it.

In fact the kind of furniture and furnishing inside Yue's room were mostly

antique. Yue who was pleased with the antique in earth went around to gather them from here and there while it also doubled as her date with Hajime.

Even the fountain pen was something with a value that couldn't be obtained with simple mean.

By the way, the rooms of Shia, Remia, and Myuu were room of very modern style. Their room was overflowing with the latest thing rather than old thing. Tio was making her room to be purely Japanese-style. As for Hajime, putting aside his own room, his underground workshop (it mostly doubled as his own room) was in a state that closely resembled the lab of Tony Otark.

It was only Yue's room that had the atmosphere as though one was lost in middle age Europe, but conversely it felt calming. Not only Hajime, but the people of Nagumo house really frequently would aimlessly visit Yue's room and relaxed there.

Hajime and some other were thinking if a fireplace should just get created inside Yue's room. They were also thinking, that going around antique shop and auction throughout the world with Yue searching for seemingly good fireplace would also be nice.

At Yue's room that was becoming a place for relaxation and refreshment like that in a different sense from the living room, it seemed that a guest also visited tonight.

*knock knock* A small knocking sound could be heard, then,

「Yue-oneecha~n. It's Myuu nano. Can I come in?」

The voice of Nagumo family's youngest princess could be heard. When Yue permitted her entry, Myuu who was wearing negligee that seemed matching with Yue came in.

「.....Myuu. What's the matter?」

「Err see, there is something I want to ask Yue-oneechan nano.」

‘What could it be?’ Yue tilted her head in puzzlement while inviting Myuu on her bed. They sat side by side on the bed's edge and Yue urged Myuu to continue with her gaze.

「You see, Yue-oneechan. ——”In this world there is nothing that can excel continuously. Whether talent or education cannot excel continuously. Continuity and determination themselves are the absolute power” nano.」

Myuu said such thing with a stiff expression. Seeing such Myuu, Yue thought, ‘This child, just what is she suddenly saying I wonder’.

「.....Ee~rr, Myuu?」

「——”The secret to make dream come true is summarized into four. Those are curiosity, confidence, courage, and then continuity” nano.」

「Ah, yes.」

Seeing the little girl proclaiming something that seemed to be a wise saying with stiff and slackless expression, the vampire princess became faltering. As though to deal the finishing blow to such vampire princess, the little girl talked even more vehemently.

「——”Putting into diary your’s own thinking, experience, idea, and what you learn, will surely improve the clarity and accuracy of your intelligence” nano.」

So that meant,

「Yue-oneechan! Myuu is going to keep a diary nano!」

「.....How did it become like that.」

While thinking that Myuu was likely getting influenced by some kind of television program, Yue finally guessed the reason of Myuu’s visit tonight.

「Yue-oneechan. A diary, what is a good way to write it nano?」

「.....Nn~」

It seemed that it was something like that just as she thought. In short, when Myuu actually tried to write a diary, she didn’t understand the way to write it, and so she came to ask Yue who had been keeping diary for a long time.

Yue showed a thinking gesture for a bit before answering.

「.....There is no particular rule. Myuu can just write what happened and what you thought about in that day as it is however Myuu like it.」

「Yue-oneechan. ——”When you’re asked what do you want for dinner?

Answering anything is fine is the most troublesome answer” nano. Answering question with “whatever you like” or “as it is” is the most troubling answer nano.」

「.....I’m sorry.」

Myuu was finding fault at her! Yue reflexively apologized because of the excessive shock!

At this rate the dignity of “Yue-oneechan” would fall to the ground. That alone had to be firmly prevented no matter what.

Yue was feeling flustered in her heart against Myuu’s *jii*~ fixed unblinking gaze while trying to deduce the optimum answer, but it was the fact that there was no fixed rule in writing diary. She wondered how to explain about that.....

The point was, it was fine even if it was something vague, but Myuu wanted an image, some kind of approximation like it was fine if she wrote it like this, and so on.

Yue who gave up explaining using words was bluntly speaking a bit embarrassed, but she then suggested a desperate measure to break out of this deadlock, thinking that it might be fine if it was Myuu.

「.....Just now I was also writing in my diary, do you want to look if you’re fine with mine?」

「Nn! Nano!」

Myuu imitated Yue’s favorite phrase in her happiness. Perhaps from the start that was her objective. With a wry smile Yue took the diary above her desk into her hand.

Myuu seemed to be greatly looking forward to it because she was staring at the thick leather-covered diary with sparkling gaze.

Yue showed a bit of thinking gesture, then she activated metamorphosis magic. Faint golden magic power light enveloped Yue, the right after that, the grown adult Yue appeared there.

The length of the negligee became drastically short, which greatly swelled up her bewitching charm. Even if the person herself didn’t intend it, but she was a



peerless beauty who just by being there could make anyone into her prisoner without differentiating gender. Of course, Myuu was only raising voice of admiration 「Oo!」 though.

「.....Myuu, sit on my lap.」

「Yes nano!」

Yue sat on the bed while tapping on her thighs. Myuu then leaped on them as though she had been waiting for it. *moni moni* She adjusted the placing of her butt searching for the best position.

And then, *fui~* strength left her body and she entrusted her head on Yue's voluptuous breast. Yue floated a smile that was filled with affection toward such Myuu and hugged her tightly from behind. She opened the diary on Myuu's lap.

「.....First, how about from——October last month?」

When Yue suggested to show the recent month of her diary, Myuu quickly nodded repeatedly. It seemed that she wanted to read Yue's diary no matter what.

Yue let out a chuckle while opening the page that was the beginning of last month.

——October x Day

When waking up early, Shia was swinging Doryukken wholeheartedly.

It was while she was raising her voice 「Flatten flatten! Squashed flat!」.

Honestly, it was scary. I was thinking what kind of horror right from the morning.

Because, the cheek of Shia who was smiling wide had something red splattered on it, what's more, on Shia's feet there was Tio who was trembling all over while holding her hand.....

‘Surely, she is trying to beat Tio to death for a joke’, was what I thought.

It was lucky that there was the millstone for pounding mochi that was often

seen at New Year, but if it wasn't there, I think there was no doubt that there would be a yell of 「Kyaaaa, it's murdereeeeer」.

When I asked why she was hitting mochi and Tio right from the morning, Shia replied with 「What are you saying, Yue-san. Yesterday night didn't we talk about viewing the moon today?」.

Certainly, there was such talk.

Moon viewing— —the custom to eat mochi while gazing at moon when it's the day of full moon.

I think that it's a custom with really good taste.

Night came. I, Hajime, Okaa-sama, Otou-sama, Shia, Tio, Remia and Myuu, then Kaori and Shizuku, and Aiko joined. The moon viewing at the house's yard began.

The mochi was delicious. The soft and sticky texture was irresistible. As expected from something that was made from Tio's sacrifice. Although, as expected I wished to be spared from mochi that is mixed with the blood of a pervert dragon.....

I who is sensitive with the taste of blood didn't actually feel the taste of blood, so I wish to believe that no impure thing was mixed inside the mochi.

Putting that aside, the moon was really beautiful. It resembled the moon in Tortus, but there is also slight difference.

Especially the silhouette of rabbit pounding mochi on the moon.

Myuu said 「There is Shia-oneechan!」. Her figure making rabbit ears on her head with her hands while hopping up and down was the ultimate cuteness. Especially when Shia joined in and they went pyon pyon together. Of course, I took picture. It's collector version.

Hajime told Myuu an old story regarding the rabbit on the moon.

Rabbit-san embodied self-sacrifice and devotion.....

The content sound like a moving tale in general, but for me it's a story that I'm unable to stomach.

I heard that the rabbit had comrade. Why didn't that comrade stop the rabbit? He didn't search for the old man's food together with the rabbit?

If other say that it's only a story then that'll be the end of it, but if it's me, I won't let the rabbit throw his body into the fire no matter what.

I won't hand over my Shia to anyone!

While inside my heart the moon rabbit and Shia are mixing, Hajime pat my head. It seemed that I was seen through. His eyes were really gentle, furthermore he was staring focused on me, so I almost assaulted him then and there.

Good grief! Hajime is an outrageously dangerous character. Because he almost destroyed my reasoning right away.

Anyway, after I finish writing this diary I'll go charging into Hajime's room.

Returning to the story, I like the moon of earth where rabbit is living more than the one at Tortus. Putting aside that it's a folk tale, putting "moon and rabbit" together, right, I think it's really good.

My name, "Yue" that means moon. In the past, at the bottom of abyss, it was the name Hajime gave to me.

Hajime said, inside the darkness, I looked like a moon, so he named me that.

Yes, he gave me the name that represent such beautiful moon that illuminate the night sky tonight.

.....It's impossible. I cannot hold it anymore. Barrier preparation OK. Recovery medicine OK. Fighting spirit at climax!

The time has come, to Hajime's room, charge!

「Say, Yue-oneechan. What was it that you cannot endure there?」

「.....Myuu will understand when you get a little older.」

‘Nmyu?’ Myuu tilted her head. Come to think of it, the next day after the moon viewing, Hajime-papa seemed like he was losing weight.....thinking back Yue at that time was all smile with bewitching air. Myuu somehow read the

atmosphere and stayed quiet.

「Yue-oneechan.」

「.....Nn?」

After a short silence, Myuu asked looking vaguely uneasy.

「See, Myuu too doesn't really like that story. The rabbit-san dying is a no-no.」

「.....Nn.」

「Shia-oneechan, is different from the moon's rabbit right?」

The source of her uneasiness was the same like Yue, it seemed she was mixing the rabbit in legend with their family's rabbit.

Yue hugged Myuu tiiiiiiightly, then she talked to her with a voice that was full of confidence.

「Completely different. If it's Shia she won't give up until the end. Our rabbit is the strongest rabbit after all, she will overcome any trouble no matter how hard it is, and send flying everything that stand in her way.」

「With Doryukken?」

「.....Nn. With Doryukken.」

Myuu smiled joyfully. Yue also smiled joyfully.

Yue continued 「Besides.....」

「Shia's moon is me. Different from the moon who is only watching. Even if she died I'll revive her no question asked, throwing her back to the earth.」

「Yu, Yue-oneechan..... But, in the story, the great god did that instead isn't it?」

「.....I'll kill a god like that.」

「Ah, yes.」

In a rare occurrence, Myuu averted her eyes. It seemed she was unable to look straight at the Yue's gaze that was shining mysteriously. In fact, when thinking that this was the person who took part in godslaying, it didn't sound like a joke at all. If the heaven emperor-sama saw this vampire princess right

now, he would like to hurriedly run away surely. (TN: In the raw it was Taishakuten, which translated mean Sakra devanam Indra, a deity of Hinduism, Jainism, and Buddhism)

Myuu showed a thinking gesture for a bit, then right after that her expression tensed up and she looked back at Yue.

「Myuu too, will get stronger and stronger nano. And then, Myuu will save the rabbit-san even if Myuu have to kill god nano!」

「.....Nn! That's a good spirit! As expected, Myuu.」

It was the determination of the little girl who was in the process of inheriting all the technique from her cheat and bugged family. If the rabbit-san who was the symbol of self-sacrifice and devotion was here, surely it would yell 「Stoop! I won't throw myself away, so don't lay your hand on goood!」 with teary eyes undoubtedly.

Yue patted the head of Myuu who was smiling merrily, then Myuu begged Yue to go to the next page.

The page was flipped.

——October ○ Day

Tomorrow, it seems that Kaori will come here. I have to prepare.

——October △ Day

That Kaori-. Suddenly firing disintegration bombardment at me, what a girl! The smartphone I carelessly dropped turned into dust!

Good grief, what a horrible story I think. Even though I only put a little trap, that teleported her to adult shop the instant she entered this house's ground.

But well, she became teary eyed so let's stop here. I'll share my dinner's side dish with her.

「Yue-oneechan.....」

「.....Wha, what?」

An exasperated gaze that was unthinkable to be coming from Myuu! Large damage to Yue's mind!

Myuu stared for a while at Yue who averted her gaze desperately, as though she wanted to say 「Geez, good grief」. But then Myuu shrugged her shoulders and returned her gaze to the diary as though nothing happened. (TN: The 'geez, good grief' in the raw was worded 'yareyare daze', anyone can suggest a better translation for this?)

Not having anything said to her became an additional blow instead. Yue became teary eyed.

The page was flipped.

——October □ Day

It's sudden, but I'm thinking to try working part-time. That thing called short-term part-time.

I hear that at the end of the month there will be Halloween. During our journey at Tortus, I heard about it from Hajime once.

In the past, it seemed there was a Halloween gathering in the school, at that time, he was approached by Kaori who was wearing lewd nekomata costume, and Hajime was greatly, really grea~~~~tly troubled. Good grief, that secretly lecherous Kaori-.

A Halloween party will also be held in our house with Okaa-sama's suggestion.

Perhaps, surely, without a doubt, I think that Kaori will come displaying her secretly lecherous nature to the extreme.

I have to prepare!

And so, I'm thinking to prepare some kind of costume too. Of course, it won't be a mass-produced party goods, but a handmade first-class goods.

It's a rare chance, so I also want to prepare some kind of present.....

Let's prepare present for everyone. ....And not to forget Kaori's share too. After all if it's only her who get left out, surely Kaori will cry.

Come to think of it, when we went shopping together before this, there was a hairpin that she was fixed on right? .....Nn, let's make it that, and do that. The price will swell up a bit, but she was making wanting face like that. Good grief, what a greedy person that troubles other.

The money is a bit insufficient with just pocket money to gather present for everyone. I also cannot make Hajime give me the money because it's present from me.

And so, I'm going to challenge doing part-time that I has been interested at since before.

Hmmm, it's secret from everyone so I cannot ask them advice. The first part-time work.....I'm excited.

「Yue-oneechan, you like Kaori-oneechan too much nano!」

「.....I, it's not like I like her!」

When Myuu pointed out, even though Yue-sama was in adult version, she was shaken up like a child.

She was desperately denying it, but because Myuu understood quite distinctly from the diary that Yue's mentality was like an elementary schooler who wanted to tease someone that he liked, Myuu was looking at Yue as though she was watching a charming thing.

Yue's cheeks were getting increasingly redder and she hurriedly flipped to the next page.

——October ◇ Day

My first part-time work was proctoring an exam of a middle school.

There wasn't many kind of short-term part-time work for one day. This work is what I could immediately get.

As expected, a problem might come up if my height is like usual, so I used metamorphosis magic properly so that I looked like at my twenty before going.

I was wearing a casual suit, stood in front of the students, and distributed the exam paper. I also couldn't forget to give pointer. Even the students who were clamorous turned serious and sat quietly when it was time.

There was only the tick-tock sound of the clock's hand advancing and the scratching sound of the students filling the exam paper echoing in the silent period.

.....It was boring. Very much so. To the level that I regret it a bit.

Can't be helped, I tried to think for a bit.

Yes, I am Yue-sensei. A female teacher who will devote my body and soul completely only to one student!

The student is of course, Hajime.

Yue-sensei will give special lesson after school.

A classroom illuminated with setting sun where there will be only the two of us inside.....

Hajime who keep glancing at me and cannot concentrate.....

I will warn such Hajime while slowly——

「.....Myuu, wait. We will skip this part.」

「Why? I want to see nano! What is Yue-sensei doing to papa nano!? “Slowly” doing what nano!?!」

「.....For goodness's sake, don't ask further than that.....」

Imitating a student, Myuu raised her hand energetically saying 「Yes!」 and questioned.

Yue-sensei couldn't answer. She covered her face with both hands and shook her head in refusal. The ears and neck that couldn't be hidden were blushing bright red.

By the way, Yue-sensei at that time was overflowing with sensuality from her wild imagination. The minds of the healthy middle schoolers were greatly thrown out of order and it invited a tragic situation.



Just in case Yue had worn the recognition obstruction glasses, but even with that effect, the impression of 「There is absurdly erotic inspector!」 was engraved into the hearts of the middle schoolers.

Although it was external mock examination, but it was truly terrible thing to do to the important exam of the middle schoolers, but the person herself didn't realize it so she received her wage normally. She was truly an erotic-terrorist.

The page was flipped.

——October ☆ Day

Today I was doing my second part-time work.

For me who already has the experience of perfectly accomplishing a part-time work, it's not something to be feared anymore.

That was what I thought, but for some reason it didn't go well.

The part-time work was being a drama's extra character.

It was being that person who would sit behind the main character inside a café. It was a simple work where I only needed to wear outfit like office lady and drink coffee suitably.

That was how it should be.

When I noticed, I had job changed into the café's clerk while I was looking in blank amazement.

I was told that the female for the clerk role suddenly fell sick and couldn't come, and a need to raise a substitute in a hurry appear.

Based from the age, there was only me who seemed to be usable as the substitute right away.

So that I don't stand out, I also used metamorphosis magic to change my hair into black other than the recognition obstruction glasses, so I was picked from my plainness.

‘Memorize it in three minutes!’ The assistant who handed me some kind of script told me. I crammed it all and then the filming start.

Even though I did as I was told, they were nitpicking fault saying things like my voice is too lacking in intonation, or I'm too plain.

Incomprehensible.

Wasn't it forbidden to stand out in order to emphasize the main character.....?

Take 2.

'Thank you for coming!' I fill such feeling into my voice a bit.

This time it seemed that my eyeglasses reflected the light. It couldn't be helped, so I did it one more time while paying attention to the light's angel, but then, the middle-aged man director suddenly came near me and told me to take off the glasses. I wanted to refuse, but this is also work. Following the instruction, I took off the glasses.

The middle-aged director stiffened. The uncle stared at me gogglingly. It was unpleasant so I thought to make lightning dragon, but I did my best and endured. I'm great.

Take 3 without glasses.

I went to the seat of the actor and actress and said my line. They should speak their order then, but both of them froze completely. They were staring at me without blinking. Oi, say your line quickly. How many times you want to repeat this take, was my thought.

When I brushed up my hair in a bit of irritation, even the other staffs turned noisy. From here and there voices like 「Which agency she is from?」「Her name?」「Terrific」「This ain't the level of extra ain't it」「Director, the actress is upstaged there!」 came.....

The actress was staring at me with a dreadful look. I thought it was Kaori's Hanny-san.

As I thought, it's the glasses. When I turned toward the director, he was power walking toward me and questioned persistently. His breathing was rough and his eyes were bloodshot, it was terribly disgusting. He tried to touch, so that was the limit and I escaped after doing Smash.

Being unable to complete a job was really pathetic. Although, at that rate the shooting won't progress even with me there, so I think only this can't be helped.

It's still far away until the target amount of money.....

I have to do more work!

「Yue-oneechan. At the TV before this, there was news 'A mysterious beautiful extra appeared! Please report if you happen to know her!'. There will be reward money for the one who catch her. Could it be.....」

「.....Am I a rare animal? I won't do that kind of work anymore. No way, no way.」

「Muu. Yue-oneechan appearing in TV.....I wanted to see it nano.」

Seeing Yue shaking her head with rejecting expression, Myuu's expression turned a bit disappointed.

Although, if Yue appeared behind the TV, it would feel like there was a distance that way, so Myuu changed her mind thinking 'Well, doesn't matter'.

By the way, a certain director who got Smashed later made great advances as big sis director and became a world-famous director.

The page was flipped.

——October # Day

I tried doing part-time work distributing tissue.

No one accepted the tissue.

It couldn't be helped, so I used Divine Statement. Fuhahah, I finished giving out the tissue in five minutes!

「Yue-oneechan.....」

「.....Don't say anything, Myuu.」

Yue quietly averted her gaze from Myuu who was looking back across her shoulder.

——October ♪ Day

A part-time work of walking doggies are really healing. At the path home, a deviant appeared.

Wearing cross necklace and three sword thingy held between his fingers, he suddenly attacked.

I Smashed him and left him behind.

「Yue-oneechan! This part is written out so simply, but surely you were aimed at by really troubling people there nano!」

「.....? What are you saying Myuu? Something like deviant is relatively a lot anywhere. It's not rare.」

「That person is absolutely not a deviant nano. Myuu think he was a pro who came for a vampire hunt nano.」

「.....I don't really get it, but if he stand in my way then smashing is the only way.」

「Thinking carefully, there is no one except papa who can win against Yue-oneechan nano.」

Myuu sighed in relieve before she shook her head saying 「Nothing at all nano」 toward Yue who was tilting her head in puzzlement of what made caused Myuu to be that alerted. Myuu then urged to continue reading the diary.

——October ※ Day

I tried doing a bit incomprehensible work of substitutng to attend a wedding.

I think that something like blessing is better if received from people who actually want to give it but.....

Anyway, it's for the sake of the bride.

I am Yue. A woman who bless with my all for the sake of a girl's happiness, even if it's an "unfamiliar friend"!

Unfortunately outside was raining, but so what. Little things like controlling the weather and generating rainbow of blessing is no big deal!

It went without saying that the venue was in great excitement.

「Yue-oneechan. Some time ago there was a large commotion because of the strange weather.....」

「.....It's no good to get fixated at trivial thing.」

「.....Yes nano.」

Myuu became a bit wiser. Should be.

——October \$ Day

I tried a part-time work of cleaning graveyard.

The chief priest was greatly shocked that the one who came for the work was a young female like me.

When I was sweeping, a family from somewhere came and stood for long in front of a grave. During that time, a person who seemed to be the daughter broke out crying, the person who seemed to be the mother and a person who seemed to be the big brother were desperately consoling her.

It seemed that there was something she wanted to tell to the dead person no matter what.

It was pitiful. Even though it was right before her eyes, but to be unable to convey her feeling.....

I was unable to just watch and activated soul magic. The person who she wished for appeared in front of her. The family was taken aback from shock, even the dead person was surprised and screamed 「Hihi, what happened!?!」, but at the end it looked like they were able to understand each other, and

everything end well.

But, perhaps because of the influence of the activated soul magic, the ground of the graveyard became overflowing with evil spirits of rivers and mountains. A blunder.

It seemed they were somehow revitalized? And then they rampaged.

Even poltergeists were occurring.

Personally, I was feeling 'damn you'. Because, even though I've finally swept the ground!

I am Yue. A ghost buster who is merciless even against the dead!

I swept clean the grave, and also the evil spirit thingy lurking around there thoroughly. I felt really refreshed.

When going home, for some reason the chief priest was kneeling and praying to me though.....

Just why in the world? How really mysterious.

「Yue-oneechan. Are you waiting for straight man retort nano?」

「.....Myuu. I beg you, don't look at me like that.....」

Myuu's exasperated gaze stabbed Yue. It felt like showing Myuu the diary also decreased the "Yue-oneechan's dignity" parameter steadily.

The page was flipped.

——October @ Day

There was Halloween party.

It seemed the information that Nagumo family will do Halloween party was leaked from somewhere, and the classmates charged Nagumo house.

As the participation fee, they prepared a throne and demon king costume for Hajime. The sight of the boys making self-satisfied look and Hajime's twitching expression left an impression. In the end, Hajime became great demon king and

sat on the throne.

Shia wearing vampire costume was a surprise. Saying 「Today I'm matching with Yue-san desuu」, she made her fang sparkled while laughing. That figure, yep, I thought she is planning to kill me with moe.

What's more. Even Myuu was wearing vampire costume. Both of them approached me saying 「Blood~」「Blood nano~」. Both Shia and Myuu were adorable!

I am Yue. A woman who will always welcome cute vampires!

As for Tio.....perhaps she was a mummy woman I thought. Her whole body was wrapped all around with bandage after all.

.....I think to the end it was a costume. Though she was twitching continuously while making expression of ecstasy. Right, surely it was nothing more than act. It also felt like Hajime brought her to the backyard before the party started but, it must be only my imagination.

Shizuku was in white kimono appearance. Perhaps she was costumed as ghost I think. But, midway, Suzu whose costume was a young witch made her wore pink mask. The sigh of her getting dumbfounded was funny as expected.

At the empire, masked pink is still talked as an urban legend, so certainly that must be horror. Perhaps the person herself is thinking that it's a black history, because the moment the mask was fixed, she fell down and hugged her knees.

Otou-sama was werewolf, and Okaa-sama was rabbit. It implicitly said that tonight Okaa-sama will be eaten by Otou-sama! I thought that it was that kind of meaning, but according to Okaa-sama, 「Bunny girl? What are you saying! That's not it! This is Hauria clan's costume!」 she said, so perhaps it was Otou-sama who would get hunted.

At any rate, they are intimate. I wish for me and Hajime to become husband and wife like them.

Next, Yuka was caught by the girls of the class and turned into magical girl. It was cute. Her trembling figure with magical stick in one hand and bright red face caused the class's boys to raise admiring voice spontaneously.

When Hajime made fun of her 「Magical girl Yuka-chan, is here!」, right away she yelled 「Nagumo you idioo~~~ttt-」 while rushing out, but.....

Running through street at night with magical girl appearance.....

Feels like the rumor will spread again.

Now then, about the last one, it was the problematic girl. Yes, the master of being secretly lecher that embodied “slyness”, Kaori.

That girl, as expected, she really did it.

It seemed that after cat it was dog. She wore dog ears and tail and dressed like Shia when she was at Tortus. According to the girl herself, it seemed that it was a wolf girl costume, but I know the truth. That’s a wordless appeal that she want to become Hajime’s dog.

‘This dog in heat-’, I insulted. (TN: Actually if the raw is translated literally, I should use bitch there)

After that, 「Do, don’t say strange thing! If you say that, Yue yourself is a female cat!」 she argued. What a remark. How cheeky. Just what is lewd from miniskirt costume attached with cat ears and tail? I can assert that this is a really modest costume compared to Shia’s usual wear.

In the first place, it’s not female cat. It’s Yue-nyan. The nekomata Yue-nyan who Hajime cannot stop loving. The level. The level is different from the dog in heat Kaori.

Anyway, I repel doggy Kaori who is loitering around searching for her owner with cat punch while enjoying the Halloween party until the end. I think that it will be nice if next year we can do this again.

That aside, when I went to the backyard searching for Myuu who was gone in the middle of the party, Myuu was talking friendlily with someone wearing pumpkin head and mantel though.....

Just who in the world was that?

「That person was Jack-san nano.」



Myuu casually answered the question written at the end of October's diary. Yue went 「Who?」 while tilting her head.

「.....I know that. Because he wore the costume of Jack o Lantern right? That's not it, I'm asking who was inside the costume. When I asked later, everyone said that they didn't wear such costume.」

「?? Jack-san is Jack-san nano.」

「.....E~rr?」

「Jack-san was a really bad person nano. He cannot go to both heaven and hell and is wandering in this world forever nano. He said that he is seriously reflecting. Right now he is doing good thing with his all nano. That's why, he became friend with Myuu nano.」

‘What to do’, Yue thought. In the end, was this that kind of “setting”? Or else, perhaps it was that. It couldn't be said as far as Myuu's “bad habit”, but that troubling “disposition” of Myuu, was it calling out another something again.....?

When looking at Myuu's serious face, Yue somehow felt that it was the case of the latter.

Yue's expression was turning troubled while deciding that she would report to Hajime later just in case. She then patted Myuu's head.

「.....Anyway, a diary is something like this. Whether the way of the writing, the sentence amount, or the day you write it, it's okay if you write as you like it.」

「I somehow get it nano. Thank you, Yue-oneechan!」

It seemed that Myuu managed to get the image of a diary in her mind.

Yue wished that Myuu would write her own diary without stopping by all means. If Myuu did that, then perhaps she would be able to grasp more detail of Myuu's mysterious friendship.

After that, Myuu begged that she wanted to read Yue's diary when she was at Tortus, after Hajime's group parted with her, but it was already time to sleep, so Yue said that it would be for another time.

‘I'm not sleepy nano!’ Myuu insisted. It seemed that she was really pleased

with “Yue’s Diary”. Though for Yue personally it was really embarrassing and damaging.....

Even the strongest vampire princess couldn’t win against the begging of the youngest princess of Nagumo family.

In the end, they finished the diary reading for this night and they ended up sleeping together on Yue’s bed. From this day, Yue and Myuu would open diary reading group with just the two of them at night for quite a while.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It’s After III from today.

There is no particular reason, but I’m just feeling like it.

Also, I want to write several chapters of brief story that will end up as long After.

PS

The comic version is updated.

Please go take a look if you like!

From Overlap-sama’s homepage!

# Arifureta Chapter 286

## Arifureta After III Shia Arc Lovely Base Search

Clear cloudless sky. Hot weather. Trees growing abundantly that it should be expressed as a dense forest. The large light brown river that was winding between it like a snake.

At a certain place in a certain country, along the river, two foreigners, a male and a female were traveling by foot on a path without pavement that was created by the passing of long year.

「Coming to this kind of place right from the middle of Japan's city make it feels like returning to Tortus isn't it? Well, this side is lovelier though simply with the lack of heavy mist covering it like in the sea of trees.」

「It more or less feels hotter than Haltina see of trees though.」

The two people walking the previously mentioned long road that perhaps would make one to express it as an “endless road” with light steps were Shia and Hajime.

Shia was unusually wearing her light blue white hair into a ponytail that was tied with a largish ribbon. Her lively footsteps made her hair and the rabbit ears that could only be seen by Hajime to prance around *pyon pyon* energetically. (The ribbon was an artifact, which made ordinary people unable to recognize the rabbit ears.)

Shia was wearing a plain cutter shirt with its sleeves rolled up, a short pants with short length, and short boots, while there was a large bag on her back. The rucksack had a mark of winking bunny on it seemed to make appeal that「This is Shia's property desu」.

Hajime was also dressed with a white simple cutter shirt and jeans. As expected, he was also carrying a large bag on his back.

「Hey, Shia. Is it no good if I take out Schutaif?」

Hajime suddenly asked. His gaze was directed to the sun blazing down on them, while his hand was wiping the faint sweat trickling on his forehead using the wristband on his wrist. The emotion of 「I don't want to walk anymore, troublesome!」 was oozing out together with the sweat.

Hajime suggested to move using a bike, however, Shia made an X –mark using her hands full of energy to show her rejection.

「No! We are rarely traveling just the two of us like this! Advancing so quickly like that is no good.」

「Even if you say that.....」

「Geez. This act of meaningless walk, and also this surrounding with unchanging scenery of only dense forest and river, how can Hajime-san not enjoy them.」

「Because it's meaningless walk and the unchanging scenery that I want to ride on Schuteif.....」

「Hajime-san you bean sprout kid! A travel is something done with public transportation or by your own feet!」

「Don't you say things like Aby——like Endo.」

Even though Hajime let out a long sigh 'haa', he raised both his hands in expression of surrender in order to respond to Shia's wish.

In the first place, why was these two here at this kind of foreign land at the backwoods overflowing with nature that was unrelated with civilization.

「In the first place, if we are just going to search prospective land for Hauria clan's earth settlement, we can just find the optimum place using the Compass and teleport there using Crystal Key. Convenient tool is fundamentally forbidden in our travel this time desu! After all this is a date under the guise of searching prospective land!」

「I get it, I get it. After all it has been really long since it was just the two of us

alone. This time I'll go along fully with your demand.」

In other words, it was like that.

Hauria clan who remained behind in Tortus was in the middle of steadily expanding in power even now. Taking down the empire, liberating slaves, heroic achievement in the legendary decisive battle.....through all that, Hauria clan was abusing their name as the clan that was recognized by everyone as the strongest among the beastman.

Admiration, sympathy, flattery. There were various reasons, but naturally at present a lot of rabbit man clans were merging with Hauria clan. There were also a great number of people who while being of other race and yet they went down on their knees wanting to become Hauria clan's subordinate.

Their subordinates came from the kingdom, the dukedom, also the church, not to mention the empire territory too, furthermore there were even those from the south continent.

Like that, they finally wanted to put a base on earth too and came to Hajime for a consultation.

They said that eventually they wished to raise a secret clan that would serve Nagumo family even until its descendants.

Hajime plainly replied 「Eh? No need」, but Karm and others doggedly pushed the idea. Not just them, it was already the whole clan that was doggedly begging. 「It's for the future generations! Please let our clan stay at your side! Forever and ever at your side! Bossss!」 A group of middle-aged men with rabbit ears growing on their head were wailing while clinging on Hajime like that.

As the result, Hajime compromised. Because each time he went to Tortus, they appeared every time everywhere, the middle-aged rabbit-eared men staring at him with wanting eyes, or possibly moist sad eyes.....

Hajime's heart couldn't endure.

「Rather, if they are going to move to this side, they can just live normally in the city. Just live in Japan directly.」

「Because there is Hauria's exclusive "gate" after all~. It doesn't matter where

the base will be located, it won't be that much of a hindrance. As expected, the beastman will calm down the most in the middle of forest. Perhaps a savage land, no, that's going too far, but inside the forest in a developing country where people don't really go into will be especially good.」

「.....Before long, it feels like the rabbit ear clan will get featured in TV like “Eyewitness testimony in an undeveloped land! Is it a new UMA!?”.」

「Ahaha, my family isn't that soft that they can get apprehended by TV crew you know~」

Shia cackled while holding her stomach, but Hajime wondered about it.

The guts of TV crew couldn't be underestimated. If it was for the sake of increasing audience rate, then they would go anywhere as far as their budget would allow.

And then, what was especially terrifying was the cameraman. They were shouldering their camera while closely following star or professional right at beside them whether they were going to a savage land, dangerous region, or climbing highest mountain in the world.

Even in a situation where a star would whine 「No more!」 looking like they were really at their limit, where the viewers would unconsciously go 「Do your best!」 in front of their television, the cameraman would merely staying silent, recording that image perfectly to send it to the viewer's living room.

Frankly speaking, every time Hajime watched that kind of program, he wondered if the profession of cameraman could only be done by superhuman. He thought of things like perhaps if a guy with vocation “cameraman” on his status plate appeared at Tortus, wouldn't that guy be the strongest?

「Well, they can do as the please if they won't reap the head of every fellow they encountered.」

「How rude! What does Hajime-san think my family is! Even if TV people come, such thing.....such thing.....won't happen, you know?」

「Stop it, don't speak in question. As the daughter of the clan head declare it clearly there.」

Shia insisted that “They aren’t a savage clan desuu!”, but midway it seemed she lost her confidence. At the end of her sentence her voice was vanishing. Hajime was half-joking, but he shuddered because it might become reality. Perhaps an education would be needed before they moved to this side.

By the way, at their travel this time, it was Yue’s suggestion that he went with only Shia. It seemed she guessed the inside of Shia’s heart 「I want to go to a date of just the two of us sometime desuu」. Yue encouraged the two of them to ‘It’s a nice timing that you accept the proposal of Karm and others, so how about going traveling while searching for prospective land?’.

What first wife power it was. It went without saying that for a while Shia hugged Yue tightly and didn’t let go.

Like that, it was a travel to search for a base at earth with environment that resembled the sea of trees for Hauria clan——that was the cover. Shia’s rabbit ears were suddenly twitching in reaction while they were leisurely enjoying the oversea travel of just the two of them.

「Mu? Hajime-san, there is human presence. It’s far but.....it looks like there is quite a commotion.」

「Commotion? Is it something troublesome?」

「No, if I have to say it feels like cheers.」

「Hmm? Is it a festival or something?」

Hajime tilted his head. Shia tilted her rabbit ears while saying 「I don’t know about that」.

The footpath in front of them bent greatly. The dense forest obstructed their sight ahead. However, there wasn’t any other path that seemed like a path, so Hajime and Shia nodded to each other and advanced forward just like that.

Before long, even Hajime’s ears started to caught the cheering sound and from there they advanced through the path as though circling around the dense forest for five minutes.

The two finally discovered the source of the cheers.

「Woow! It’s a village inside this dense forest. What’s more, it’s really a

festival just like we thought so it's lucky desuu!」

「Festival? Is that a festival?」

An unforeseen encounter in the middle of travel! Beside Shia whose tension was rising like that, Hajime had 「?」 mark floating over his head.

「I saw it in TV before this, but it seems in this world there is also a festival with main event of jabbing at each other like a fight festival. This village is also the same!」

Just as Shia said, a stage like a boxing ring was created in the village, two burly young men were standing on it while punching each other. The villagers were gathered around the ring while clamoring hectically.

Hajime looked doubtful because the young men looked quite bloody, he thought whether it was too stimulating for a festival's side show, but watching carefully, everyone looked like they were having fun, a lot of food and drink were also prepared. It didn't seem mistaken that it was a festival.

「Come on Hajime-san! Let's try going there too!」

「You are high-tensioned huh. I get it so don't pull my hand.」

Shia hopped around like a child while pulling Hajime's hand. Her rabbit ears were also moving wildly with unruly high tension, expressing the inside of Shia's heart really clearly.

Hajime's mouth couldn't stop loosening into a smile seeing such Shia. He let his hand got pulled by Shia. The emotion residing inside his eyes were extraordinarily gentle.

On the other hand, the villagers also noticed Hajime and Shia.

They had darkish skin and black hair with finely chiseled features. From a glance their appearance was different from Hajime and Shia. Also, their clothing, they weren't a tribe of an undeveloped land, so they were wearing familiar things like T-shirt, short pants, and so on. But the appearance of Hajime and Shia who were in the middle traveling made it quickly clear that the two of them were foreign traveler.

That must be why. The villagers who noticed them expressed shock with their



eyes turning round and they immediately raised their voice toward the people around them. The people who noticed had their eyes similarly opened wide when they saw Hajime and Shia and they were pointing their finger.

「Nice to meet you! You can call me Shia! Everyone, is it okay for us to watch the festival too?」

Full liveliness. Shia who said such thing with a wide affable smile caused the eyes of the villagers turned even rounder with shock.

The choker around Shia's neck was instilled with "Language Comprehension". The thing called language barrier didn't exist.

Nevertheless, from the point of view of the local who didn't know about such outrageous circumstance, it looked like a young girl who was obviously a foreigner was fluently talking in their own language. It was only natural that they were surprised.

But, their expression burst into smile without even any cautiousness.

「What a rare guest! Of course it's fine! Come over here!」

「My my, it must be hard to come until this kind of place. Now, please drink this.」

「Uwaa, somehow there is foreigner here!」

「You've got a good timing coming in this fighting festival day.」

They talked to Shia one after another. The children of the village were also shuffling to gather toward the foreigner that was unusual to be here.

As expected, Shia's smile and affable atmosphere seemed to be the greatest magic to dispel everybody's vigilance. The innocent rabbit who was sparkling with curiosity invited smiling face from the villagers.

「Fighting festival? Is it a festival for fighting?」

「That's right. Once a year we decide the strongest person in the village. The family of the winner can receive favorable treatment for a year. They will receive bigger share from the hunting and fishing, and they will get more share from the things we bartered at the city.」

「Most of all, the champion will be respected. It's about honor. That's why, the young men of the village are trained since they were little, they were told that they absolutely have to become a champion once in their life.」

「Hoe~」

Shia looked at above the ring with expression of admiration and understanding. The two young men there kept concentrating and punching at each other regardless of the sudden appearance of the foreigners. Although it was a festival, it was certain that it was also a serious battle that concerned their honor.

「Somehow, their move resembled Muay Thai. Looks like they have the proper form, it's different from just simply punching each other. It must have a long history.」

「Oo, you get it?」

Hajime was slurping a sweet juice that he received from the village's grandma while muttering. Hearing that, a muscular middle-aged man made an admiring expression.

「Long ago in the past, in order to hunt and fight other village, the men of the village learned various martial art, and it kept being handed down even now. It's called Uga.」

「Of course, right now it's only used at the festival.」

「But, in order to win that festival, as expected it's necessary to learn Uga, so the men of the village all learned it from their father.」

Right now they normally used tool both in hunting and fishing after all. The village's men laughed while explaining.

「And, why are you two here? You two are really fluent in our tongue, but you aren't someone from around here right?」

「Yeah. We're only traveling where it struck our fancy. Looking at the map, it seems there is quite a big city at the upper stream of this river, so for now we are going that way.」

「Aah, Puhang city. That place is nearby the place where the branch streams

are merging, and there are also a lot of restaurant with delicious food there. However, if you are going there by foot right now the sun will set for sure before you arrive there you know?」

「Well, at that time we're going to camp out.」

Hajime shrugged. To which the uncles frowned. Their gaze was directed at Shia who was swinging up her fist while cheering 「Gooo desuu! There desuu! Aa, do your best! Stand up-, stand up Joeeee!」 together with the grandmas. (TN: Reference to Ashita no Joe)

By the way, the name of the downed young man was Urt. The grandma beside Shia gave straight man retort of 「My kid's name is Urt you know! Who is Joe!?!」.

「Oi oi. You said you're going to make that cute girl to sleep at the open? Around this area isn't that particularly dangerous, but it's not safe by any means you know?」

「Yeah. I heard that recently delinquents from other village are loitering around. Naturally there are also animals.」

The village uncles seemed to worry from the bottom of their heart, they were good people. Even while saying thanks to them Hajime was,

「It's fine. We are used to traveling, and, we are strong.」

The village uncles were getting increasingly worried, thinking that it might be the excessive confidence of a foreign traveler. They unanimously suggested that the two of them should stay in the village for today. One reason they were doing this was because they could understand each other's words, but they were also really good people.

Amidst that, Shia who were together with the villagers, no, rather she was taking position at the center of the villagers when Hajime noticed, she was doing shadow boxing perhaps because she got heated up from watching while saying out advice-like things.

「Mister, what are you doing! Please look carefully at your opponent! He has habit in his movement! See through it and then gouge him out!」

*shu-shu-shu-shu-shu-shu-BAM!* Consecutive punches that shook the air were unleashed. From Shia.

Those deft punches that looked like they were generating afterimage caused the people around to feel shocked「uwah」while taking distance from her.

「Oo! Just now looks like a technique! Make the one-two into decoy and then a combination with the elbow! Like this is it!」

One-, Two-, elbow strike! Shia-chan was perfectly tracing and stealing the technique that downed the opponent on the ring just now.

Different from boxing, it seemed there wasn't any countdown even when one side had fallen onto his knee. The downed young man rose up with guts while launching a sweeping kick. In addition, right after that kick was evaded a roundhouse kick from the opposite leg came!

「Splendid combo from kneeling! Like this is it!」

Shia-chan perfectly traced it as expected. No, rather no matter from where anyone looked, Shia's movement was clearly sharper than the two fighters on the ring. It was an adroit movement. The moment Shia launched a kick, *GOU*-the wind groaned!

Gazes were gradually gathering on Shia rather than on the ring.

The girl of foreign country who perfectly traced and absorbed the martial art handed down in their village just from watching the motion of two people fighting.....it was understandable that it gathered more interest than the important fight.

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san! It really make the blood boil isn't it!」

「Right, I guess.」

The disappointment rabbit that once said 「I'm no good at fighting desuu」 didn't exist anymore. In her place there was only a superhuman rabbit whose blood would seethe and her flesh dance if there was a hand-to-hand fighting, the incarnation of bug character, the martial arts maniac who would beat to death even god's apostle.

Thinking back of the past Shia who would blunder every time she was doing

something, Hajime couldn't help but get a distant look.

But, at that time, the fight on the right was finally settled. It seemed the next fight would be the final. The young man who won would fight the last year's champion.

However.....

「Aa, looks like this will be a bit harsh for Urt.」

「He looks like just standing is all he can do.」

Urt-kun who managed to advance to the final seemed like he would have to withdraw from the fight.

「Oh my~. It was a good match so I looked forward to the final too though..... it's unfortunate.」

「Well, even if you say that, with the current Urt he is still not a match against Bantas.」

Shia tilted her head toward the villager who spoke with a wry smile.

「That's the strongest man in this village currently. He has been hogging the champion title for nearly fifteen years already. He is really strong. It's to the degree that recently rather than the championship, defeating Bantas is the real honor!, people said.」

「Hoe~. So there is the absolute champion here.」

Lookin closer, Bantas who earned the championship because the opponent withdrew was being congratulated by the whole village. Different from Urt-kun, there was only some hit mark on his body without looking like he was really wounded. He was a huge man whose age was around forty. He really had the appearance of the fighting festival champion that would make anyone nodded in understanding of his status.

Bantas climbed on the ring and put on a show by lifting up the champion trophy that looked aged. The villagers sent him applause and cheer. Hajime and Shia also sent him applause together.

There, Bantas suddenly turned his gaze to Hajime and Shia.

「This is a rare chance. If you like, how about participating in the fighting festival?」

Above the ring, Bantas was gesturing with his hand in an inviting motion. It was clear that it was an invitation to try fighting him. His gaze was turned once at Shia before turning to Hajime in amusement. From there it was clear that he was referring to Hajime.

「Of course, I won't fight seriously. I'll go easy on you, but this is a rare chance so you can show off to your girlfriend——」

「It's really okay!? I really, really wish to be allowed to participate desuu!」

「Eh?」

Bantas-san's eyes turned into dot. The villagers' eyes also turned into dot.

At the same time, Shia hopped *pyon* lightly and jumped on the ring. She rotated her wrist around and turned around her ankle. She jerked around her neck to warm up.

「What a fortuitous thing to be able to directly experience the unique martial arts that is handed down in this village deep inside the forest! I'm grateful of your hospitality desuu!」

「Eh?」

「No need for holding back any, please come at me seriously desuu!」

「Eh?」

「Now, come at me yaah! Desuu!」

*BAAM*- The sound of the air rupturing resounded. It was the sound of Shia-chan hitting her fists to each other. For such sound to resound when it wasn't expressly a clap to make loud sound was because there was shockwave generated from that gesture.....

「Wa, wait you! Is it okay that you don't stop your girlfriend!?」

「If it's Bantas then he will surely go easy on her skillfully, but there is a lot of dangerous technique in Uga you know!」

The villagers spoke up worriedly. Above the ring Bantas also couldn't hide his

bewilderment.

「No, rather from my point of view, it's that girl who looks like she is too high-spirited that I'm worried about the opponent instead though..... I won't say anything bad. Just stop fighting Shia.」

On the other hand, 「If you're going to fight, remember to hold back okay, Shia! End it in a good vibe, don't forget!」 Hajime urged caution to the high-tensioned Shia who he worried that she would overdo it.

Doing something like beating up the leading part of the festival of the village who were welcoming them was something that would make the later development to be the most awkward it could be. Hajime-san was staring worriedly at the unruly rabbit ears.

Hajime's words that weren't to stop his lover, they weren't even saying 'I'll fight in her place!', rather those words were worrying for the absolute reigning champion Bantas. The villagers were bewildered by that and they got tongue-tied.

But, Bantas was instead coming out of his bewilderment. For someone to think that it was only natural for a young girl to go easy on him.....his pride as the absolute champion was stimulated.

Something like the fist of a girl wouldn't even be an itch against his trained body no matter how hard it hit. Then, he would at least let himself get hit and showed an imperturbable presence despite that, then at the end he would get serious and then stopping just an inch before his fist hit, which would open the eye of these foreigner travelers. His fighting spirit overflowed with that decision.

「Good grief, making his own lover fight, as a man your boyfriend is really unbecoming.」

「Here I comeee!」

Shia-chan who wasn't listening at all.

Bantas shrugged his shoulders in exasperation, he imagined the light slap of a girl while spreading his hands in a pose of 「Come at me from anywhere」.

Like that, when he looked closer at Shia who was mimicking the Uga stance, he noticed she was making a shockingly beautiful face. Honestly, she must be the most beautiful female he had ever seen until now. In a sense, to be able to spend a playful time with this kind of super first class beautiful girl....., Bantas's face almost broke into a grin thinking it like that.....

「SHAORAAAAAAA-!!」

「Eh?」

A war cry exploded. An impact sound from a step forward that was like cannon exploding.

Within an instant. Shia's figure was right before Bantas's eyes. Without even any time to become conscious of it, a twisting BODY BLOW! generated an impact sound that was also like a fired cannon!

「GOHOOH!?!」

The grinning face distorted grandly from the impact and shock and light panic. But, the rabbit with sky high tension was swinging her fist with cheerful smiling face.

「If I remember right, it's like this!」

Traditional martial art's hidden technique (imitation)! The copied technique assaulted Bantas!

「Oy, wai-, gefuu!?!」

「Ora ora ora ora ora ora-! Desuu!」

Left then right, Bantas-san continued to get toyed with. The villagers got into uproar!

Seeing Shia who was absorbed with testing the technique that she newly acquired, Hajime covered his face with his hand saying 「So it's just as I thought」. For now, if this continued then the absolute champion's heart would break, so Hajime put a stop to Shia with a telepathy that was in the level of a sound explosion.

Shia went 'hah' in surprise and stopped moving.



「Qyu, qyuite something, a, aren't you.....」

The absolute champion who was already dead on his feet was desperately keeping his pride. It really looked as though he wanted to say 「Just now I purposefully got hit without fighting back you know? It's true you know? There is no damage at all from your attack. I'm not lying okay」.

The villagers were deathly quiet.

As expected, Shia too seemed to realize that she got too carried away. She smiled to varnish over the awkwardness and,

「As, as expected from the champion. I don't get the feeling that I'll be able to win no matter what.」

The absolute champion looked like he was going to faint anytime.

Hajime sighed. He secretly sent out a spider-shaped living golem “Arachne” under Bantas. Arachne's leg struck a needle *pshew* into Bantas's ankle.

Bantas didn't notice at all because of the pain all over his upper body. Far from noticing, damage was leaving from him rapidly and he was staring in wonder at his own body.

「Wha, what? The pain is suddenly receding..... Ah, no, it's not like I'm pained or anything from the start. My body feels light somehow but.....hah, don't tell me, did I receive god's divine protection?」

It seemed they also had their own faith. The mysterious experience was thanks to god.

Actually it was the apology of the demon king, but he surely couldn't even imagine that.

‘I can fight like this! This beautiful girl in front of me too, I'm not thinking of her as a normal girl anymore!’ Bantas-san thought and he stepped forward.

「UOOOOOOOH」

「Nice spirit! Please show me your technique desuu!」

A clash. The fist, leg, elbow strike from both sides collided into each other like surging waves, a terrific exchange of offense was unfolding.

「As I thought my body is light! Strength is welling up! Oh god! My gratitude to you! Right now I will display the greatest battle that will ever exist!」

Bantas-san's tension was rising. Though it wasn't god's divine protection, but just a doping.....

「HAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

「Urya-rya-rya-rya-rya-rya! Desuu!」

A terrific kind of fight that was never seen before!

Even the villagers who fell deathly silent finally returned to their senses from witnessing that heated fight, they began raising their cheer with a mentality of 「Who cares about the trivial detail anymore huh!」.

「Keep going, missy! That's absurd, oi!」

「Bantas! Get a hold of yourself! Don't lose to a girl younger than you!」

「O, oi! That girl, did she use the hidden technique just now!?」

「Thi, this is a great match that happen only once a century!」

The fierce fight between the absolute champion who got doping of demon king's specially made medicine unknowingly, and the bug rabbit who outdone even the god's apostle (body strengthening level I) became a hectic great furor in the village.

After that, the battle between the two ended up in a draw with nice feeling (Shia fixed the match properly). Bantas smiled wryly while taking Shia's hand and lifted it up high to the sky. Then a grand applause echoed in respond to it.

Shia who got down of the ring was crowded by the villagers, especially the children. They bombarded her with question like how could she become that strong, and just who in the world she was.

Hajime also went through the same thing. He was given a storm of questioning and praise like 'Just what in the world your lover is?' while his shoulder and back kept getting clapped.

In the end, even when the sun had set the atmosphere didn't show any sign of cooling down, they ate and drank while Shia was exhibiting other martial arts

like karate or eight extremities fist or capoeira and so on, and the place got even more heated up. At the end she held a bout with Hajime 「Even the boyfriend is strong!？」 which shocked the villagers to their heart's content.

「Ahahaa~, it was really fun. Getting heated up with the locals that you accidentally meet. This is exactly the real pleasure of a travel!」

Shia was in an extremely good mood. Hajime was making the bed (complete removal of dust and mite using Arachne) while smiling back 「You're right」.

The party broke up after a fashion and right now they were staying at a house of a certain husband and wife. They were lent a room because the villagers wished for them to stay no matter what as their thanks for showing a magnificent fight.

Shia sat down with a plop on the bed that had been cleaned while her rabbit ears were swinging *piko piko*.

「Incidentally Hajime-san. I have a bit of rabbit good news.」(TN: This is a play of words using the kanji. There is a word 'mimiyori' which mean welcome news. The 'mimi' means ear, and Shia add the word rabbit before it.)

「What do you mean rabbit good news? You can just say good news normally right.....and, what is it?」

「I heard from the villagers, it looks like there is a ruin deep at the back regions far away upstream where no one is living.」

「Ruin?」

Shia who was lying upside-down with her legs and rabbit tail kicking around nodded.

「Yes. It's really old and the local doesn't really go near it. They said it's cursed or something.....」

「So to speak it's like a horror spot huh..... And?」

Hajime also sat on the bed while asking. Shia rolled around and put her head on Hajime's lap. She rubbed her cheek on Hajime's thigh.

「It seemed that this country's investigation team and foreign research team once went there to investigate, but in the end they didn't find anything and

from the style of the ruin, they concluded that most likely in the past it was used as dwelling of people. It's not really recognized as historically valuable. Even us can enter if we go there you know?」

「In other words, you want to try seeing it?」

「Yes desu.」

Hajime patted her rabbit ears. Hajime's hand was loving the rabbit ears in an subconscious level. Shia's body was shuddering pleasantly. Her eyes were getting slightly moist.

「Well, isn't that fine? The more unexplored and uninhabited the area is the better it is for Hauria's earth base right? Let's set the backwoods area further than the ruin as our target, we're going to look there while we're at it. If people don't go near it, then that ruin might become one kind of boundary line to push away people.」

「Nh. Going deeper from the ruin, nn~, it feels like there will be a dense forest that is really untouched by human hand, fuwaa」

*Pat pat. Pat pat.* Shia's voice was starting to get mixed with sweetness even while they were talking. Even while having lap pillow, Shia's hands were going around Hajime's waist and began to hug tightly.

「I see. Then tomorrow we will go to Puhang only to have a meal and resupply there, after that we will aim to that ruin.」

「Yees, desuu~. By, by the way, Hajime-saaan」

「Hm?」

Shia spoke with sweet voice and melting expression that was dripping with bewitchment.

「Errr, the ba, barrier.....the wall look thin so.....」

「It's okay. Don't worry.」

Hajime got it even without Shia finishing her sentence. He already finished laying countermeasure. The group of Arachne-san had finished deploying barrier with each of them as the starting point.

The light inside the room vanished.

Under the moonlight shining in from the window, the shadow of the two slowly became one as though it was only natural.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It's Shia arc, but it won't be a long arc (in the plan)

For Shia's long arc, I'm planning it to be the teleport incident from Akihabara.

But that story will not involve the other members at that time.....

At the After Story there isn't a single chapter where Shia is the main, so I wanted to write a story for her where it's just her with Hajime.

PS

This story became ranking 2.

Thank you very much for the many congratulatory comments!

Please take care of [Arifure] from here on too!

# Arifureta Chapter 287

## Arifureta After III Shia Arc Raised! The Flag is Raised!

Hajime and Shia who left the village even while the villagers were reluctant to see them leaving were aiming straight toward the city of Puhang at the upstream.

They were stuffing their cheeks with bread that looked like nan with a lot of meat in between, given to them kindly by the villagers when they left. They were eating while they were advancing along the river that still had the coldness of the morning remaining.

「Delish-desuu. I missed the chance to ask, but what kind of meat this is?」

「I wonder. This feeling of overflowing wild taste, it somehow remind me when I was in Abyss.....」

Hajime and Shia were going 'delicious delicious' in a display of gluttony regardless of the fact that it hadn't been a few hours since they received breakfast.

「In any case, they were a pleasant bunches aren't they. That.....Wandam? Though I cannot say about the way he was looking at me.」

「It's Bantas-san. Certainly it was a beautiful spinning kick. Though it's still not at the level of a certain muscular actor.」

Shia laughed loudly. Bantas who fought a young girl to a draw after that got high spirited when Hajime and Shia exhibited a mock fight with sublimely advanced fighting style. He begged that he also wanted to have a match with Hajime by any means.

The way Hajime fought compared to Shia left an impression of boorishness that couldn't be erased. It didn't have the flowing elegance of "martial arts"

that was backed with history like Shia who was adopting various hand-to-hand fighting style.

Although, Hajime's taijutsu that was sublimated by accumulating real battle after real battle where his life was on the line of life and death should be said as the height of rationality.

His figure perfectly handling the entirety of Shia's flowing offense that was like a surging wave using the minimum movement necessary made anyone who watched it felt beauty from it in its own way.

Not just Bantas, it also went without saying that the men of the village got their blood boiled.

「Hajime-san, sometimes you are strangely popular among the male, just like with Tou-sama(father) and others. Especially among the beefy people.....」

「Stop it, don't say anymore.」

Recalling how the village's male were approaching him with their muscles twitching, Hajime shuddered while shaking his head. Shia raised a chuckle seeing such Hajime.

「They said that they wanted us to come again next year, they expressly gave us the invitation, so let's come again bringing a souvenir next time, okay Hajime-san?」

「.....I guess.」

Shia expressed her happiness of the unexpected chance meeting in the travel with a wide smile. Her rabbit ears were also whooshing around.

However Hajime showed a bit of thinking gesture while agreeing. Shia thought 「Eh? He isn't enthusiastic?」 while she peeked at Hajime's expression with a bit of unease.

Hajime smiled wryly thinking that he was worrying Shia and he spoke while patting her head *pon pon*.

「Don't make that kind of face. I'm just thinking a bit.」

「Thinking.....is it?」

「Yeah. I'm thinking that if you are enjoying it that much, then perhaps it's fine to make the travel date with just Shia a custom for once a year at least.」

「Hajime-san!」

Her rabbit ears stood straight *Pi-n-*! The lovely suggestion caused Shia's eyes to sparkle with stars of delight, then she leaped at Hajime while glittering with joy.

And then without pause she pouted her lips 「Nn~~」 and approached for a kiss.

「I get it that you're happy, so for now how about you clean up the food scraps around your mouth first?」

Shia's face became bright red and her body backed away gracefully.

It was a rare occurrence, but sometimes like just now Shia became a disappointing rabbit. Hajime watched fondly of such Shia with affection then he personally cleaned up Shia's mouth. Shia look embarrassed, but she kept her eyes closed.

Toward such Shia, Hajime brought his face closer to have the continuation of just now even though it was early in the morning. Shia who felt his presence also leaned her body forward in response.....

「A?」

「Hmm?」

Both of them simultaneously turned their gaze toward deep inside the forest. *rustle rustle* The sound of feet treading firmly on vegetation resounded faintly.

「It's not some animal isn't it?」

「There was the talk about the youngsters of other village loitering around but.....」

Now then, what could be the reason of they being here. The answer immediately became clear.

「So it's really true. There are foreigner man and woman here.」

「Oo, they got various pricey looking things on them.」



「The girl is drop dead gorgeous.」

「Whatever, as expected foreign tourists are idiot huh. Taking sight defenselessly in this kind of place like this.」

Just from that conversation it was clear that these are the insolent people the villagers warned them about.

The fighting festival was happening that merrily. Then surely the rumor about foreign couple with affluent look seeing from their nice belonging would quickly spread to other village too.

Tourists visiting dangerous place with sightseeing mood without really gathering information about the local, without even the self-awareness of how ignorant and rash and reckless they were acting, and holding a groundless optimistic view that it was impossible for misfortune to befall them.....

These rude bunches were surely coming to aim for that kind of tourists who were just begging to get robbed.

With a grin on their face, the robber look-alikes were gathering while showing something that looked like rifle even though they looked old.

「This kind of people exist no matter what world it is isn't it. Well it doesn't matter. Right her with the fist of Uga that I had just learned I will teach them the harshness of socie—」

The moment Shia clenched her fist to give a lesson,

—\*DOPAN-DOPAN-DOPAN-DOPAN-\*

Consecutive gunshot sound echoed inside the forest. At the same time, the young men showing up from inside the forest were disappearing into the forest as though in a video playback. More accurately they were sent flying, or perhaps it should be called as knocked flying.

「Wha-, wha-, this guy—」

「He is carrying gun! Run—」

「Sto, stop! We aren't planning anything! Look, I'm putting down the gun! So don't sho—」

Everyone peacefully returned back deep into the forest. There was no exception.

「Be thankful tearfully that you guys at least don't get returned into earth.」

Mercilessly, no, just using stun bullet was already merciful but, Hajime-san shot everyone without caring whether they were escaping or raising their hands in surrender.

It didn't even take five seconds until the figure of about ten people of the bunches vanished from view.

「Ha, Hajime-san?」

At earth, Hajime fundamentally didn't pull out Donner, if it was only someone picking up a quarrel he would deal with them using his bare hand (he used his left hand without reservation), but here he chose gun without an instant of hesitation. Shia's eyes turned round seeing Hajime's reaction that was different from usual.

Hajime shrugged his shoulders and he stored back Donner into the holster on his chest while,

「There is no one watching after all.」

In other words, it seemed if it was a place where there was no witness, he wouldn't hesitate to use Donner in order to settle the problem in a flash. For the insolent people who encountered Hajime in a place outside of public gaze, it was a dangerous place instead.

Hajime who normally said something like 「I'll comply to law and ethic that is appropriate for a citizen of a constitutional country. After all here is different from Tortus you know, compared to Tortus」, was shooting unhesitatingly.....

「Hajime-san. The way of thinking that it's okay to shoot if there is no witness, feels like it's normally outlaw though.」

「Oi oi, how can you say that to a virtuous and exemplary Japanese person like me.」

A virtuous and exemplary Japanese person was surely a person who would modestly respect propriety, avoiding act of violence and honored the law to the

best of their ability, that was how she felt.....Shia's expression turned really complicated.

「Before this Myuu-chan said “innocent until proven guilty. Everything is legal if it's not leaked out”, she said outrageous things by quoting someone's words but.....I feel like I understand whose words they were.」

「There is nothing in my log about that.」

Hajime papa averted his gaze to escape Shia's fixed stare.

※ Those were words that a good kid must not believe no matter what!

Shia made a wry smile toward the bad papa who was turning the other way. However, her expression turned into a bright smile right after that,

「Well, they are scoundrels, so it doesn't matter whatever happen to them!」

「That's a lovely conclusion Shia, I'm falling in love with you all over again.」

*ruffle-ruffle! pat pat!* The scene of idiot couple flirting beside the forest where multiple locals collapsed was truly surreal.

By the way, in case it was Shia who dealt with them, they would definitely ended up in a state of an inch before getting beaten to death, so in a sense Hajime's non-lethal gunshot was more fortunate to them. The gunshot that came from the irritation from the kiss getting obstructed.....in a sense they came attacked in a nice timing.

After the time advanced boisterously and flirtatiously for a while.

The sun had risen high to the sky, about the time when it almost become afternoon, the river's width suddenly became wide and a town could be seen up ahead. It was the town of Puhang.

The automobile and maintained road that were the convenience of civilization could be seen.

Originally, it was a place that could be reached in four hours if one used car or bus from a town that had train station or airport. There was no whimsical traveler like Hajime and Shia who would intentionally walked inside a thick

forest along the river for a few days laboriously to reach this city.

「How should I say it, it's that. It feels like when you encounter someone who used cable car to reach the summit after you were climbing up with troubles.」

「The mountain climber is enjoying the climb so it's fine desuu.」

Hajime smiled wryly seeing beside him an old truck was passing truck noisily, which caused Shia to pout.

「Don't sulk. I also had fun. Rather than that, it's afternoon already. I'm hungry after a good workout, what about you Shia?」

「You're right~. I'm also getting hungry. According to the villagers, there are a lot of delicious restaurant so let's eat lightly.」

「Yeah. If I remember right the recommendation is a restaurant with a terrace along the river was it?」

「Desu desu. They told me that the steamed river fish is tasty.」

They were talking while entering the city. There they saw that unexpectedly there were a lot of foreigners. It shouldn't be a particular tourist spot, but far ahead from here there was another tourist spot, so perhaps this place was bustling as a stopping point.

Shia asked the local for direction with her innate amiability. In this place too the sight of the local getting bug-eyed hearing Shia talking the local language fluently could be seen as expected. The person she talked to also became smiling naturally. And then they taught her the direction kindly and thoroughly.

「Over there he said! Hajime-san, it's that white building!」

「I got it, that's why don't hop around. You are being stared with lukewarm gaze by everyone around you know? Even me too.」

The local people, whether they were young or old, male or female, were watching Shia who was running across the street toward her lover with gentle eyes. Incidentally, pleasant gazes were also directed toward Hajime who was looking somewhat embarrassed.

It was then a car was running with quite the speed. Even though it was in the middle of city, with that speed the car undoubtedly would be unable to stop

even if something suddenly leaped in front of it.

Shia who was in the middle of crossing the street leaped toward Hajime with a bit of panic.

「That's really dangerous isn't it~. Why is that car that hurried I wonder?」

「Who knows. Rather than that, they are riding good car there. What's more the cars' type is all the same. Are they a group?」

Just as Hajime said, the car driving dangerously wasn't just one.

Six SUV that in a glance looked high class with high performance were running through in a line. It felt like the cars were prepared altogether, so at the very least there was no doubt that they were from an organization with quite the financial muscle.

Hajime's interest was a bit tickled at the people who came to this kind of place in group riding high class SUV, but it also wasn't something to the degree that would make him intentionally investigate. He immediately chased them out of his mind and started walking while holding Shia's hand so she wouldn't hop around.

They walked through a place that looked like a promenade along the river heading toward the restaurant.

The river's appearance wasn't beautiful, so no foreign tourist was watching the view, but several local people were fishing on a protruding wharf, they were chatting while putting their feet into the river. Some other people were washing clothes or other things. It could be seen from the sight how the river was closely connected to the daily life.

Furthermore,

「There are a lot of boats. There is also a floating market~」

「This is the place where the branch rivers merged after all, ship must be a valid method to transport material here.」

As though to show it, ships with a lot of utility were mooring at jutting out wharves that were also a lot. When there were wooden rowing boats, there were also boats with engine. Though they were all uniformly only old things

that had been used for a long time.

Suddenly Hajime asked.

「Come to think of it, Shia. About the ruin spot we were told at the village, based from what I saw in the map it was really far from here. Are we still going to walk? It will take around a week if we detour until the place with bridge you know?」

「Aa~ uu~. Actually it will be nicer to walk but.....as expected, that will take too much time. I have enjoyed the travel by foot a lot, and here boat also seems to be the mainstream.....」

Shia kept glancing at Hajime looking a bit embarrassed, perhaps because it sounded like she was taking back her own words.

Hajime smiled wryly while secretly making his Treasure Warehouse II shined. He summoned the hard workers Arachne-san who were in the process of being turned into Jack of all trades. He took them out from inside his clothes so that it wouldn't come out from empty air, so all the Arachne went down to the ground through Hajime's foot with rustling sound.

「.....Hajime-san. I've been thinking since some time ago but, why spiders? Honestly speaking, they are a bit chilling.」

Countless spiders were crawling out from the body..... Certainly, normally it was a horror sight that would make anyone faint.

Hajime who was asked positioned Arachne to four directions and activated awareness obstruction barrier while answering with a puzzled look.

「Eh? It's cool right?」

「.....」

Shia softly averted her eyes. It seemed that Hajime's fundamental chuunibyou was impossible to be healed.

A flustered look emerged on Hajime's face! Despite him thinking that if it was Shia she would approve saying 「You're right!」, but she was just getting normally creeped out. Her rabbit ears were tapping *pon pon* on Hajime's head softly, as though saying 「It's all right, it's all right I'm telling you. Okay?」,

making him felt like asking just what was all right.

「No no, Shia. Try imagining it for a bit. Multi legged tank is cool right? It's romantic right? At the Armoro Core we played before this, even you were using the multi legged weren't you? Besides, it's that. See, even that person in a certain omoon game, he said 『a spider who laid string on surface as nest』 about himself, also there is that! Even a certain hero of America is totally spider you know! After that—」 (TN: About the moon something, it's reference to Nanaya Shiki from Melty Blood, Hajime is quoting that guy's victory line there)

「I understand. I understand already. It's fine you know, Hajime-san.」

「Oi stop it. Don't look at me with gentle eyes like that! Eeei-, don't pat me! Don't hug me!」

Shia's gaze was full of compassion. 9999 damage to Hajime's heart.

Hajime forcefully tore Shia away from himself and he whined moaningly while further taking out a boat, mooring it at the nearby spot. It was a black coated boat with proper construction.

—Prototype amphibious boat Triana

It was the prototype boat of the artifact that he sent to a certain friend, other than being able to move in high speed on water, it could also run on land by putting out its stored wheels.

「Let's go using this until near the ruin.」

「Does it need to be taken out right now?」

Shia tilted her head in puzzlement. Even though they were going to have lunch after this, why did Hajime took the boat out right now?

「No, actually, this is still in the prototype stage.....rather it's incomplete. I'm thinking that while we are eating, I'll use the Arachne for remote transmutation and complete it to some degree.」

「Arachne-san is working hard isn't it. But, it's floating normally right now, it can run on water already isn't it? I think it's enough like that though.....」

Shia was puzzled, she wondered that even though Hajime was calling it a motor boat, perhaps unexpectedly it was still in a stage where it wasn't even

equipped with propulsive mechanism. But Hajime began by saying 「Of course it will run normally if I make it run but.....」 then,

「It's not installed with any weapon at all.」

「Yes?」

‘I don't really get what you are saying desu’, Shia made an astonished expression that said that.

「Err, Hajime-san. I think it doesn't really need weapon or anything though.....」

Shia said such thing with bewilderment. Hajime turned a shocked expression toward such Shia. His state truly looked as though saying ‘I don't really get what you are saying desu’.

「Are you in your right mind Shia? Something like a vehicle without weapon is the same like a car without any brake! That's too dangerous!」

「Rather I think it's Hajime-san's heart that is in need of a brake.」

If it had to be said further, rather than a car without weapon, it was the car with weapon that was dangerous no matter how one thought about it.

But Hajime shook his head as though to say ‘Just what are you saying’, and then he opened his mouth as though persuading an unreasonable kid.

「Listen well Shia, think really carefully. What will happen to Bono-san if there is no weapon in his Bood car? Even if it's someone of his caliber, he might simply die you know?」

「Please don't confuse the vehicle used for travelling together with spy car. Hajime-san, since when did you join with the spy agency of England? It feels like Magdanese-san will be really happy then.....ah, no, I'll take back my words. It feels like it will give even more damage that will be beyond healing to Magdanese-san's stomach.」

In any case, something like a vehicle without weapon wasn't a vehicle, that was the fixation that Hajime wouldn't concede. And that seemed to be connected with why he put out the boat now.

All the Arachne-san quickly clung to here and there on the boat and began



their improvement work.

「I get it already. I'm hungry so let's quickly go to the restaurant.」

「.....How strange. I get the feeling that Shia is looking at me like I'm a troubled guy.....」

Shia pulled the hand of Hajime who was making a look that wanted to say how upsetting the whole thing was, and this time it was her who started walking while dragging Hajime behind.

Since coming back home from the other world, whether it was Hajime or Yue, both of them sometimes caused Shia to take this kind of attitude as though she was dealing with hopeless person, depending on the situation there was also time when she plainly got angry.....

Compared to when they first met, it wasn't like Hajime didn't get the feeling that their position was oddly reversed.

The cooking of the restaurant they visited was rather delicious just like the villagers recommended. Taking the meal on a wooden terrace that was protruding out to the river was also not bad with how it was giving effective modifier on the place category.

It seemed that Shia was pleased with the steamed cooking of freshwater fish, she was passionately trying to steal the taste since some time ago.

Everyone recognized the handmade cooking skill of the rabbit who was almighty in housekeeping. She had also completely learned the taste of Nagumo family, so although the cooking duty was did by rotation, if it was asked who was the head chef who was entrusted with Nagumo family's kitchen, the answer would already unanimously be Shia.

「Fumu fumu. I somehow get it but, in the first place what seem like will be trouble is whether the spice can be obtained in Japan.」

「You'll surely find it if you search. And if not, you can just come here to buy it using gate.」

「.....Now that Hajime-san mentioned it, that's right. Hajime-san is too all-

purpose that I'll turn depraved from the convenience.」

「If it's for the sake of Shia's handmade cooking, then I won't hesitate to use everything I got.」

「Err.....I'm really happy that Hajime-san say that, but those are profoundly memorable important words that were said the previous night before we were taking down the emperor's castle, so I wish that it won't be said lightly for something gluttonous.....」

Once, when Shia kept her mouth shut from being stuck between her family's determination and her reservation toward Hajime, Hajime gave her those words. Those words were one of several "important words" inside Shia. And so her expression became really complicated.

But, the one in question Hajime himself showed not even the slightest sign of joking around, rather he said those words just now with an expression that was even stiffer than the previous night before taking down the emperor castle.

「Calling it "light" is really a cruel remark. After all Shia has firmly taken hold of my stomach. If it's for the sake of Shia's handmade cooking, I'll even pick fight against the world. I won't hold back.」

「My, my handmade cooking as the trigger of a war!? Tha, that's heavy desuu」

Even while she was saying that, if one looked at her rabbit ears whooshing around it was clearly obvious how happy she was. 「Or rather, what kind of situation that will make Hajime-san pick a fight with the world for my cooking? I don't get the meaning at all~」 Shia muttered such things while poking the food with her fork and doing her best to hold back her mouth from grinning widely.

The atmosphere of the two was meal terrorist in a sense, with how it forcefully changed the food in the area to become "sugary taste". Inside the restaurant that was quite bustling there were various guests, but those who were male and came by themselves felt like clicking their tongue.

There was also how Shia was an exceptionally beautiful girl.

Actially since when she first entered the restaurant, she was gathering quite a lot of gaze. Even the restaurant's staffs were stealing glances at her, even the guest who entered after would also surely take one or two gaze at Shia.

Also because normally there would be Yue and others around her, people would recognize her as “one of the beauties”, but originally she was a possessor of beauty that couldn’t help but gather attention even by herself.

Hajime gazed at the embarrassed Shia with gentle eyes. In order to hide her embarrassment, Shia’s stuffed her cheeks *hamu-hamu-hamu* with food. Hajime-san watched with even more fondness at her acting like that.....

「Geez. Ple, please don’t stare at me like that~」

「Where should I look then huh.」

Hajime spoke with a wry smile. Depending on how to perceive those words, they could also be heard like 「There is nothing else that I should see except Shia」 or 「I want to look at Shia all the time」.

In fact, the male faction inside the restaurant perceived Hajime’s words like that. They gritted their teeth audibly and clicked their tongue with a lot of jealousy filling the sound.

A male restaurant staff let his jealousy drove him and he put down the dish he was carrying on the table hard. The hot soup splashed at a male customer and a scream 「Hooott!？」 echoed.

*boguu* Such graphic sound resounded. It seemed there was a male customer receiving a golden right straight from the female he was taking as a date.

It seemed only the seats of the two had different atmosphere around them. If it was in two dimension world, then there would be hearts floating flightily around them. Above all else, Shia’s happy smiling face that was filled with a lot of embarrassment and happiness produced a lot of shot victim.

Right now, the sound *splash*- that could be heard must be the sound of a man walking on the road beside the terrace falling into the river. 「Aa~」 such voice could be heard vanishing into distance. It was unknown how far that man would get carried away by the stream.

If Yue was charming people like a moon shining bewitchingly in the night, then Shia was charming people like a sunny spot that was scattering happiness around warmly. Although the vector of the two was different, the demon king’s rabbit possessed a charm that wasn’t superior or inferior from the bewitching

vampire princess.

But, at that time, Hajime looked like he was taking a breather.

「Could it be, the improvement is finished?」

「Yeah. It's properly armed now. A total of four small gatling gun placement at the back, front, left, and right. Then 120 pencil missiles. It's also loaded with torpedo and mine, twenty of each. I'm a bit uneasy with the firepower but, well, it's okay I guess for a quick job. With this it became a safe vehicle more or less.」

Hajime smiled in satisfaction. Shia went 「Rather it's a mass of dangerous things desuu」 with her rabbit ears going limp.

And then, her rabbit ears caught the sound *kasa kasa* that caused her to shudder reflexively. When she turned her gaze toward her feet, all the Arachne-san who had finished their task were currently gushing forth from the terrace floor's gap.

They skillfully used their leg and gave a smart salute before they were enveloped by light one after another, returning into the Treasure Warehouse.

Shia thought, 「Those Arachne-san, they are controlled by Hajime-san right? Somehow I feel a sense of self from them but that must be my imagination right?」. It was scary so she didn't ask though.

「Hajime-san, it's better to not show those Arachne-san in front of Kaori-san or Shizuku-san you know? I was raised in the sea of trees, so I'm all right with insects, but even someone like me shuddered a little seeing a lot of Arachne-san.」

Also, they strangely felt like they had their own will. Countless will at that. Shia whispered so inside her heart while giving Hajime a warning.

Hajime averted his gaze.

「.....Hajime-san had criminal record already aren't you?」

「Shizuku was.....unable to go out of her room for a while.」

To say further, everything that looked like gap inside the room had tough planks nailed on them so that transmutation wouldn't work and she holed up

inside there. Just like how Goddess Amaterasu was hiding inside the Heavenly Rock Cave, it was a hardship to make Shizuku come out.

「Of all people Hajime-san showed it to Shizuku-san whose reaction is the most feminine.....just what are you doing?」

「I'm also reflecting about that. You see, Shuuzou-san said to me 『I'm thinking for a renovation, can you help with making a huge underground space?』, so I used a lot of Arachne for construction work but.....」

「Shizuku-san unexpectedly encountered them, is that it?」

「They had just finished the first phase and they were returning from the underground. It was then, while they were gushing out in large amount from the house's garden, she saw them.」

Hajime could also use gate to teleport inside Shizuku's room and persuaded her there, but it felt like it would have the opposite effect instead, so Hajime together with the disciples of Yaegashi-style did various things under the operation that was named 『Shizuku-ojou(young miss), Heavenly Rock Cave Operation!』 so that she would come out voluntarily.

In any case, the disciples of Yaegashi-style were proficient in doing performance. Very much so. To the level that made Shizuku spontaneously peeked out from the gap of her door and thought「What? What are they doing? Why are they looking like they have so much fun?」

Hearing that kind of story, Shia directed a pitying gaze to the far away Japan while thinking that next time she would let Shizuku fluffed at her rabbit ears to her heart's content.

But, at that time a commotion suddenly entered Shia's rabbit ears. 「Oh?」 When she turned her gaze to the direction of the commotion, a group of what seemed to be foreigners were already gathering around Triana unnoticed.

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san. People are gathering around the boat you know?」

「Hm? .....Are they sightseeing because its color is different from other boat? Well, leave them alone. It's moving using magic power, so no matter what they do it's impossible to steal it.」

「That's true.」

Shia also returned to her meal while feeling a bit curious. What bothered her was because they didn't look like tourist.....

Or rather, they didn't even look like respectable people. Several of them looked like normal people, but the people surrounding them as though guarding them were emitting aura that was unique to people who were familiar with violence.

Although, there was no way they could become a threat to both of them, so Shia acted as though it didn't bother her.

But, it seemed it was them who had business with Hajime and Shia.

A highly strung middle aged man with blond hair that had been mostly receding was pointing at Triana while asking something to a man nearby who seemed to be a local.

The local male shook his head, but when he called out to other people who seemed to be his acquaintances, although they looked puzzled they still pointed at Hajime and Shia who were continuing their meal at the terrace.

They must be saying that although they wasn't a hundred percent sure, those two might be the owner of Triana.

There was also a man with well-featured face like an actor beside man who looked highly strung. When he looked at Hajime and Shia, his gaze stopped on Shia. And then he raised a voice of admiration that sounded exactly like an actor.

With the "highly strung" and the "sham actor" in the lead, a man who looked like a secretary and five men who seemed to be bodyguards were heading toward the terrace in group.

「Uhee. They are coming here Hajime-san.」

「Leave it to me. I'm often told recently that I have "become mellow". I'll show you how I settle this amicably with a peaceful and cultured communication.」

「I somehow can see the future already.」

Shia's characteristic magic "Future Sight" didn't activate. This was this thing

that was commonly referred as “pretend”. It could also be called cliché.

“Highly strung” was making a rude entrance into the terrace. And then, as soon as he stood in front of the two’s table,

「Oi, you two. Is that boat yours? I’ll buy it with cash. This is enough right?」

Without letting the other party getting a say, he slapped a roll of banknotes loudly on the table. His voice was like monkey going ‘kiii kii’, and his gaze was glaring hard. From the start he didn’t have any intention of hearing their opinion, it seemed he was thinking that there was no way his demand wouldn’t go through.

Those glaring eyes turned toward the muscular men who were standing by threateningly behind him. He was intending to make his will became known using more than words.

Against such person, Hajime peacefully

「Aaa?」

「Hih!?!」

The “highly strung” lost strength in his waist! The fiendish eye gleam that would make even yakuza to run away barefooted tormented the nerve of the “highly strung” with so much torment!

The bodyguards’ hand moved to their waist or their breast pocket reflexively.

But, before they could take out something, Shia’s voice resounded.

「Hajime-san! Hajime-san! You’re a peaceful and cultured person!」

「Oops.」

Hajime patted his own face. What next appeared was an expression that was truly gentle and peaceful. If they hadn’t seen the evil countenance just a moment before, then they would surely think that it was truly the amiable expression of a Japanese person. But right now that change instead made it scarier.

「I’m really sorry, but I have no plan to sell that boat. If it’s boat you want there are a lot of other boats, how about you take a look at another place?」

「Hih!?!」

The “highly strung” was backing away while still sitting on the ground.

「.....Shia, what is the meaning of this? I was treating him gently right? Why is that guy scared?」

「That’s obviously because Hajime-san showed him what lies behind that smile first.」

Hajime whose expression wanted to say ‘I don’t get it’ caused Shia to make a straight man retort to him.

There, the sham actor came forward.

「Oh no my apologies, to suddenly intrude without even introducing ourselves. The one losing his legs there is Brandon. While I am Wilford. Nice to make your acquaintance.」

The sham actor also known as Wilford put his hand on his chest and respectfully—or rather, with a gesture that was excessively theatrical he greeted with a bow.

「To be able to encounter a Japanese young man with such inspiring aura and a beautiful lady like yourself in this kind of place, truly a travel is really a good thing.」

The smile looked appropriate on the man. He looked like he was familiar with his own charm. If looked from nearby, he was truly a handsome man that would make anyone understood why he had self-confidence. His age must be around the early thirty. He also had adult sex appeal that if it was a normal girl their cheeks would redden unconsciously.

Wilford smiled sweetly at Shia and presented his hand gently. Because Shia’s hand was at the direction where his hand was going, perhaps he was intending to make “the greeting of kissing the back of the hand”.

「??」

Shia was plainly puzzled and she put the fish her fork stabbed on Wilford’s palm. It seemed that she thought Wilford-san was a gourmet and he wanted to say to her 「That fish look delicious so share it with me」.



Hajime almost snorted reflexively, while Wilford's expression was twitching. Even so he said 「This is, thank you so much」 while eating the fish on his palm. His guts was quite something.

「Cough cough. And, Mr. Wilford. Is your business the same like that that man said before?」

「Unfortunately for the two of you, that's correct. No matter what we wish to purchase that splendid boat from the two of you. Can I please ask you to somehow accommodate our request? If it's money we will pay your asking price. Of course, there will be limit if we are using cash though.....」

Wilford said that then he took out a check from his pocket. He must be telling them to write any amount they liked. It was a terrifyingly lavish attitude.

「We are a research team from Reletense company. Brandon is the researcher, while I.....am someone like a businessman. This will fall under necessary expense so write down your price without reservation.」

Hajime tilted his head toward Wilford who was saying such thing with jesting attitude.

「If this isn't a personal project then you should be coming quite prepared right? Why are you doing something like negotiation of boat transaction? It should be something that you prepared or arranged beforehand right?」

「There is an unexpected situation. Life is something that is always moving to an unforeseen bad direction. We have secured boats to some degree, but in our situation it's still a bit lacking, a boat with good performance that is.」

Perhaps it was a miss in the arrangement or perhaps it was the local people who broke the contract in the last moment. In any case, it seemed they lacked the number of boat.

Come to think of it, the line of SUV they caught sight before. If Wilford and his group were riding inside those, then certainly they must have quite the number of personnel and equipment. If their people here weren't all of them, then it seemed to be a fairly large research team.

Although, Hajime's answer was decided. No matter the reason he couldn't hand over something like a boat that was moving with magic power, there

wasn't any meaning giving it to them.

「My bad. I want to cooperate here but, that boat is specially made. I cannot hand it over no matter how much money you stack up.」

「Can I ask you to please do something about it?」

Wilford asked doggedly. His words were polite. His face was also smiling. But.....joviality was slipping from his eyes.

It seemed this man was far more dangerous than Mr. Brandon.

「I told you already, it's impossible. If it's boat then there are a lot here. Look for it at other place.」

「Your boat is good. I only looked briefly, but with the condition of all the boats here, it won't be strange if they breakdown anytime. With more time we will be able to procure quite some good boats, but we don't want to waste that much time.」

「I understand your circumstance. But, even so I can't. My bad.」

Shia was sending Hajime a gaze that was full with admiration while saying 「Oo~, Hajime-san is properly persuading other with words!」. Was that how much she was thinking that he was a person whose thought was negotiation = violence..... Hajime felt a bit wounded.

「Hmmm. This is troubling. I thought that if it's Japanese person then compromising is their specialty but..... It seems that the youngsters these days is bad at reading the atmosphere. No, peace idiot always exist anywhere. Perhaps it can't be helped that you are lacking in sense of danger.」

A cold gaze was poured from Wilford to Hajime. That gaze could even be called inhuman, normal people who got that gaze directed at them would tremble from a chill. Those eyes were also slowly moving toward Shia.

Wilford's fingertip made a beckoning motion. Following that, a large bodied and tough looking man came forward and bared open his jacket slowly. There was a handgun there.

「What do you think? For the sake of your lovely lover too, won't you allow this negotiation to end up productively by all means here?」

「Negotiation? I think that you are mistaking it with threat though?」

Hajime snorted mockingly. Wilford's eyes narrowed slowly. The bodyguard was moving to circle behind Shia.

It was unthinkable that they would shoot in midday in front of the public, but what if they pressed the gun muzzle from nearby and threatened so they moved away from there.....such thing was possible enough.

「Good grief, it's unbelievable that these guys are corporate worker. Or perhaps is your company some kind of private military company or something?」

「Now, I wonder about that—」

Wilford showed a cruel smile, however his words halted.

*clack* He saw the thing that was put on the table.

「.....」

「Even if I shot you guys death right now, looking from the gun you guys are keeping in your pocket, it will be undoubtedly a justified self-defense. After all we here are a young couple. While your side is a mysterious organization. There is also a lot of witnesses seeing you guys surrounding us like this.」

Everyone's gaze was fixed on the bizarre large revolver. No matter how they looked, it was a custom made order, what's more it looked well used. And the most terrifying thing was, even though they were all paying attention to Hajime all this time, they didn't notice the gun until the moment he pulled it out.

「.....I think that you should put the number of people into your consideration though?」

「I absolutely don't care.」

The sound of gulping saliva could be heard from the experienced bodyguards.

At the same time, there was the abnormal pressure overflowing from Hajime. Certainly, the mood that difference in number wouldn't make any difference was permeating the air.

「.....Who are you? Don't tell me, you are aiming for "that" just like us?」

「? That?」

「Chih. So it's only a case of us pulling a bad card huh. Really, life is something that is moving to unexpected direction.」

Wilford clicked his tongue, then his hand made a gesture to back down with his expression looked like he had bitten something sour. The bodyguards pulled back slowly.

「Sorry to have bothered you. We will look for boat at other place.」

「.....I see. What's important is that we can understand each other.」

Wilford shrugged his shoulders, then he easily turned around and left. Brandon followed behind him in panic and the bodyguards were leaving the restaurant while staying on guard against Hajime until the end.

「What's with those people I wonder.」

「Who knows. In any case, they aren't decent people for sure. Nothing beats not getting involved with them.」

Hajime shrugged his shoulders while staring sadly at the food that had become cold. He then resumed eating.

Shia also followed suit and resumed eating while whispering inside her heart.

(No matter how you think about it a flag has just been raised desuu. We are absolutely going to get involved with those people again! Because, this is Hajime-san we are talking about!)

The future prediction of Shia whose vocation was "Fortune Teller" was.....no, even if it wasn't Shia, anyone who knew Hajime could easily predict that.

The correctness of that prediction.....

Would be proven as early as today.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

For some reason I was writing lengthily.

I will speed up the development from next chapter.

PS

Arifureta Nichijou, has been updated with newest chapter!

Tio has also appeared and it become all the more lively you know~

Please read it by all means.

# Arifureta Chapter 288

## Arifureta After III Shia Arc The Ruin of Curse

Large splashes danced at the broad river with cloudy light brown water. Wave was spreading as though the river was being cut up from something heading upstream.

The cause was a black coated boat——Triana. Taking in water and then jetting it out, all the chain of process was moving with magic power in jet propulsion mechanism, so the driving force was shockingly silent when compared with normal engine that was using propeller mechanism.

「Nn~, it feels good desuu~」

Rabbit ears were energetically flapping *patapatapatapata*-. Shia's whole body was showered by wind while she narrowed her eyes pleasantly.

The speed that couldn't be obtained from the local old boats seemed to grant the rider with pleasant wind. Even Hajime who was similarly basking in the wind while holding the wheel nodded 「You're right」 in a good mood.

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san, I also want to drive.」

「.....Just sit obediently there.」

Shia was making her request with eyes that were sparkling with hope, but sadly Hajime whose eyes twitched for an instant rejected it. Shia's cheeks puffed up roundly. It was easy to guess that she was appealing 「I'm dissatisfied desu!」 with that expression.

「I want to drive desuu!」

「Are you a spoiled brat. Even though you puffed up your cheek like that, if I say no then no.」

「Why!? Just what kind of problem is there with me driving!?!」

「Dangerous driving.」

‘Heh?’ Shia tilted her head in puzzlement. Her expression looked as though she had just heard an unknown word. It seemed that at the very least she was believing without a doubt that it was a word that was completely unrelated and inapplicable with her.

「Now see here.....」

「Wha, what’s with that exasperated face?」

「I’ll tell you then if you don’t have awareness of it.....sometimes there are people who will change completely when they are holding the wheel right? You are exactly that kind of type. Currently Schutaif feels like it’s mostly for Shia’s exclusive use but.....」

「That’s right, if it’s vehicle running with magic power, I’m already riding Schutaif around regularly, so there is no problem at all!」

「Try saying how many times you have been chased by the police.」

「.....」

Shia stared to the sky. Aa, today too the sky is really clear. For the sky to be this blue.....

「Oi, what’s the matter rampaging rabbit. I’m telling you to say how many times you’ve been playing tag with a few dozen patrol cars.」

「.....I don’t really understand what is it about I wonder——」

「Far from obeying the word 『STOO~PP!』 of the police, you were yelling 『If you can catch me then try to damn catch me desuu!』 while driving recklessly. You were putting out speed more than 200 km/hour even though you were at public highway and won the race by a wide margin, now try saying who that person could possibly be.」

「.....」

Shia's rabbit ears were flopping limply as though to say "the rabbit ears feel painful".

However, the reproachful eyes of Hajime-san didn't stop from dealing additional blow. He divulged every evil committed by the rabbit who would rampage when she held the wheel!

「How many times you won against the bunches that looked like delinquents or biker gang while mocking them 『S-LO~OW! DESUU!』? Who is the one who secretly got called as 『the mysterious rampaging anego』?」

「.....Tha, that's a person who accidentally resembled me you know? It's a different person.」

「You know, just in case Schutaif has the recognition obstruction function for its rider, and its number will automatically get rewritten periodically, the police must be unable to identify the criminal.」

By the way, among the polices this person was known as 『the rampaging girl with screw loose』. The high speed riot squad carried out improvement to their car in order to oppose Shia, while the squad members were levied with demonic training in order to raise their driving skill, and finally even the sortie of helicopter became a common thing, but because the criminal's identity was still unknown they were all holding their head in frustration.....

「Tha, that's right. The criminal's identity is unknown. In other words, it's not me! Oh dear, in this world there is that kind of outrageous people isn't it!」

Actually, Shia got into the hobby of driving other than her martial art hobby. She was enjoying rampaging at holiday or late at night. What was troubling, rather than driving in vast plain like at Tortus, she preferred to drive at maintained road like at the urban area of earth.

Perhaps she had self-awareness as a bad rabbit who was averting her eyes from Road Traffic Act in full power while merely pursuing speed. It seemed she was intending to keep a secret her hobby of driving recklessly and hid it from her family in her own way but.....

Everything was seen through already. Hajime's gaze stabbed at her with that meaning.



*Jii~~-. Jirijiri~~~-.*

「Uu.....」

「You think the mass media didn't sniff it out after you rampaged that much?」

A girl of unknown identity who although she didn't steal anything, but she was running around at night on bike. No matter how much effort was spent to capture her, she would escape. And mysteriously, it was mysterious how that girl left no impression at all except that she was a “young girl”.

It wasn't a complete removal of memory, so there was no way the mass media wouldn't bit at it.

「Bu, but, there isn't anything in the news or anything.....」

「Because I dealt with it.」

「Guuu」

She let out 'guu' sound. Shia's gaze kept swimming around a lot. (TN: In Japan, there is a phrase of 'cannot even make a guu sound', which mean someone is so speechless they cannot say anything back)

Hajime-san was making a reproachful stare in the level of Yue while dealing the final blow.

「Before this, Myuu made a mess by doing dog fight with Air Self-Defense Force ASDF using toy aircraft.」

「!」

「When I asked her why did she do that, 『It's unfair that only Shia-oneechan had fun nano! Even though Myuu cannot ride both Schutaif or Brieze! That's why, Myuu played with JSDF officer using Tomcat-tan! Just like Shia-nee-chan! Just like Shia-nee-chan!』 she said——」

「I'm really deeply sorryyy! I'm the criminal desuu!」

Shia did dogeza posture on the deck of Triana's bow. On her but, her rabbit tail was flapping *patapatapata*- from wind.

Hajime sighed and patted Shia's head fluffily while saying.

「Because of that reason, not letting Shia holding the wheel while there are other people riding together is the decided matter of Nagumo family emergency family meeting that was held while you were in the middle of rampaging.」

「Tha, that kind of decision was made while I was becoming wind.....」

Shia's expression was becoming lost for words while this time she was sitting meekly on her seat. Thinking that she finally accepted it, Hajime too shrugged his shoulders and returned his concentration to the driving.

For a while, while enjoying the wind and the sound of water, Shia suddenly titled her head saying 「Eh?」.

「If everyone know, why didn't anyone stop me?」

Shia didn't know the chronology, but from Hajime's spoke before, it felt like Shia's driving hobby was known already from the start.

Then even though it would be fine if he just stopped her normally, why was he instead didn't say anything and even went as far as quieting the mass media.....

Thinking about it, just now too Hajime said to her 「he is riding together so he cannot leave the driving to her」, but he didn't tell her to stop her habitual reckless driving.

Hajime's answer toward that question was,

「You like it right? Running on bike.」

「.....」

In other words, it was like that.

He didn't stop her because it was something that Shia liked. Rather, he did all in his power so that Shia could have fun.

The recognition obstruction function that was installed in Schutaif was also a part of it. With Shia's reflex, driving technique, and Schutaif's excellent operability that was working together with direct operation of magic power, surely there wouldn't be any incident even in the slightest chance, but twofold and threefold safety measures were still prepared ahead of time that covered

even until the risk of indirect incident. The countermeasure against mass media was naturally also being done.

Shia's expression turned into a look as though she had stuffed her cheeks full with delicious sweets that were extraordinarily sweet.

And then, like that she quietly stood up and wordlessly embraced Hajime's back. She circled her hands around him from behind and hugged tightly. She put her chin on Hajime's shoulder and rubbed her cheek on his side face.

「Oi oi, it's getting hard to drive.」

「You can directly steer using magic power operation righttt~」

Her melting voice sounded as sweet as her expression. Hajime chuckled slightly and he fluffed Shia's head from across his shoulder.

Travel date of just the two of them.....the air became sweet anytime there was an opening.

If they were looked from the side, it wasn't any inferior with Hajime & Yue at their Tortus period. If the classmates were here, surely everyone would harmoniously get the malady of vomiting out sugar.

But, at that time, some kind of large object from upstream was flowing near with strong momentum. Shia who noticed that while still embracing Hajime from behind raised her voice「Ah」.

「Hajime-san, a large driftwood is——」

‘Right there. It's dangerous.’ The moment she was going to say that,

*Uin! Gakon-! Pashu! Chudon-!!!*

「Hm? What did you say?」

The large wood that was flowing in direct course to block the river became the prey of pencil missile!

Triana went right through on the river that was colored with flame blast and water pillar as though nothing had happened. A barrier that let wind passed but deflected rain was blocking the pouring down water. However, the heat wave was caressing Shia's cheek.

Perhaps because of the surprise from the explosion that suddenly occurred, a crocodile put out its head from the river! It tried to run away to the river bank in panic! A lot of birds were flying up from the opposite bank!

The gatling reacted!

*Uin! Gakon-! Stand b~~~~y!*

「WAAAAAAAAAH, CROCODILE-SAN WATCH OO~~~UT DESU!」

Shia leaped at the gatling on the starboard and directed the muzzle up forcefully. At the same time, she took out a metal ball from treasure warehouse and used only her foot to kick it flying, directing the muzzle of the gatling at the ship's port to different direction too.

Rain of bullets flew out to above and rear. Shia slightly didn't make it in time and several shots attacked the crocodile-san and all the bird-san.

A bullet grazed *chuin!* the crocodile-san and it desperately escaped in a state that it felt like「NOOOOOOOO-, CROCODILE KILLERRRR!」such scream could be heard. While all the bird-san, with an act that might be from their instinct, they dispersed with movement so splendid that it felt like「BREAK! BREAK UP!」could be heard. In addition they succeeded a super dodging from the bullets' trajectory using beautiful barrel roll.

Shia spoke while grabbing hard on Hajime's shoulders.

「Hajime-san, please switch place with me.」

「Why? Just what kind of problem is there with me driving?」

「Dangerous driving.」

‘Heh?’ Hajime tilted his head in puzzlement. His expression looked as though he had just heard an unknown word. It seemed that at the very least he was believing without a doubt that it was a word that was completely unrelated and inapplicable with him.

Although the vector was different, Hajime too was a habitual offender of doing dangerous driving.

That's dangerous driving just now! Nagumo family, assemble! An emergency family meeting is needed desu!

After that, they were advancing for around an hour while there was scramble for the wheel on the ship.

Hajime and Shia finally arrived at the riverside that was near the rumored ruin that was their destination. From here onward they would walk.

「Huff, huff, Hajime-san you blockhead! In the end you didn't let me to hold the wheel even once!」

「Haa, haa, na, naturally. Shia's driving is dangerous after all.」

Both of them mutually deployed fierce offense and defense with Triana's steering wheel in the line which caused their breathing to somewhat rise. They got down on the bank. Shia was looking at Hajime storing Triana into the treasure warehouse while discharging objection with her rabbit ears looking disheveled.

「It's Hajime-san who is driving dangerously with high killing power!」

「Where. Removing dangerous animal or a driftwood that we won't get away unscathed if we collided with are rather an act that remove danger.」

「Does Hajime-san has the awareness that you are the most dangerous organism in earth? Or rather, just what is dangerous from the bird-san, try saying it.」

「.....About the bird-san, honestly it's not like I'm not thinking that I didn't do anything bad. I'll improve the gatling's movement sensor later.」

That wasn't it. In earth where it wasn't like there was a monster, gatling— or rather, something that was functionally a sentry gun being installed in a boat, that act itself was dangerous.

「.....That thing was attacking automatically. At least please make it something that is operated manually.」

「Removing Sentori-sensei, you said? How dare you say such rude thing.」 (TN: In Japan, sentry is read as sentori. Also, the sentori here is written with kanji of thousand, and bird, which is sentry gun's nickname in Japan.)

Hajime who was running on romance couldn't be stopped by anyone. If it wasn't Yue's 'chuu chuu' or Shia's backdrop.

Shia let out a sigh, then she muttered 「This matter is put on hold. It's family meeting when we go home desuu」. For the time being, she overlooked Hajime's troubling hobby. After all, he also overlooked her hobby.

Both of them pulled themselves together and stepped inside the thick forest that was growing up densely.

They walked through trackless path. They were cutting down leaves and branches rapidly using large hatchet. They decided the direction where they should be heading using hand-written map and compass that they received from the village. They weren't using the Compass or satellite picture.

It was an inconvenient and greatly troublesome method, but Shia who was waving around a hatchet and cutting open the path in front looked like she was really having fun. Her rabbit ears were moving really rhythmically from her agile movement avoiding the jutting out branches.

Just when he thought that she liked running through the city, she also liked to go through a pathless forest. In the end, Shia could have fun with anything, in fact, she had fun with everything. It was the way of this gloriously simple rabbit.

「This place is really not bad at all isn't it? The river is nearby, and from the presence it feels like there are a lot of living things here, plants that look edible are also abundant.」

Hajime reflexively laughed hearing that way of talking that sounded like a person searching for an apartment room confirming the site condition. Certainly, they were coming to search for a new base, so making such comment wasn't mistaken but.....her migration requirement that sounded like she was saying that the drug store was near, and there was also convenience store nearby, was actually really wild.

「Even after people frequently passed through here, but right now there is no sign of that at all. It just like the people in the village said, this must be a place that usually no one will go near. It's not bad for Karm and others.」

「Looking from the map, as long as they don't cross the river using boat, it will be necessary to take quite a far detour.」

In the middle of talking, Shia hopped. When Hajime looked below her in

questioning gaze, several small flowers were blooming there. Hajime also avoided them so to not step on them.

「Hajime-san. Are we going the right way?」

「Hm? Aa, it's fine. It's straight ahead of here.」

「Roger desuu.」

The hatchet's movement stopped still. And then, Shia shifted the position slightly and cut through branches with a single stroke. She advanced forward. Looking closer, the branches that she were going to cut first had spider web laid out on them, a large spider was clinging quietly on it. For the moment Hajime too went through while avoiding the spider web so not to destroy it.

「Oops, it's dangerous you know~」

「?」

Shia swung her hatchet. However, it was obvious from a glance that it wasn't for cutting. She turned the hatchet so its flat surface was facing the direction of her swing. She swung it downward slowly in a scooping way, catching a snake that was rearing its head and gently threw it into the bush.

「You are a Hauria huh.」

「What are you saying?」

‘No, nothing’, Hajime shook his head with a wry smile.

Karm and others who were fussing about insects. The young boy Par who loved flower.

Everything was the story of distant past. If it was the current them, by the point of time a snake reared its head, it would surely get killed in a snap. With a fiercely glinting eyes and fearless smile tugged on their lips.

It was only Shia who was carrying a fragment of the “gentle forest bunny-san”<sup>Hauria</sup> that had become a phantasmal species right now. It could be said that she was a rare rabbit in another sense.<sup>clan</sup>

The one who caused that was Hajime himself, but he put that fact aside and stared warmly at the back figure of Shia who was advancing while paying

attention to the forest's fauna and flora.

Like that the two advanced deeper and deeper into the dense forest but after walking for nearly two hours, regardless of how it wouldn't be strange even if the ruin would come into view anytime soon, but at the point of time where not even any hint or shadow of the ruin could be found, Hajime finally started spitting out whining.

「Say, Shia. Compass.....」

「No.」

「Just a little bit.....」

「Geez-. Hajime-san you modern youngster! You are poisoned too much by the convenient tools! You cannot escape to the easy path just because of a bit of difficulty!」

「Shia-mama, please I'm begging you. I'm already tired here, mentally.」

「Who are you calling mama. Surely it's just a little bit more. Let's work hard without giving up until the end.」

Hajime said jokingly because Shia's speech sounded like a mom, but it appeared that Shia-mama was the ally of a kid who did his best until the end.

The sun would set in just a few more hours, so he only tried saying that for a bit, Hajime thought with a wry smile. He lifted both his hands to show his surrender.

「Nn~, but certainly, I want to at least pinpoint the place within today. ....  
Yosh, let's try look around a bit from above.」

She was trying to climb tree and found the location of the ruin from above the dense forest.

While Hajime was watching, Shia was.....\*gugu-\* bending her knee. The next moment, *don-* the impact sound came at the same time Shia vanished. No, more precisely she jumped with so much force it caused her to seem to vanish.

「That's like the main character of Matoix huh. However it's in real life though.」



Jumping to the sky with a stepping force that caused the ground to undulate. The messiah-sama of a certain movie would fly to the beyond without pause like that, but Shia only came out to the sky above the forest before returning right away.

Softly she landed in a way that felt weightless. Most likely she was decreasing her weigh using gravity magic.

Certainly, it was a searching method that was only using her own strength without any convenient tool at all. Hajime couldn't fully accept it though.

「H~m. I cannot really see anything that look like building. Are we lost?」

「If the ruin is really in the map's position, then our direction shouldn't be mistaken. And it's not like our sense of direction is led astray like in sea of trees, the compass is also moving normally.」

「In that case, this is a problem of distance then. The villager too, 『If I remember right, it's around here I think』, he said it a bit vaguely like that.」

Shia groaned 'mumumu'. For the time being, the two would keep advancing like this. However, they were doing that while Shia was frequently leaping with great jump above the dense forest and checked the surrounding.

A rabbit was hopping *pyon pyon* in a dense forest.....

However, it was a consecutive jump of thirty meter class.

Even though the convenient tools were sealed. As expected Hajime was feeling like he couldn't fully accept this.

Although, it seemed that method was effective. Not even fifteen minutes after that, Shia raised her voice 「Aaa!」

「Discovery! Hajime-san, I discovered iit!」(TN: Not a typo, this is the character speaking with prolonged word. If you found anything like this before than most likely it's also not a typo. But when I reread it, it feels a bit strange way of writing. Can anyone teach me if there is the correct way to write something like this?)

「Oo~, finally. It's worth it going *pyon pyon* like that huh.」

According to Shia, surely the leaves and branches acted as obstruction so that

she couldn't see from above, but when she looked from the angle of 45 degree diagonally, there was an opening between the leaves and branches that was just right for her to be able to see a building. In other words, it was difficult to discover the place using things like satellite picture.

Both of them were heading toward the ruin with footsteps that felt somewhat excited.

The more they got nearer to the ruin, the trees became thick, and the density of the plants also increased. It was as though the nature itself was blocking any invasion.

Shia was cutting apart those plants with hatchet. The sword pressure, not, the hatchet pressure's shockwave blew away the obstruction while they advanced, and finally that figure appeared.

「Oo. Indeed, it's a ruin that makes us feel its many years.」

「The vegetation is dense, that might be why the area around here is gloomy. It feels a bit eerie. It feels like I can understand why the villagers fear it.」

Inside the gloomy dense forest, a ruin made from stone was standing quietly. Stones with size even bigger than human adult that were unknown from where and how they were brought here were piled up to form the structure. The cut section was surprisingly smooth, giving the impression that the stones were sticking perfectly to each other.

Although, weeds and roots were sticking out from between the stones, the whole building was covered crowdedly with vines, and the stones themselves were also looking cracked and weathered.

Grown tree broke through the building. It could be clearly seen how the passage of time affected even the stones.

The construction itself was extremely simple. The size was around a largish residence that could be found in countryside. It didn't have two floors, but a one-story building. There was no door. A gaping wide hole was filled with spreading darkness that looked inviting.

After Hajime and Shia exchanged gaze, they nodded once to each other and stepped inside.

.....Fifteen minutes later.

「There is really nothing at all!」

「Please give me back my thrill desuu!」

Inside the ruin, Hajime and Shia's tsukkomi echoed.

In fact, the inside was so empty to the degree that it made them wanted to make tsukkomi about just what with the atmosphere of the ruin that looked like there would be really something.

「Well, this is after an investigation has been done here, even if there was something here it's obviously had been taken away. But still, it should be a bit more, like.....right?」

「I understand what Hajime-san want to say. Something that can make us imagine the livelihood of the people in the past, or like painting in the wall that will make brain ponder 『Mu? What is this picture expressing?』, or like trace of relief, something like those!」

「Yep yep, something like those!」

A beat later.

「Good grief, what a total let down.」

「Good grief, what a total let down desuu.」

Hajime and Shia's shoulders dropped with their voice matching each other.

Surely, if the ruin had its own will, it would surely object「No, even if you told me that. Or rather, who the hell are you guys」without a doubt.

Well, this was earth, there was no way there would be that many unexplored region that was filled with mystery and puzzle like in Tortus. Both of them quickly left from the ruin.

「Until the sun set, it will be one more hour I guess? What to do Shia. We finally find a building, I think it's fine to stay here for today.」

「You're right. But if we have one hour, we can explore the surrounding quite a lot you know? From the start, our objective is to search further back from the ruin, while the ruin is only as replacement boundary to repel people, how about

going to take a look for a little?」

「Well, if it's just searching the surrounding, starting from now isn't too bad.....」

Hajime made a little wry smile at Shia who was really active. And then, he followed behind Shia who was energetically stepping deeper into the forest behind the ruin.

Before long the sun had completely set. Hajime and Shia doubled back to the ruin with hurried pace while thinking that they had spent a bit too much time for the search.

Suddenly, Shia's rabbit ears twitched around in reaction.

「Eh?」

「What's up Shia?」

「Uu~n. There are people. At where the ruin is.」

「At this kind of time? I wonder if it's the local people coming for test of courage here?」

It was just an inch from complete darkness if there was no light. The moonlight also didn't reach inside this dense forest. That was about the only possibility that Hajime thought was possible.

But, that prediction of Hajime was immediately proved wrong.

「No, I think that's not it. It feels like there are totally a lot.」

「Is it a large number of people? About how many?」

「I don't know clearly but.....thirty? No, it's more than forty.」

「That's a lot! Seriously!」

As expected even Hajime's eyes opened wide in surprise.

「What to do, Hajime-san?」

「In any case, we won't understand the situation from here. Besides, I'm also curious why a lot of people is visiting that empty ruin in this kind of time. Let's approach without getting found out by those guys and confirm what they are

doing.」

Shia nodded at Hajime's suggestion and the two approached the ruin while erasing their presence.

The more they got near, even Hajime became able to sense the presence of a lot of people. In addition, when they came until a few dozen meter away from the ruin, they understood from the gaps of the branches and leaves that the area around the ruin was illuminated brightly as though it was afternoon.

Hajime and Shia looked at each other's face and without pause they soundlessly leaped on a thick tree branch where they could look over the whole ruin.

「Oi oi, seriously? Where this investigation team came from?」

「After this long? When it's already been investigated?」

Ahead of their gaze, there were several large tents set up in front of the ruin. Great number of large lighting illuminated the surrounding, furthermore equipments of unknown function were set up here and there.

「I don't really know the detail, but everything looks like of nice quality. They are obviously aren't from around here.」

「Foreigner.....perhaps, they are from USA. There are a lot of them. The Americans are around twenty people, and the locals.....perhaps around thirty, including the presence inside the building?」

「Seems so. ....Oi, Shia. Can you see the logo on those tents and machineries?」

「Ee~rr, yes yes, I can see it you know? It's a picture like an arrow stabbing on a treasure box with opened lid?」

「Aah. That huh, I remember seeing it somewhere.」

Most likely it was a logo of a company that manufactured or possessed machinery and so on. Hajime seemed to know about the logo. Shia asked him 「Where did you see it?」.

Hajime's expression was really complicated while saying 「Was that a flag, god damn it」, he then opened his mouth to answer.

「At the restaurant in Puhang.」

「That's, could it be.....」

Yes, Hajime saw the logo when the guy who seemed to be the bodyguard of that sham actor took off his jacket. There was the same logo at the inner part of that jacket.

As expected, from the tent that was conspicuously larger than the other, a familiar man came out while fiddling with a tablet.

「Look, that guy. It's Will Turner.」

「That's not it. It's Helmut-san.」

It was Wilford-san.

By no means that person was the quasi-main character of a certain pirate movie, or an evil dragon of a sky world.

That Wilford watched the table while thinking about something. Sometimes he gave instruction to the local people.

The figure of that “highly strung” Brandon could be seen. He was giving instruction to his fellow Americans that looked like researchers who seemed to be his underlings.

There were also muscular men around a bit distance away from the tents and ruin, although from where the two were standing they couldn't see anything that looked exactly like gun, but the men were running their sharp gaze at the surrounding forest.

「Those guys, so this is their destination.」

「As expected it was a flag isn't it? As expected of Hajime-san.」

「You're noisy. At any rate, these bunches, just what in the world they are doing at this empty ruin that had been investigated——」

‘Already’, the word that Hajime was going to say was stopped midway.

「aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!」

By the scream that sounded like the yell of death throe resounding from inside the ruin.

The place suddenly became noisy.

A local man rushed out from inside the ruin.

He screamed while rolling around on the ground, and before long he stopped moving. The hand pressing on his face lost strength and fell limply on the ground.

The face of the expired man was melting tragically.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I have fun writing the conversation with Shia.

As the result, the story doesn't progress.

It looks like my serious power was used up at Kouki-arc, please bear with me until I recover.

# Arifureta Chapter 289

## Arifureta After III Shia Arc Underground Labyrinth

「No, is this real Indiona huh.」

「Or perhaps, this is The Mommy or Toob Raider isn't it.」

That was their impression of the gruesome death of a person in front of their gaze. From the view point of the people who had the experience of repeated adventure in another world, they had already seen even more gruesome death, so perhaps it could only be said that their reaction couldn't be helped.

「Even so, there should be nothing inside that ruin though.....」

Below, people were gathering around the man who died with melting face and yells were flying around. Hajime whispered dubiously while watching that.

「Did we fail to notice it?」

「Let's confirm it from now.」

*rustle rustle*, the familiar figures of the jack of all trades Arachne-san that became regular made appearance. One of the Arachne-san swung its leg as though to say 「You bastards! It's time for workkk!」 before leading all the other Arachne ahead.

Their figures simultaneously heading to the ground by grappling on string looked like the rappel of a special army unit.

Shia was watching that sight with an expression like 「As expected they really have a will isn't it? But as expected it's scary so I can't ask!」, while beside her Hajime took out his smartphone.

It was hybrid smartphone that combined the modern technology with crustal display made in another world. Basically, the smartphones of Hajime and co



were all of hybrid made, it could contact another world, displayed status, fired laser of concentrated super small sunlight with the thickness of a needle, anyway it was multifunction.

Right now, one of its functions, the function of sight sharing with Arachne was activated. At the same time, the screen was a bit small to be watched together with Shia, so the hologram function (midair display) that was created from earth's programming technology, another world's magic (space magic and so on), and special ore like distant penetration stone *etc.* was activated.

In the air before the eyes of Hajime and Shia, the field of vision of Arachne-leader that was projected from the smartphone was created three dimensionally. At the corner of the main projection, there were also small reflections lining up in a vertical line. Those were the field of vision of all the other Arachne.

「Yosh, there is no problem with the sight linking. Erst until Funfte go toward the ruin. Sechste until Neunte, head inside the surrounding tents.」

Hajime who sounded like he was giving instruction to the Arachne caused Shia to crack her necks while putting some spirit 「Yo~sh, I'm going to put in tsukkomi nooww~」.

「Hajime-san Hajime-san. Hajime-san is controlling all the Arachne-san aren't you!? Why are you making them saluting like 『Rogeer!』 while following your order!? As I thought they have will aren't they!? It's true isn't it!?」

Hajime showed a doubtful expression as though saying 'This bunny, just what is she spewing on?'. Shia was irritated.

「Don't say scary thing like that, Shia. They aren't Myuu's golem squadron. There is no way they have will or anything right? I just programmed them to act to some degree when they receive voice input. They are golem, but I'm also equipping them with earth's robot technology you know?」

「.....That salute is also included in that?」

「Yeah. After all I used Arachne a lot for situation that demand secrecy. I put in the program based on the reference from the action pattern of special squad, but I've gone through that much trouble, so putting in salute movement while

I'm at it should be okay right?」

If that was the case, then it wasn't strange.....was it? Shia's rabbit ears dropped down powerlessly.

When she glanced at the display, she caught sight the Arachne bunches were skillfully raising two of their legs, doing reaction as though expressing 「  
yare yare  
Good grief」.

「Their performance is really detailed isn't it. Is that also an action pattern that is inserted into them?」

「Hm? Which one?」

Hajime returned his gaze from Shia toward the display. All the Arachne-san already resumed their action in order to accomplish their work.

「No, that's why I said, it's their movement of shrugging their shoulders as  
yare yare daze  
though saying 『good grief this girl』.」

「That's why I'm telling you Shia, stop that. Do you want to scare me? There is no way they can move like that even though I'm not giving instruction right?」

「.....」

Shia stiffened still. Her rabbit ears were standing on end with shudders. Shia wanted to insist 「The one who is scared is me desuu! As I thought, those Arachne-san, they are possessed by something for sureee!」, but it didn't seem like it wouldn't be just merely a snake that would come out if she poke the bush.

And so, 「After this, I'll consult with Myuu-chan, let's do that」 Shia swore inside her heart while she made tsukkomi at another matter.

「Cough-. Then one more thing. Does Hajime-san named those Arachne-san?」

「More or less. It will be more convenient in various things if they have individual name right?」

「Their name sounds terribly familiar for me though.」

The platinum apostles flashed at the back of her mind. The people who Shia worked hard to beat to death.

Hajime grinned widely,

「Great name right?」

He said such thing. It really sounded like sarcasm. The names of the opponents who she once carried out mortal combat with were used to name subordinate golems.....

「If the people of Tortus heard it, it's easily something that they will yell 『Accursed thing!』 for.....」

「The civilian doesn't know as far as the names of the apostles so it's fine. In the first place, Shia, try looking at Japan's literary work. Whether it's god or devil, they are toyed around a lot just as anyone liked in their work don't you see. Even things like erog<sup>erotic game</sup>e won't blink an eye to do it. Like a certain archangel, just how much terrible experience that angel met in the past.....」

「Can you stop talking about erog<sup>erotic game</sup>e in front of your lover!? Besides I think that Japanese people's karma is just too deep desuu!」

「I cannot deny that huh. Recently anything will get turned into story character, and even after that it will be anything goes for them following where the creator's heart is going. But, I'm proud from the bottom of my heart toward such people in that business.」

Hajime said such thing with a serious and tense expression. Toward such Hajime, Shia thought 「This person, no rather Japan is totally no good. There is no saving them anymore desuu」 while holding her rabbit ears. She wanted to see the face of the parents who raised such son. Although the parents were manga artist and game company president. The father was in the middle of diligently producing a new erog<sup>erotic game</sup>e!

While they were making such stupid talk, the group of Arachne who were given the name of god's apostles accomplished infiltration into their respective target safely.

Hajime put his finger on a midair display and slid it to the center in order to make the vision of Sechste who infiltrated the nearest tent as the main screen. The screen could be directly controlled with the concept of touch panel.

Sechste was sticking on the ceiling through the tent's framework, taking a

bird's eye view to overlook the whole tent.

「This is.....how should I say it, my heart is fluttering.」

「Isn't that right! My heart is drumming fast here!」

What was displayed in the midair display was a single room that was covered with transparent curtain and people wearing protective outfit who seemed to be researchers. No matter how they looked at it, it was a sterilized room, or perhaps a quarantine room.

Those factors that didn't suit as facility for ruin investigation caused the eyes of the two to sparkle with curiosity.

The image from Siebte and others who also accomplished their infiltration into other tents didn't project only the image of excavation equipments, there were also a lot of things like some kind of measurement devices and sensor equipments.

One of the Arachne circled to the back of Wilford.

Wilford was investigating the condition of the melted man. He then gave some kind of new instruction, persuaded the scared locals to make them return to their work. Perhaps because of that he looked a bit tired and shrugged his shoulders in exasperation. It seemed that he kept making exaggerated gesture like drama even when no one was looking.

The Arachne who stuck on his shoulder without getting noticed then.....

「Hajime-san. This Arachne-san, it's mimicking the movement of Luffy-san and then pointing using its leg see. Ah, this time its putting two legs on its mouth while twitching. I can hear its voice of heart saying 『You saw the reaction just now? Laame~~e! Gi~ggle giggle』.」

「Eh, strange. This guy.....Neunte, you again. Come on, Neunte! Work properly! Don't make strange movement! Okay, movement check! Lift upper right! Lift upper left! Don't lower your right, lower your left! Ah, oi! Don't lower your right! What are you doing lowering it along with the left! Is the voice recognition blurred?」

「.....Somehow, Neunte and Erst are coming to mind though. Being able to see

them following Hajime-san's order playing raising the flag game is really surreal.」

The god's apostles expressionlessly raising and lowering their hand. Sometimes they made mistake and became flustered.

Certainly, it was a terribly surreal sight.

By the way, Shia was calling Wilford as Luffy was because in the end the two were unable to recall his correct name, and as the result of the two of them complementing each other's memory, they decided that the guy's name sounded like Luffy, should be! And so they called him like that. The self-proclaimed businessman Wilford-san might be aiming to become a pirate king before long like this.

「Leave alone Neunte. What about Erst?」

They switched the screen to the vision of Erst who was at the main objective. The timing was just right when Erst arrived at the room where a lot of workers were gathering. It stuck at the corner of the ceiling and took overhead view.

「They are digging a hole. What's more they are really going all out.」

「Looks like it. There might be something underground. Zweite. Go right above them.」

Hajime kept Erst's overhead view in position while he gave instruction to Zweite to take the recording from right above the hole. Shia showed a deeply emotional feeling thinking 「Aa, that person who I shaved to death using 100 ton hammer + drill」.

「This thing.....it seems, there really is a path going underground.」

「Path.....is it? It looks like a rectangle well though?」

「No, try looking closer. There, look.」

Saying that, Hajime magnified the image while pointing.

Inside the image, a rectangle hole was projected. It had the size where there would still some space left even if a lot of men were lining up inside it. The rectangle hole was hardened with stone on its four sides, stretching to straight below.

Indeed, it was just as Shia said, in a glance, it was more fitting to call it as “well” rather than “path”.

But, if one looked closer at where Hajime’s finger was pointing at, protrusion like ladder was jutting out in regular interval from the stone wall, furthermore, something like a tube that was giving out some kind of white smoke was sticking out.

「You will get it if you look at that tube’s surrounding. The man whose face melted just now. Most likely, when he was in the middle of going down that ladder, the acid or something flying out from that tube got him. Don’t you think it’s really dangerous for just a well?」

「Certainly, after all it might enter into water for daily life if that’s a well.」

In other words, it was a vertical route to underground.

What’s more, the word “secret” was attached to it. Around that vertical path, the stone floor was destroyed by heavy machinery, and the soil beneath it was dug up and wreckage was scattered around. From the condition there must be no mistake of this conclusion.

And then, looking from how even now there were the figures of locals excavating the vertical path until around five meter below, it could be seen how that path was completely buried with rock and soil. And fairly severely at that.

「Putting aside the floor and stone, there are quite a lot of stones covered with soil. What’s more they are manufactured to be like that to a certain degree.」

「In other words.....」

「The path wasn’t buried naturally. It was intentionally blocked by covering it with several layers of soil and processed huge stone.」

When Hajime said 「This thing is looking more and more like India-o-san huh!」, Shia went 「No no, if I have to say which is this, then this must be Raoder-san you know, surely! Ah, but, an ancient mummy just like in The Muomy! That possibility cannot be dismissed yet!」 Their tension was rising.

「Now then, Shia-san, what to do yah.」

「Of course, we are going to expose the secret sleeping underground, Hajime-san yah.」

Hajime and Shia chuckled ‘fu-fu-fu’ suspiciously while facing each other. It seemed they couldn’t help but feeling their heart fluttering from encountering an ancient secret at their travel.

「Suppressing these guys and then asking them just what kind of information they got is the fastest way but.....」

「I am in the faction of conquering a game without looking at the strategy guide desu.」

「An adventure has to be like that I guess. My transmutation magic will shine here. Let’s slip underground using different route from them and pay our respect to the ancient secret faster than them.」

This was an excavation team that spent money for this enterprise. They also had special equipment and machinery. In that case, this wasn’t a simple academic investigation. Ahead there should be a profit that would worth the investment for sure. A profit in the form of treasure.

「Hajime-san Hajime-san. Let’s do that. Leaving behind a message, just like phantom thief!」

「That’s good idea! 『We will receive the treasure first——』

「——by demon king and rabbit』 isn’t it!」

The demon king-sama and the bug rabbit-san of the forest bumped their fist while going ‘yaa~y’ with their motivation going through the roof.

Both of them kept their presence hidden while jumping down from the tree. Then they turned back to inside the thick forest where the armed guards couldn’t see them at all.

Shia’s rabbit ears were swooshing-swooshing around 「Quu-iick! Quu-iick!」 while she was frolicking around. Hajime sent a glance at such her before he activated transmutation magic while smiling.

While the crimson spark surged vividly, a large hole that the two could enter easily even if they walked side by side was opening. Furthermore it was stair

shaped. In addition, so that there wouldn't be even the slightest chance for the soil to collapse, the surrounding was thoroughly reinforced with metal plate.

Like that, they went down the stair to underground while advancing the transmutation. It didn't even take ten seconds until their figure vanished completely from view.

「For now, when we reach the depth of around 8 meter, how about we try connecting the path to that vertical path right from the side?」

Hajime confirmed the angle of the path and transmuted a cave aiming to the depth that had been dug until this point plus three meter. He didn't make any change to the ground, but he transmuted the wall and ceiling into metal plate while setting chemical light on the wall in order.

Of course, Hajime had "Night Vision", and Shia was also a beastman, so her night vision was in the effective side. In addition, she possessed super excellent rabbit ears that could grasp the space three-dimensionally to a certain degree from the echo of footsteps even inside a complete darkness, so they wouldn't be that troubled even without lighting.

Having said that, being inside total darkness would depress the mood by quite much. In fact, their feeling was eased to some extent by the green light illuminating the underground path.

As though to express such feeling, the path that was illuminated by green chemical light looked like Orcus Great Labyrinth. The two of them looked at each other and smiled.

The smartphone was showing the position of Erst that was left behind at the surface, so without any mistake in the angle, the underground passage collided into a stone wall before long. A subtle vibration was transmitted through it, so without a doubt right above them was the vertical passage that was being worked on.

Surely the people above there would never imagined even in their wildest dream, that there was already people right below the passage that they were desperately digging while trembling with fear from the risk of melting liquid trap flying at them anytime.



「We are going to follow along the vertical passage to below just like this.」

「I wonder how deep this passage is going to continue.」

A spiral staircase was created vertically along the stone wall.

While digging down deeply underground, in the midway, there were devices set up along the wall everywhere. There wasn't just melting liquid, gadget that fired short arrow, mechanism that thrust out spears, a set up of rotating sword came flying, etc, etc.....

It would be pitiful if the number of the locals that got sacrificed increased, so Hajime casually destroyed them. 'What a consideration that is really like a Japanese people', was the praise that Hajime sang in his heart.

Most likely there were other traps at surface other than the wall. If he was a person who really thought about the locals, he would destroy all of that but..... Hajime-san ignored that aspect.

Before long, they dug down until a depth that felt really deep, and around the time they were thinking just when this vertical path would end, they finally reached stone paving under their feet.

「.....So deep.」

「From the bodily sensation, it feels like it's around forty meter deep.」

「Measuring our distance with Erst.....it's a total of 43 meter. If the height until the ceiling is excluded, then certainly it's around 40 meter.」

Hajime measured the distance using his smartphone while transmuting the stone paving under his feet. Under the opened hole, darkness spread like a gaping open mouth. A really indescribable smell stabbed the nose.

Based from what he could confirm using "Night Vision", he couldn't see anything really strange. Hajime looked at Shia, but her rabbit ears weren't particularly reacting.

Just in case, Hajime tried dropping a chemical light. It raised *clong* sound at about three meter below and rolled, but there was nothing around the light. He could only see stone paving. There was nothing reacting at all.

Hajime and Shia nodded at each other and leaped down to the underground

space.

And then.....

A sound rang from below Shia's feet.

*Gakon*- It sounded.

It was a strangely nostalgic ominous sound.

The stone floor sank down slightly. Shia tilted her rabbit ears saying 「Eh?」. At that moment, spear jutted out from the wall at the side!

「Hyowa!?!」

「Nuwah!?!」

Shia bent backward to dodge the spears. Hajime who was right behind her unusually raised a small scream and caught the spear. The spear tip stopped right before his right eye. It was relatively close.

「Shia, why did you dodge huh? I thought you are going to catch or hit the down, so I got a bit surprised there.」

「So, sorry. Somehow I was reminded of the past and I reflexively dodged.」

「At Raisen huh.....」

At Raisen Great Labyrinth, Shia once fell into whole load of booby trap and she evaded with desperation. It seemed that the memory of that time was resurrected inside her.

When they looked around the surrounding once more, the path that was made from stone stretched deeply into the left and right. The passage was splendidly created with width of five meter and height of three meter. There was metallic door on the wall, most likely if they passed through the vertical passage, they would come out from there.

Hajime got it. The trap just now, then this passage, certainly it was a vivid reminder of Raisen Great Labyrinth.

「Even so.....is this really an ancient ruin? If that's the case, the stone making technology at that time really surpassed the imagination.」

「At television or internet, theory like 'the ancient civilization possess

advanced technology!’ often comes out though.」

Even though many years had passed to the degree that the stone had weathered, the trap was still working, the underground passage was still properly remaining without caving in. Furthermore the depth was forty meter. Certainly, “an ancient civilization that possessed advanced technology” that might be featured in television could be smelt here.

「And, which path we are going to take?」

「Let’s see……. Shia, how about trying to use “Assumption Future”? You are a diviner (lol) right? Isn’t it your role to show the future?」

「Please don’t add (lol) at someone’s vocation.」

Martial Artist

「Because, your vocation is “Monk” no matter how you think about it right? Or else “Asura” or “Martial Arts God”……or perhaps “Berserker”? At the very least, you ain’t a fortune teller showing the future who is living quietly deep inside the forest.」

If she kept silent, then her appearance would “fit” her vocation. Her faint bluish white hair, her beautiful features. If she would even wear a shrine maiden outfit and lived quietly in place like a shrine deep inside forest, then she would really look like a mystical fortune teller that see through the world.

Even by mistake, a person who used ability only for battle like ‘Seeing through the opponent’s movement several seconds ahead and beating them to death by making the first move! Super warrior who is impossible to get ambushed by detecting every fatal surprise attack!’ couldn’t be called as “the forest’s honored fortune teller”.

Shia averted her gaze. “Assumption Future”, an ability that essentially was to see through the future by the assumption of “What happen if this option is picked?”. She almost never used it, so she couldn’t really argue back. Though she objected just in case.

「But but, divination is my forte. My fortune telling often hit the mark, and it’s popular among the girls. Especially the girls in the class, they often consult me you know?」

「The problem is, that even though divination is your forte, you yourself doesn't particularly like it or anything. Your hobby is martial arts and bike. —Fortune telling? I can do any kind of variety and it will come true with high probability but, it's not like it's my hobby desu—right?」

「.....」

Shia averted her gaze and rabbit ears. And then, as though evading that topic, she used “Assumption Future”. What if they went to the right passage? In case of left passage? Like that.

Her rabbit ears were bobbing up and down *myon myon*.

「Mumuh, I'm getting it Hajime-san! No matter which way is totally filled a lot with traps!」

「.....」

Hajime's fixed staring stabbed her.

「Bu, but it's fine! I don't feel any danger! Because generally I'll pulverize them all right from the front!」

Hajime wordlessly took out a chemical light. And then, he held it so it stood on the ground and he released his finger. *Pote-* It fell toward the left passage.

「Yosh, let's take the left. The light pointed to the left. It's a good omen.」

「.....Just what in the world I who consumed vast magic power to divine the future was doing.....」

Behind Hajime who quickly advanced to the left passage, Shia was following him while directing a sad gaze.

A few hours after that.

Just like Shia's divination, the two of them met a storm of traps.

—Countless spears stabbing out from the ground

Shia blasted them altogether with the ground using tremor step.

—Melting liquid sprayed in misty shape from the wall

Shia blew it away with fist pressure.

——The hanged ceiling fell

Shia pulverized it with Shouryuuo that pierced the sky.

——A pitfall trap with line of spears set up below

By using metamorphosis magic “Steel Clothes”, she destroyed the spears like that.

※ Shia’s metamorphosis magic “Steel Clothes” : Just like Tio’s “Dragonification”, it was a technique that morphed a part of her body into steel. It made its first appearance at the main story’s last arc chapter 「The Young Girl With Rabbit Ears is Excelling」.

——Rolling giant rock

Nijuu o Kiwami! (TN: A fist technique from Rurouni Kenshin)

And then now.....

*Ranranra~n♪* The passage that Shia was walking through with light footsteps had flame with terrifying amount of heat jetting out from both side of the walls and the ceiling.

At the beginning of the passage, Hajime was staring at Shia who was swallowed by flame with an expression that couldn’t say anything. Rather, he was even harboring sympathy to the creator of this underground space that was littered with traps.

「What a triflee! Spirit defensee-!!」

Shia did something. Shockwave ran to all direction and pushed back the flame. The walls and ceiling cracked and the flame also stopped.

Naturally, let alone scald, Shia wasn’t even sooty.

「.....Shia. What is spirit defense?」

「I created it using a certain muscle head bug character as reference, a technique that do spirit defense!」

Hajime thought. That ain’t explaining it at all.

Perhaps, it was the defensive technique, “Vajra” that Hajime used, which she learned using spirit?

While advancing forward, Hajime asked Shia with a twitching expression.

「Is there, any other technique you created using that certain bug character as reference?」

「Of course there is! Next I had finished learning Shia Impact and Eternal Shia Fever!」

「Serious, ly.....」

Shia was radiant in this comedic exchange, would something rush out from her whole body.....?, thinking so, Hajime directed an expression that could be seen as trembling with fear toward Shia. At the same time, he hallucinated the vision of Shia turning into a brawny lump of muscles taking a pose of most muscular.

Hajime went around and cut in front of Shia who was walking ahead in a good mood, the he grabbed both her shoulders hard and pleaded from very close distance.

「Shia, keep being as you are forever, forever.」

「Ye, yes? What's with you Hajime-san, so suddenly. Your eyes are so serious it's scary though.....」

Shia was somewhat creeped out. That was just how much Hajime was serious. He didn't want to see a macho Shia!

「At any rate, this underground space, it's wider than I thought. Geez, rather than calling it a space it's completely a labyrinth. The mountain of physical traps too, it's seriously like Raisen Great Labyrinth.」

「It's far better with no annoying comments coming out at all though~」

When thinking that under the vertical passage there was this space and a treasure was sleeping there beyond doubt, then it was rather that the main event was starting from there. The vertical passage seemed to be nothing more than the entrance into the underground labyrinth.

Around this time they became genuinely curious about the objective of Wilford and co.

「An amazing treasure might be sleeping here.」

「Is it treasure of gold and silver I wonder~. If we discover it, it feels like we are going to become the man of hour isn't it~」

They were chatting idly like that while crushing the mountain of booby traps that were highly filled with killing intent from the front (mainly by Shia) and advanced for a while.

Hajime suddenly 「Oh?」 leaked out a voice.

「What's wrong?」

「The excavation work is halted. ....Looks like while we are getting absorbed with the exploration here, around three more people become sacrifice. The locals are getting really scared. Luffy is saying something.」

Hajime gave instruction to Neunte to pick up the voice of Wilford.

「.....Looks like he is making them staying by raising up the compensation reward. Also, it looks like the lowering of their moral is really bad, that today he is giving rest to everyone.」

「How much their progress has advanced?」

「Around fifteen meter I think. Tomorrow, it feels like they will reach the bottom just before noon at the latest.」

「Come to think of it, the date already changed to the next day. Fun time makes it feels like the moment just flies away isn't it~」

The underground labyrinth that normally would produce dead victims in unit of dozens seemed to be no different than an attraction at amusement park for the current Shia.

But, at that time, *kyuu*~~~ such sound rang out. Shia pushed on her stomach in a flash.

「Ehehe. I'm hungry.」

「Come to think of it, we didn't take dinner huh. We got too high spirited.」

Shia blushed shyly. Hajime smiled warmly while proposing a break.

「Those guys reaching the underground space will be tomorrow noon anyway, even at the fastest it will be a few hours after the sun rise. They won't catch up.

Let's us rest for today too.」

「Yee~s. Theenn, I will prepare the dinner quickly~」

The two of them picked a spot casually. Shia took out the “Anywhere System Kitchen” from her treasure warehouse and quickly began to cook. Beside her, Hajime took out sofa bed and table set and endeavored in forming a pleasant space. Of course, he also didn't forget setting up <sup>sentry</sup> Sentori-sensei <sup>gun</sup>.

Like that, by the time Shia finished making dinner.....

Well, how should it be said. The dreary ancient underground labyrinth that was overflowing with highly murderous traps was changed into a lovely space that was decorated by warm lantern light.

Antique table set, the sofa bed of highest class, Sentori-sensei, and then hearty beef stew that stirred up the appetite.

The technique of the artisan was shining there.

After saying ‘itadakimasu’, Hajime wolfed down the dinner greedily.

「Second.」

「Geez-, are you chewing properly? Beef stew isn't a drink you know?」

Even while saying that, it seemed that Shia was happy seeing Hajime engrossed in eating her cooking yummiy, so Shia's expression was warm and loose. Her rabbit tail was fluttering around *furifuri*, and her rabbit ears were bobbing up and down *myo~n myo~n*.

Surely eve the ancient people would never even imagined it in their wildest dream. Even though they were making “labyrinth that would absolutely kill the intruder”, a sight of newly wedded spouses were developing there instead.

After that, they did things like harmoniously cleaning the plates side by side and cleared away the meal before falling sound asleep on the sofa bed while clinging closely to each other.

Next morning.

The excavation work already resumed on the surface ground. By the time the work reached a point of just several meter above the underground space, the



two sleepyheads finally woke up and aimed to the deepest part in a bit of hurry.

Like that at the destination that they reached.

There, for the first time the two discovered “that” which wasn’t strange to be there originally.

「Finally huh. All this time I have been thinking that it’s strange but.....」

What they found was a corpse that had already turned into skeleton. There were also things like sword and armor falling around. Looking at this labyrinth that was fully loaded with lethal traps, it wouldn’t be strange even if there were a lot more corpses lying around everywhere. It was also strange how they only found a corpse at the deepest part.

「It can also be seen as though it’s protecting that door.」

Just as Shia said, the corpse was found at the deepest part, lying down with its back leaning on the door. From its equipment too, in a glance it gave the impression that it was protecting the door to the death so no one would pass.

For the time being, thinking to check inside the door, Hajime avoided the corpse and put his hand on the door.

It was a large metallic door. It didn’t move even with Hajime’s physical strength. Thinking that perhaps it was a sliding door, he tried moving it aside, but as expected it didn’t move.

「Hajime-san, what is this depression here?」

「Hm? .....Keyhole, perhaps?」

「In that case, without a key normally no one cannot enter then.」

Shia ran her gaze at the spot around the corpse. But, she didn’t find anything that looked like key.

「Can’t be helped. We already used cheating technique to enter the underground space anyway, we don’t need to search a key or anything at this late.」

Hajime said that and put his hand on the metal door. Crimson spark surged and the door was changed into mere ingot.

Hajime and Shia stepped inside the door that was forcefully opened.

「Corpse again huh.....」

「It's not silver and gold treasure isn't it. Ah, but, that corpse-san, it's holding something.」

From its skeletal frame, it must be a female corpse. Inside the room that was around the size of six tatami, a single skeletal corpse was lying down. They didn't find any precious treasure, rather it was a dreary room.

Therefore, the blackened metallic box that the corpse was holding looked even more standing out. It was as though a mother was embracing her child, especially with how the body was curled up embracing it like it was a precious treasure.

「This must be it. This is those guys' objective.」

「Must be. Quickly, let's take a look at the content!」

<sup>thrill</sup> <sup>excitement</sup>  
\*Waku waku, doki doki\*. It seemed that there was something really important entered inside.

But, no matter how tough the lid was, no matter who secure the seal was, as long as it was made from mineral, it was meaningless against Hajime.

‘Now, I'm opening it’, Hajime used transmutation magic——

Just before he could.

「-!? Do, don't, Hajime-san!!」

「!?」

Shia sent the metal box flying from Hajime's hand. Her rabbit ears stood tensely on their end, her eyes that were shining with curiosity was dyed with the color of vigilance.

「O, oi, Shia. Just what is it?」

「.....That is, a bad news. It activated after so long.」

Hajime guessed it from her words. At the same time, his vigilance jumped up to the highest level.

「You got a vision?」

Shia nodded briskly.

Since the legendary decisive battle, because there was no existence or phenomenon that was a threat to the bug character Shia, one of her ability, the characteristic magic “Future Sight” hadn’t activated anymore all this time.

It was the “vision of death” that would automatically activated regarding a future that was directly connected to Shia’s death.

In other words, the inside of that black metal box wasn’t anything like precious treasure.....

It was “something” that could possibly kill even the demon king and the bug rabbit.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※ Joke explanation just in case to those who don’t get it

- A certain lump of muscle bug character

It’s Jao Rakan-san of Negio. The character that Shirakome super liked. Volume 27 tightly grab my chuuni heart.

※ Arifureta Nichijou latest chapter, is updated!

The cuteness of stability and the amusement of toying with the main story.

Sometimes I’m doing reimportation of joke material lol (Like Shia-mama or macho Shia)

My overwhelming gratitude to Mori Misaki-sensei!

It can be seen from the homepage of Overlap-sama, so please go take a look without fail.

# Arifureta 290 finished

## Arifureta Chapter 290

No Jack come to me huhhhhh. (SAN point -30, huhuhu) Question, what will happen if I equip 5 cards that increase the probability of sock dropping added with one more of the same card from the support? The probability will be 120% then, but will it be any different with 100%?

Also say that all my space for servant archive and the second archive are full, then I claim experience card from my present box, will that item disappear or what?

# Arifureta Chapter 291

## Arifureta After III Urgent Thanks Planning Yue's Diary ③

—

※ AN: I posted a chapter before this chapter, so please pay attention.

When I woke up this morning, I received a lot of comment congratulating me for Arifureta's anime, so Shirakome is really terribly grateful.

And so, this is only a short chapter that I wrote in two hours, but allow me to post a thanks short story for the congratulation comments.

No, I was really happy (^ ^)

---

—

——December 〇 Day

It seemed in Japan the last month of the year, December is called as 'shiwasu'. (TN: Shiwasu = 師走, the first kanji mean teacher/mentor, while the second kanji mean run) When I asked Hajime the meaning of it, the end of the year will be busy because of things, that even a "teacher" who is usually calm will be running around busily, something like that? That was what Hajime taught me. It seemed he doesn't know the exact reason though.

I see.

Busy.....

Busy, is it.....

—

——December X Day

Tio and Remia recently are looking really busy.

It seems that the clothing and jewelry shop they are managing is really booming. It looks like they are going to open a shop dedicated for kids within the year, and for the start of it they will do something like kids fashion show.

It seems that Myuu will serve as the vanguard for that.

Today too they were making Myuu trying on clothes for fashion show one after another. Myuu is floundering while nearly drowning.

Fumu.....

Adorable! Surely an angel will descend at the end of the year fashion show!

—

——December △ Day

Recently Kaori is looking busy, so I cannot really prank her.

Damn you, even though you are just Kaori, but making light of me like this, how cheeky.

I hear that she is following around Yaegashi family that wants to end the dispute within the year or something. It seems that quite a lot of injured appear, so she is busily serving the role as healer.

Come to think of it, Shizuku is making a really tired face isn't she.....

As expected from Yaegashi family. They being a combat race aren't just for show.

.....

.....I wonder, will both of them quickly get free time.....

—

——December @ Day

Recently Hajime isn't giving me attention.

father-in-law

It seems that Otou-sama's company is now like a scene of carnage.

It looks like they want to release the newly created game within the year.  
Both father and son won't come home.

Lonely.....

And so, today I'm going to bring them supply.

I dislike going to Otou-sama's company but.....this is in order to stay at Hajime's side.

I am Yue. Even if the staffs-san of Otou-sama's company came praying at me as though I am a founder of a new religion each time they met me, or even if I'm really troubled when they came worshipping saying 「The healing came! Our goddess of healing has descended!」, I am a woman who won't withdraw for the sake of my husband!

Although, it's troubling that it became great commotion every time, so this time I'm putting on the glasses of recognition obstruction.

I was normally noticed.

「Glasses girl Yue-sama has descended!」 Like that it became a great commotion.

Otou-sama said 「Yue-chan, thank you for coming! Everyone is half-dead already, but this is a more effective vitality restoration than energy drink or caffeine! We can still fight!」 happily, so I'm glad but.....

Perhaps I should say that it's as expected from the subordinates of Otou-sama.

For them to easily ignore the recognition obstruction artifact of Hajime.....

Hajime is frequently going 「Just how in the world.....」 while tilting his head in puzzlement.

Anyway, after that Hajime care for me a little so I'm satisfied.

It seems that the battle against deadline? is still continuing.

I sent an encouraging yell of thank your for their hard work before going home quickly, but if I can say my true feeling, I wish he will finish quickly and stay at my side.

—

——December # Day

Shia crossed over to Tortus.

I hear that Hauria clan is quarreling with the empire. She is going to assist with resolving it.

I told her if I should help out, but she said 「It's okay. If it become troublesome then I'll just mow down both sides!」 before she energetically slipped through the gate.

It looks like she will stay at the other side for a while.

When the mood maker Shia is gone, as expected, Nagumo house feels like it become quiet somehow.

.....Damn Shia.

How cheeky of her to leave me behind.

Even though I told her that I'll help out, it should be fine to not refuse.....

—

——December ☆ Day

The occasion of everyone being away from home become a lot.

shiwasu

Because it's December.

Because they are busy.

Because, they are busy.....

.....

.....

Eh? I'm, not busy though?

—

——December ◇ Day

Aaa, I'm reeeally busy!



In the place of everyone who are away from house, I'm doing the cleaning, the washing, sending things to them, aaa, I'm reeeally busy!

—

——December □ Day

I said a lie.

I'm not busy, at all.

Because, when I'm thinking of doing something, it will be generally over in a flash using magic.

Because the electrical appliances of Nagumo house are artifact, it doesn't take effort or time at all.

Today too, everyone except me seems busy.....

—

——December \$ Day

Right now, I am flapping around, rolling around on the bed, while writing diary.

Then, I suddenly thought.

Could it be I'm.....

A NEET?

—

——December ※ Day

Today, I tried asking mother-in-law Okaa-sama.

Am I, a NEET vampire princess? I asked.

Okaa-sama was dumbfounded. Then she exploded into a laugh so great she is rolling around on the floor.

I don't understand.

According to Okaa-sama, the cheat heroine vampire princess from another world, getting bothered that she might be a deadbeat is just too surreal, and it

hit right on her funny spot.

Okaa-sama was laughing with teary eyes.

For now, I'm sitting at the corner of the room, hugging my knees, while facing the wall.

I'm feeling not wanting to do anything for a while.

—

——December ☆ Day

Okaa-sama is inviting me while grinning widely.

Amazingly, it seems that the shoujo manga Okaa-sama is working on will get an anime. It appears that she is busy with various things, like the preparatory meeting and the like. She told me that she want me to become like her assistance, doing secretarial thing.

What consideration.

Okaa-sama! I love you! The vampire princess get a job!

I am the assistant Yue. The perfect secretary of Okaa-sama!

I cannot stay like this. In order to become useful for Okaa-sama, first I have to fix my appearance properly! This isn't the time to wear a sulking jersey!

—

——December ☞ Day

Today, I accompanied Okaa-sama's work.

It's strange to say it myself but, I believe that I was a perfect secretary.

I became adult version using metamorphosis magic, wore stylish suit smartly, I also bundled up my hair crisply, and put on a sharp glasses as insurance runs. No matter from where and how anyone look, it was the secretary Yue.

Not just appearance, I casually guessed what Okaa-sama is looking for using soul magic and made preparation ahead.

In order to give the other party good impression, I smiled a lot more than usual.

Even if I don't have needed thing in hand, I could take it out quickly using space magic.

.....How dreadful.

My own perfect way of working, is dreadful!

Perhaps being a secretary, is my hidden vocation.

But, what concerned me though, was how Okaa-sama was smiling wryly for some reason, and it felt like all the staff-san of the other side had their gaze fixed on me the whole time.....

.....

.....Okaa-sama. Is secretary Yue, not needed anymore?

—

——December ♪ Day

O Nagumo house! Everyone came home!

Their expression was tired, but it seemed that everyone finished their business safely.

It became a gathering of the whole family after so long.

I heard various story from them. Looks like everyone had it difficult.

.....Having the whole family present is happiness.

There is no doubt that I'm happy.

No doubt about it, but.....

It feels like the fundamental problem isn't resolved.

Is it mistaken for a vampire princess of another world to be a NEET?

Thinking that, at night, I went to consult Hajime.

I'm anxious about the future. Is it all right for me to stay a NEET like this? Should I do something like part-time job?

Hajime rolled around with laughter. Damn you, Hajime. Even though I consulted you while enduring shame that almost break through the heaven.

The reaction of parent and child is really similar.

Like that, when I stared at Hajime resentfully, Hajime apologized 「My bad, my bad」 while he also apologized 「It was my bad that I made you feel lonely」.

It was a fact that I was lonely, but it's not like he need to apologize for that.

Just, I only thought a bit if I too can say 「I did xxx」, then how nice that would be.

When I told him so, Hajime talked with a preface of 「Yue is unexpectedly a person who is brimming with curiosity, so isn't it fine if you try your hand on everything from A to Z that caught your interest? And so basically.....」, and then he, 「I'm a fulltime housewife', isn't it fine even if you say that?」

Sheesh Hajime, he said such thing looking a bit embarrassed.

It felt like scale had fallen off from my eyes.

Housewife. Fulltime housewife. The yamato nadeshiko wife who is waiting for her husband's return!!

The murkiness in my heart cleared up all at once.

I am Yue. The cheat fulltime housewife vampire princess!

For now, as the duty of the housewife, I'll push down my husband and receive him deliciously.

—

---

TN: It was announced in the Niko live yesterday, but Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou will get an anime.

It's planned to get broadcasted at April next year.

Other than that too,

- 25 December Seventh volume plus Drama CD & Side Story first volume will be released at the same time
- Side story [Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou – Zero] will get manga version
- March next year Eighth volume plus Drama CD & comic version third

volume

Etc, etc, there are various information, so I'll be happy if you readers can check them.

For the detail, please go to the official site (<https://arifureta.com/>) In any case, this too is all thanks to everyone who gave me support.

Really, really thank you very much!

From here on too, Shirakome himself will also have fun to the maximum, while also working hard so that I'll be able to share a fun time with everyone, so from now on too please take care of Arifureta by all means.

# Arifureta Chapter 292

## Arifureta After III Shia Arc Take Care of the Rest

—

The boats floated side by side, and a dialogue was carried out on the river.

Wilford who was face to face with Hajime also got gatling and large revolver faced toward him on this occasion. Cold sweat was flowing out like river from his whole body. Especially the dignity of the large revolver that was being grinded on his forehead, surely his life span was shrinking with certainty even now.

By the way, about his underlings, perhaps it should be said “just as expected”, they were really excellent. Although the majority of them were either those who was on Wilford’s boat or currently holding on the edge of the boat tiredly, but almost everyone survived even after going through Triana’s violence.

Also, for some reason the researcher Brandon was also riding on Wilford’s boat, he was currently trembling while holding his head inside his hands. It was completely unknown why he was coming along.

「And, who are you guys actually? If I remember right.....Reletense company you said?」

In respond to Hajime’s question, Wilford opened his mouth with his business smile in full throttle.

「Hahaha, it’s just a mere trading company. It deals with various goods——」

*Gorit-* Donner’s muzzle was carving wrinkle between his forehead.

「That is the business in the surface, behind the scenes, it's searching, researching, and making use of "relic of power" .....especially to use as weapon, it's that kind of company.」

Hearing Wilford easily confessing everything, Brandon who was holding his head suddenly opened his eyes so wide.

「You idiot! Are you planning betrayal!? The thing about relic is extremely a secret!」

Wilford didn't even turn his gaze toward him.

The men also didn't show any particular reaction. If they had to choose, it seemed they were people who leaned more on Wilford's side.

Hajime tilted his head and asked.

「....."Relic of power"? Another fantasy word comes out again huh. What do you mean by that?」

「From where I'm standing it's you who is more fantasy though.....」

Wilford showed a pondering face as though he was picking his words. His forehead was grinded.

Seeing Wilford looking like he was going to spew out the company's secret like a Merlion statue, Brandon bellowed. Gyan gyan, Gyan gyan.

「Young man, excuse me for a bit.」

Wilford quickly approached Brandon, constricted his neck hard, and easily silenced him for eternity. What a quick exit from the stage.

「Oi oi, you do that really simply. Wasn't he your coworker?」

「I considered him an unpleasant guy since the beginning. Besides, the situation is like this. In order for me and my subordinates to survive.....right, it can't be helped. Now then, about the "relic of power" .....」

According to the explanation of Wilford who wasn't an ordinary person as expected, it seemed existences called "relic with power" existed in earth, so to speak they were things that had some kind of effect even among the "OOPart".  
out of place artifact

It wasn't something that was known widely by society, but only extremely

small fraction of people knew about it. It seemed that the information was regulated even from countries. Rather OOParts were items to divert attention from that kind of relics.

「.....What to do, Shia. Even earth is fantasy enough.」

「I don't feel that surprise though. There are also things like UFO or UMA, special program for that kind of mysterious phenomenon is often broadcasted in television right? I think it won't be that strange even if one or two among those are actually the real thing.」

「My recognition was hardened that special program equal counterfeit but..... well, certainly this earth is vast. Or rather, before speaking about Tortus and so on, thinking really, really carefully, even our own environment itself is a fantasy that occurred in earth huh.....」

The world was overflowing with mystery and the unknown. Hajime pressed on his forehead with one hand while groaning 「Was I too caught up with common sense despite having outrageous experience?」.

「And, what is the content of this box? You already grasped its exact location. So you must have understood what exactly this thing is right?」

The muzzle grinded again. It was a demand to talk using Donner.

「I thought that perhaps it's like this because you are purposefully asking for a talk, but as expected, you don't know about the detail huh. How about it, young man. Isn't this a good time for making a deal? If you want even more information than this——」

*Gorit.*

「tsu. My bad, but just like I said before this, I prized my life. It would be unbearable if the moment I told you everything you just go 'bang'. Aa, I'm used to torture so you can just consider that it won't be effective. That's why, first release us, after that——」

Hajime pulled Donner back.

「He is going to negotiate!」 Wilford made a smile.

Hajime-san lifted one hand to the sky.



Wilford and others were all going 「???」 with tilted head.

A few seconds later. Star was twinkling in the sky. Even though it was afternoon.

「「「「「.....」」」」」

Wilford and others all looked up to the sky. Afternoon star that was gradually increasing in brightness. The mouth of Wilford and others dropped wide open seeing that brilliant light.

The next moment.

Pillar of light spreading heat wave and impact poured down from the sky! By chance, the impact point was the remain of the boat that was blasted flying before this! The result wasn't at the level of smashed to smithereens anymore. It was truly a complete annihilation! Water instantly evaporated and showed the bottom of the river! Terrific impact flooded the river!

And yet, for some reason around the boat it was like there was only ripple that could be felt. There was no heat wave or impact at all.

Before long, when the terrain of the river was slightly changed and the light from heaven settled down, a refreshing voice resounded.

「Today's weather is very good huh. In a day like this, it will make you want to drop the light of sun and dye everything crimson reallyyy」

Wilford and others were turning their face toward Hajime with a movement that felt like *gigigi* sound would be made. Hajime's lips split open.

「Ok, boss. Call me your dog.」

「Who are you calling boss. Stop that.」

Wilford was truly coveting his life. It seemed his subordinates also had no objection. Perhaps it should be said that they were truly a pack of dogs. It appeared they were obediently following the decision of the top dog.

「No see, this work is a failure after all so we will lose our place from the company. In the first place I joined the company was for earning fund to become an independent treasure hunter. I have been thinking that it would soon be the time for a change of job. Boss, I believe that we will be really useful

you know?」

「You don't need to promote yourself like there is no tomorrow. If you answer what I want to know, I'll let you go back alive.」

「.....We are going to be useful you know? Seriously.」

「I'm telling you it's fine not to make sure like that. I got a loyal rabbit here in place of loyal dog. You think I'm gonna take the burden of troublesome bunches for more than this huh.」

Hajime wouldn't excessively apply hostility=murder like his time in Tortus. Unlike in Tortus, here there would be various trouble occurring if people died or vanished. Thinking of the effort it would take to carry out the countermeasure afterward, Hajime would give pardon to a certain degree. Of course, it would also depend on the situation and the other party. Wilford and his group were people of the underworld, but they weren't like cult group or terrorist that couldn't be talked through. And so, Hajime's words weren't a lie.

Wilford focused his gaze on Hajime for a while to sound out his true intention, but perhaps he somehow guessed Hajime's thinking, because right after that he recovered his bright smile.

「Hahaha, that's really good to hear. We will vanish right away after the talk is over, so I earnestly beg for your mercy. And, about what that box actually is.....」

According to him, the inside of the metal box was filled with ancient biological weapon as expected.

Actually they discovered a lot of lithograph at an ancient ruin that was excavated at completely different place, and it was written there that there was a biological weapon here.

According to the result from deciphering the lithographs, a minority tribe that was originally living in secluded region was making use of it for medical treatment, the raw materials was a very small fraction of soil of the mountainous region. It seemed that by taking the medicine in a dose using peculiar way, mysteriously all kinds of sicknesses would be cured. But, if the way and amount of taking it were mistaken, it would instead cause the internal

of the body to crumble and brought death.

At the time, a certain large country that was aiming for hegemony had their eye fixed to that effect. And then, they researched the soil and diverted its use into weapon. They would process the material, used wind to spread it and caused airborne infection, then the infected human would have the inside of their body crumbled in no time at all and died.

「After deciphering the record of that time, the research team of the company form a hypothesis that it might be the microbe in the soil—furthermore it might be carnivorous microbe that was living in the ancient time. The infected would be feverish, and then it's not that their cell would get necrosis or anything, they would physically “get eaten from the inside and die”.」

「How can you understand such thing?」

「A mummy was discovered. From how it was strictly stored, most likely it was a quarantined corpse.....it seemed the research team understood the effect from investigating it.」

Hajime thought 「I see」. If that was the case, then it wasn't a matter of poison resistance. Because it was practically no different from physical attack, what would be necessary was physical defense instead of resistance ability. And then, it was difficult to expect physical defense from internal organ. From the story it was understandable how it could even affect Hajime.

Though he got a hunch that if it was Shia she might be able to defend even her internal organ against it using fighting spirit.

「Hm? Come to think of it, was the team that discovered it all right? They discovered human that got done in by biological weapon right?」

「It was from BC era. The microbe already died.」

It was a strange story. If that was the case, Shia's Future Sight shouldn't activate.

In that case,

「I see. That lithograph also recorded the way to preserve the biological weapon, and the chronology how it was brought here.」

「.....That save the time.」

There was no definite record, but even that microbe went extinct due to some kind of cause. The fury of the biological weapon was ended. But, not all of them. It seemed the excavated ruin was the grave of the royalty of a destroyed country, and according to the record a single princess survived.

After many twists and turns, the girl secured the method to preserve the microbe in hibernating state and even the microbe itself, and then she escaped from the pursuit of enemy country.

「And that is this ruin huh.」

「In the beginning it seemed to be the exclusive hideout for the royalty of that country. You understand if you have seen that underground labyrinth right? It's impossible to built it without great authority and fortune.」

Certainly, it was natural to think of that place as the gathering of the best technology of the country.

Wilford and co thoroughly investigated the record, and determined that the last princess had escaped. At the same time, they also found out that the last princess tried to accomplish her revenge by using the biological weapon inside the hegemony country. This ruin was truly a hideout where time of remaining in obscurity was spent.

「But, in the end that princess didn't use the weapon huh.」

「Looks like it. It was also left in the record.」

According to the record, the princess wasn't getting into the labyrinth because of the enemy pursuit. Most likely she was wavering between her vengeful heart and the weight of sin of releasing the nightmare once more into this world. In the end, she reconsidered herself that the biological weapon should be buried for eternity, but her vassal didn't agree.

The vassals who were driven by hatred and vengeful thought attempted to seize the weapon.

The girl escape to the deepest part, and after that she never came out in order to seal the weapon along with herself.

「Or perhaps, she might be exhausted because of her vassal's betrayal and the truth of her ruined country.」

The corpse of warrior in front of that door. Was he the only ally of the princess? Or else, a traitor who pursued the princess until the very end? In the end, why did she died on that trap mechanism?

Right now they didn't understand, but there was no doubt it was a tragedy that happened in far away past.

「Naturally, the enemy country came to search for the princess. They rounded up the surviving vassals and grasped the situation. They then entered the underground labyrinth, but it resulted with a lot of victim. As a matter of fact, it seemed the king of that country himself who disseminated that biological weapon went 『This is bad, seriously bad』. They then decided to completely seal the labyrinth.」

「Why is only the words of the king of the country that disseminated the biological weapon is rough like that huh.」

In any case, Reletense company that investigated that kind of details then dispatched Wilford and co in order to obtain the ancient biological weapon.

「Now then, young man. I have said everything that I know. It seems that you aren't Vatican's people, so I think you shouldn't have any more business with me though?」

Wilford pleaded once more 「Don't kill me very please」 with strong gaze.

Hajime personally felt that somehow there was a curious word mixed in Wilford's sentence just now, so he grinded Donner once more while ignoring Wilford's gaze.

「Why are you mentioning Vatican just now?」

「Aa, I'm glad. I'm convinced seeing your reaction. No you see, in our business Vatican is like our biggest rival. Fundamentally that side is collecting and managing relic of power. The agent from there is really merciless. They are our rival while at the same time they are also the synonym of terror.」

Earth was seriously fantasy. Thinking that, Hajime looked up to the sky with a

complicated look.

But, Wilford's next words changed his expression.

「Well, in a sense, taking on “returnee” as opponent instead of them is more not worth it though.」

*Gorit.* Wilford-san's forehead was drenched with cold sweat.

「A, haha, as I thought that's the case huh. Goddammit. So I had pulled the worst card right from the start. This is why I'm saying that life is always going to unexpected direction.」

「It's fine to curse, but you understand what I want to ask right? Answering honestly is for you own sake y'know? You don't want to become fish fodder aren't you?」

Wilford answered while still sweating coldly.

「I'm in the business of chasing after world's mystery you know? There is no way I wouldn't get interested at the group disappearing incident and returnee commotion at Japan.」

「.....Well, certainly. We also got probed by occultish secret society after all.....」

「In addition, the bizarre information control that is so perfect it's eerie. Reletense investigated it thinking that it might be related with relic of power you know? Though they didn't get satisfactory result.」

「Hee, even though there wasn't any satisfactory result, how did you understand I'm a returnee?」

「No, because.....」

Wilford's gaze turned toward the spot where there was *chudon* from the sky just now.

「It's about three months ago I think. You used that at Britain too right?」

「? Britain.....ah, that time huh.」

The time of *chudon* that a certain lord requested.

It seemed that Reletense company also grasped the situation at Britain to a

certain degree. Hajime did forbid the related people from talking and manipulated society's recognition to a certain degree, but as expected, he didn't do anything like erasing the memory of all the people living nearby who saw that light. It wasn't strange that the sky *chudon* got known. After all, a facility was blown away along with the terrain. And the result, there was also a temporary water outage after that.

「And so, Reletense company is gathering the information of you all to a certain degree. That's why even if you dispose of me——」

「So you're saying, don't kill me even if I'm not gonna take you in. ....You are someone really good at calculating right?」

「Yes, boss. I, Wilford and my subordinates won't get involved at all with boss and also the returnees and people related with them! Rather, when you need it I will be really useful——」

「You are really persistent at promoting yourself! It's fine, we are going to take care things like that by ourselves. Also, if you call me boss again, I'm gonna shoot you.」

Hajime stored away Donner with an exasperated expression. Tension left from Wilford's shoulders and he let out a long sigh. It seemed that inside he was really nervous in contrast with his outside appearance.

「If there is no more work particularly, I'm thinking of being allowed to quickly withdraw but.....」

「Aa? Aah, it's fine already. Go.」

「Right, I really want to do just that but, look, our boat is destroyed so.....」

Wilford. He really had great personality. It seemed he was implicitly pleading 'Can you take us until the ruin, or until Puhang city?'.

Certainly, there was quite a distance whichever way they would go. Furthermore, this river normally had crocodile. The men hanging on the edge of the boat sometimes were worrying of their surrounding even now must be because of that.

Wilford and co were turning gaze that was filled with hope at Hajime.

Toward them who was like that, Hajime naturally smiled brightly.

「Is that necessary?」

The place became deadly silent.

「Noo, see. There are also injured people here, as expected——」

*Gorit*

「You guys! It's a race until Puhang city! Now, swim! Be careful of crocodile!」

Wilford energetically swam downstream like a fish that had obtained water. The men were carrying the injured while following him hurriedly.

「In a sense, they are happy bunches huh.....」

「Isn't that right desuu~. I thought that he was just a smug person, but if I have to say which one, he is a gag personnel instead.」

By the way, they casually left behind Mr. Brandon. It couldn't be helped, so Hajime and Shia left the boat where Brandon was at to be carried away by the flow. Surely, he too would drift away to somewhere.

「Now then, Shia. About from here on.....」

「Yes desu. What to do?」

Hajime showed a pondering gesture for a bit.

「Let's see. At first our objective is to search for Hauria's base farther at the back region of the ruin, but now, I'm thinking it should be fine if we just make that ancient ruin into Hauria's base.」

「Isn't that riiight. It's easily a fortress already after allll. An underground labyrinth overflowing with killing intent.」

「Right? They are a bunches who greatly love booby trap after all. They are going to be happy for sure. Right now it's submerged and broken, but it can just be fixed later.」

「But, as a hideout.....that Reletense company whatever know about it already.」

「About that, the local people won't get near because of the rumor of the



curse, and the government of this country doesn't know of its worth. In that case, it's necessary to do something about the recognition of the foreigners.」

If only that point could be cleared, then the ancient ruin's underground labyrinth would definitely become a good base for Hauria clan.

Hajime said 「And so.....」 as preface,

「I'm thinking to march into Reletense company for a bit. Right away. I'm also curious about their information on us.」

「Isn't that right~. I'm concerned about the information about us. It's unfortunate that the date is interrupted, but yes, let's go right away.」

Both of them nodded to each other, then Hajime took out the compass and crystal key and immediately teleported from the forest area to the center of a metropolis in America.

—

—

—

A metropolis in west coast. A high rise building in a corner of that city——Reletense company's floor thirty,

「To think that a robbery case already occurred at the place we infiltrated, this is just too much.」

「As expected of Hajime-san. No matter where and what you try to do, you will encounter trouble. It's only Hajime-san that is impossible to find the “expected unexpected” happen to you.」

Such conversation between Hajime and Shia resounded.

Ahead of the gaze of the two was flickering light, glass wall that was partly smashed, a little bit of scattered blood, and then several collapsed guards, along with several people who seemed to be staffs.

No matter how they looked, it was a scene of a case.

Due to the difference of time zone, the curtain of night had already descended here. It seemed that most people had gone home, so there was few

presence of people inside the company. Seeing how there wasn't any alarm or commotion that could be heard, it seemed that what happened in this floor hadn't been discovered yet.

The two came here with the guidance of the compass, so they should be able to find the file regarding returnee or ancient ruin at the terminal in this floor, but.....

「Is this done by industrial espionage? According to Luffy, it looks like this is a company that is prosperous at behind the scene.」

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san. Before we get dragged into a strange trouble again, let's accomplish our objective quickly.」

Hajime nodded to Shia's words and called out the Arachne-san group. It was in order to inject sleeping drug into the collapsed people, just in case.

Seen from the side, it was like an inhuman act of beating a corpse, but because the guard whose wound seemed serious also got a tiny bit of healing medicine injected into them, it was a good deed instead. Even if they were starting to convulse *twitch twitch* from it.

「Come to think of it Hajime-san, how are we going to check the information? I imagine that the PC has protection right?」

For the data related to ancient ruin, they could just destroy the server later and also apply recognition manipulation to the staffs with something like 「Heh? Feels like I forgot something? Well, it mustn't be a big deal if I forgot about it」.

Although, regarding the information of returnee, just in case they also wanted to confirm how much the company actually grasped and how skilled their information gathering ability was.

And so, it would be the quickest to browse the data from the terminal, but something like the data of a company naturally couldn't be browsed that easily. The data was obviously being protected using password and so on.

Something like hacking was completely the field of earth technology> Hajime could do programming for things related to create game, but he had no technology to infiltrate the terminal of a company.

And so, Shia's question was only natural.

「No problem. I'll use this.」

「What is it?」

Hajime took out two sunglasses from Treasure Warehouse. He put one on himself while also putting the other on Shia.

「It's an artifact to replay the sight of the past through the lens——Urd Glass.」

It was an artifact that Tio often used to gather image album. In Tio's case, the camera she used had Urd Glass as its lens.

Seeing the past using this artifact would consume magic power in proportion of the time that was traced back, that consumption rate was also at a level that couldn't be made fun of, but just peeking back through this one whole day to look at the password wouldn't be a problem.

‘I see’, Shia nodded while for now she cracked her neck. She was putting in fighting spirit~

「Why is it only my sunglass that looks like party-goer's specification!? Isn't the frame absurdly heart shaped!?」

「That's not all y'know. Try filling it with magic power.」

She tried pouring. The glasses shined really shiny! Light of seven colors brilliantly and super colorfully decorated inside the dark room!

Shia was shining bright!

「Is there other?」

「What are you dissatisfied about?」

「Mostly everything.」

Even though he created it for Shia's sake. Even though Yue was pleased with it. Hajime muttered such things while taking out different sunglass. It was teardrop type.

Shia personally felt something like 「Ee~, isn't there anything with smarter look?」, but.....when she put it on she thought 「Eh? It's unexpectedly suited me?」.

「Well, I'm fine with this but.....when Hajime-san is wearing round type sunglass, it feels terribly suspicious, or really fishy.」

「It's the booming recently. When you meet the people of government wearing this, they generally will draw back. The bunches who should be good in poker face will have their thought 『Thi, this guy, he is totally fishy!』 completely appear on their face.」

「Please don't play around with the reaction of government's people.」

Hajime cackled while prompting Shia to activate the ability of Urd Glass to see the past.

Through Urd Glass, the past image of the room began to be projected.

First, the situation of the incident was projected.

「Oo, it's like movie desuu! This mister thief somehow is amazing! Hajime-san, let's look from the beginning of the assault!」

「Certainly it's like movie huh. Yosh, then starting from the beginning of the attack.....」

The image was projected like a replay and the beginning of the attack was normally played back.

Just as the two said, a sight that was like a movie scene spread out.

The attacker wore a really fit coat with his face hidden by mask. That mask was like the face of Kaooshi of a certain anime movie of spirited away phenomenon, it looked really eerie.

It seemed the attacker was alone. He made several staffs who were working overtime to faint, then threatened the last one with a knife and began to browse the information terminal. And then, he gave instruction to the male staff who was stiff from terror and began to copy the information to a storage medium.

「.....This guy.」

The browsed information and the copied content caused Hajime to narrow his eyes and reflexively leaked out his voice.

「It's the information of the ancient ruin isn't it~. How timely. Well, that is fine but, why, even the information of returnee.....」

「Rather than it being his objective, it feels more like he discovered it by chance and snatched it on the occasion huh.」

Although, Hajime wondered why there was a need to expressly go as far as copying the data. If the man was an industrial spy, there should be other information that could be more profitable.

The image was progressing even while Hajime and Shia tilted their head in puzzlement. Then, two guards carelessly arrived in the middle of the copying progress. Looks like they were patrolling.

The threatened staff instantly looked relieved, but right after that he was punched and fainted. The attacker also attacked the guards. He sent flying one guard using old-looking collapsed baton, while the other one was blown away to the glass wall with a midair spinning kick.

After confirming that the guards were silenced, the attacker pulled out the storage media that had finished the data copying before vanishing inside the dark corridor as though melting into darkness.

「Hoe~ it was amazing. That's obviously a pro. Just who in the world could he be?」

Shia raised an admiring voice, but Hajime didn't react. When she looked, Hajime was folding his arms thinking of something.

「What's wrong? Is Hajime-san concerned with the information of returnee getting taken?」

「No, that's not really a big problem. After all using compass we can find the attacker's whereabouts right away. There is no rush. Just.....」

「Just? What is it? Is there something concerning?」

「It was just for an instant but, the baton that guy showed, also when he jumped, at the inner part of his exposed coat.....I saw cross mark.」

「??」

「What's wrong with that?」 Shia's rabbit ears tilted. Hajime explained while

pondering.

「If you say that it might be just a fashion, then that's that, but if that's not the case, then it will be quite troublesome I guess. If that guy has a backing just like what I'm imagining, the people behind him will become interested in "returnee".」

「The people behind him.....you mean that attacker-san belong to an organization, and that organization is troublesome?」

「I don't know whether they are troublesome or not though. I also don't know what their intention is.」

「H~m? Who could it be?」

「Luffy said it right? The organization that should be avoided in this business?」

「Ee~rr.....ah」

Shia hit her palm *pon* when she remembered. Hajime who saw that nodded and spoke the organization, or rather the country the attacker might belonged to.

「Right, it's Vatican.」

—

—

—

A residential area in a certain place at Britain.

The town had splendid harmony between new and old building. Inside a house at a tranquil area slightly distanced from the center of the city, resounded a voice of a girl that sounded delighted, or joyful, or it wouldn't even be an exaggeration to say that the voice sounded happy.

「Ko~suke~! The pie is finished baking~!」

The voice's owner was a blonde haired beautiful girl with hair in side tail style and wearing frilly apron and fluffy kitchen mitten——Emily Grant.

Her hands had a container of apple pie that was baked just now. She sniffed *sun sun-* at the sweet gentle aroma in enjoyment, with her almond-shaped eyes

that were like cat narrowing in satisfaction.

「Ko~suke~! Can you hear me~? You can leave trimming the garden for later, so let's eat before it get cold~」

Emily-chan was calling at her beloved person who was currently tending the garden with a voice that sounded sweeter than apple pie.

At present, the one at the garden was Kousuke E Abyssga——not, it was Endo Kousuke.

Although, to be more accurate it was one of his clones. The main body was at Japan. Although, even though it was clone body, it could share information with the main body in real time, it also could eat. The sense of taste could also be shared.

From the point that it “wasn't the main body”, Emily personally felt lonely, she also longed for the real one, but she convinced herself with saying 「A convenient communication method that is a bit real」.

By the way, right now her family wasn't at home. They were going out. And so, there was just the two of them. Emily would restrain herself in front of her family, but when it was just the two of them she became awfully indulgent. In various things.

From the garden, 「Got it~! I'm coming soon!」 such voice could be heard. Just from that, Emily's expression loosened 'funya~'.

She put the apple pie on the plate while humming, and went toward the living room with light footsteps.

And then,

「Yo, sorry for the intrusion.」

There was a demon king.

「HIIIIIIH, HE CAME OUUUTT!?!」

Emily-chan screamed and leaped on the spot. The apple pie danced in the air.

「WATCH O~UT! AND THEN IT'S A WASTEE~E! DESUU!」

Shia caught the plate and apple pie while generating afterimage. Hajime

glanced at that while speaking his dissatisfaction with throbbing vein on his forehead.

「Oi you, why are you screaming right after seeing my face?」

「I'm sorry! My Kousuke is always much obliged to you!」

She stood at attention before giving a beautiful bow. It was as though her husband's superior—furthermore it was someone at the rank of president or chairman suddenly visited her home. Even while at her wits' end, Emily-chan desperately greeted like a young wife.

At their first meeting, various things happened. Various things.

「Geez, Hajime-san you dummy! That's why I told you not to teleport directly, but visit from the entrance. Please don't scare my cute little sis. Are you all right, Emily-chan?」

「Shi, Shia-oneesan.....I'm, ALL RIGHT DESSU!」

She didn't look okay at all no matter how one looked at her.

By the way, they teleported directly inside the house was because there were the guards from Britain's intelligence bureau around Grant house, so this was so they wouldn't get spooked. Though Shia wished that they didn't spook Emily rather than them.

Then, there Kousuke entered the living room saying 「Emily? Are you okay? Looks like Nagumo and Shia came though」 while wiping his hands with a towel.

「Kousukee!」

Emily quickly snuggled beside Kousuke. It seemed she was really nervous to be in the presence of the demon king.

Kousuke comforted Emily 'there, there' while asking.

「Nagumo, and also Shia-san. What's the matter you two? If I remember right, you two were in the middle of a trip right?」

「Aa, it became a bit troublesome mater. This is work request.」

「.....Trouble?」

Kousuke's vigilance jumped up. He looked at Hajime with reluctant face.



Hajime smiled wryly at such Kousuke while putting a metal box beside the apple pie.

「You see, this is something we found at an underground dungeon of an ancient ruin. A powerful biological weapon that destroyed several countries in the past.」

「WAIT A SECOOOOOOOND-! There are a lot of place to tsukkomi than I don't know where to begin here! But for now, don't put that beside Emily's apple pie!」

Kousuke recovered the apple pie swiftly while putting in a deft tsukkomi.

His gaze was intensely pleading 「Explain the situation right from the start! No, as expected just go home!」.

Of course, demon king-sama didn't go home!

Emily said 「Come to think of it, sheesh me, I didn't even bring out tea!」, she then returned to the kitchen with hurried footsteps looking like a young wife as expected. Hajime gave her a glance while starting to explain the situation without allowing any argument.

Hajime talked while yummiily enjoying Emily's handmade tea and apple pie. When he finished talking, Kousuke raised a dry laughing voice saying 「Earth, is seriously fantasy」. Hajime grinned widely at him and said.

「And so, it will be a lot of hard work investigating that guy's too big backing, so I'll leave it to you.」

「Don't leave it to me. Stop. I don't know anything.」

「You see, this biological weapon, it seems that originally it would become a cure-all when it's mixed using peculiar way.」

「No, listen to me. I'm not going to accept it you listening.」

「If Emily is interested then it's find if you turn it over to her. It's something like this after all. I'll prepare the facility, I'll also set up any necessary things. It's going to be a part of the reward. If you aren't interested, I cannot handle it so I'll just dispose of it.」

「Oi Nagumo, listen. I said already I'm not gonna do it. The opponent is just

too big, you said it yourself. Rather than me doing it solo, you guys doing it is——」

「The reward is this much see. You will need funds for the wedding right?」

「What do you mean wedding fund!? If you think I'm going to get lured by such words——」

Kousuke howled to Hajime who ignored his words and continued talking, but beside him the girl with superabundance attribute, Emily tensed her face and taking the bait, she answered.

「Accepted! Demon king-sama! Let's do our best, Kousuke!」

「Emily is baited!? That's just too easy right!? Or rather, which is it? Which got you hooked? Is it the ancient cure-all? Or else the marriage fund with me!?」

「Ko, Kousuke.....in front of demon king-sama and Shia-oneesan, you said “marry with me” like that.....I'm, embarrassed.....」

「Can you stop extracting only convenient words from my comment like a journalist!?」

Emily-chan pressed her cheeks with both hands while fidgeting with faked reluctance. Her trademark side tail also swayed *furi furi*.

「It's great that you two got along really well. If you need anything else contact me again later.」

「Ah, wait, Nagumo! Why are you looking like you aren't going to touch this even with a pole! You are leaving this wholesale to me too much! At the very least do this job together with me!」

Hajime stood up from his seat and opened a gate, to which Kousuke pleaded earnestly to him.

Hajime smiled brightly to such Kousuke once more and,

「I'm in the middle of date with Shia. Telling me to suspend it like that..... Endo, since when you became that kind of terrible guy?」

「Shut up-. I don't want getting told that I'm a “terrible guy” only by you!」

‘You've really changed huh.....’. Hajime said such thing with that kind of

attitude. In respond Kousuke put in a tsukkomi with throbbing vein on his forehead.

However, such objection was just like a breeze against swaying willow,

「Because it's true right? For the moment, you already got the result from mock exam to your targeted medical university that can be said as certain, if you do nothing but studying then you'll want to move your body, and then you said that you want to do something, not sports, but something with tension. That's why, I suggested this to help you refresh, and yet, you told me to do it myself even if it will make Shia sad, really, someone like you is just——」

「DAaaAAAAH, I got it! I got it already! I just need to do it right!?!」

*mumble mumble, grumble grumble* Seeing Hajime starting to talk like that, Kousuke responded in abandonment.

To that, Hajime bestowed 「Oo, so you will accept huh. As expected from Abyssgate!」 words of praise (?) to him.

「Then, take care of the rest.」

He easily said that and walked to the other side of the gate accompanied by Shia.

From behind, 「I'll contact you later for sure! Pick up the call okay!」 such voice resounded. It was regarding information leak of their comrades, so in the end, surely Kousuke wouldn't hesitate to help out Hajime right from the start. It was just the opponent would be too big if their worry was right in the mark, that he was a bit anxious to do it alone.

Perhaps guessing such complicated worry of Kousuke, Shia groaned after the gate closed.

「Uu~n, will he be okay I wonder?」

「It's going to be all right, if we leave it to Endo.」

In a sense, that was the greatest proof of demon king-sama's trust.

「Certainly the date with Shia is a priority, but when the date is over, I want to reconsider about things related to enterprise. Just like Reletense company. Besides, there is no one that is superior to that guy in covert investigation, so he

is the suitable person to deal with an opponent that we don't want to discern our movement. Well, if it's necessary, I'll lend him as much help as possible.」

Hajime said that with a shrug. He then pulled himself together and suggested something.

「Rather than that, Shia. This place is still Britain, but are we going to continue the search for base? We still have time remaining in the trip schedule anyway.」

「What are we going to do with the ancient ruin?」

「We are keeping it on hold for now. In Britain there is a lot of forest with abundant nature. And there are many famous story of forest with witch in it. Occult story like sorcery or magic is also the staple here. So perhaps, we might find new earth fantasy here?」

「Oo, that sounds good! Then, let's go to a date in Britain's forest for the remaining time!」

Shia hopped around happily.

Hajime too naturally smiled.

It felt like they would get the attention of some kind of great power like this, but in front of the smile of the rabbit that was the very definition of innocence, he could think of it as just trivial problem.

After having a lot of fun spending important time with Shia.....then, he would check at the lord's condition just in case. Hajime muttered that inside his heart while.....

Hajime strongly gripped back the hand that Shia presented to him with delighted smile on her face.

—

—

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Continuing from last week, I received a lot of congratulating comment for getting anime.

Really thank you very much!

Now then, there are about two notifications.

- At Gardo, Arifureta Nichijou's latest chapter is updated!

It's interesting as usual. To the degree it make me want to reimport the material back to the main story lol

If you like, please go there to look by all means.

—

- The second is apology.

The spin-off [Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou Zero 1] that was planned to be launched at 25 December will move to 28 December

It get delayed. ....It seems there are various circumstances.

Volume 7 will still be launched at 25 December.

My deepest apology to those who has made a plan or looking forward to it.

It will be delayed by three days but, please kindly take care of it.

# Arifureta Chapter 293

## Arifureta After III Tortus Travel Journal ①

—

At the time the “returnee” uproar was calming down, in a certain day where there would be consecutive holiday in a few more days.

In the living room of his home, Hajime was encountering an extremely troubling situation.

「If you want to pass through here, then step over your mother’s dead body.」

「.....」

His mother Sumire was standing on his way while repeatedly jumping sideways for some reason.

Her gaze was sharp, and her movement was agile. She was muttering 「kabaddi kabaddi kabaddi」 with small voice.....it seemed that it wasn’t sideways leaping, but she was imitating India’s sport.

It was completely mysterious that for some reason his mother challenged him with India sport even though he was only trying to go to the kitchen to take some drink.

And then, speaking of mystery,

「Hajime. Tou-san will cry if you aren’t showing any reaction soon you know?」

Surely it also applied to the father——Shuu, standing behind him in Jojo pose that looked relatively painful. (TN: Jojo pose)

In other words, currently Hajime who was trying to take drink from the kitchen was being surrounded by his mother who was doing kabaddi and his father who standing in Jojo pose for some reason.

Hajime let out a long sigh and,

「I don't want to say something like this to my parents but.....I'll dare to say it. ——Seriously annoying.」

「Myy, how can you say that to your father! Just because he is a bit like that, it's cruel! Apologize!」

「Oii, how can you say that to your mother! Just because she is a bit like that, that's cruel! Apologize!」

Sumire and Shuu looked at each other. It seemed they both thought that Hajime's words were directed to the other one. It never crossed their mind that those words could be for themselves.

「Wait a second dear. Just what is annoying from me. He referred to the father who is standing in Jojo pose at the living room you know? In this world there is no human more annoying than you right now.」

「Ha? I don't get what do you mean though? Is there something more annoying than a mother who is doing kabaddi inside the house? Stop running from reality, Sumire.」

A beat. 「Aa?」 「Oo?」 They both pressed on each other. Nagumo family's married couple were glaring at each other while sandwiching their son in between.

Hajime was massaging his forehead to endure the headache from the outbreak of incomprehensible matrimonial quarrel.

「Anyway leave aside the matrimonial quarrel for now, can you say just what in the world you two were planning to do?」

Sumire and Shuu who were glaring at each other returned to their original position with a jump *hyupa-*, then with a good coordination that would make one wonder just what with the dangerous atmosphere before this, they spoke their desire.

「「We want to go to another world travel!!」」

Sumire and Shuu's eyes were sparkling. It seemed they wanted to go to Tortus. There would be consecutive holiday soon, so they must be wanting to go to a family trip. And they were requesting for the destination to be another world.

「.....Tortus huh. My bad, but is it no good to postpone it for a bit later? It's not that we cannot go, but it will make my plan to get disordered greatly.」

There was a method to go to Tortus. The method was simple. If there was the compass and Crystal Key, they could go anywhere.

Although, it wasn't like there was no problem at all. It was the fuel. Even calling the amount of energy needed to travel between worlds as enormous was still underselling it, an absurd amount of magic power would be necessary. They couldn't travel that easily.

For now, there was a stock of magic power that was just barely enough. There was enough, but there was schedule to use it until Hajime could establish a method to travel easily and freely to another world. He hesitated to use it merely just to go playing.

Hajime was looking reluctant, however, Sumire and Shuu showed a complacent smile as though wanting to say 「That reaction is just as expected」.

And then, they signaled by whistling in front of the dubious Hajime. By the way, Sumire couldn't whistle, so she was saying 「Pyuuu」.

Right after the whistling echoed inside Nagumo house, multiple silhouettes appeared in the living room. It was a teleport that didn't even use gate——”Divine Existence”.

Naturally, the ones that appeared were Yue, and then Myuu, Remia, Shia, and Tio who seemed to be teleported by Yue. Yue and co then began moving with a smooth movement that was like trained troupe.

「A-no-ther-world! Want-to-go! A-no-ther-world! Want-to-go!」

When Sumire was starting to take the lead, at the front Myuu, Yue, Remia, and then Sumire were lining up vertically in that order and began doing Choo



Choo orain. (TN: Choo Choo Train, google it)

Myuu was laughing while doing her best to move her small body in big circle. Yue was depicting a circle with slightly delayed movement. She was expressionless, but she looked like she was having fun somewhat. Remia too was chuckling「Ufufu ≡」while following their movement splendidly.

Hajime thought. ‘These guys, they absolutely practiced this’. At the same time, the face of his mother who was pleading for another world travel with triumphant look made him irritated somehow.

「That’s right!」

「To another woorld!」

「Let’s go! Desuu!」

When he looked back, Tio, Shuu, and Shia were lining up horizontally while making chuuni pose. Their pose was Jojo pose that came from accumulating research on top of research.

At the front was his mother’s gang perfectly reproducing a revolving dance that was leaving impression in the heart somehow even though its formal name still wasn’t clear despite the dance’s fame, while at the back was his father’s gang who was doing perfect chuuni pose that was also impossible to forget.

「I waaant to see my son’s cool side juust for a biit~♪」

「It was my dream to get my son to take me going to a trip you knooow~. I wish my son will fulfill his filial piety~」

The mother and father were whining with their all.

Hajime’s forehead massage was getting more intense.

When he was holding his head at his wits’ end toward the eccentricity that was under the name of parents’ pestering, Yue who was expressionlessly twirling opened her mouth.

「.....Hajime. It’s important to do what should be done, but family service is also important.」

「Yue.....」

A telepathy suddenly arrived from Yue.

『.....Besides, Okaa-sama and Otou-sama want to know the track that Hajime walked. This isn't simply curiosity. But because this is about their treasured son.』

『.....』

『.....I understand. Hajime doesn't really want, Okaa-sama and Otou-sama to know about what Hajime did. Isn't that right?』

『.....You're right. I think it's something they don't need to know.』

『.....Okaa-sama and Otou-sama also understand that Hajime is thinking like that. But, exactly because of that, they want to know. In order to convey, that they can embrace Hajime with their feeling like now even after knowing.』

Hajime looked up.

Tortus was an important place where he met Yue and others. There was no way he was avoiding it.

But, at the same time, that world was also hell for Hajime. What he did to escape and return home, should be called as gruesome in earth.

He didn't have the slightest bit of regret, and if it was necessary he would do the same thing even now.

Although, he had already told his parents about what he had done, and even Hajime would hesitate to make his father and mother to expressly follow his track and made them feel it for real.

For example, even if he was convinced that how his parents were looking at him wouldn't change from it, as a son, he felt a hesitation that couldn't be explained with logic.

The travel to another world had been done several times, but he had never brought Shuu and Sumire together at those occasions was the manifestation of such thinking.

Seeing Hajime was indecisive, Yue spoke encouragingly at him while still doing twirling dance.

『.....I also want to know. With what kind of feeling, what kind of hardship you overcame, in order for Hajime to return back to Okaa-sama and Otou-sama. The two of them have the right to know. Hajime, answer them?』

「.....If Yue speak that much, then I cannot escape anymore huh.」

That's right, escape. It was unlike Hajime to do that.

Hajime smiled self-depreciatingly and his shoulders that were tensed unconsciously relaxed.

「Haa. I got it. Kaa-san, Tou-san, I'll invite you two to Tortus at the coming holidays, so stop doing Choo Choo Traio and Jojo pose inside the house already.」

Immediately, 「Wa~i!」 Sumire and Shuu raised both their hands joyfully. They jumped for joy while high fiving each other.

Their frolicking caused Hajime to spontaneously want to <sup>retort</sup> tsukkomi 「Are you two children!」. That was how happy they were to be able to know about what Hajime went through in another world.

「We did it dear! With this we can see a lot of animal ears as much as we want!」

「Oi oi, Sumire. Don't forget about elf in the flesh! We've got to see the pointed ears twitching even at the risk of our life!」

「That's obvious! Especially the girl! Gufufuh, I really cannot wait to see erlf in the flesh it's painful.....」(TN: In Japan, elf is read as erufu, with the 'r' sounds like 'l'. Here Sumire switched the 'u' in the middle with 'o', into erofu. When Japanese people read it, it will still sound like elf, but the ero there refer to erotic.)

「That's it!」

Hajime turned his gaze to Yue.

「What did you say about following my track?」

「.....O, of course they also want to know about that, should be.....」

Yue's gaze was fiercely swimming around. Seeing how the two were frolicking

merrily while chanting 「Erlf! Erlf in the flesh!」, no matter how anyone looked, no parental feeling of wanting to know the son's experience could be seen at all. Rather, their own interest and desire were bared to see.

There, someone pulled *kui kui* at Hajime's hand.....

「Papa. Whaaat is erlf?」

Myuu's pure question. Her eyes were shining with curiosity. No way he could teach her the meaning of the words of the two dirty adults. Those pure eyes made Hajime felt like that.

Hajime was directing a nihilistic gaze toward Sumire and Shuu while,

「Myuu. There are things in this world that shouldn't be known.」

「??」

He answered like that.

—

—

—

At the morning of the holiday.

A lot of people were inside Nagumo home's living room.

「Kaori? My angel? Won't you get back into good mood soon? Look, somehow Otou-san is also coming like this. Okay?」

「.....」

On the living room's sofa, there was the figure of Kaori who although she was sitting demurely with upright gesture of both her legs sticking close to each other and her hands put on the knees, her expression wasn't even trying to hide her sullenness.

Toward such Kaori——the one who was desperately cheering up his beloved daughter was Shirasaki Tomoichi.

uncle

「Kaori, Oji-san is seriously depressed, so how about leaving it at that?」

The one who was smiling wryly beside Kaori while intermediating was

Shizuku.

「Tomoichi-kun too is getting hardships from his daughter huh.」

「.....Otou-san? What does that mean? Rather I believe the one getting hardship here is me who found out about my family's hidden occupation and outrageous behavioral principle though?」

「.....I stirred up the hornet's nest.」

The one who sent sympathetic words to Tomoichi and got rewarded with reproachful gaze from Shizuku was Yaegashi Koichi who averted his eyes. Beside Koichi, the one who similarly averted her eyes was the grandfather Yaegashi Shuuzou.

「Fufu, Tomoichi-san and Kaori-chan are really close.」

「.....It's always embarrassing every time, Kirino-san.」

There were two ladies leisurely watching the father-daughter quarrel while drinking tea at the living room's table. One was Yaegashi Kirino, the other one was Shirasaki Kaoruko. They were respectively the mother of Shizuku and Kaori.

Hearing the talk of Nagumo family going to Tortus for a trip at this consecutive holiday, Kaori and Shizuku pleaded 'In that case we too!'. The result, the families of both household were gathering like this in the living room of Nagumo house.

Unfortunately, the family outside these two families wasn't able to take consecutive holidays. One other family would be the exception and passed off in this time.

In order to bring along that last fellow traveler to this Tortus travel, currently Hajime wasn't in Nagumo house. The people here were waiting for his return.

Actually, Kaoruko was a great fan of Sumire's shoujo manga, and Kirino who didn't know about the manga itself but knew about the live-action film knew about Sumire's true identity as the author. Their tension was rising, they were also getting excited talking with Remia and Myuu who joined in the conversation about the mother-daughter's story of the fishman tribe.

Shuu was making fun of Tomoichi, Tomoichi who snapped assaulted Shuu.....

Yue was making fun of Kaori, Kaori who snapped assaulted Yue.....

Shia coaxed Shuuzou and Koichi that she wished to be shown the technique of Yaegashi-style (hidden), then the two displayed outrageous ninjut—ancient martial arts technique in the garden.....

On that garden's tree, a regrettable dragon who blundered early in the morning was being hung down wrapped in bamboo mat.....

The neighbor saw the garden of such Nagumo house while passing through hurried footsteps.....

The gossip among the neighbors that Nagumo house was a haunted environment of the residential area was accelerating.....

They killed time like that for a while.

Suddenly, the space in the living room began to distort like jelly. It was the proof of space teleportation using “gate”.

As expected, a round hole that a person could pass through was spreading.

「That bastard, he is obviously having lingering attachment. As I thought, perhaps I should do a scene of Inugami house once to him properly?」 (TN: Inugami house, something like murder story or something in Japan I think)

「That's why I'm saying, why is Hajime-kun is so fixated with Inugami house?」

「Taichi-kun also get a lot of hardships isn't he. More importantly, it's really like Anywheo Door. How amazing~」

The one who entered was Hajime and Aiko, and then Aiko's mother Akiko.

It would be Akiko alone who joined them from Hatayama family. The other family members couldn't leave alone their farm even temporarily and this time they would pass up the opportunity. They would participate at another chance when the travel between worlds became easier.

Hajime who crossed through space while talking about something saw the two fathers and the two wives scuffling before his eyes, and then he saw the Yaegashi family displaying things like Katon or Kowarimi in the garden, then he saw the four madams chatting and giggling while feeding Myuu, and said a

short sentence.

「Eh? What's with this chaos?」

Even though he only left them for thirty minutes, for some reason he was shown great commotion inside the house. His expression cramped.

And then, he saw the Hatayama mother and daughter whose eyes opened wide,

「Aiko's home is really peacefully nice huh. I really like Hatayama family you see~」

「Hee!? I, is that so? Ehehe~」

「My, Hajime-kun you flatterer, saying happy thing like that. Come again to play in the future. Our house's fruits are the best thanks to Aiko you know?」

「Yes. I will come at that time without fail.」

Hajime and Hatayama mother and daughter conversed peacefully.

Under their feet there was still a great ruckus. 「Speaking of the cause, it's the son of you bastard!」 「Ha-ha-ha! Tomo-kun, your heart is really narrow huh~. This is why recently Kaori-chan is calling me "Otou-san" adoringly——」 「Don't say anymoreeeeeee! I'm a bit aware of it after alllll-. Also, Don't call me Tomo-kunnn-」 The father of Shirasaki family and the father of Nagumo family were grappling like that.

Incidentally, beside them was 「Muiiiiiiih, Yue you idiooooot」 「Nniiiiih, Kaori you stupiiidd」 there was exchange of cat punch and cat kick.

Furthermore, 「Pa, papaaa! Save meee!」 Myuu who was jostled and treated affectionately like a cat by the madam group was reaching out her hand to him while gasping for breath, at the garden Shia VS Shuuzou & Koichi was almost starting, Shizuku was desperately stopping them.

In the end, it would be one hour later when everyone calmed down and they could depart.

—

—

Everyone was bringing only baggage in the amount that wouldn't become hindrance and moved to underground the Nagumo house.

The parents from each family were going「A really deep underground room is.....」in surprise. Tomoichi whose occupation was an architect was muttering something like「The Building Standards Law is.....」.

Before long they could see the end of the stair, but ahead it became a wall and the path ended.

While everyone's attention gathered at Hajime wondering what to do, Hajime put his hand on a corner of the wall. Instantly, brilliant crimson light ran through the whole wall, and the wall split into two. 「Oo~」Admiring voices were raised.

「The wall is using a magic called soul magic. If it's not someone that Hajime-kun give permission to, they absolutely won't be able to enter inside. After all the magic literally investigate the compatibility of the soul. Of course, I can enter inside!」

Kaori showed a triumphant look especially toward her father. 「I'm trusted by Hajime-kun you know!」Such implicit claim caused Tomoichi to display a “sullen face” that was exactly like his daughter before this.

But, the next moment he made a grand tsukkomi with his eyes snapping wide open.

「WAIT A SECOOOOOOOOOND! This is obviously strange isn't it!? What's with this size!」

Yes, the underground space Hajime was proud of had the size a bit like a theater building. No matter how one looked at it, it was the size that reached until the other houses in the neighborhood and even underground the main street.

As an architect who often got troubled how to create as much as “size” as possible with limited space, surely this underground space that felt like saying 「It exist for the sake of crushing Building Standards Law!」 「The land of other people is mine. The land of the country is also mine」 couldn't be tolerated no



matter what.

This space that was as though it existed for the sake of making him, a first class architect wanted to say ‘Are you showing off this outrageous thing to me, huuuuh!?’ caused Tomoichi to send a glare at Hajime. Hajime smiled wryly while saying.

「I didn’t do anything that will make it troublesome to deal with if it’s exposed. I’m enlarging the underground space using a magic called space magic. You know about the Treasure Warehouse that Kaori has right? The principle is the same.」

「I, is that so..... Anything is really possible with magic huh.....」

Tomoichi felt like the common sense of architect was overturned right from the root and he looked up.

He barely ignored the overwhelming gaze of my angel beside him that was looking for agreement 「Hajime-kun is amazing isn’t he? Right, right? Otou-san also think so right?」. He was also doing his best to ignore the exasperated gaze of his wife who was looking at him acting like this.

「Hmmm. This is nice. When Tomoichi-kun yelled just now his voice doesn’t really echo. The wall and floor also look strong against impact, it feels like we will be able to have good training here without being a bother to the neighbors. And above all else, it’s making the heart dance just from it being underground.」

「Right. Hajime-kun. About this underground space, can you make it under Yaegashi house too if we request it?」

Grandfather

「Otou-san!? Ojii-chan!? You two are still planning to make our house into even more outrageous residence!?!」

The current house head and assistant instructor of Yaegashi-style who was stepping repeatedly on the floor and striking the wall roughly were leaking out their admiration and envy and desire all over. Together they also ignored the grieving voice 「Stooopp it!」 of the daughter who wanted them to stop.

「.....If Shizuku is okay with it, I won’t be reluctant to be of help.」 (TN: A reminder, Hajime is using polite language all this time when he is talking with

his wives' family here. He is using casual language when talking with his own parents though)

When Hajime was worrying whether it was all right to increase his lover's hardship for more than this while looking at Shizuku, Shizuku shook her head left and right in a display of 「Firm rejection!」.

「Hajime-san, I wonder if you will also receive request for individual underground space? I want to have consultation about a space where only limited people can enter using soul magic though.....」

「Okaa-san!?!」

Shizuku had no ally. Kiriko's gaze with her index finger touching her cheek and her head tilted that strangely looked appropriate for her was locking straight at Hajime.

Even while Hajime's cheeks were cramping, for now he put away the problem for the future by saying 「If there is a chance I will be open for consultation」.

Except the father of a certain bug rabbit, Hajime was doing his utmost to be considerate to the speech and conduct of his wife's family, so he hesitated to reject them down bluntly.

「Hmmmm, no matter how many times I hear it, the discomfort from seeing Goshujin-sama using polite language art still amazing.」

「Isn't it~. A lot has happened since coming to earth, I have also seen Hajime-san like this several times though.」

Tio and Shia were looking at Hajime with a really complicated expression. For the two of them, the demon king Hajime who was crushing absurdity with even more absurdity was exactly what Hajime was to them, so they only felt chill that made their body shiver for some reason when seeing his action and speech that were considerate to other people.

Although, this was the manifestation of Hajime's feeling that was trying to treasure the entirety of his wife's family, so they didn't intend to stop him.

They advanced deeper into the underground space that was also Hajime's "underground workshop". Here and there, things like transmutation material,

or modern technology goods were placed, the golems that were in the process of creation were especially eye-catching.

Even Yue and others, and Sumire and Shuu who were used to seeing them to a certain degree had their gaze wandering around restlessly in curiosity. While that was going on, Hajime pulled several books from a bookshelves that were safekeeping various materials.

Instantly, *gogogo*- a heavy sound resounded and the bookshelves split to left and right. The wall behind it had a metallic two-leaf door that was also made solidly.

Seeing that, it seemed Shuu had a question suddenly welling up inside and he asked while tilting his head.

「Come to think of it Hajime. Why are you using that kind of door? If you have that crystal key something, you can connect the space from anywhere right?」

It was a question that was only natural, which caused everyone's gaze to gather on Hajime.

「Certainly that's true. But this door is also an artifact more or less, it's taking part in economizing the use of magic power. It erased the need to use magic power for designating or fixing the coordinate in place. Though it only has the effect of reducing the cost by twenty percent.」

「I see. If I remember right, the exit is fixed at the palace in the other world. Hahah, Tou-san completely thought that the reason you made this is only because this is cooler.」

Hajime slowly averted his gaze. Actually eighty percent of his reason was that. Also, he secretly gave the name "World Door" to it.

Even though there was already the door that was locked using soul magic to enter the workshop, by the point he set up bookshelves to hide this it was beyond obvious that this was merely his hobby working in full.

The gaze of Yue and co, the wife~s who guessed his reason was lukewarm. Myuu's praise of 「Papa! This bookshelves is cool nano!」 echoed inside his heart in bad meaning. Sumire's wide grin that seemed to say 「I understand you

know?」 was unbearable.

「A, anyway, I'll open the door so back away a bit.」

Hajime took out Crystal Key from his Treasure Warehouse, then put it inside the keyhole of the World Door that wasn't particularly necessary. Then, crimson light that was particularly meaningless surged through the whole surface of the World Door, then a pattern that seemed really meaningful emerged out also without any particular meaning.

When even more magic power that was taken out from magic crystals in stock was poured in, before long the World Door started to emit light that was overflowing with mystique and impact. Of course, the light was meaningless.

There, Yue and others also joined in pouring magic power in order to lighten Hajime's burden, each of their magic power light brilliantly illuminated the underground workshop.

Sumire and Shuu were watching in fascination toward that sublime sight without even making commotion with wide eyes. The other parents were even more so.

Before long, the magic power of Hajime and co that was real cheat was completely taken by Crystal Key and World Door. Finally space connection to the side of Tortus was formed.

Hajime rotated the Crystal Key. *Click*, heavy sound of a lock getting opened rang and the door opened. At the same time, *RINGOOOON!* a bell ringing sound reverberated. This was the sound that notified the "gate opening" at the palace's side.

Hajime's crimson, Yue's golden, Shia's bluish white, Tio's pure black, Kaori's silver, Shizuku's lapis lazuli, Aiko's cherry blossom, lights of seven colors overflowed. In front of the opened gate, Hajime who was illuminated by the backlighting looked back across his shoulder while smiling.

And then,

「Then, let's start the another world travel.」

Saying that he stepped inside the light at the lead.

Sumire and Shuu looked at each other's face and their face burst into a bright smile. They raised 「Yafuuuuuh」 a cheer while leaping into the light following their son. After them, Yue and others followed while smiling.

「Now, Otou-san! Okaa-san! Let's go!」

「O, ooh, yo-yo, you're right! But, is this thing really all right.....」

「As expected, it gives a bit of hesitation.」

Tomoichi got cold feet and Kaoruko felt nervous. Kaori grasped the hand of her parents who were like that and jumped into the gate while pulling the two.

「He, hey, Aiko. I know that it's fine, but the other side, that's, it cannot be seen from here?」

「.....It should be visible though.....haa. This is because of Hajime-kun's excessive dramatic act. Geez.....sometimes he is just like a child.」

Aiko was making expression of 'really can't be helped' while taking the hand of Akiko who was getting a second thought as expected. Then she led her into the light.

Seeing such Shirasaki family and Hatayama family, Shizuku fired up herself 「As expected, normally anyone will get second thought like that in this time. I have to get a hold of myself here!」.

「To think that I'll be able to have mysterious experience like this in this age. Kukuh, I'm feeling high spirited that is unbecoming for an old man.」

father/old man

「That's only reasonable, Oyaji . This is the world of sword and magic you know? It's natural to be thrilled if you are a man. The first one from Yaegashi family who enter will be me!」

「Muh, damn Koichi! Getting head start is unforgivable!」

「Geez, man will be like boys no matter how much time passed isn't it? But, fufu, my heart beat also cannot calm down so I cannot say anything about other people myself. Please wait, dear! Otou-sama!」  
father-in-law

Everyone of Yaegashi family leaped into the light eagerly. Leaving behind their daughter.

Inside the spacious underground workshop, Shizuku was left alone. Even though she was fired up because it was a travel to unknown world for her family.....her eyes were turning hollow.

But, seeing the light was gradually getting weaker, she suddenly returned to her senses and,

「Wa, waiiit! Don't leave me behiind!」

She raised her voice in panic while leaping into the gate.

—

—

—

The World Door that was set up inside Nagumo house's underground workshop.

That door that was connected to another world with lights of seven colors overflowing was passed through by people who were fearful, people who were used to it, and also people who were high spirited.

Like that, while *ringoon* sound that was like church's bell was ringing out, they whose eyes were narrowed because of the dazzling light finally managed to secure back their sight. There, what leaped into their sight was——

「.....This is another world.」

「Haha.....what grandeur. No more words are coming to me.」

It was a grandeur nature.

The World Door at Tortus side was on the summit of a tower that was connected to the place with sky corridor. Naturally, the sight was a 360 degree of great panorama.

The God Mountain was destroyed, so although they couldn't pay respect to the sight of the highest peak that once displayed majestic appearance, the view around became better instead.

The mountain range that was continuing on and on to the north without end was truly the very sigh of another world that was usually seen from fantasy

movie and the like. The great plain that was spreading to the south, the palace that was right nearby, and then the scenery of the capital that was filled with the sounds of reconstruction.

It was a magnificent sight that was the same like in earth. But, without any reason, from the air that the skin felt, the people who was currently watching in fascination at the scenery of Tortus from the summit of the tower felt it.

That this wasn't earth. That this was another world of sword and magic.

Sumire's dazed muttering was agreed by Shuu who was similarly having his eyes wide open.

Their voice finally caused the parents of each family to return to their senses.

The round tower was about a hundred meter above ground. Just in case there was fence set up, but normally anyone would refrain from approaching the edge.

But, Tomoichi and Kaoruko, also Shuuzou and Koichi, Kirino too, and then even Akiko followed behind Sumire and Shuu who were striving to be the first to reach the handrail and they ran their gaze until the sight below.

「.....Nn, nnh. Ee~, below, you can see the capital of Hairihi Kingdom that is in the middle of reconstruction.」

Suddenly Yue pointed one hand slowly toward the capital while saying such thing theatrically.

「Yue? What are you doing?」

Hajime asked as the representative of everyone.

「.....I am tour guide Yue. Entertaining the group is my mission!」

「Eh? Why tour guide?」

「.....Bus guide-san at the school trip was amazing in various things, she looked like she was having fun so I wanted to give it a try.」

「I, I see. Or rather, was that guide really that amazing?」

She was amazing. Her mental strength was.

Yue said that and then coughed.

「.....And then, the mountain of rubbles that is visible over there, is God Mountain that once boasted a height at the same level with Everest in earth. It was destroyed from the meteors that Hajime rained down by a lot.」

「「「「「.....」」」」」

For now, there were three convulsing expressions, and three expressions that were unknown what kind of thought they contained. And then,

「As expected from my son! You got flashy there huh, oi! So you destroyed another world's Everest!」

「Please tell me! How did it turn out like that!」

Even though their son was carrying out large scale destruction that changed the geography, for some reason the Nagumo married couple Sumire and Shuu were making ruckus with rocketing tension.

Kaori answered in the place of Hajime who was making really conflicted expression.

「See, we knew that the enemy would come out from the God Mountain, so in that case it's fine isn't it if they are blown away along with the God Mountain right after the battle started! That was the idea wasn't it? It was really amazing.」

「I guess. Countless meteors were raining down from the sky, and they impacted on God Mountain one after another.....a shockwave that was like great earthquake was spreading.....I thought, perhaps the end of the world is something like this.」

Shizuku talked with a faraway look. Tomoichi asked with convulsing expression still on his face.

「Ha, Hajime-kun. You, are you really able to make meteor rain down? I, I don't think it's possible but, you cannot do the same at earth too right?」

「.....」

Hajime-san slowly averted his gaze. As expected, no matter what he couldn't say that he was able to drop meteor even on earth. Furthermore it didn't just stop there, he had sent up a lot of satellite weapons to the orbit, where he



would be able to go *buppa* with sunlight convergence laser anytime. It was even harder to say that.

Although, it could be guessed from his behavior. Tomoichi's expression was grandly convulsing even more. One of the cause of his expression was also because Kaori was making a triumphant look for some reason. He wondered since when my angel had become a child who would be proud of mass destruction.....

There, as though reading the mood, Shuu tapped on Tomoichi's shoulder. When Tomoichi who was busily rethinking the cultivation of his beloved daughter's aesthetic sensibility turned a conflicted gaze at him, Shuu made a nice smile that seemed to say 「It's all right, leave it to me」 while nodding with a thumb up and,

「Listen well, Hajime! Absolutely don't use it at earth! You understand right!? It's a promise with Tou-san!」

He rebuked with an unusual strong tone like that. Hajime's eyes turned round seeing that, even so he smiled wryly and answered 「I got it. There is no way I will use something like this there」.

But,

「Are you serious? It's absolute you know? You really, really mustn't use it I'm telling you! A~bbsolutely y'know! Really——」

「Are you pretending!? Are you planning to make Hajime-kun use it!? I've been thinking of this since some time ago though! Hajime-kun's unprecedented conduct was inherited from you right!? Nagumo-Shuu!」

Tomoichi howled. The person in question himself was making a happy face like 「Tomo-kun's reaction is really nice huuuh」. It went without saying that pulsing vein snapped into place on Tomoichi's forehead.

It looked like the grappling of Tomoichi VS Shuu would start again. Beside them Kaoruko smiled wryly saying 「I'm sorry for my husband everytime」, while Sumire lowered her head saying 「My husband himself, it looks like he is really pleased with Tomoichi-san.....I'm sorry that he is an idiot」.

There, tour guide Yue-san went *buppa* with bombshell announcement that

would send the place falling into even deeper chaos.

「.....By the way, there was the headquarter of the sacred teaching church that was the largest religion in this Tortus, but they were the puppet of the evil god with the pope for starters, so all the people there were bombed to death. By Aiko.」

「Hauh!?!」

Aiko's chest was pierced by spear of words and she crumbled. Akiko was saying 「I heard the story but, when looking at the actual spot of the scene like this.....I don't have any words.....」 with her expression somewhat pale and her body slightly trembling.

「Oh my. Geez Aiko-sensei, even though you are cute like a small animal..... you are unexpectedly radical aren't you?」

「Hmmm. A teacher who won't shirk from bombing many to death for the sake of the students.....you are truly a model teacher.」

「I'm glad that you are the one in charge of Shizuku.」

「I'm sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry——police officer-san, I'm the culprit. Sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry」

Kirino hid her mouth elegantly with her hand while chuckling 「hohoho」, and Shuuzou with Koichi gave her words of praise.....for Aiko it became additional blow instead.

She was fiercely doubly stimulated with trauma and guilt that she even prostrating on the ground with hollow eyes while beginning to apologize profusely.

The parents who were in the verge of fighting because of what the child did, the apologizing to each other, pale expression, praise from playful sense of values.....

Shia who was watching that smiled wryly, while Tio spoke with a troubled face.

「I have anticipated this but, as I thought, the travel in Tortus has become chaos.」

「The number of people shouldst be reduced a bit mayhaps.」

On the other hand,

「Papaa~. We still aren't going down nano~」

「My my, geez Myuu.....to not only acting completely unperturbed, but instead even feel bored in this situation」

Myuu was already urging to embark on the lift. As though to say that the chaos situation before her eyes 'ain't my business at all'. Remia's expression was turning conflicted seeing her daughter's nerve that was getting bolder day by day.

Seeing everything including Myuu just now, Hajime looked up to the sunny sky and,

「This is bad. I want to go home already.」

He muttered such thing earnestly.

—

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

For those who hoped for Abyss Lord arc, I'm sorry (sweat)

I'm unable to elaborate any plot yet!

And so, it will be my happiness if you all can go along with the idle chapter until I get idea.

By the way, I also still haven't thought concrete detail of Shia's long arc.

Even the decision of which one to write is still pending. In any case, I'm thinking that writing some kind of long arc from the first Saturday of next year might be a good timing to start perhaps.

This year, there are two weeks remaining but, please treat me well!

By the way, it feels like Tortus travel journal will become a lot, so if there are a

lot of people who say that they want to read it, I'm thinking of putting it in between bit by bit like Yue's diary or student life series.

# Arifureta Chapter 294

## Arifureta After III Although Formerly, But I'm a Princess You Know?

—

Liliana moved from Tortus to earth, and around the time she became idol princess Lily through a lot of oo Princess chapter.

Hajime was walking through the street at night with one hand holding a bag filled with supply.

He was heading toward the condominium that Sumire was renting to use for her work.

Even after becoming a top idol, Lily didn't throw away her position as "mangaka princess". When she had time she would draw her own manga at Sumire's work place, and she was also working as Sumire's assistant even now. Tonight too she was doing that.

By the way, Sumire's work place was rented by thinking about the distance to the publishing company rather than to her own home, so originally using "gate" to teleport was the quickest way.

Regardless of that, Hajime was walking the street at night like this while feeling the coldness in the air. The reason was simply because he was feeling like it.

A certain friend with thin shadow said it to him, that the Artifacts were too convenient and all-purpose. If one didn't control themselves and be prudent to a certain degree in using it, it felt like they would enter the territory of laziness.

Hearing that Hajime too could nod 「Certainly」 in agreement.

And so, as long as it wasn't really necessary, he would walk with his own feet like this, or even if he used it, he would manage it so it would still be in the realm of earth's common sense.

「It has become really cold huh.....」

It wasn't to the degree that his breath would turn white yet, but it soon would be a period where the autumn colors also ended. Ordinarily it was a period that would make anyone want to put on a warm jacket.

Hajime's physique was tough so it wasn't necessary, but without exception Hajime was also putting on a long cardigan with slightly thicker fabric.

Hajime's appearance today was black jeans and white shirt with loose collar. In addition he was wearing a dark grey long cardigan. His attire itself was simple, but from outsider perspective it looked really good on him. The quality of the clothes that were obviously not cheap even from a glance also somehow raised Hajime's manliness.

In fact, a woman who seemed to be just coming home from work that he passed by just now was throwing several glances at him when they were passing each other, so it seemed that the attire wasn't bad to be able to make a woman to forget their wariness to opposite sex while walking on street at night.

To tell the truth, Hajime's rescent dress code was decided by Remia most of the time.

She and Tio was bearing the responsibility for the design and management of "the shop of jewelry that had just a bit of miraculous blessing" made by Hajime right from the start, but right now they were managing the business with an objective of venturing to apparel product.

Whether it was Remia's western-style design, or Tio's design idea that was a mix of eastern and western style, they became quite the topic so the business was completely on track. In that situation, Remia brought home the clothes and accessories with design from their own company and made Hajime wore it.

Remia looked like she was having fun, so Hajime generally dressed like she was telling him to.

Returning to the main topic.

Hajime was secretly enjoying the night air and the silence while he soon would arrive at the condominium. It was then Hajime suddenly stopped. And then, his eyes narrowed slowly.

At that time there was a female high school student who seemed to be coming back from school club activity was glancing at Hajime while passing him by, so she twitched thinking like 「No way-, my glance is noticed!」. She quickened her pace while shaking.

Of course, just now Hajime wasn't exposing his displeasure because he couldn't bear the glance of a student.

「.....Well, doesn't matter.」

Hajime's gaze fell at the supply his hand was holding while slightly hesitating, but then he shrugged and resumed walking.

The condominium Sumire was renting wasn't a high-rise condominium or a high class building, but its security was solid. It also had a manager that was permanently present there which Hajime was acquainted with. Hajime greeted the manager who was a former police officer and entered inside.

He used elevator until the tenth floor. Even there for some reason Hajime's gaze was getting strained while he fished inside his pocket and he did something with a sigh feeling that it was troublesome.

He pulled himself together and rang the interphone. When he showed his face through the camera, an excited voice 「Ye~s! I'll open it now!」 could be heard.

「Welcome! Hajime-san!」

From the door that was opened within just a few seconds, an idol who recently often appeared on TV——so to speak it was Liliana, she leaped out. Her wide smile that was like blooming flower was obviously different from the smile that was seen at TV.

「Yo, I came bringing supply as well as helper.」

Hajime returned back a smile while showing the bag filled with supply. The

warm bag was filled inside with warm food like toasted sandwich and so on. The toasted sandwich was handmade by Shia, it was made from ingredients with reduced sugar content, even the bread. A late-night snack that would make woman happy.

「Fufuh, thank you very much. Now, please enter. Although it still cannot be said to be winter, but the air is really cold already.」

「You're right. It feels like a lot of the time an idol will wear thin clothes, so rather than me you should watch out for your health Lily.」

「I'm fine. There are time that it might become fatal for the country if I collapse and the work piled up, so I've been really good at managing my health since my time as princess.」

「.....Rather than working hard even if you collapse, working hard so you don't collapse is still better huh.....」

How Lily was more concerned to prevent hindrance toward her work rather than her health itself, in the end at her root Lily was a workaholic princess.

Liliana took the supply bag from Hajime's hand, then she also took off his long cardigan.

The inside of the room was warm, wearing the cardigan would be a hindrance in working so it was surely better to wear only shirt but.....

From outside perspective, she also looked like a young wife being gallantly helpful toward her husband who was coming home.

In fact, everyone would surely think that.

The assistants who were peeping from the inside door that was left open were having really wide grin on their face. How they were all peeking in vertical line like a totem pole was really as expected from Sumire's assistants.

Hajime's face grimaced at the bad omen that felt like he would be teased and he opened his mouth.

「Machi-neesan and everyone, what are you grinning at?」

「We are shoujo mangaka's assistant you know? There is no way we won't grin after seeing that kind of scene!」



「A real harem man, just seeing it still make my heart beat fast. What's more it's a boy I'm acquainted with.」

「Ha-kun, you aren't going to give going home kiss at Lily-chan!?!」

From above, the most veteran assistant Hagiwara Machiko (45 years old), the assistant who even though she was planning a shoujo manga but for some reason it became fighting manga at the middle and until now she still hadn't gotten lucky with serialization Wakai Tsukasa (24 years old ♀), half-Japanese who had American mother got attracted by Japanese manga and left the university aiming to become mangaka Rurikawa Anna (25 years old).

Other than them, there was also an assistant who was acknowledged by herself and others as homo comic lover, and each time she met Hajime her gaze would stickily crawled all over Hajime, Aoyama Narumi (42 years old), and the assistant who was managing maid café as side job (?) and would do her assistant work wearing maid uniform, Mochizuki Mae (29 years old), and so on.

Sumire of South

Also, Sumire's pen name was "Nano Sumire", but the regular members of Sumire Studio at present were the five names above.

Everyone of them was his mother's coworker, and Hajime was acquainted with them since before he was summoned to another world, so even after coming back he treated them politely. Especially the longest-serving member "Machiko Machi-neesan" and "Narumi Naru-san", Hajime still couldn't raise his head against them.

Both of them also close in age with Sumire, they were affectionate to Hajime as though he was their real child (teasing included), so when he showed his face to them right after coming back, they were even embracing Hajime tightly while wailing loudly.

Hajime was smiling wryly at them who were jeering at his relation with Lily like usual. Then Sumire came out from inside. Both her hands were already holding Shia's specially made toasted sandwich.

「Hajime, you are late. Just teleport here with puff next time.」

「? Are you in that much of a pinch? I thought that even without Naru-san and Moe-san here, the pace is still enough to make it in time though.....」

「About that you see~. Suddenly a non-serialized collaboration project with Lily-chan's work came up. I went with the mood and said okay so it's really a big pinch.」

「Don't say ok because of mood.....」

「It can't be helped isn't it? I never thought that Saya-chan in Naru's place will get hospitalized because of pneumonia.」

「Pneumonia? Is she fine? If not I'll do something.」

「She only went to hospital just in case, so it seems she is fine. See, Naru said, I don't know any daughter who cannot read the atmosphere and get hospitalized in this important time! and tried to come here anyway. As expected, that's too much so I stopped her though.」

「Haha.....as expected from Naru-san.」

By the way, "Saya-chan" was Narumi's daughter who turned fourteen years old this year. When the mother was a homo comic lover, the daughter was also the same. Hajime was also acquainted with her. Similar with her mother, her gaze would also be really sticky when looking at Hajime.

「What about Moe-san?」

「As for Moe, right now.....she is in police station.」

「What the hell!?!」

Hajime made a fierce tsukkomi. When he asked, it appeared that a maid of the maid café she was managing was sexually harassed by a nasty customer and the maid snapped and ended up smashing the customer's crotch.

An ambulance and police got involved, and although the circumstance was as it was, an injury resulted from the incident so the maid in question was interrogated in the police station while still in her maid uniform. Moe-san seemed to get angry 「What are they thinking doing that with my worker!」 and headed to the police station. While still wearing maid uniform.

「I, is that so. Various things happened one after another huh. Well, I understand the situation. Lily, are you okay?」

「Yes. My part is finished already, so I'm helping Sumire-okaasama. If Hajime-

san help out then we will make it in time for tomorrow morning!」

「.....So the deadline is at morning.」

‘It’s seriously a disaster at the eleventh hour here’, Hajime thought with a bitter smile while sitting on a desk. And then, after hearing the work content he started working with a practiced movement.

The man who slaughtered a god in another world and was called as his majesty the demon king or the incarnation of unreasonableness by friends and acquaintances was doing assistant work for shoujo manga with very veteran aura.....

Inside her heart, Liliana was thinking ‘If the people of Tortus know about this, their soul will literally come out from their body won’t it’ while she also started working.

For a while, a quite time was passing by. The only audible sounds were the sounds of Hajime and Liliaana working, and the sounds of Sumire and the assistants devouring Shia’s special toasted sandwich.

Before long, Hajime’s hand stopped moving for just a moment for some reason. But he immediately resumed his work while asking Liliana nonchalantly.

「Come to think of it Lily. Recently, is there anything strange or anything you are concerned with?」

「Something I’m concerned with, is it?」

While Sumire and co were bringing sandwich into their mouth with gusto at the side, the two were conversing with each other without taking off their gaze from their respective desk and also without stopping their hands.

A brief moment of silence ensued from Liliana searching her memory before she answered.

「No, there is nothing like that though.....why did you ask?」

「Hm~. Look, since you started that help network? It has been quite some time right? It seems it has been spreading quite far and wide already even at the foreign country isn’t it?」

「.....Yes, indeed. It’s already expanding until a level where I cannot pull back

anymore.」

Liliana made a completely dry smile. Light was vanishing from her eyes.

「If I remember right, a foundation is in the process of forming right?」

「It seems like it. For some reason, they asked for approval only after the fact. The members of my fanclub want to establish it they said..... The atmosphere feel like holy light church thing, that's why I intend to push so it become "volunteer" organization but.....」

‘How far I will go I wonder.....’, she said with an expression like a person adrift on the sea. But, her working speed didn't drop in the slightest.

「Lily-chan's "odd jobs" is going well isn't it~」

「At this rate you are going to end up as the founder of new religion.」

「Eh? Don't you know Sumire-sensei? Lily-chan is already worshipped by a minority as Saint-sama! Founder-sama! and so on you know?」

Sumire and others snapped 「Seriously!?」 at Tsukasa-san's information. They were also nibbling at the remaining toasted sandwich while doing that. Liliana's eyes was getting increasingly dead. Of course, her working speed didn't drop.

Hajime smiled wryly while continuing to speak.

「It seems, that the organization's influence is getting too large and crossed over the country border.」

「That's.....could it be, it is causing movement to start from not a good place?」

As expected Liliana who had quick wit couldn't help but devote her attention to this information. She stopped her working hand and lifted her face, her eyes turning round.

Sure enough Sumire and co also couldn't turn a blind eye to this. They forcefully washed down the toasted sandwich with hot coffee and focused on Hajime.

「I don't know if it comes from good place or not. I also cannot say whether there is unconditionally any movement somewhere. After all, the extent your influence is reaching too wide. It's even spanning the whole world. The method

of taking the first move to crush them is inefficient.」

「Indeed. Besides.....as I've said just now, I cannot pull back anymore.....」

「If Lily seriously wants it then it's possible somehow though.」

It was the tide of the era that was built by piling up good will on top of good will with Liliana as the starting point. If Liliana personally wished to sever that flow, Hajime wouldn't think twice.

Hajime asked her 「You don't wish it right?」 with his gaze and wry smile. Hearing how he understood about her and how he would do anything for her caused Liliana's cheeks to blush while she nodded once.

‘Kyaaaah, showing off like that! Yoo, Hajime-kun you the man! Geez Hajime-kun! This lady killer!’ Sumire and co made a commotion. Hajime's eyes were twitching while he ignored them.

Liliana's blushing was increasingly deepening while she pulled herself back together and asked.

「Cough-. And, Hajime-san is telling me to be careful because soon there will be some kind of action happening around me aren't you?」

「No. Have you noticed that we are already surrounded? That's what I mean.」

Silence fell on the room. It was a painful silence. Anna-san who was drinking the remaining coffee at that timing spewed it out ‘Bufuuuh’ from her mouth.

「While I was going up, I roughly confirmed the spying device and the like in the whole place, and I took measure beforehand so that no sound can be picked up from here even if they used sound gathering device, but quite a number of people is placed around this mansion right now.」

Silence as expected. Whether Liliana or Sumire and co, they stiffened without being able to move.

But, a beat later, 「LIEEEEEEEEEES」 screams were raised.

「Si, si si si, since when!?!」

「Wait Hajime! Why are you leaving this alone!? Someone like Okaa-san is inconsequential for you is that it!?!」

Bunches of unknown people from who know where were monitoring the condominium..... Liliana was shaken because she didn't notice, while Sumire and co were shaken because of the uneasy situation approaching them.

「I'm not leaving them alone, they came here only today. I guess they built their surveillance base only a few hours ago. They weren't there when I came here two days ago, While I was working just now I was checking the surrounding image of these two days through my magic eye stone, and the suspicious people and vehicles were deploying only a few hours ago here.」

The surrounding image Hajime mentioned was the function from the crow type surveillance artifact——"Ornis" that he stationed as surveillance network in an important place.

The sight that was reflected in Ornis's eye was also projected into Hajime's magic eye stone. In addition, it also had the function to save the image, so the past image could also be replayed in the magic eye stone using remote control.

When Hajime reached nearby the condominium, he sensed the presence of countless people at the outdoor around the building despite the time that was late at night already. He then checked the past image until now.

The result, he found out unfamiliar foreigners coming and going from the wagon that was parking on the parking lot of the condominium and the large vehicles at the parking lot slight distance away. They were taking suspicious action by spending most of their time inside the vehicles.

In addition, he also noticed several foreigners in the nearby apartment and condominium coming and going carrying in equipment.

He sent Ornis flying and made them perched on the veranda on those rooms to look in. There were a lot of devices like telescope, camera, sound collection device, and so on being pointed toward this room from those rooms.

The assistants who listened to those explanations were looking at each other's face with similarly scared expression. Sumire was looking at Liliana worriedly while asking Hajime.

「What is their objective? Does it look like they'll attack?」

「Who knows. Just like I said before, most likely their objective is the founder

Lily-sama who is the origin of the network, but whether it's only a surveillance, or they are gauging the timing to come hammering in the nail that is sticking out.....in any case thing like foreign country's secret service must be guys like these.」

「Please stop saying founder Lily!」

Both parent and son ignored Liliana who was making tsukkomi faithfully. Sumire tilted her head.

「.....This is unlike you Hajime. If you already know that far, usually you are going to crush them first before coming here.」

「That's because I have the important mission of delivering Shia's toasted sandwich while it's still warm.」

Hajime said that with a crisp expression. Sumire wordlessly gave a thumb up. The son also returned a thumb up.

The assistants gave tsukkomi 「No no the priority is strange there. It's delicious though! It's delicious though!」 to them.

「Also, I'm thinking to also take the opportunity to confirm how those guys will move, what is their action guideline.」

「Action guideline, is it? What do you mean, Hajime-san?」

「I said it just now right? Including the sound gathering device, I neutralized their surveillance device. It's not like I broke their equipment, I simply put up a barrier covering this whole room.....」

Now then, when all their surveillance method suddenly became disturbed, without a doubt they would think that their presence had been discovered and a measure was taken against them. After that, what kind of action would they take after taking that into account.

They would investigate the cause of their surveillance devices' disturbance, contacted their comrades, or perhaps they would ask for instruction to their superior who might be in their home country or different place. If those were what they did, then they should be taking action soon.

Would they retreat, or else.....

「.....I see. So that's what they choose. Has they forgot the "returnee uproar", or else, are they seeing value from Lily that they cannot just ignore even with that factored in?」

「Hajime-san? Don't tell me.....」

「-, Hajime? They're coming?」

Liliana and Sumire's expression stiffened. The assistants who got quick understanding also shivered a bit knowing that foreign people of unknown origin were coming.

But, amidst that grave looking atmosphere,

「? Why are you all looking that grave when I'm here?」

Hajime alone was making a dubious face.

This talk was too sudden, so even Liliana and Sumire unconsciously thought of this event as a grave matter, but now that he said it that was right. Tension immediately left their shoulders.

Although, the assistants were not used to this kind of extraordinary day, and they only knew about Hajime's ability and achievement from verbal story so they didn't feel that it was really real. And so, they were still scared.

"?" mark was floating above Hajime's head, he was pondering just what made them felt that worried for a beat.

「Ah, I see. You all are worried about the deadline.」

Hajime's fist lightly hit his palm *pon* in understanding. The assistants appealed 「Wrong! That isn't it!」 to him, but Hajime raised one hand to say that they needed not to speak further.

「Good grief, putting aside Machi-neesan and others, Kaa-san and Lily are really a worrywart. It won't take that long to take care of these guys. Ah, perhaps it's that. It will take a bit of time to interrogate them and other trivial things I guess..... I see, I'm a bit thoughtless here. Even though the deadline is fast approaching. As expected from Kaa-san and Lily. No matter what is the situation, finishing the work is number one. That's pro for you.」

「Ah, yes, that's right.」



「Ah, yep, right in one.」

Hajime came to an understanding by himself. Liliana and Sumire turned a complicated expression together to such Hajime. It wasn't like they were worrying about deadline while foreign force was approaching though.....they thought.

Hajime glanced at the two's gaze and hesitated a bit.

And then, he suddenly called out.

「Heliotrope.」

「Yes, right here.」

Out of nowhere, a maid-san appeared from behind Hajime!

Everyone screamed 「HIIIIH」 and jumped!

「He, Hellina!? You, since when you are there!? No, before that why are you here!? You should be aiding Randell and Okaasama in the palace right!?!」

The “exclusive maid” who was Liliana's confidant and would always stay at her side——Hellina. She had dark brown long hair, almond eyes, tall body for a female and moderately sized breasts.

Right now she was wearing a Victorian style maid outfit. It was unclear from whose preference it was. Her characteristic trait was her scarf that was attached with a brooch of crimson jewel. Her airily spreading skirt was completely hiding her legs, but the outfit from her waist that was tightly constricted with apron and above was artistically hugging tightly on her body.

It was emphasizing her charm even with her graceful atmosphere.

Plainly speaking, she was an extremely beautiful woman.

That Hellina was,

「Liliana-sama. I am called Heliotrope.」

「Eh? That's, certainly Hajime-san said that just now but, Hellina is Hellina——」

「I am called Heliotrope.」

「Bu, but——」

「I am called Heliotrope.」

「.....Yes.」

Princess Liliana folded against the smiling arm twisting. She also didn't receive a single answer for her question. Even though the other party was her trusted subordinate. Even though she was the princess.....

Seeing Liliana's eyes gradually turning teary, for some reason Heliotrope-san smiled sweetly before she faced toward Hajime and said 「My apologize. Your order?」.

Hajime concisely ordered, as though it was only natural for him to do that.

「Suppress them. Extract information from them. I'll leave the rest to you.」

「Yes, my lord.」 (TN: It's said in English at the raw.)

「You said my lord just now! Hellina, you are calling Hajime-san as your master! Your master is me right!?」

Heliotrope-san smiled sweetly and turned her gaze outside the window. Everyone was involuntarily attracted by that gesture and they looked over there. There was particularly nothing there. They returned their gaze. Heliotrope-san was gone.

「Eh!? Hellina!? Where are you!?」

「Calm down Lily. She is your head maid right? You cannot lose your calm like that.」

「Hajime-san is saying that when you look more like her master than me!? Uu, since some time ago it felt somehow that she is prioritizing Hajime-san's instruction rather than mine but, to think it will be this much..... I didn't even know that she is normally here. Even though I'm a princess.....」

「That's because you are “former” princess, so it must be that, she is being considerate of you. Surely.」

Liliana thought. No matter how she looked at it, it felt like something of “I found the true master that I have to serve”. The two of them had known each

other since they were a child so there was no doubt about it. Yes, even though she was always staying at her side since their childhood and Liliana put her trust on Hellina as though they were family, when she realized she had become the demon king's maid!

「Uu, hics, my Hellina got NTR-ed by the demon king.....」

「That sounds bad in other's ear. That woman is the leader of the maid group that I trained for guarding Lily you know? Even if you took holiday from being a princess, she is still your Heliotrope whether now or in the past.」

「.....That story, tell me more. It's the first time I heard about that maid group to guard me though? And the, even though I am calling her Hellina many times, you are ignoring me really naturally and called her Heliotrope. From that I can catch a glimpse how intimate your relation with Hellina is though?」

「.....Putting aside the intimacy of the relationship.....eh? I didn't tell you, about the Fleur Knights?」

「I head noo~~~~thing at all! What is that! Knights? Knight order? Even though they are maid!? Furthermore Hellina is the leader!? She is purely a maid with nonexistent combat skill you know!?」

「She worked really hard.」

「I don't get it!」

Liliana held her head on her wits' end and turned small.

Fleur

Knights

To think, that a combat maid group was formed while she was ignorant of it, furthermore the girls went through the hellish boot camp at Hauria clan's place, and they were all raised into valorous warrior so that even a single one could take on a battalion of regular knight order. She had never even dreamed of such thing.

Come to think of it, when she was at the kingdom, there was time when she gave them free time for a few months but, so it was that time! After this late she finally remembered. Because she knew Hellina from the past, she still couldn't form the image of her as combat maid.

Sumire and the assistants threw away their sense of danger until just now to

the wind, and their tension was rising up without end at the entrance of a genuine combat maid. While they were causing commotion, Hajime normally resumed his work.

While Sumire and co were also getting heated up, it seemed they also grasped that it would be fine to leave it to the combat maid, so they each resumed their work.

Liliana too returned to her work while being lost 「I have a lot I want to ask but, where should I start.....」

Like that, Hajime answered the questions from Sumire and co without stopping his hand from working. Then by the time Liliana too finally recovered her calm, she asked Hajime looking a bit worried, deciding that she should at least ask this one for now.

「Say, Hajime-san. This is Hajime-san we are talking about so I believe there won't be any problem but.....is Hellina really——」

‘Is she really okay?’ Just before Liliana could complete that question,

「Are you calling, Liliana-sama?」

「Hyowa!?!」

The sudden whisper into her ear caused Liliana to jump and scream while looking flustered which was inappropriate for a former princess.

When she looked back in panic, without her noticing Heliotrope was standing there with a smile, looking completely the same appearance like before.

「He, Helli——」

「It's Heliotrope.」

She wouldn't back down on that. She corrected with a pressuring smile.

「Helli, trope! Don't surprise me suddenly like that! Are you all right!?!」

「I believe it's Liliana-sama who is not all right though.....」

‘Because, you never fought or anything before, and yet.....’ Thinking that, Liliana approached Heliotrope and patted all over her body to check for injury. Seeing such Liliana, Heliotrope displayed a delighted and warm expression.

But, when Hajime said 「That's fast」 toward her, she tore off Liliana-sama from herself and tossed her like a waste paper. Then with both her hands propped in front of her apron, she respectfully lowered her head with beautiful motion that would fascinate anyone watching.

「Err, Helli, otrope? You see, although formerly, but I'm a princess you know?」

「Your majesty. Reporting. All the enemies are removed. They are being confined altogether inside a rented room.」

「The information?」

「I will do so immediately after this. But before that, I returned because I wish to report something first.」

Below Liliana was crumbling on the floor in dejection, but the two didn't look at her.

「Is there any problem?」

Hajime tilted his head and asked, to which Heliotrope shook her head,

「No. There is a guest for your majesty.」

Most likely, it was a guest who seemed to have business with the foreign force originally. Hearing that report, Hajime seemed to see through something and he stared at empty air for a bit.....

「I see. Let them pass.」

「By your will.」

Heliotrope-san respectfully lowered her head.

Seeing Hajime's practiced manner in acting as a master, the assistants were making commotion like 「Thi, this is demon king Ha-kun」「Sheesh Hajime-chan, what a natural manner as master.....」. Among that commotion, Liliana who was still collapsing emotionally got dejected once more while,

「.....Hics, as I thought, Hajime-san is more like her master than meee」

Muttering that.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Thank you very much for the many review regarding Tortus Travel Diary.

I'm thinking of writing it bit by bit.

Now then, the chapter this time, Heliotrope? Who is that? For those who thought that, I believe if you browse「Character Introduction Part II」 and「Stubborn Princess Lily」, you will go「Aa, she was there huh, someone like this」.

I'm sorry for those who are expecting Tortus Travel Diary ②.

I wanted to write about combat maid group no matter what. I want to write the next update with my interest in full throttle too. Please forgive me.

Now then, in preparation for Christmas, I will inform once more.

The publication of volume 7 and Zero volume 1 will be at 25th and 28th.

There are also places where volume 7 has been lined up in storefront.

If you are aiming for special content, early inquiry might be necessary. Please pay attention.

The detailed information (like the special SS and so on) will be uploaded in my activity report.

If you want please go check it.

Best regards.

# Arifureta Chapter 295

## Arifureta After III Christmas Special After Ski Trip

—

AN: There is an update at 23 December. For those who haven't read it, please start from the previous chapter.

—

---

There was the figure of two people trembling halfway up the advanced course of a skiing spot.

「A, Aiko-sa~~n! Are you all riiight~」

「M, my my my my, my groin feel like it will loosen up buuut, I'm not.....fii~ne! Is Liliana-san~ all riiight~~!?!」

「M, my my my my, my legs feels like they will cramp buuut, I'm not.....fii~ne!」

They spread out their skis until the very limit and they were slipping rather than sliding. The two who were like this were Aiko and Liliana.

They wanted to put the brake and stop, but they couldn't stop, or perhaps they actually intended to ski after a fashion. It was unclear what they wanted to do.

In any case, the two who were spreading out their skis too much with legs that wouldn't stop shaking were amateur skier no matter how anyone looked at them. They shouldn't be in this advanced course.

They became able to slide just for a bit. After that they got cocky and came to the advanced course. There they got taken aback 「What's this, this is practically a cliff」, however their pride got in the way 「We already climbed all the way here, going down with the lift will be embarrassing.....」 and they skied down. Now they were regretting it like this.

Now then, just as could be seen from the situation, today Nagumo family came here for a ski trip.

Having said that, Sumire and Shuu were absent. By this time the two of them must be going to a hot spring date just the two of them husband and wife without any outsider present. Shia won a pair ticket from the shopping district's lottery roll, and she presented it to the two filled with her gratitude for everyday.

To that, Sumire said that if that the case they should have everyone came together by paying it from their own pocket, but Shuu said 「She is giving us a pair ticket, it should be fine going with just the two of us at least once a year right?」, so Sumire agreed even reluctantly.

And then, perhaps to hide her embarrassment or something, she suggested (?) so that while they were enjoying the hot spring trip, it would be painful if their son's family just did nothing at home, so Hajime should give service to his family!, and like that it became this ski trip.

Back to the topic.

Aiko and Liliana finally became teary eyed, it was then,

「YAFFUUUUUUUUUUUU!!」

「SOMETHING LIKE THIS ART NOT TOO BAAADD!」

‘Brake? What is that, is that tasty?’ Shia and Tio were passing through with terrific momentum as though to say that.

Their figure manipulating the snowboard magnificently was the very definition of skill. Both of them were engraving the figure of 8 on the snow surface with beautiful symmetry. Even though they were only learning how to ski today, their figure was like a pro snowboarder.



「.....」

「.....」

Aiko and Liliana were staring at the back of Shia and Tio that had become small in the blink of eye while trembling all over.

「.....nn. Kaori, sloo~~w」

「The grudge of getting dropped from the lift just now! I HAVEN'T FORGOTTEN ITTTTTTTTT-!」

「Wait Kaori! That's ski! It's not a board! It's thin so you understand right!? I'm telling you to wait!」

*SHA! SHA! SHA!* Yue, Kaori, and Shizuku were passing through in that order. Yue-sama kept facing backward, while Kaori was riding on a single ski for some reason, and Shizuku was holding one ski and Kaori's snowboard. They were sliding with high speed as expected.

「.....」

「.....」

The two had dropped, no, slid down for about three meters from before. *Slid slid, slid slid*. Aiko and Liliana's legs that were spread out too much were already passing through shaking and into trembling now.

Someone, please help.....

The two were in the state where it felt like such voice of heart was audible.

The hero of the girls who would surely appear at this kind of time.....

Certainly appeared this time too.

「Oo~i, both of you. Are you two going through withdrawal symptoms there?」

It was his voice! They were saved! They wanted to tsukkomi so much at the content of his words, but right now they were in the middle of danger of having their legs almost forcefully spread out. They couldn't be concerned with trivial matter! Thinking that, Aiko and Liliana made a joyful look and turned their gaze to the direction of the voice,

「Faster! Even faster! Myuu is becoming wind nano!」

「My, Myuu! Slo, slow down a bit.....」

「It's fine Remia. I'm holding you firmly.」

Myuu, Remia, and Hajime were riding on a sleigh in that order harmoniously while passing through with terrific speed, as expected.

Myuu looked like she was having so much fun. Remia who was sitting between Myuu and Hajime was a bit scared with the speed, and yet her cheeks were blushing slightly because she was getting hugged from the back by Hajime.

It was a really warm family scene.

They instantly passed through though.

The two were completely left behind though.

「I can't anymore.....」

「A, Aiko-saa~~~~nn」

Screams were reverberating from halfway up the advance course.

After that, at an inconspicuous place in the corner of the course, the figure of Liliana applying healing magic to the groin of Aiko who was fainting from fear was seen but.....

From the view point of outsider, they only saw a scene of a young girl gently touching the groin of another girl behind cover, after the two somehow got down to the foot of the mountain, they were exposed to inquisitive gazes from the people around.

—

—

—

「Nn? It feels like I heard a scream just now.」

Hajime felt like he heard a scream from behind and he spontaneously looked back.

「Dear? Is there something?」

Remia asked across her shoulder with an upward gaze. Today's Remia was

without her usual atmosphere of smiling holy mother. Her being in the environment of snowy mountain for the first time, her inability to ski at all, and the speed that Myuu exerted as though she was a speed demon were making her twitching uneasily from beginning to end.

Hajime said 「No, nothing」 and smiled wryly while shaking his head. And then, he embraced her once more with even more strength. Tension left Remia's body slightly.

「Hei hei hee~~i! Nano!」

「Myuu, it's fine to be high spirited but Remia is scared you know?」

Hajime tentatively warned her, but Myuu didn't notice because she was getting absorbed in beating the snowboard that was sliding side by side with them.

A sleigh that was being boarded by three parents and child were rushing down in reckless speed at the advance course.....

It wasn't unreasonable for the snowboarders who were overtaken to watch that with wide open eyes. Several people were too shocked that they lost their balance and 「AA~~~~~!!」 tumbled down.

While that was going on the foot of the mountain came into view. A lot of people were there, so it would be dangerous if they didn't decrease their speed any time now.

Thinking that, Hajime opened his mouth to tell Myuu to brake. Myuu said that she wanted to steer the sleigh from start to end bringing papa and mama, so he was thinking to leave the stopping to Myuu too.

But, before he could speak,

「Papa! Over there something that looks really fun is happening over there nano!」

「Hm? Aah, half-pipe huh.」

Looking there, there was a half-pipe that could be reached directly from the advanced course. The snowboarders were displaying each of their technique there.

The sight of snowboarders executing technique midair tightly grasped Myuu's inquisitiveness and sense of adventure. Her eyes were sparkling bright, the hands that were grasping the rein clenched tightly.

「Papa! Mama! We will do that too nano!」

「Can you? I also prepared a board for Myuu but——」

「Watch Myuu's technique! Nano!」

Myuu slanted her weight drastically and pulled the rein. The sleigh obeyed the driver's control and changed course instantly! The destination it headed to was of course, the half-pipe!]

「Ah, hey, Myuu! Who will go there using sleigh! Stop it for now!」

「If you can stop this then damn try to stop it! Nano!」

「This brat! She is receiving Shia's bad influence!?!」

The face of the smiling holy mother Remia-san was twitching senselessly. She was desperately hugging Myuu on her chest really tightly to stop her, but Myuu whose tension was rising too much and entered a state of high didn't stop!

Hajime-papa put his foot outside to stop the sleigh forcefully.

There was one thing to remember here. Actually this sleigh was an artifact Hajime created for Myuu, but Hajime had the nature of being unable to feel satisfied unless he put romance into a vehicle.

For example, thing like weapon, or transformation.....

This time, the romance that was installed into the sleigh for Myuu's exclusive use was.....propulsion device.

It has propulsive power so it can slide even in level surface! Great isn't it, Myuu!

「BOOOOST~~~~~」

「Hoi! Myuu! Stop play——」

「ON NANO!」

*BOOM* The sleigh instantly accelerated! Hajime-papa's feet were only digging

groove into the snow and didn't function as brake!

And then, before he could forcefully stop the sleigh with another method——

The sleigh charged into the half-pipe!

「YAFUUUUUU NANOO!」

「FUAAAAAAAAAAAAAH」

The sleigh instantly rushed up the curving part, and then.....the Nagumo family flew to the sky.

On the ground, the audiences and snowboarders were dumbfounded and astonished at the sight of a family of tree dancing in the sky.

Myuu's joyful voice, and Remia's scream that was rare to hear reverberated.

The sleigh hovered for a moment in the air. The centrifugal force pushing up the sleigh vanished, then the three were thrown out weightlessly from the sleigh.

Remia-mama's soft knitted hat flew. The person herself almost fainted with the white of her eyes showing! The audiences returned to their senses, and they screamed from imagining the end of the family that flew for five meter from the lip part of the half-pipe!

「Haa.....there will be punishment later.」

Hajime somersaulted midair. Each of his hand caught Myuu and Remia and he held them in a posture of them sitting on his arms. Both of them reflexively grabbed on Hajime's neck.

Hajime used the centrifugal force from his somersault and caught the sleigh with his foot using the principle of midair spinning kick. He adjusted the way the sleigh was facing and then boarded on it while catching Remia's knitted hat with his mouth.

Next was free falling. The moment he landed on the curved part, he made use of his knee to completely killed the impact. Without letting go of the two he slid, and when he flew out at the opposite side he kicked away the sleigh at the same time, and then landed on the ground with *splat*.

The noisy surrounding of the half-pipe fell dead silent.

But, that too was only for a few moment.

The next moment a loud cheer rose. 「What's that just now!？」 or 「No way, you saw how he caught two people and landed from that height!」 or 「Rather, why a sleigh!？」, voices that were filled with excitement came one after another.

Amidst that,

「Fuwaa. It was fun nano!」

Myuu smiled innocently. Hajime-papa let down only Myuu gently.....\*pechin-  
\* a forehead flick burst.

「~~~~~!？」

Myuu writhed in pain. The soft knitted hat that was matching with Remia offered no defense at all against the impact. Both her hands pressed down on her forehead and she squatted while trembling *purupuru* with teary eyes.

「Myuu. Certainly papa is also bad for installing propulsion device so that you can play even on level ground. But, you were told before playing right? Don't do something that papa, mama, or one of the one-chan told you to stop. You broke your promise.」

「Au.....bu, but.....」

「Look. Mama was really scared. Does Myuu want to have fun even if you have to trouble your mama?」

Remia-mama was still hugging Hajime. Seeing Myuu's figure being scolded by papa, Remia spoke her usual 「My my」 while scolding her 'bad' like Hajime.

Seeing that, Myuu got dejected. She spoke 「Sorry nano」 wit teary eyes and teary voice.

「Yosh. You are able to apologize properly huh.」

「My my, Myuu. Look, papa isn't angry anymore. Lift up your face?」

Her head was patted by papa and mama. Myuu rubbed her eyes repeatedly then smiled widely.

For some reason 「Oo」 voice rose from the surrounding. It seemed the audiences were feeling moved seeing a bit of family drama.

Or rather, that was how much a center of attention they were.

Remia who was finally mentally recovered from the harrowing experience didn't notice the situation around before, but now she recalled her own state and her cheeks puffed red.

「Say.....dear? I'm fine already, so please let me down now.....it's embarrassing.」

「Hm? Aa, I see. Here.」

Remia was let down gently. Admiring voice and fascinated sigh leaked out once more from the surrounding people. Remia was undoubtedly a beauty with blond hair. Furthermore, right now she was blushing from embarrassment and other things with moist eyes, strange sex appeal was overflowing from her.

At the same time the surrounding——especially the men were sending jealous gaze like a line of spears at Hajime. Thinking of Myuu's existence and how she called Hajime, it was clear what was the relationship between them.

But, naturally Hajime-san didn't shrink back against such gaze of that level.

He ignored the rabbles as though to say that there was no one here except himself, Myuu, and Remia. He took the hat of Remia that fell off and put it on Remia's hand in a manner as though he was handling a glass artwork.

Hajime adjusted the placing of Remia's hair. Each time his fingertip gently brushed Remia's forehead and ear, Remia would expose a ticklish expression that also looked like she was feeling good.

Seeing that, the men became increasingly peevish.

「Chih. A blonde haired foreigner wife.....how did he got a wife like that huh?」

「Even though we here don't even get lucky in picking up girl.」

「Don't say it. I'm gonna cry here.」

「Wait, you guys. The sleigh. It's using sleigh. If we slide on the half-pipe using sleigh.....」

「『We can marry a blond haired foreigner beauty!?!』」

Half-pipe, sleigh——it was the moment a new sport was created.

「Hajime-saa~~n! What are you doing thereee~」

「.....Hajime. Ride sleigh while hugging me too. Like Remia. Like Remia.」

「A sleigh.....it looks a bit embarrassing.」

「You're right.....but, it can be used to slide in level ground too, if it's in a place where there is no one.....」

「Rather, I wisheth to be used as sleigh.」

Shia was running at the front while hopping *pyon pyon*, behind her was Yue, Kaori, Shizuku, and Tio. By the way, Yue-san today was a teenage version.

Naturally, the people were making commotion at the appearance of the beauty army. Furthermore, they were approaching the man who was currently displaying a scene of flirting with blonde haired beauty while also holding a cute daughter. The commotion was gradually increasing!

「Shia. You, you were bringing out Myuu in your drive secretly from me aren't you?」

「.....I, I don't really understand what you are saying.」

「Your rabbit ears are twitching there. You're really shaken up.」

Even the rabbit ears that ordinary person couldn't see were in plain view for Hajime and co. The rabbit ears were fiercely trembling. It seemed she was guilty.

Hajime stretched Shia's cheeks *munyo~n* and made her to be tearful. Yue and others were gathering around him.

「Half-pipe sleigh.....no way. So it's actually that effective.」

「I'll go renting a sleigh for a bit.」

「Wait, I'm going too.」

At this day, people getting sent flying or rolling around showily from trying to slide using sleigh appeared in succession, the ski area was falling into temporary



chaos.

—

—

—

Leaving behind the half-pipe that was getting enthusiastic to a completely unknown direction, Aiko who was walking pigeon-toed for some reason and a completely exhausted Liliana also returned, so they took a break while also wandering leisurely at the facility around the foot of the mountain.

There, they discovered a crowd at slight distance away. Wondering what was going on, Hajime and co also tried approaching.

「Hee, snowball fight huh.」

「.....Nn. It doesn't really look like a tournament.」

「Looks like anyone can freely join. Eerrr, let's see here.....looks like you can enter a three man team. O, looks like the winning team will be presented with a memento.」

Shia read the nearby plank while saying that. Hearing that Myuu's eyes were sparkling as expected.

Three man team meant that three people from a family could participate. It seemed to be a consideration from the organizer's side, and just as they intended, there were a lot of family participating, fighting each other in three man family VS three man family.

There were three courts, but rather than a serious competition, everyone were having fun in the event.

Furthermore, the snowball had to be created by themselves. There were three defensive walls, the time limit was five minutes. The team with the most survivor at the end would be the victor.

「In other words, it's fine to just annihilate the other team nano!」

What a child with quick comprehension. It seemed she was fully motivated to participate.

Hajime-papa was making a smile that looked like 「Fuh, so it's my turn」. It seemed that he was thinking that there wasn't a slightest chance he wouldn't be picked into his beloved daughter's team.

Beside Hajime, Yue was making the same smile. 「.....Fuh. Is annihilation battle what you wished for?」 the vampire princess who was specialized in annihilation class magic was also not doubting even the slightest bit that she would be chosen.

「Tio-oneechan! Shia-oneechan! Let's go together!」

「Hoe? Me? Fufu~n, that's fine! I will answer commander Myuu's expectation without fail!」

「Hou, so you chose me. Myuu, that's quite a discerning gaze thou hath there. My vocation art "protector". I wouldst protect Myuu perfectly there.」

Hajime-papa and vampire princess-oneechan crumbled. Both of them were similarly going 「Impossible.....」 in stupefaction.

「Ee~rr, Myuu? Why didn't you pick papa?」

Remia tried asking in the place of the crumbling Hajime. Myuu made an expression as though she was asking something obvious and she spoke her standard for choosing.

「First, what is necessary is physical firepower nano. Then, the only option for attacker role is the bug rabbit Shia-oneechan.」

If it was just an event then it felt like anyone would be fine, however, her reasoning made sense. Her choosing standard was quite something.

「For the other one, Myuu was thinking of Shizuku-oneechan who is good at throwing but.....」

It seemed that Hajime-papa and vampire princess-oneechan were out of question right from the start. The two were starting to draw circles on the ground together.

「In case there is someone who specialize in attacking among the enemy, Myuu believed that defensive power should be insured nano.」

「Myuu, thou hath learned tactic really well.」

The player would be out by the time a snowball hit them so defensive power wasn't related at all in this but.....starting from Shizuku, Kaori and Aiko and Liliana were making a warm smile.

Until they heard her next words.

「And so, Myuu chose the meat shie——the tough Tio-oneechan nano!」

「Wait a second, Myuu. Just now, thou was about to say meat shield wasn't it? This art the biggest shock Tio-oneechan received in these few years! For the cute Myuu to think of Oneechan as meat shield, I doth not know how to process this though!？」

It seemed she was also completely receiving bad influence from Hajime-papa.

Tio who was greatly shaken approached Miu while saying 「Tell me that it's a lie Myuu~」. Myuu was also shaken and her gaze darted around.....then she made a stiff expression in resolve and spoke.

「Think of it as a good thing!」

「Think of it as a good thing, thou mean it's a good thing to think of Oneechan as meat shield!？」

「If it's Tio-oneechan you should be happy nano! Rather Tio-oneechan who won't be happy with this is just a mere beautiful Oneechan nano!」

「Art not that a good thing!？」

「It's a loss of identity~ nano! A loss of character~ nano!」

「Nuguo~, mine self art going to lose in argument~~」

Should she be happy to be called a meat shield Oneechan, or should she be unhappy. That was the problem.

Myuu took the worrying Tio's hand, led away Shia who was smiling wryly, then she applied for the registration with only momentum.

Hajime and Yue who were still down were left as they were.

Myuu's snowball fight began through such happenings. Her opponent was a team of female university students. Myuu's team also consisted on only female, both sides had good look, so the audiences were quite roused.

Myuu put Shia and Tio on her left and right. She was folding her arms while standing imposingly. A fearless smile was tugged on her lips. It was as though she closely resembled a certain someone.

The females at the opposing team saw Myuu and started squealing 「Look look, that girl! She is really cute!」 「Waa, she is really enthusiastic! So cute!」.

「You can have fun while you still can now. Myuu will show you hell soon, nano.」

「Hajime-san, you cannot speak about other people. It's Hajime-san who is influencing Myuu the most.」

Shia smiled wryly seeing Myuu speaking like a gangster with that cute face.

「Tio-oneechan. When the match begin Myuu want you to go forward. Hold back the snowballs, and when a snowball that Myuu cannot evade come then Myuu want Oneechan to block it nano.」

「As I hath thought I am treated as meat shield.」

Commander Myuu wouldn't be bothered by trivial thing.

「Shia-oneechan. Myuu don't want to waste time nano. Please do Shia-oneechan's special move nano.」

「Special move? Uu~n, a, something like that is it. Roger desu.」

Like that the snowball fight began! The referee saw Myuu and made a warm smile, then gave the signal 「Start~」 leniently.

At the same time, the females at the opposing team picked the snowballs they had diligently created and threw it 「Ee~i!」 really leniently. Their aim was all over the place, most of them were toward inaccurate direction.

It didn't look like there was any need to use Tio as meat shield. Tio was taking cover at the front line defensive wall while tossing *po~l po~i* returning fire to hold back the enemy with a complicated expression.

「Shia-oneechan.」

「Ay ay, preparation is finished desu!」

「Roger. Target, the enemy's rear defensive wall! Fireee!!」

「Go fly until the moooon! Desuu!」

A snowball that was super compressed with super grip strength was thrown in a way that caused the air to make a strange sound *hyugoh*— —

「ABAAAAAAAH!?!」

「Ah.....」

「Myu.....」

Shia inflicted a powerful friendly fire. The sudden impact that was dealt on her back caused Tio to collide with the defensive wall before her in a posture that was like a shrimp. The defensive wall was half-destroyed from that and she ended up hanging on the top,

「This is.....mine, identityyy~」

She murmured such thing with expression of ecstasy before she stopped moving with a plop.

The cheers stopped. The place fell dead silent. The females who were squealing until just now were staring at Tio with pale face.

Amidst that silence,'

「Hi, hit confirmed! Correction shot! Fireee!」

「Ro, roger desuu!」

Commander Myuu was unperturbed! And then, the loyal rabbit held the snowball firmly this time and threw! Accurately, it shot through the side of the enemy team and pulverized the defensive wall at the back! That result was truly like a bombing!

「Hit confirmed! Target destroyed! Effective shot~, fi— —」

‘Fireee!’ Surely that was what would be said. But, before the word was completed a snowball hit Myuu so her order was interrupted. Looking back, the referee was there.

「Disqualified.」

「Aa, yes nano.」

The referee emitted a pressure that wouldn't allow any objection. Aiko and others with Remia-mama at the forefront were bowing their head repeatedly while retreating in escape.

A beat later, scream and cheer reverberated from behind.

—

—

—

*Roll roll, roll roll* Kaori was rolling a snowball while talking to Yue who were similarly *roll roll, roll roll* rolling snowball beside her.

「.....Making snowman is calming the heart somehow.」

「.....Nn.」

*Roll roll, roll roll.* The two continued to form snowball silently. Unusually they didn't show any sign of quarreling.

This was an open space some distance away from the ski area. A place that was near the buildings of hotel and inn lining up. It was a public park for relaxing like where the small children would play with snow.

It was a place where it was okay to create snowman and left them there (only in the case they asked for permission and bought decoration item at the stand under management control), and so there were various snowmen and objects in various sizes around.

In a few more hours the blazing light of the evening sun would create long shadow.

If it had to be said why Yue and kaori were making snowball silently in such place,

「We got too high spirited didn't we?」

「.....Nn.」

Yue-sama who was excessively taciturn.

When Kaori glanced to the side, Yue was somewhat teary eyed.....

「.....Hajime got angry.」

「Yeah.」

After the snowball fight, the group was strolling aimlessly once more and encountered an event of making snow sculpture. The organizer prepared a lump of hardened snow for the participants to carve it into snow sculpture.

There, the two who were starting a stupid fight like usual provoked each other and decided to settle their dispute in this event, but they both made Hajime into the model for the statue they sculpted.

If it was just that, Hajime would just endure his embarrassment.

Even if Kaori used outrageous technique of twin sword art using large chisels, or Yue was pretending to sculpt while forming shape using ice element magic, with each side using foul play and irrational method, and that the place fell into commotion because of that, well, Hajime would surely ignore it because they had fun.

But, the two's quarrel entered into criticism toward each other's sculpture, their statue shifted into naked sculpture that was like David statue, and then they escalated. By the point of time they got fixated at forming the crotch, Hajime's embarrassment burst.

Two beautiful girls were heatedly arguing with each other in front of public eye about the molding of a single man's crotch. In addition, because it was a delicate part, they didn't use any tool and shaped it using their hands, that part of the snow sculpture.

The parents who were participating in the event naturally covered their children's eyes「You cannot watch that!」, the fathers were sending their wide smirk at Hajime, while the young men were sending him murderous gaze, while the girls were getting unjust suspicion of the relationship between Hajime and Yue & Kaori with blushing cheeks.

And so, Hajime smashed the snow sculptures into nothing. He dropped his knuckles on the head of the two who were protesting him, grabbed their collar and dragged away the two who turned limp while leaving the place.

Due to that, the two were self-reflecting a bit while making snowman in a

quite place. When Kaori recalled the event, it felt like her face would get on fire.

At slight distance away, Hajime was rolling a snowball that was around two meter. Myuu was taking balance on top of it while walking.

At another place, Shizuku and Aiko were arguing cheerfully with each other about the face part of the snowman, like this or like that, while decorating it.

Shia and Tio were diligently making several moderately sized snowballs.

In addition, there was a snow hut nearby the spot that was planned for the snow man to be put at, Remia and Liliana were inside warming themselves. Both of them seemed to be relatively weak against cold.

The size of the snowball Hajime was making gathered attention from families and couples that were scattered around sporadically. Amidst that attention, Hajime raised his voice to check.

「O~i, how is over there doing?」

In response, Shizuku who was in charge of decoration cheerfully replied.

「Yep, over here is all right.」

「The material is also complete~」

Liliana and Remia crawled out slowly from the snow hut while lifting up some things for decoration.

‘Oh, finally they are going to decorate?’ The people in the park gathered toward them.

The plan of Hajime and co was to make a specially large snowman——a total height of four meter with three snowballs piled up——right in the middle of the park, with nine small snowmen around it.

There, Hajime suddenly noticed something.

「Ah, come to think of it I forgot the ladder.....」

Hajime muttered with feeling like「Ah damn」. Putting aside the small snowmen, the specially large snowman’s torso and head would need a big ladder to place them in position.

He had one stored inside his Treasure Warehouse, but he didn’t take it out



beforehand, so it was hard to take it out with all the gathered attention.

Should he obediently go to a shop to rent it.....while Hajime was thinking that,

「Oo~I, you guys. Want to use this?」

「Hm? Aa, that will help.....」

An unfamiliar middle-aged man was carrying a splendid ladder on his shoulder while walking toward them. Seeing Hajime opened his eyes wide in surprise, the middle-aged man laughed pleasantly and spoke.

「Haha, it looks like you all are going to make a really splendid snowmen, so I wondered if you will let us participate in the commemoration if you don't mind.」

「I see. So it's like that.」

Looking closer, there was a boy hiding behind the uncle.

Hajime smiled slightly and showed his agreement. The boy's expression brightened.

With that as the beginning, 'Please let us too!', the other families and couples asked to be allowed to join.

Yue and Kaori, and Shia and Tio who were diligently rolling snowballs for the small snowmen were slightly surprised, but when they looked at Hajime, he was smiling slightly and nodded, so they also smiled and rolled snow together with other people.

Seeing participants increasing one after another, Myuu who was on top of the huge snowball puffed out her chest.

「Myuu is the leader nano! Everyone, work hard! We are making snowmen that will last until spring nano!」

There was also an atmosphere in the place. The families and couples that numbered nearly twenty people in the end were all responding「Oo~!」cheerfully at Myuu.

「Ahaha, then leader Myuu. Please give order to everyone.」

「Mufufu~! Leave it to Myuu nano!」

Hajime's respectful way of speaking caused Myuu to also smile while she started giving instruction energetically.

After that, with the many cooperation they obtained, they completed a total of ten snowmen genuinely under Myuu's instruction.

A snowman with fixed stare, a snowman with rabbit ears, a snowman with ponytail attached, and so on, they were snowmen with trait that closely resembled certain people somewhere.

Even the participants surely could guess which was who. They were giving warm smile to Yue and co who were looking a bit embarrassed.

At the end, Hajime was carrying Myuu in his arms, climbed up the ladder that was supported by the people, and with a relay format the head of the specially large snowman—the head part of demon king-sama with eye patch attached was carried to the top.

「Myuu, don't fall. Put your feet on the ladder firmly.」

「Yes nano.」

Hajime put down Myuu on the ladder. He then received the head part that was brought from below, and then he made Myuu to hold it.

Myuu staggered slightly even with Hajime supporting her.

From below, a lot of participants were watching over them while holding their breath.

Myuu was scolding her arms that were shaking all over while carefully, carefully holding the last snowball.....\*plop\* she set it up on the designated spot.

And then, she sloo~wly took her hands away.....

「「「「「Oo~~~~~」」」」」

Cheers and applauses reverberated all at once!

When Myuu made a guts pose「It's completed~~」, the enthusiasm of the place echoed even further hearing that bright shout of joy that was filled with delighted sense of accomplishment.

Yue and others also exchanged smile with participants who they knew only just now and they thanked each other. They were really having fun.

Hajime hugged Myuu once more while his expression looked as though he suddenly recalled something.

「Oi, Tio.」

「Mu? .....Oo, I see. That wouldst be nice. Leave it to me.」

Tio noticed Hajime's intention as though they were of the same mind, then she immediately left the circle of people.

「Papa?」

「Myuu, bestow those words to everyone. The present will be that.」

Myuu was making a puzzled face. Hajime turned his gaze toward Tio while saying such thing to Myuu.

Myuu's expression turned 'hah' in realization, then she once more remembered what day today was and she smiled widely.

artifact

And then, Tio who finished setting up the tool gave a thumb up. Confirming that, Myuu waved both her hands and raised her voice.

「Everyone~~~~!」

Myuu gathered attention once more. Toward them all, Myuu took a deep breath.....

「MERRY~~~~ CHRISTMA~~~S!! NANO!」

And then, she pointed with her finger.

Lured by that, the participants turned their gaze, and there a splendid camera equipment was set up.

It was something Tio pulled out from Treasure Warehouse outside of people's gaze,

The participants who guessed the intention here adjusted their position hurriedly.

Hajime and Myuu were on the ladder. Yue and co were right below the

demon king snowman.

The participants were surrounding them.

「Then here we go!」

*Kaclick.* Tio dashed with hurried footsteps and slid beside Yue and others.

And then,

——\*pasha!\*

After that, a photo that really conveyed the delight from people they didn't even know who were centered around the snowmen and Nagumo family was completed. The giant snowmen and small snowmen would later get reported in TV that they really didn't melt until spring.

Of course, it was possible to mass produce the photo like Polaroid camera right on the spot, so it was distributed to the participants as Christmas present.

The participants, every single one of them broke up while immersing themselves in pleasant fatigue and enjoyable aftertaste with a photo in hand.

「This kind of thing isn't bad once in a while. Merry Christmas.」

While returning to their inn, hajime said that with a peaceful smile.

Of course, Yue and co, everyone similarly,

「「「「「「「「「「Merry~ Christmas!」」」」」」」」」」」」」

They replied like that.

—  
—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

At the end of the chapter this time, in a relatively unusual event the casts were mingling with ordinary folks.

It's Christmas, so I wanted to write a story that can give warmth as soon as

possible.

By the way, a story of making snowman with unfamiliar people.....

Is there also those who somehow feel déjà vu?

Yes, its inspiration come from Shirakome's bible, Aria.

In the anime it's [Aria the Natural Episode 26 From that white gentle town...]

For Shirakome, it's an episode that entered the top 5 of my favorite.

Everyone too, how about feeling warm and fluffy by watching Aria in Christmas?

In any case, Merry Christmas!

# Arifureta Chapter 296

## Arifureta After III I Am A Maid

—

「Ahaha, really I'm sorry. Coming at this hour. Furthermore it seems that I'm being a hindrance to everyone's work.」

The one who came to the room looking like he was really sorry while frequently bowing his head was a middle aged man without any conspicuous traits.

His attire like his suits or hair style was well-ordered, and yet on the whole he was wrapped with lax atmosphere that naturally would make the other party feel like letting their guard down.

「Fukube-san yourself, it must be hard for you. Being outside the jurisdiction of labor standards act is the harshness of being a public servant.」

「No no, you are making too much of a big deal for the like of me. On the contrary, to think that a maid this beautiful will welcome my arrival, it really blow away my fatigue.」

The man who was smiling while glancing aside to Heliotrope who was showing the way was someone from “returnee response division” who was shouldering the role as contact person with the returnees (basically with Hajime), Fukube Koutarou.

In a glance his face looked like a good person, Hajime and Liliana saw through how deep inside his eyes was emitting a sharp glint. In contrast with his lax atmosphere, he was a person who couldn't be underestimated.

That could be seen from how this man had already continued to shoulder the role of being a contact person with Hajime for more than a year. Being involved with Hajime and co would guarantee anyone to be afflicted with stomachache, for this man's predecessors, being able to stay in the job for three months could be considered as amazing.

By the way, "returnee response division" was a new department that was made from many organizations related with returnees building a cooperation system. The section was under the jurisdiction of the police's security division after a fashion, but various related departments in the government like the public security intelligence agency and ministry of foreign affairs and so on were sending their people to get closely involved and coordinated with each other while making it so they could response to situation comprehensively.

It was a section that was made after in the past the government got involved in this and that in the "returnee uproar", various departments made their move and as the result, all of them received retaliation that was too severe.

「And, I think that what you want to talk is about the group just now.....」

「Yes, yes. It's about that matter. My deepest apology. Our side planned to deal with it before they start trouble, but they moved faster than we imagined. No, this is only an excuse. And, about the detail of the situation——」

When he was going to explain, Hajime raised his hand and stopped him, so Fukube closed his mouth. Cold sweat instantly oozed out from his face. 「Good lord-, is the demon king misunderstand that it's the government trying something again!？」 Such thinking came out on his face.

「I'm not that hasty, so don't get that pale.」

「Ha, haha. So it came out on my face? I'm still too green.」

Fukube wiped the sweat on his forehead with handkerchief. Then he threw stomach medicine of pill type into his mouth with a practiced motion.

Hajime smiled wryly at that motion of Fukube that he often witnessed and he turned his gaze toward Heliotrope.

「It seems there is circumstance regarding that group. Show them the way to the subordinates of Fukube-san who are waiting downstairs. Liliana and I will

hear about the circumstance here.」

「Understood. How about Sumire-sama's work?」

「About that. Originally being Kaa-san's assistant is more important than accompanying some idiot but.....」

Sumire shook her head left and right *bun bun* repeatedly. A foreign force assaulted with Liliana as their target, on top of that an official from public safety came visiting in order to explain the situation. As expected she didn't have the nerve to have her way saying 「The deadline is more important!」.

「And so, this concern Liliana, and it seems that Fukube-san has better grasp of the whole picture of the present situation. We will listen about the circumstance directly. During that time, I'll leave the work here to you.」

「Your will. Should I add more personnel, just in case?」

「I'll leave it to you.」

The talk was progressing unhinderedly. Liliana was murmuring 「Yes yes, my opinion won't be heard anyway. Far from that even my question is ignored. Ahaha~」 with a faraway look.

「That's how it is, Sumire-sama.」

「Ye, yes! What is it, maid-san!?!」

When Sumire was addressed with a respectful attitude, she replied with heightened tension. Looking at her blushing face and her nasal breathing that was somewhat rough, it was clear that her inspiration was greatly stimulated. Perhaps her next work would have a combat maid as the main character.

「While presumptuous, will you allow me to lend you a hand?」

「But of course! Is what I want to say but.....will you be all right?」

There was no way a maid from another world would have experience in assistant work for a manga artist.

Although Sumire loved maids, she was a pro manga artist. Having problem came to surface because an amateur got involved in the drawing was out of the question. She had to properly confirm it.



But, Heliotrope was completely unperturbed. She smiled beautifully and,

「Please leave it to me. My lord had made me learn everything in the case of something like this occurring. Please consider me as a battle-ready force.」

「Geez Hajime, just what is he making a maid of another world learn. I'm happy though!」

「Also, I have finished reading all of Sumire-sama's works. Your works are greatly popular even among us the Fleur Knights, all of us are holding deep respect toward Sumire-sama. Therefore, being allowed to help is an honor that is equal of receiving command from my lord.」

Heliotrope-san clenched her fist strongly and strongly insisted. Actually not just Fleur Knights, even the maids in the palace of Tortus and the young daughters of nobles were also swallowed in unprecedented shoujo manga boom.

Nagumo

The selling agency was South Cloud company. The majority of direct sales was undertook by a cooperating company, Yunker Company.

Surely Sumire felt the truth and seriousness from Heliotrope's sparkling eyes. Sumire's cheeks blushed with an embarrassed look that was unusual for her. Even in Japan she was treated as the great Sumire-sensei, but she looked happier with this rather than getting called that by the people in the industry.

「.....Even though she is never helping me out. Hellina you idiot」

The former princess muttered something. Surely she was feeling that the attendant who had been staying at her side since her childhood was taken away. She was completely sulking.

It was unclear whether that voice was heard or not, but Heliotrope beautifully ignored it and made a finger snap.

「Salvia.」

「Yes, captain.」

The assistants and also Fukube-san twitched. When they noticed the number of maids was already increasing from behind Heliotrope!

It was a lovely maid with dark brown hair worn in braid that was tied with scrunchie. Her body was wrapped with similar Victorian maid outfit like Heliotrope. She was smiling warmly.

Seeing the girl, the sulking Liliana snapped open her eyes in a flash.

「I won't ask anymore how did she appear just now! But, please let me say at least this! You are Samiya-san aren't you!? The grandchild of Yunker company's president Motto! What are you doing in this kind of place!?!」

「I am a maid, Liliana-sama.」

‘Well of course. That's a maid uniform she is wearing.’ Sumire and others were of the same opinion inside their heart.

‘I'm not asking that!’ Liliana was at her wits' end. Hajime explained to her straightforwardly.

「Fleur Knight rank five. She is a commanding officer class who is responsible for managing goods and information. Of course her combat ability is also without fault.」

「Why is a merchant's daughter like thaatt!?!」

「Everything is thanks to the lord discovering me.」

Actually, Motto Yunker of Yunker Company who had deep relation with Hajime one way or another sent this talented person to him because he wanted to secure a connection that was as substantial as possible. To speak without hiding the ulterior motive, 「If possible I wish that you will accept her a wife, so that I can be related with your majesty the demon king as a relative」, or something like that.

Naturally, Hajime was also aware of Motto's merchant soul, he had also guessed his expectation, so he ignored Salvia——real name Samiya Yunker (17 years old) approach to him but.....

When Hajime was working out the plan of the Fleur Knights' conception, the girl's name was written in the candidate list of Heliotrope, he tried giving her various trial as test and it turned out she was quite an outstanding talent.

By the way, Samiya herself didn't have the perception that she was made as

tool for political marriage. She too was someone who inherited the merchant soul. She sniffed out the scent of money from the demon king's surrounding and the other world (earth) and volunteered herself.

But, while she was selected as a member of Fleur Knights and received trials, she went through many twists and turns and reached a point where it was her purpose in life to swear loyalty to the demon king.

The structure of Fleur Knights was that those in rank one until ten were commanding officers with their own subordinates, but when looking at how she reached rank five when those positions were mainly grasped by people with combat job as their original occupation, it could be seen how astounding her talent was and how far her loyalty went that she would make great effort with that as her driving force.

「Well then Sumire-sama. Please allow me and Salvia to be of assistance.」

「I get it. Well, if Hajime trained you two then I don't think I'll have to worry about your skill, best regards okay.」

Heliotrope and Salvia deeply bowed their head and said 「Please leave it to us」, after that they also deeply bowed their head to the assistants while saying 「Honorable seniors, if there is any mistake in what we are doing, please point it out without mercy」.

All the assistants together said 「Please take care of us tooooo!」 while bowing back with a perfect gesture for some reason.

「Fukube-sama.」

「Oo!? M, me? What is it?」

Surely he never thought that he would get addressed. Fukube's middle age uncle face blushed red.

「I sent a subordinate of mine named Primula to Fukube-san's subordinates who are waiting outside. She will show the way to the place where the captured people are at. By the lord's command, we will extract information from them using our method but, please cooperate with us as much as possible.」

「Ro, roger. I will contact my subordinates now.」

When and how did Heliotrope-san contacted her subordinate? Well, she was a maid of the demon king, no~thing would be strange no matter what she did~. Fukube thought that inside his heart while taking out his mobile phone and began contacting his subordinates who came together with him.

There, Liliana asked somewhat carelessly.

「.....By the way, that person named Primula-san.....is she a person who I know as expected?」

Hajime answered after thinking a bit.

「You know her. Her real name is Philim Zaara——」

「Hahah, so this time it's the little sister of active captain of the templar knight is it~」

Liliana-sama looked somewhat broken. Her friends and acquaintances were transformed into members of a superhuman maid group while she didn't know.

Her state resembled Shia in the past somehow. Yes, the Shia at the time when she saw her gentle and kind family was completely turned into a 'hyahhaa' group.

By the way, the present templar knight captain was David Zaara, the former captain of Ai-chan escort squad.

The legendary decisive battle was publicly seen as the deed of an evil god who misrepresented himself using the name of Ehito, so the people's faith toward the church was unchanged. And so, the church was also planned to be rebuilt at the same time with the reconstruction of the capital.

David and co, the members of former Ai-chan escort squad consolidated the knight order of that reborn church. Although, ninety percent of their faith was offered to "our goddess".

The captain of such reborn templar knight order actually had a little sister. She was a former nun, a magic expert who possessed the vocation of "prayer master" who could display high ability toward magic in general by praying.

But, her relation with her eldest brother was bad, and she was sent to remote region because she was holding doubt to the way of faith of the church

headquarters.

She also participated in the choir at the legendary decisive battle. There she also fought side by side with David so the ill feelings between them vanished and as a church official she gave a lot of help to Liliana who was striving hard in government affairs to restore the kingdom at that time.

Though it seemed she had changed job into combat maid without Liliana noticing. By the way her rank was sixth.

「Aa~, can I interrupt? It seems that my subordinates has joined up with Primula-san and they are heading to where the group is apprehended. Ahaha, my subordinates who are usually composed are agitated there. A blond haired beautiful maid suddenly knocked on their car window, so they thought if they had actually gone crazy.」

「Well, anyone would doubt their own eye or head if they see a blonde haired maid in midnight.」

Fukube's wry smile was also responded by Hajime with a wry smile.

「Then Fukube-san. Can you tell us the details in the other room?」

「Yes, allow me to do that. It has become a bit of troublesome matter isn't it? If I have to say my true feelings, there is some aspect where I want to borrow Nagumo-san's strength. Of course, this is just my personal wish though.」

The government's stance was they absolutely didn't want the demon king faction to do anything, but it seemed that Fukube himself was thinking 「If that's the case then it's us the people at the scene who will have to take care of this difficult problem! Spare us already! Just how many holes in the stomach we need to have until you all are satisfied huh!」.

Led by Fukube who was casually throwing a stomach medicine pill into his mouth once more, Hajime and Liliana who was still having a distant gaze entered into another room.

—

—

—

To sum up the talk that they heard in the other room, it seemed that other than the group that was attacking just now, there were also intelligence operatives or force from multiple countries sent in to Japan.

Their objective went without saying. The information gathering or removal of Liliana, the leader of huge organization that was in the rise all over the world.

If it was just a leader of a mere company than the story would be different, but when it came to a global organization with an ideal that was like a new religion as its root, then it was understandable for many countries to be apprehensive.

Although, it was too sudden. It was understandable for the countries to want to take some kind of measure before the network was established as organization, be that as it may the movement of those countries were still too abrupt.

Regarding that point, according to the explanation that Fukube was giving them while oozing cold sweat, it seemed that a higher up of a part of the government messed up.

Liliana was related with the demon king, she was a contact person who could talk directly with that demon king, although it was only after a fashion, but a friendship could be built from there, that was why a scheme to gradually make Liliana's organization to belong to Japan was carried out.

The result, that movement was grasped by many countries, and they began to move all at once just in case because it would be troubling if the organization really got attached to Japan.

「Reallly~~~~, it's inexcusable!」

Fukube-san prostrated himself. Recently, he was lamenting that the top of his head was getting desolate but.....so this was the reason.

Hajime strangely felt pity and respect toward such Fukube and shook his head while smiling wryly.

「There is the saying 'danger past and God forgotten'. It's about time that the pain from the time of returnee uproar get forgotten and some bunches who think "just a bit", "only this much....." came out. I've predicted this will happen.

As long as Fukube-san and others take care of it within your own organization, then our side too doesn't intend to make a move so, well, please take care of it okay.」

「Haa, it saves us that you say so. We are already working to deal with it, so please kindly go easy on us.」

Fukube showed a flagrant look of relieve and he threw a stomach medicine into his mouth with terribly natural motion. His hand's motion was flowing just like the commercial of Friso candies, the pills were thrown directly from its case into the mouth.

This too was a factor that caused Hajime to strongly feel pity to Fukube. Just how used he was in swallowing stomach medicine? And then, how many he was planning to drink in a day?

In exchange of Hajime who was looking at Fukube with a really complicated eyes, Liliana was making a caring expression while asking.

「So, Fukube-san. Have you all predicted how this situation will develop after this? Personally, I expect that it will become a really troublesome situation though.....」

「That prediction is right to the point. From what we have confirmed so far, there are already personnel from three countries who have already entered this country. There are also four countries that are definitely moving. Ideally all the country will work to gather full and accurate information, so we wish that for the time being it will be only a battle of observation but.....」

「I'm not going to allow it huh.」

「Yes, Nagumo-san won't allow that. However, that means that there will be no information at all about the leader of a growing global organization. An "unknown" is something that is feared the most. Therefore, all of them will be pressed with the choices, whether to resign themselves and accept that fear, or they will take measures. I believe Hajime-san understand but.....」

「They surely won't pick the former choice, unless the fact that they will meet bitter experience that won't be worth it from picking the latter choice is carved to the depth of their body. It's impossible for a country to make that choice.」

「That's how it is. Ideally, when an act of removing or kidnapping Liliana-san is going on, other country will intervene and they will remove each other but, well, something like ideal is just a word in book after all.」

Something like a choice of accepting a life of being monitored didn't exist for Hajime's side. And then, even if their side handed over some degree of information about themselves, next time those organizations would think 「Is this offered information really true?」, and as expected they would come to observe once more.

And so, in all probability, it would be as Fukube said, at the time the force of each country understood that “observation was completely neutralized”, they would surely take a strong measure.

What was truly terrifying wasn't the countries that would make such decision, but the network that was growing in influence and power even now to the degree that the countries couldn't just ignore it and were forced to make such decision——in short it was Liliana's existence.

For some reason or another, Hajime and Fukube's gaze moved toward Liliana. There Liliana was having a distant look for a different reason from before.

On her face was written 「Even though I only wanted to help troubled people. Even though it's basically, only relying upon others to make it happen.....how did it become like this?」 loud and clear.

Hajime and Fukube's gaze turned lukewarm at the same time, and they simultaneously averted their gaze and decided that they didn't see that.

「However, this situation. If that is the case, within a few days these bunches will gather in large numbers around us huh.」

「.....Originally we want to deal with everything before it turn like that but..... I'm sorry. The demon king section's——cough-, my apologies. Even for the returnee response division, honestly, we are in a situation where we don't have enough time and personnel.」

「Oi, just now, did you say demon king division? Could it be, that's the nickname at your side?」

「Diplomatic response is also starting already, but it will be better to not



expect anything from it. From our view, we wish to avoid gunshots in the middle of city, we also wish to evacuate Liliana-san to a place with few people by all means in preparation of unforeseen situation, that is our suggestion, or rather our true feelings.」

Fukube beautifully ignored Hajime's question and gave suggestion with an apologetic look.

Hajime was making an awfully displeased look, but it wasn't because of Fukube's suggestion, rather it was surely because of the response division's nickname that Fukube leaked out.

National Police Agency Security Department Demon King Division.....  
Certainly, such police institution was disagreeable.

「I don't mind that. If I remember correctly, I shouldn't have any schedule that cannot be rearranged. After all I'm worried when a skirmish occur in a place that is outside our perception.」

「I guess. It's also troublesome if they are loitering around sporadically. Gathering them in one place and taking care of them in one go will also give better impression to those countries.」

「Then, allow me to continue the talk in that direction. About the place, we prepared several hideout for the sake of witness protection, so perhaps it will be better to use those.」

「As expected from Fukube-san. You work fast.」

Hearing Hajime's praise, for the first time this day Fukube showed a relieved smile that wasn't a forced smile or wry smile or convulsing smile.

After that, when they finished hammering out the details, the subordinates of Fukube who came together with Primula shared the information of the background, objective, the plan forward, and so on of the attackers who came.

It seemed that the information had been thoroughly extracted, they didn't ask as far as the method used but, when looking at the gaze of terror that Fukube subordinates directed toward Primula.....it must be something that shouldn't be asked.

Primula, although formerly, she was a gentle and kind sister though.....

「Hajime-san.....you are endeavoring to act prudently in earth, but in exchange aren't you cutting too loose in Tortus?」

「.....」

Liliana was looking alternately at Hajime and Primula with sad eyes. For some reason Hajime was at loss for words and averted his gaze in respond.

By the way, Heliotrope and Salvia were finishing their assistant work perfectly.

They didn't borrow the work tools, instead they had prepared them beforehand, furthermore they took them out from inside their sleeve *shakin!*, or taking them out from their breast or inside their skirt, so Sumire and co were able to have fun working while getting heated up from start to end.

Not forgetting to improve the work place's atmosphere too, they were really perfect maids.

—

—

—

The next day.

There were the figures of Nagumo family in a splendid lodging deep inside the mountain of a certain prefecture.

It was a mountain forest with abundance of nature in the surrounding, a refreshing river was streaming right nearby.

It was a hideout for protection target that Fukube prepared. It was separated enough from human habitation, and even if some commotion occurred there would be no one who noticed.

The autumn colors of the mountain were still remaining. It could also function as refuge in the meaning of a holiday place or health resort.

This might be a consideration from Fukube in his own way toward Nagumo family who had to deal with a dangerous situation in this season when autumn

was over.

Furthermore, not just Sumire and Shuu, currently even Remia and Tio were also busy people, but everyone emptied their schedule even if they had to force it and came here. Their family was being targeted. So this was only natural.

Hajime got out of the lodging and looked around the surrounding. Even the beautiful forest landscape that still had red leaves remaining would undoubtedly make a complete change in expression when night came. Thinking about when the people targeting Liliana would come, the forest at night would be a suitable cover for them. The darkness would become terribly frightening for the side who would get attacked.

But, Hajime made a fearless grin while staring at such forest.

And then——he declared.

「Now then——let's barbeque~~~!」

「『『『『『『『『『『『OO~~~~~!』』』』』』』』』』』』』」

Nagumo family responded in high tension. They all showed wide smile on their face, with a lot of ingredients on their hands!

「Papa! Quiiick! Quiiick! Myuu's stomach is crying nano!」

「My my, Myuu. To be so happy.....」

「Right, it was a bit forced but, it's good that we hath emptied our schedule for this last family trip of the autumn.」

「.....Nn. This year everyone is busy, we wasn't really able to go in family trip.」

「Yue wasn't really busy though.」

「.....Kaori. It will become a scuffle again if you say that. Aa, look, Yue is taking fighting pose already! Oi you! Kaori too don't take a stance with that green onion!」

Even with Shizuku's intermediation, Yue and Kaori were starting a quarrel using vegetables as weapon. Myuu was lifting a lump of A5 rank meat above her head while making merry 「Meaat, meat!」 in high spirit. Remia and Tio were watching her with similar smile.

Shia was smiling wryly at such scene while devoting herself to prepare the other ingredients promptly, beside her Liliana was helping her.

「Ahaha.....well, the incident this time became a good chance. Especially because Lily-san is extraordinarily busy, she cannot really spend time with us. We owe the attackers one! Ah, come to think of it Myuu-chan. Do you want to go looking for fish in the river later? Let's fire at the fish using finger bullet♪」

「Shia-san, please fish normally! Don't make the river getting dyed crimson!」

The wife~s were clamoring 'kyaa kyaa' with high tension.

.....It seemed they didn't empty their schedule because they were worried about Liliana, but they purely wanted to go to a family trip, that was all.

「.....Ee~rr, then I will stand by in the operation headquarter so.....」

Fukube actually accompanied them as guide, but seeing the people of Nagumo family enjoying the holiday normally without looking burdened or feeling in danger at all, he emitted a sorrowful air thinking 「Well, it's the usual thing」 while going back. Tonight too.....it would be cup ramen for him. 'Let's have Rao', he muttered inside his heart while glancing longingly at the lump of A5 rank meat. (TN: Raoh cup ramen, seems to be popular in Japan)

「Oh, Fukube-san. You are going back already? If you like please eat together with us.」

「That's right. If you don't eat properly and get some nutrition, the top of your head will rapidly get desolate you know?」

Warm (?) words from Shuu and Sumire!

Fukube turned around in a flash, his gaze turned toward Hajime. His eyes were just like a puppy that was seeking permission from its owner after getting told 「Wait!」 if front of its meal!

Inside his heart Hajime thought 「This person, at his root he is someone that you really cannot let your guard down against him but, why is he sometimes giving impression like a comedian or dog like this huh」 with a wry smile.

「You see, Nagumo-san. That's because I'm a dog of the nation.」

「.....Really, even though you are someone that one must not let the guard

down against」

The wry smile of Hajime whose mind was normally seen through was deepening while nodding to convey 「Okay!」.

Fukube happily rushed toward the barbeque saying 「I'll take care of the charcoal management~」. Next he said 「Ah, I also want to bring back some for my subordinates so can I pack up some?」 trying to secure a lot of meat casually.

At the corner of his sight, Hajime caught sight of Fukube eating Myuu's throwing technique when his hand reached toward the meat 「What are you going to do with Myuu's meat nano——!」 and he got thrown away. He gave a sidelong glance at that while enjoying the autumn mountain's scenery to his heart content.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It didn't end...the story got long when my interest is at full throttle. Ah, it's always like this.....

Tomorrow I'll have to take care of the brats, so perhaps it will be impossible but, I'll update if possible.

At the very least I'll update at New Year's Day! Around midnight perhaps.....

Also to everyone who comment「I bought it~」「It's interesting~」 regarding「Arifureta Zero」,

Really~~ thank you very much.

I completely wrote it on commission so, I was in suspense that perhaps it would make everyone disappointed.....

I was really happy, I felt a bit relieved.

The same with the Drama CD too. Really thank you very much!

Also, has everyone read the 「afterword of afterword」 too?

In Overlap-sama's homepage, if you click at the referral part of Arifureta 7 and Arifureta Zero,

You will be sent to the exclusive page of each volume, there is「Reader Questionnaire」there.

If you fill the questionnaire, you will be able to read a bit of short story.

The seventh volume is a short story regarding「Myuu at that time」, while Zero is regarding「That girl of the restaurant at that time」.

If you like please read!

—

About the greeting for this year, I will say it once more in tomorrow's activity report but,

Let me say brief words as afterword.

Everyone, the people of Narou, thank you very much for having fun together with me this whole year!

Best regards for next year too!

—

PS

The comic version and Nichijou version were updated in Gardo!

Hauria lol Or rather, Karm turn into something amazing.

Myuu appeared in Nichijou! Myuu's「desuu」hit's the bull's eye in Shirakome lol

RoGa-sensei and Mori-sensei too, my greatest gratitude to you.

Everyone too, please go take a look at Gardo at the end of this year by all means.

# Arifureta Chapter 297

## Arifureta After III Fleur Knights

—

AN: The Ame Talk yesterday, a stable fun lol

Today too naturally looking after the brats is the priority but,

Please read for a relaxed new year~

※I also updated in 30 December, so those who still haven't read it please go read that first.

—

---

Everyone of Nagumo family was relaxing as they liked in the big lodging that was a hideout for protection target owned by the public safety.

It was the night where autumn had also ended, furthermore when it was deep inside a mountain, the air would be getting colder in its own way, but fortunately there was an antique fireplace, firewood was blazing up there even now, warming the air without pause.

Naturally the members of Nagumo family were also gathering near the fireplace.

「Knight to A5. Charge at healing master on D5!」

「Aah, my healing master is skewered! Furthermore it's tossed away like trash until outside the board! Cruel!」

On both sides of a largish game board, Yue and Kaori were glaring at the

board surface. The two were amusing themselves with another world version chess.

The basic of the rule was similar with the chess of earth, but most of the parts were in a way that was characteristic of another world.

For example, the variety of piece was abundant, the player could set the kind of piece and their positioning in each game, there was growth system for the pieces themselves, for example even if a piece was in a position that could take the opponent's piece they could have the table turned on them, the game board could have its field set up with game things, there were advantageous and disadvantageous fields for each job.....

Anyway, it was reproducing a real war with quite high degree of realistically.

And then, the greatest feature of this game was,

『Why-, why did you kill heeer! She is your little sister!』

『Hmph. I have long ago severed something useless like family tie. My loyalty to my king is absolute! No matter who is my opponent, if they stand in my way I will pulverize them!』

『This stupid idiot! That girl-, if this war is over, she said that she is going to live together again with her big brother someday. She was smiling when she said that-』

Like that, it had a feature where fellow pieces would act a drama every time.

Just now, the little sister who defected because she was unable to endure the despotic rule of the king at Yue's side was reunited with her big brother, a knight serving that king in the battlefield. The big brother murdered the little sister, then he argued with a knight in Kaori's side who was in love with that little sister-chan.

It appeared it was the big brother who made the little sister defected, then he promised that he would follow her for sure, and yet he changed his mind..... that seemed to be the setting.

「How awful-, as expected from Yue, how awful!」

「.....Kaori. It's not a setting that I thought of. The game's drama is completely



randomized.」

「Right now I'm doubting that setting. Because, Yue, you also aimed at the healing master right from the start before this too! Surely you are using soul magic or something to read the player's heart! Yue's desire is reflected into the story!」

「.....It's just a coincidence. Healing master should die, no mercy, is not what I'm thinking.」

「Lies! That's a~bsolutely a lie! I know the truth! Each time Yue play this game, first of all you will always check the healing master's position! I know it from your gaze's movement!」

「.....Kaori. You are just tired.」

「Shut up!」

While they were making racket 'gyaasu gyaasu' like that, actually the frequency of these two intimately playing game together was the highest. Hajime and co felt warm seeing the sight that exactly the same like usual.

Shia was sitting on a rocking chair in front of the fireplace. She was rocking *sw~ay sw~ay* back and forth while her rabbit ears were also doing *sw~ay sw~ay* at the same time. She asked Hajime without moving her gaze from the knitted material in her hands.

「Hajime-san, what is actually going on with that game? Is the game reading the player's emotion to set up the story?」

「No, there is no such setting, should be. All of the inserted stories are love and hate drama, family quarrel, and so on, things like the soap opera story. The players are only projecting themselves into it arbitrarily.」

Hajime who was putting Myuu on his lap while playing a laptop together answered like that a bit lacking in self-confidence.

By the way, right now he was doing together with Myuu was a simulation game of building a country. He was beta testing the new game that Shuu's company was making.

It was possible to build a country with quite high degree of freedom, but

Myuu said 「Military power is everything for country's strength」 and she only concentrated in augmenting military affair like defensive wall or weapon development.

Even when Hajime tried to casually insert a heartwarming setting like “Anioal Crossing”, Myuu would say 「My, as expected of papa nano, placing the beastmen in frontline by makin them pretend to cultivate a new land」. Her thought was leaning to military affair as expected.

Just where is this child going, what kind of direction her growth is heading to.....

Hajime papa was a bit worried.

Shuu who had personal opinion about the game sharply noticed Hajime's unusual lack of confidence and tilted his head.

「What's the matter Hajime? You said “should be”, isn't this a game you made?」

「No, you're wrong Tou-san. This another world version chess isn't something I created. Oscar Orcus.....that founder of Orcus great labyrinth was the creator. When I was at the abyss's hideout, I found it from Oscar's Treasure Warehouse. I often played it with Yue to kill time.」

Hearing those words, 「What the, this is the first time I see an artifact who is made by anyone other than Hajime」, not just Shuu, the others were also showing surprised expression.

「However, that Oscar too, why didst he maketh this kind of bizarre game setting. No, the greatness of his skill art conveyed but.....」

「You're right. When we went to Tortus travel before this, in the past image at Orcus's hideout that you showed to us.....I got the impression that he was more like a serious young man though.」

When Tio tilted her head in puzzlement 「Hmm?」, Shizuku also said 「Certainly」 while tilting her head because of the difference from her impression.

「.....Well, I can imagine it. It must be Miledy butting in anyway, making him to

add the drama setting. This annoyingness of unrolling soap opera story each time the pieces clashed that must be painstakingly created.....I cannot think of anyone than her who would do this.」

Hearing Hajime's words, everyone went 「Even though she was the world's protector huh~」 with distant look while also accepting it.

「Everyone, how about a second helping of warm café au lait?」

Remia returned from the kitchen with both her hands holding a tray. Several mugs were placed on the tray with hot steam rising up from them. At the same time, slightly sweet scent tickled the nose.

「Remia-chan, nice! Sumire-okaachan love Remia-chan who is attentive like that you know~. Also, if there is some cookie too then I'll be even more happy~」

Sumire who was lying down while writing something on the tablet she was holding was demanding for second by holding up an empty mug in one hand and waving it around.

This mother of Nagumo family, after the barbeque was over and she finished taking bath, she hadn't risen up even once since she started relaxing in front of the fireplace. She was rolling around all this time. It seemed she had zero motivation already for today to get up and did something.

A mother-in-law who was completely behaving like a spoilt child to her son's wife.....

It was a laziness that normally would become an impetus for daughter-in-law and mother-in-law conflict, but Remia smiled 「My my, ufufu」 like usual toward such Sumire. No, rather her smile was even warmer than usual. She said 「Of course I have prepared it~」 and then put down a mug and also cookies in a spot that was easy for Sumire to reach.

「Remia, don't spoil Kaa-san too much. Once she get carried away she will act spoilt until just a step away of getting scolded.」

「My my. Isn't that fine? We are in a middle of this trip that is hard to come by after all.」

Remia was smiling like a holy mother. Sumire rolled while saying 「I'm acting spoilt to Remia-chan because my son won't spoil me~」 in respond.

By the way, Sumire was strangely skilled at determining where the line was. The demon king son let out a small sigh toward his mother whose laziness increased by thirty percent from the usual in this trip.

He accepted the café au lait from Remia, and in a good timing everyone put the mug together onto their mouth. Their throat gulped a bit of the content as though to taste it.

Everyone leaked out relaxed voice 「Hafuu」.

Then, as though to pour cold water to such laid back atmosphere, the ringtone of Hajime's smartphone sounded. When Hajime took it while making a conflicted expression, there were the words “Fukube” in the display screen. He sighed even further while answering the call.

『Nagumo-san, the organizations has come you know?』

「They are quick. I thought it will take two or three days.」

『Unfortunately it seems they are full of competitive spirit. Though you all are at least able to enjoy a relaxing holiday in the first day.』

「Fukube-san too. You brought back quite a lot of meat behind Myuu's back right? Didn't you immerse yourself in the aftertaste of laidback dinner together with your subordinates?」

『Yes, I received a blissful time that I seldom experienced with the low salary of civil servant. My subordinates too are extremely thankful——』

「By the way, Myuu said 『Fukube, unforgivable. The grudge for meat cannot be forgotten nano』 you know?」

『I beg you to please mediate for us! It was a sudden impulse! I couldn't possibly win against A5 rank meat!』

「Well, putting that aside——how many?」

Hajime smiled wryly at Fukube's reaction, and then he asked with his atmosphere slightly changed. Fukube also changed his tone and answered.

『Just from what we can confirmed here, fifty two people has entered the mountain. From their equipment and positioning, there are four teams. All those teams must have different affiliations.』

「.....A lot of people came huh. Any sign of them crushing each other?」

『None so far. Looks like they aren't interfering with each other, first come first served. This is, their superiors has been talking about it before hand it seems. Although, it's not clear how they will be act after one of them secure the target though.』

「Is this all of them?」

『No. There are also around three countries that came. They crossed the prefectural border some time ago. They are like fifteen minutes late.』

「So the total is less than a hundred people huh.」

『What will you do? We here are also prepared. If necessary we will send our force. It will be harsh to take all of them but, hunting one or two enemy teams is possible.』

Hajime showed a thinking gesture for a bit toward Fukube's proposal.

The attackers must also understand that they were being lured seeing how Hajime and co came to this place in this kind of timing. In the first place, the hideout of the public safety being known was also because Fukube and others were leaking out the information.

Even so, for them to come simultaneously in a short time like this, they must be resolved. They should be moving with calculation that surpassed monitoring and the like already. They came with their elite force and fully equipped.

The special force of returnee response division was strong enough. They were elites among elites. After all, around the latter half of the returnee uproar they intercepted the subordinates of many countries with fierce efforts in order to not let the demon king personally took measures.

That was how much Japan also weightily considered the matter regarding the returnee uproar, and thus this division was formed.....

Although, the scope of their duty was extensive, the personnel of returnee

response division was scattered throughout the country, and even the whole world.

Just like what Fukube said previously, it was a fact that they were short of hand to be able to immediately deal with the sudden movement this time.

Although it was only after a fashion, but the personnel of response team was ally, and they had also came to know each other. Hajime didn't feel the necessity to send them into a disadvantageous battle and caused pointless sacrifice.

Although,

「We are completely in relaxing mode here.」

『Yes? What did you say, Nagumo-san?』

Hearing Hajime's small murmur, Fukube asked with a dubious tone.

Hajime didn't answer that. When he looked around inside the room once more, everyone were being laidback while drinking Remia's special café au lait with relish. Hajime was also the same.

Then, there.

「While presumptuous」

A refreshing voice resounded inside the room.

The woman voice who didn't belong to anyone among the Nagumo family, and then the presence that appeared suddenly caused Myuu to raise her voice 「Pya!？」 and leaped up. Sumire, Shuu, Remia, and then also Liliana twitched.

When they turned their gaze toward the voice, unnoticed there was a maid-san behind the sofa where Hajime was sitting!

Liliana spontaneously yelled.

「Helli——!」

「It's Heliotrope.」

「otrope!」

The members of Nagumo family who was acquainted with Hellina who was

the princess's attendant greeted with 「Hellina-san?」 「Long time no see」 and the like. Of course, without delay the maid corrected 「It's Heliotrope」.

After everyone looked like they understood 「Ah, yes」, Heliotrope smiled sweetly, then she opened her mouth with her gaze directed at Hajime.

「I believe that there is no need to use everyone's important family time for the sake of the like of those companies. Lord, please leave this to us.」

「I guess. The conception of Fleur Knights is also mostly completed. The matters at Tortus are mostly taken care of, and with Liliana's situation like this you all were called to here.....ok, the original duty of you all, Lily's protection and the enemy's elimination——I'll leave it all to you. Do it.」

「Yes, my lord.」

Heliotrope bowed her head reverently and then like that her figure vanished quietly.

Hajime told Fukube at the other side of the call 「That's how it is. You guys can get back to immersing yourself into the meat's aftertaste now」. Fukube answered 「Roge~r」 happily and cut the call.

Hajime pocketed back his smartphone and brought the café au lait onto his mouth as though to say that the troublesome matter had been dealt with,

「.....What?」

His movement stopped seeing the really complicated gaze of his wife~s.

They knew that Hajime was training a force that should even be called as imperial guards for the sake of Liliana. And also how the force was a maid corps.

Although, as a matter of fact today was the first time they genuinely witnessed a direct conversation between Hajime and the maid.

Just as Hajime said, the Fleur Knights' activity was fundamentally at Tortus until now because there were duties here and there that were being carried on.

「I've thought of this even when meeting with Hellina-san in Tortus but..... Hajime-kun, she felt completely different then when talking with us wasn't it?」

「You really felt like her goshujin-sama wasn't it, Hajime-san?」

「How enviable.....」

「Hey, Hajime. It's a maid force for Lily's sake right? No matter how I look at it, it completely looks like she is serving Hajime though? What is the meaning of this I wonder?」

「Papa, will you be happy if Myuu is a maid nano? Is it better to call papa as goshujin-sama rather than papa nano?」

「My my, Hajime-san. Did you want maid-san for yourself so much like that?」

「That's right isn't it!? Everyone also think so right!? To begin with that Hellina, she is obviously delighted! She is really happy getting commanded by Hajime, it's really incomparable with when I was the one who commanded her!」

Starting from Kaori who was giving him a fixed stare, Shia, Tio, Shizuku, Myuu, Remia, and Liliana were speaking vehemently. They were speaking as though Hajime was undoubtedly arranging a maid force for his own sake because of his hobby. No, he was obviously being under suspicion!

「There is no way that's true. If I have preference for maid than rather than making Heliotrope and others wearing maid clothes, I'll ask you all to wear——」

「.....Oscar Orcus was a severe maid lover.」

Hajime who was making excuse with exasperated look was interrupted by Yue who spoke something that seemed unrelated. When everyone turned their gaze at her, Yue slowly stood up and spoke.

「.....Before getting out of the abyss. When we were living in the hideout, there were times when Hajime vanished at midnight. What's more, he even purposefully built an artifact to leave his presence inside the bed.」

「-, Yu, Yue. You see, that time——」

「.....『Close your mouth Hajime』——and then one night, I who got concerned secretly tailed Hajime. Hajime was inside Oscar Orcus's secret room. And then, I witnessed it.」

A surprise “Divine Statement”. Even Hajime would need a bit of time to resist it.

And then, everyone glanced at Hajime who strangely flustered while focusing



on Yue. Like a detective cornering the culprit, Yue,

「.....The figure of Hajime, getting engrossed with the maid golem that Oscar left behind! Hajime is the same like Oscar——a maid lover!」

Yue's finger pointed sternly, exposing the only truth!

By the way, the maid golem-san at that time was turned into pieces by Yue-sama.

Hajime who resisted the “Divine Statement” argued.

「A misunderstanding! I was just interested because it was a “maid golem”! “Maid robot” is a man's romance! I only got my blood as an engineer boiling up! Oscar you see, he pursued real maid too much that he instead got troubled with the dilemma of getting distanced from the real, that was why he entrusted it to transmutation master of future generation. I tried to inherit his will and——」

「.....Guilty? Or, not guilty?」 (TN: Yue spoke in English here.)

Judge Yue once more interrupted the words of Hajime who was stacking up self-justification and asked for the verdict. The jury group of the wife~s & beloved daughter all smiled,

「「「「「「GUILTY!!!」」」」」」

The wife~s & beloved daughter stood up quietly. The demon king-sama was drenched with cold sweat.

「Just accept your judgment obediently~」

「You cannot go against blood huh. Tou-san too, in the past I often forced Kaa-san to wear maid uniform.」

Sumire's eyes didn't move from her tablet, while Shuu was getting a faraway look while immersing himself in memory. Or rather, it was an information about their son that they didn't want to hear.

「.....Either way, I won't be able to relax huh.....」

Seeing the approaching wife~s and his beloved daughter who corrected her seating to face him above his knees, Hajime's face was twitching.

—  
—

Inside the forest that was wrapped in darkness where moonlight mostly didn't reach, there was a group that was abnormally silent even while advancing swiftly.

It was a special force of a certain country that publicly didn't exist.

The leader's legs were advancing fluently while he was grumbling inside his heart.

(.....Good grief, we were made to draw a terrible short straw.)

The person who was their target was someone who even the leader knew well. A famous idol and a manga author whose work was translated throughout the world. Whether in television or internet, anyone would catch sight of her even if they weren't interested to that business.

Now they had to kidnap, or if that wasn't possible to murder such person.....

(If she is just an idol with too much influence then I'll only get my conscience hurt though.....now then, this isn't something that we who are the nation's expendable goods originally should desire but.....let's accomplish this and return alive.)

The leader thought. Certainly the existence of the girl who was the origin of the network was a threat. He also could understand why his nation couldn't leave her alone.

But, however, still.

That girl was a relative of him——the one codenamed “demon king”.

A few years ago, his fatherland that made a move on them went through a very bitter experience.....

Like the leaders friends, they were now volunteer members who were working diligently digging well in a developing country, sometimes they would send him postcard of them posing with the local children while smiling refreshingly.

Even though they were people of the underworld who excelled in murder and subterfuge at the same level or even better than him.....

Was his superiors in the fatherland already forgot about that terror?

The leader let out a small, really small sigh.

Although, as long as he was serving his nation, order was absolute. He pulled himself together.

Then, at that time *rustle*, there was the sound of leaves getting stepped from deep inside the forest. The leader lifted his fist. The force's members stopped moving. They lowered their stance and raised their guard.

The leader focused at the direction of the sound through his night vision device while pointing his rifle muzzle that was attached with suppressor. The other members also focused to all direction.

Perhaps it should be said just as expected. The way they killed their presence was befitting for elites. They were paying attention even to every single one of their equipments, so they assimilated themselves with the forest's darkness and vegetation and it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that it would be next to impossible for ordinary person to spot them.

The leader's eyes scrutinized carefully. He intended to not overlook any movement no matter how slight and depending on the situation he would shoot mercilessly.....

「Welcome.」

「——」

He had no words. This was exactly what being speechless meant.

Would the force of other country break the agreement and attacked, or perhaps it would be Japan's respond division's special force, or maybe the most terrifying demon king or one of his wives.....

Even though the leader was anticipating that, the one who showed their figure brazenly without even hiding was,

「The demon king's subordinate, rank ten of Fleur Knights——I am called Freesia.」

A beautiful maid.

Pure white hair that was like snow springing up at night. Beautiful face that was so well featured like a joke. The eyes that were shining crimson were bewitching, to the degree that for a moment it felt like the heart was seized for a moment despite her expressionless face.

The force's members who were the elites among elites gulped their saliva in a daze.

But at that time, perhaps it was just as expected from the leader. He immediately made his judgment. "Demon king's subordinate" —it wasn't the time to falter anymore. There was no option of retreat, they could only do it.

「Fire-!」

The leader pulled his trigger while yelling at the same time. The troops who came back to their senses in surprise also immediately pulled their trigger.

While the firing sound that was unique to sound suppressor was leaking out, the maid who introduced herself as Freesia who was being showered by rain of bullets was——

「Kuh, it won't be simple as expected!」

A huge variable shield that was unknown where it was hidden at instantly unfolded, blocking the all-out fire without the slightest tremor.

The hard impact sound of metal clashing with each other echoed inside the forest.

「Grenade! Alpha 4, launcher!」

Seeing that there was no meaning in being secretive anymore, the leader decided to up the firepower. Two troopers threw grenade with deft motion.

Immediately, roaring sound and explosion blast, and then blown up cloud of dust enveloped the maid. Further there, a bullet from a rifle with grenade launcher attached impacted. Flame blast enveloped the girl.

The leader made hand signal to tell the troops to stop firing temporarily.

A beat later, when the dust cloud and flame cleared up——

There was a metallic globe there.

Similar like Hajime's variable large shield Aidion, it was a type that unfolded to all directions.

*Kashon kashon kashon* The shield was folded into the size of normal shield while making nice sound. With the Aidion in one hand, Freesia elegantly brushed off her apron.

Not a single scratch. Far from that, whether that pure white apron or her long straight hair that was split at the center also wasn't dirtied at all.

「-, spread out! 5 to 9, hold her in place!」

The leader left his subordinates to hold back the enemy while the main force would move to accomplish their objective. They couldn't defeat her, or even if they could, they would receive damage in the level that would become serious hindrance in accomplishing their duty. The decision to sacrifice some subordinates was made because of that judgment.

There was no way the troops would harbor dissatisfaction at that judgment of the leader. They were able to take action swiftly.....was how it should be.

「? How long you guys plan to act dumfounded! Come back to your senses!」

The team's Alpha 5-9 didn't reply. The leader who wouldn't avert his gaze from the threat named Freesia raised a scolding voice that was filled with irritation toward his subordinates who didn't respond right away.

But, as expected no reply came back.

「This is Alpha 4. 5 till 9 are lost-」

「-, 12! Is he there!?!」

「No-, I don't see him! 10 as well as 11 are also lost! Until just now they were right beside——」

The voice disappeared. A cold sweat trailed down the leader's forehead. He quickly gave instruction and 2 until 4 who were around him changed their formation slightly to cover each other's back.

「They got us. So you're a decoy.」

「A sharp discernment.」

The answer came from Freesia, not, it was a voice that sounded more childish. Furthermore, the voice came from the side.

The one who appeared as though melting out from the forest's darkness was a new maid.

「Nice to meet you. Fleur Knights rank 2——I am called Nemesia.」

「.....A, a child? Or rather, ra, rabbit ears?」

The leader's gaze involuntarily flowed completely toward the new maid.

That was understandable. The girl still looked like she was in her early teens from a glance, and even with overestimation she would only be 15 at most. Her appearance was really cute, but it wasn't her age or appearance that should be focused at. But the thing above her head, the splendid, fluffy——rabbit ears!

A Hauria.

Her real name was Nea Hauria. A girl the same age with Par-kun, her nickname was “Neashutatum of the External Murder”, but right now she was Nemesia. (AN: This girl appeared in the LN version)

When Hauria clan heard that one of them would be recruited into a maid group to work *directly under* the demon king, a great fray among the whole clan (limited to female) that lasted for three months occurred. The result was unexpectedly this Nea repelled all the Onee-san and grasped the glory for herself.

She was rank two from the comprehensive evaluation and various reasons, but regarding secret information ability and assassination ability she was at the top. She put her name in the top 3 even in pure combat ability despite being a rabbit clan, and recently she even made inroad into the struggle for the top rank in femininity. She was young elite.

「Your comrades has been moved. Are you still going to struggle?」

The leader couldn't answer after Freesia opened her mouth once more.

Right beside him was the maid who most likely drove the force into a state of annihilation soundlessly while the force was attacking Freesia.

At the front, was a maid who couldn't be harmed at all by firearm.

At this rate, they would simply get annihilated.....

The leader looked around his remaining subordinates just for a moment. His lips suddenly twisted and he lowered his rifle muzzle.....

「My apologies. My words were lacking. ——You will be crushed even if you struggle.」

「Eh?」

Freesia thrust both her hands forward. Right after that, both her arms transformed. *Kashun kashun kashun* With that sound, the arms became gatling gun in the blink of eye. The very arms themselves. No matter how they looked she wasn't human.

The leader who saw that raised a dry laugh while,

「That's why, even though I told them this is bad」

Before the mission, toward his superior.

Right after that, the fury of the gatling gun covered them fully along with cloud of dust.

Also, the rank ten Freesia was a human shaped Grim reaper that was fully loaded with a lot of artifacts inside her body——pile bunker, small sunlight convergence laser, missile, super vibration death scythe (large caliber shotgun attached), flying all range ordnance, and so on. She was the grand sum of Hajime's romance——a maid robot.

—

—

—

After that, the forces of many countries received maid's attack altogether and they were helplessly annihilated.

The following forces were also crushed without leaving any behind. Fukube and his subordinates who were watching that sight from the surveillance system made a firm oath to not harbor anymore illusion toward maid for the

second time.

—

—

—

A few days later.

The top of each country who made plan about Liliana——ten people were gathering in a certain place while they were all cordially sweating coldly like waterfall together.

It was a lineup that would make one wonder if an international summit would begin here, but the gathering this time was completely unofficial.

On the contrary, they weren't gathering for negotiation or cooperating with each other.

To be more accurate they were gathered. *Forcefully*. All within these few minutes.

The top of a certain country who had only taken over after his predecessor not so long ago glanced at the cause, or rather the culprit.

「Perhaps you have any business with this one?」

「.....No.」

‘Rather, it’s you who got business with us!’ Was how the leader wanted to tsukkomi, but he didn’t want to stir up the hornet nest so he shook his head.

That person——a maid was standing by silently once more near the wall.

Yes, that maid was exactly the culprit who abducted a leader of a country.

Just when he thought that a maid suddenly appeared behind him, he suddenly ate a fist to the guts, and when he noticed he was inside a spacious room that he didn’t know where it was located.

And then, he believed that the leaders of other countries most likely also went through the same thing like him.

Because standing behind each of the leader of each country who was made to



sit around a round table, were maids who seemed to be in charge of the leader in front of them.

Every single one of the maids was a beauty who would make anyone to be taken aback in surprise and their breath stolen away. Anyone who was a man would surely get their eyes reeled in.

But, naturally no one had the composure to admire the view.

(Former president Schwarzenegger. I was wrong calling your attitude weak. I should listen to your warning.....)

He rubbed his stomach that still felt a bit hurt while murmuring in his heart. When he looked closer, it seemed the other people were also oddly concerned with their stomach. It appeared everyone ate a punch to the guts.

This was where he wanted to say just what they were doing to the leader of a country, but the person who would come after this was a monster who would crush the unreasonableness brought by country with even more unreasonableness to have his own way.

「Forgive my rudeness but, just now, are you perhaps thinking of something strange?」

「N, noo, I'm not thinking anything!」

「Is that so.....my apologies.」

The maid was too sharp. And then too terrifying. An aura of wrath leaked out for a moment, no it was a killing intent. The amount of his cold sweat doubled from that. It was already a waterfall. It was as though he was getting showered.

When he glanced at the clock, it would soon be the time that was told to him.

*Tick tock*, the sound of clock's hand was strangely reverberating.

Before long, the time arrived.

Without any advance warning, all the maids moved in front of the door simultaneously. Without making a single sound of footstep, they split to left and right with five people on each side. Their posture was beautiful.

「The lord has come. ....Don't you all know manner?」

The maid——Heliotrope-san emitted a gruesome killing intent!

The leaders of the countries simultaneously stood up! Cold sweat was flowing from them to the degree that there was a worry of dehydration!

A beat later, Heliotrope opened the door with a reverent gesture. His majesty the demon king who showed his figure was.....

「O, ouu?」

Leaking out a bewildered voice that sounded slightly creeped out.

He gave the order to gather the ringleaders of the case this time because he wanted to talk to them, but the moment the door was opened, the maids were lining up in good order while bowing their head, furthermore the leaders of each country were lowering their head with face that looked like they had seen death. Especially while they were sweating so much it caused Hajime to be taken aback!

Even the demon king——Hajime-san too was a bit surprised.

*Cough* Hajime cleared his throat. He entered inside after pulling himself together.

There, a spasming voice rose from among the wive~s who were accompanying him together.

「Ve, Venri!? Thy, what art thy doing in this kind of place!?!」

「I am a maid, princess.」

Well, of course. She was wearing maid uniform after all.

‘That’s not what I wisheth to ask!!’ Tio stamped her feet in frustration.

Real name Venri. Her true identity was a dragonman. Furthermore, she was Tio’s wet nurse. An existence that wouldn’t be an exaggeration even if she was called as her second mother. (TN: Appeared in the extra story of LN vol 3)

Such existence was being her husband’s maid when she noticed!

No, she was from a clan that was serving Klarus family for many generations, so it wasn’t strange even if she was serving Hajime now, but still! ‘Still, still, I di~dn’t hear anything about this thy know!?’ Tio argued vehemently, but Venri

or rather Fleur Knights rank three Ivy-san only smiled sweetly. (TN: Until now I have been using Claus for Tio's surname, changing it to Klarus here cause it seemed I have misread the reading until now)

In addition, she was older than Tio so originally she was woman that looked like past her middle age, but now no matter how Tio looked at her, she looked like she was around the middle of her thirtieth. She felt like an attractive mature lady who was overflowing with motherhood and sex appeal. No matter how Tio saw it, her age was rejuvenated.

It couldn't be helped that even Tio whose mental strength was at cheat level got flustered.

Tio was going to speak further, but before she could, this time it was Shia who raised her voice.

「Nea-chan!? Don't tell me, don't tell me even Nea-chan!？」

「I am a maid, Shia-oneesama.」

Well, of course. She was wearing maid uniform after all.

And then Liliana asked further with a gesture as though she was enduring a headache.

「Excuse me~, could it be that you are her highness the imperial princess of the empire, Tracy D Hoelscher?」

「I am a maid, Liliana-sama.」

Well, of course. She was wearing maid uniform after all. 'I get it. This pattern. I'm used to it already! Even if it's an imperial princess of the empire, furthermore it's a princess who is famous for being a war hawk even among the imperial family, yes, that's right isn't it! You are a maid aren't you!'

The maid imperial princess-sama——or rather Fleur Knights rank 7 Torenia was chuckling 「Ufufu」 bewitchingly. In respond Liliana also smiled back 「Long time no see, ufufu~」looking like she had abandoned everything.

Naturally, because Liliana had obtained such immunity that she didn't make any tsukkomi or anything when at the corner of her sight she caught sight of one other person who she recognized. Even if for example that person looked

exactly the same like the captain of the kingdom's knight order, Kuzeri Rail!

「He, hey, Shizuku-chan. No matter how I see it, that can only be Kuzeri-san though.」

「Kaori, what a coincidence. I also see it like that.」

It seemed Liliana wasn't mistaken. By the way, she was rank 4. It was something terribly concerning about who was the present knight order captain of the kingdom. Though Liliana wanted to believe that the seat wasn't empty by all means.

While feeling the gazes that insisted 「Give us detailed explanation!」 from everyone, especially Tio, Hajime returned his gaze toward the country leaders who were looking at each other's face idly.

「Now then, why are all of you gathered in this place, you all should understand the situation already.」

The atmosphere changed. There was an abnormal pressure that even felt like it was giving physical pressure.

When Hajime moved forward, the transcendental maids who annihilated the force they dispatched and abducted them without regards of the existing security were standing by behind him.

That figure which was clad in black based attire and served upon by combat maid group——

「Demon king.....」

Someone muttered.

「Well then, let's have a talk. Rationally, peacefully, just like cultured people, agreed?」

Hearing those words, the expression of the leaders who thought that surely they would be killed just like this and were seeking for a chance to make excuse became a bit anticlimax. Some had their toughness that was fitting as the leader of a country restored thinking that perhaps there was ground for negotiation.

Right after that, they became aware that it was only their misunderstanding.

「And? Whose relative do you guys think you are trying to lay your hand on huuh?」

Black wind blew. It was an overwhelmingly ominous pressure that made them hallucinated that. They saw the vision of their heart being tightly grasped!

How were they going to pay to settle this?

Nobody was able to answer that “first discussion”.

—

—

—

And then, when the hindrances were gone, how far “Liliana’s aid network” went after that, that would be a different story.

The excellent secretary who was supporting such Liliana from both the shadow and in the sun——Sandra Winchester-san, was actually Heliotrope-san in disguise, furthermore all of the executive staffs who were moving behind the scene of Heiligh Volunteer Association in various things were actually people with principal occupation of maid from another world. That too was also another story.

The combat maid group of the demon king reaching even further growth, was also another story.

—

---

AN: Once more, thank you very much for this whole year!

Please take care of me too the next year!

By the way, I’ll explain a bit about the various things that came out in this chapter.

- Another world version chess & Oscar’s maid golem

=> It’s a content that came out a bit in the special perk SS of volume 1.

I’m thinking that it will be nice if someday I can correct and revise the SS chapters too and publish them.

- Kuzeri Rail

=> She came out a bit at volume 6 and the first chapter of Kouki arc in After Story.

The knight order captain who succeeded after Meld. The former imperial guards captain of Liliana.

Why did she become demon king's maid? I'm thinking that it will be great if I can write in around Tortus Travel Journal ② or ③.

In Tortus Travel Journal, they will follow the path Hajime has taken, while at the same time

It might also be the story where the members of Fleur Knights make appearance.

- Venri

=> She made appearance in the extra story of volume 3. She is Tio's wet nurse and served Klarus family. A gentle lady with strong heart.

However, she is from dragonman clan so she is also strong physically.

- Nea

=> Made appearance in volume 7. A friend of the same age with Par-kun—Balthoferd of Certain Death.

Her figure that was fully covered in wound while yelling 「I WOONN~~!」 in guts pose had become legendary.

Sooner or later, when all the members of Fleur Knights had come out in After Story, I will make their introduction list.

The rank 8 and 9 hasn't come out yet, but it's simply because I haven't gotten any idea yet, so if anyone has request 「Show this kind of character!」, then please.

Perhaps I will make the character appear in After Story then lol

# Arifureta Chapter 298

## Arifureta After III New Year Special Planning Tortus Travel Journal ②

—

AN: Congratulations for the opening of the New Year!

Please take care of me for this whole year too!

Please enjoy this chapter for a leisurely time of New Year~

※ There was update in 30<sup>th</sup> and 31<sup>st</sup> too. Those who haven't read them please be careful.

—

---

The “World Door” that connected earth and Tortus.

Hajime who somehow settled down the chaos that was produced on the top of the tower that was built adjacent to the palace finally led everyone to go down the tower.

Cheers rose inside the lift that was moving using magic power. The tension of fellow parents heightened from the aftertaste and they talked to each other. Hajime gave a glance at them while opening the door that was connected to the palace.

Then, right after that,

「Hajime-san!」

*Pata pata pata* The sound of footsteps and the voice calling Hajime's name with overflowing joy resounded.

「Lily. That's quic—oops」

Hajime was going to comment how fast she came to receive them, but before he could finish, Liliana leaped onto his chest so his words were stopped.

Hajime lightly directed away the impact and received her *pofuh* on his chest. There Liliana showed him a wide smile. She was already in a state where she saw nothing else except Hajime. Her atmosphere felt like there were hearts floating up buoyantly.

「.....Nn. The person who forthrightly ignored us and charged at Hajime right now is the princess of this Heiligh Kingdom, Liliana S B Heiligh-san.」 (TN: So far I also used Hairihi as the name of the kingdom, now I decided to change it into something cooler sounding)

Yue who seemed to intend to continue being tour guide Yue without change gave introduction while her index finger pressed on Liliana's cheek and grinded.

「Fuwa!? Everyone, all together! Please excuse my rudeness.」

Liliana kept up the appearance as a lady while it was already too late. Her cheeks were blushing while she gracefully separated herself from Hajime. Then she gave a greeting with a lovely courtesy.

「Lily-chan! Long time no see! You're healthy?」

「Hahaha, you're still a princess as ever.」

「Sumire-okaasama, Shuu-otousama. It has been a while. Thank you very much for welcoming me at that time.」

Actually, Liliana had already met Sumire and Shuu.

As expected, although she was one of the wive~s, it would be too pitiful for Liliana if she wasn't even introduced to Sumire and Shuu face to face until they went to Tortus someday, so although it was only for a short time Hajime called Liliana to earth instead.

At that time, the entrance of a real princess from another world, furthermore that princess was a wife of their son caused Sumire and Shuu's tension to climb



up drastically. They prepared a warm welcome using every method available for Liliana.

Liliana was even more nervous to give a greeting to Hajime's parents than when she was doing government affairs, but the two's unexpected reception caused her to spontaneously be moved to tears.

Liliana's appearance in dress, the refinement that could be felt from her even without her doing anything, and then the tiara that was snugly placed on her head and so on, it was obvious just from a glance that she was a princess. Tomoichi and co, the parent~s who saw a princess of another world for the first time were staring with emotional gaze.

No, it was only Tomoichi who while feeling emotional was also sending glances at Hajime that seemed to want to say 「This bastard. So there is still more girl he had laid his hand on-」.

Hajime smiled wryly while saying.

「.....Tomoichi-san. I believe I have mentioned about Lily before.」

「Really sorry, Hajime-kun. When I heard that you have other woman other than my angel, my heart was completely dyed with killing intent then.」

And so, he didn't hear most of the story. Or rather, he immediately assaulted Hajime at that time. Right after that he ate a backdrop from my angel and his consciousness was blown away.

Tomoichi-san mumbled about such fault-finding while attempting to calm his heart.

Kaoruko left alone her husband who was like that and walked toward Liliana.

「So you are Lily-chan, no, Liliana-sama. I often heard about you from my daughter. She said that you racked your brains very much for them all in the middle of the terrible situation. Please let me express my gratitude.」

Kaoruko said that and bowed her head. Tomoichi hurriedly stood by her side and lowered his head, and then everyone of Yaegashi family and also Akiko altogether lowered their head saying 「Thank you for what you had done for our children」.

Liliana opened her mouth in panic.

「Such thing, please lift your head, all of you. We were the one who involved them into our world's circumstance. It's only natural for me to do everything that I could. Besides, what someone like me had done were only trivial things compared to the things that Kaori and everyone else had done for us.」

Liliana gently put her hand on Kaoruko's shoulder and made her lifted her face, she also prompted the others to lift their head too. Liliana smiled sweetly with a warm gaze.

「Everyone's daughter is this country's.....no, this world's savior. I should be the one who say thanks. My heartfelt gratitude for having raising these wonderful people. I express my thanks as the representative of this world's people.」

‘In addition, being able to become friend with everyone, being able to fight together with them, those are things that I will be proud of for my lifetime.’  
Saying that Liliana bowed her heads deeply and displayed her gratitude to the parents.

Kaoruko and Tomoichi, Shuuzou and Koichi and Kirino, and then Akiko too, they were staring at Liliana wordlessly. Even Sumire and Shuu who were already given the same words from her were staring at Liliana with an expression that were at loss for words.

Every single one of them felt the surge of indescribable emotion in the back of their heart. It was close to a deep emotion, perhaps it was delight, however, it was a surge of feeling that was bigger that couldn't be described with word.

This person said to them that she was proud to be able to meet their children. That she was grateful that they raised their children into such people.

As a parent, there was no greater gift than this.

When glancing to the side, Kaori and Shizuku and Aiko were blushing slightly with embarrassment while their gazes were averted to other directions.

Tomoichi and others smiled slightly at their children's state, and then they lowered their head even deeper than before toward the princess of another world who gifted them with such lovely words and,

「We too, thank you.」

They said.

‘I see. So this is a real princess.’ The parent~s were in acceptance. Amidst that Liliana opened her mouth with bright voice to change the atmosphere slightly.

「And, for everyone to visit here.....」

「Yeah, just as Lily guessed, it’s for sightseeing. Tou-san and Kaa-san threw a tantrum asking for that.」

Hajime shrugged his shoulders and replied like that. Liliana chuckled hearing that. And then, 「If it’s something like that」 she puffed up her chest with overflowing motivation.

「Then, I will have to give hospitality to the best of my ability. Hajime-san, what kind of plan do you have?」

「We haven’t really decide anything. If we are traveling normally, then no matter how much time we have available it won’t be enough, so I’m thinking to decide a base and then use gate to guide them to every place.」

「If that is the case then please, stay in this palace by all mean.」

「Yeah, I was thinking to ask you that though.....」

「Yes, please leave it to me.」

It seemed that it would be Liliana herself who would receive them, so Hajime’s expression turned a bit worried.

After all, Liliana was super busy. She was the one who practically managed this country. It wasn’t so clear without focusing closely, but there was faint shadow visible under her eyes. It was skillfully hidden using cosmetic, but she should be tired that some sign had appeared on her face.

「Are you all right? You are being pressed with work right? We can take care of ourselves you know?」

「No no, please don’t mind it. After all the work won’t end at all whether I rest for a bit or doesn’t rest at all!」

「.....」

How could she say 「The work won't end!」 with such bright voice?

The occupation “princess” seemed to be a really black type of occupation. Sadness was pooling inside everyone's eyes.

「Now now everyone. First please let me introduce my mother and little brother. Okaasama earnestly wished to meet with Sumire-okaasama and Shuu-otousama. Not just to Okaasama, please allow me to introduce the family of the heroes to other people too by all means!」

Liliana led them in high spirits. Hajime and co looked at each other with a bit of wry smile seeing her like that, even so they obediently followed her.

Although the capital was in the middle of reconstruction, because the palace was a building that would become the country's symbol, and then because it was the symbol of the reborn kingdom that surpassed the hedge of race in the new world, its construction was done the fastest with most effort poured into it.

Because of that, although there was no air of history that could be felt compared to the previous palace, it still had impressiveness that would move the emotion, especially for Japanese people who in the first place had never seen the inside of a western type palace.

Like Tomoichi, with his occupation as an architect his gaze was moving around busily with deep interest. His wife and daughter chuckled smilingly at him.

「Hmm, just how many hidden route and mechanism are here.....my blood is seething.」

Grandpa

「Ojii-chan.....I wish you will focus a bit more to other aspect though.」

Shuuzou's gaze was also busily moving around, but it seemed he wasn't observing the building's construction, but it was her heart of adventure that wished to discover hidden route. Looking there, Koichi and Kirino were also concentrating with the feeling like 「I will be the one who find out the most!」.

They completely ignored Shizuku's exasperated face.

Midway, they passed several servants, civil officials, and military officers. Seeing their peculiar conduct, Sumire and Shuu turned grinning expression

toward their son.

「Fufu, it's itchy somehow isn't it?」

「Ahaha, after seeing that kind of conduct from close by, you are really the demon king-sama huh.」

「.....It's not like that title is self-proclaimed you know?」

Each time they passed someone, those people would naturally moved aside to both sides of the corridor and lowered their head. After all among them there was Liliana of the royal family.

But, everyone noticed it. The people's gazes weren't directed to Liliana, but mainly to Hajime.

The moment they saw Hajime, their body would turn stiff without exception. It was apparent that their stiffness wasn't caused by fear, but from being filled with awe.

After all, them bowing their deeply didn't look like they were being forced at all. Every single one of them thought from their heart that they should do so, it was clear just from seeing them. Reverent atmosphere was overflowing from their whole body.

In addition, mainly among the maids, the heat residing inside the females' eyes was amazing. Although they didn't make any obvious move of flattery, their extraordinary emotion was transparent to see.

Indeed, if such attitude and eyes were directed toward their son, as parents it surely couldn't be helped that they would be writhing a bit from pride and also itchiness.

Hajime didn't pay any mind at all to the attitude of the palace's people, but as expected he was bothered by the gazes and expressions from his parents and the other parents, so he averted his gaze with a really complicated look.

Then, when they arrived at a crossroad, Hajime's averted gaze caught sight of a maid coming from the corridor ahead.

Different from other people, she didn't stop and lowered her head or moved aside toward the wall, but approached near in a straight line.

「Liliana-sama.」

「Hellina!」

The woman with long dark brown hair swaying behind her and smooth footsteps approaching them was Liliana's personal maid Hellina. She was quite tall for a woman with straight posture, her smiling expression was also filled with refinement. As expected from someone who was picked as the princess's personal attendant, she was a beautiful woman who would make anyone accept it.

The moment that Hellina turned her gaze to the group of Hajime and co, she bowed with a beautiful motion that would also make anyone got taken aback and continued her words.

「Liliana-sama. Luluaria-sama wish to receive a bit of time for preparing right now. If you are going to introduce everyone, then perhaps you should first go to where Randell-sama is.」

「Eh? Ah, you're right.」

Thinking carefully, something like a sudden visit without any contact beforehand shouldn't be done when the other party was a queen of a country.

Luluaria was a woman with tolerant and gentle disposition, but as exacted, it would be troubling for her to suddenly meet the family of the heroes who were their benefactor without any preparation whatsoever. As a queen, it was necessary for her to prepare the appropriate appearance. To say nothing of how this would be their first meeting, it would be even more important.

Noticing that, Liliana's cheeks blushed thinking how she was slightly too high spirited and she casted her eyes down.

「Hellina, about contacting Okaasama.....looking at you it seems you have already done it haven't you?」

「Yes. Right away after the bell of the gate opening rang.」

Hellina understood that Liliana would immediately rush away without even giving attention to anything else. She didn't come together with Liliana despite being her personal attendant was for the sake of arranging all the preparations

beforehand.

Truly an excellent maid.

The entrance of a genuine maid (the meaning here was in broader sense) of another world and what's more a maid that looked like in a class of her own caused Sumire and Shuu's eyes to blaze fierily. Their tension kept rising up without stopping.

But there, Liliana suddenly showed a questioning face.

「Hm? I'm thankful that you got in touch with Okaasama but.....Hellina, you knew about the visit of Sumire-okaasama and everyone else?」

Hajime and co had met with Luluaria several times, so if it was with someone among them, Luluaria too wouldn't prepare her appearance meticulously every single time. They had built such lighthearted relation between them.

For Hellina to intentionally get in touch with Luluaria meant that right after the "bell of gate opening" rang, she was aware that Hajime and co arrived with their family this time.

How? It was only natural to feel doubt about that.

The answer to that was immediately showed from the words of the sweetly smiling Hellina after that.

「Hajime-sama. As you commanded, I have arranged for the rooms, lunch, and so forth. Where will you all have your lunch?」

「For now, it will be after we look around the capital in general. We haven't decide the specific.」

「Understood. Then, please contact me again at that time. Also——」

「Wa-wa-wa-waaa~~~t a second!」

Liliana-san intercepted.

She cut in with a pose as though she was doing Kabaddi between the two who was conversing like they understood each other as though it was only natural.

「What do you mean by command? Since when?」

「I had received an artifact for communication from Hajime-sama, so right

after the gate opening, I took action following the command that I was given. That's all.」

「Just now I told you that we can take care of ourselves right?」

‘What are you doubting at?’ Hajime and Hellina both tilted their head harmoniously.

「Artifact for communication? Wait, don't tell me it's the broach Hellina is wearing!? It has crimson jewel attached and looks like it's something really expensive, so perhaps spring has also come for Hellina!? Was what I thought but, don't tell me that's an artifact!? What's more it's Hajime-san's!? I don't receive anything like that you know!?」

Hellina-san smiled sweetly to the shaken princess.

「Hajime-sama. About the aforementioned matter, my deepest apologies. I've never thought that your arrival will be this fast, the writing of the list is still not finished yet.」

「Don't worry about it. This is also an unexpected trip for me after all.」

「Much obliged. For the moment, 80 percent of it is finished. I brought that part with me. Will you look at it?」

「80 percent? That's fast..... Fine then, I'll take a look at it at night.」

「Then, here it is.」

Beside the ignored Liliana, the two did a transfer of some kind of document. After Hajime briefly ran his gaze on the document, a faint smile emerged on his mouth.

「You did well compiling this. This quality in this short time..... Good work.」

「I'm honored.」

Again she was bowing her head beautifully, the exclusive lady attendant of princess Liliana——Hellina-san.

「E, eeh? Hellina? Hellina is my attendant right? That's right isn't it?」

「? But of course, Liliana-sama.」

It was very suspicious.



Everyone there thought so. Doubtful expression and fixed stare were sent to Hajime from the wive~s, and then grinning face from Sumire and Shuu, sharp gaze from Tomoichi, and for some reason admiring gaze from the other parents.

「Goshujin-sama, if thou wish to hath beautiful woman to abide by thee so much, then look, the best woman for it is here thou see? Give me command to thy heart content without reservation! Now, now!」

The greedy disappointing dragon who couldn't hold herself back approached with rough breathing.

「.....Hajime, as I thought you like maid? Should I wear maid uniform?」

「Papa, do you like maid-san nano? Then, Myuu too will wear maid uniform nano!」

「My my, Hajime-san too is a man isn't he? Ufufu.」

「Uu, I have been worried about the relation of Hajime-kun with the maids in the palace since before but.....to think, he is already progressing until this far. A failure!」(Kaori)

「Hajime, that, it's not a strange relationship isn't it? It's not right?」(Shizuku)

「La, laying your hand on the maids is no good! Hajime-kun! Do you understand!?」(Aiko)

The questioning wive~s.

Hajime sighed as though to say 'just what are you all saying' while storing the document into the Treasure Warehouse. And then, he turned toward Hellina who was waiting with graceful air without being perturbed even by the commotion, then his hand quietly gestured to the side.

It seemed to be a signal that told "Leave". Hellina quietly bowed her head, then she quietly left.

「Ha, Hajime-san feel more like her master than me.....」

It went without saying that Liliana felt down after that.

—  
—

While Hajime was receiving really complicated look from the wife~s and the parent~s, the group finally arrived at the room of Liliana's little brother and the next king Randell.

The throne was still empty because Randell's enthronement would be matched with the timing of the festival of the reconstruction completion. The thinking was that it would be a really good omen for the new king to be enthroned at the rebirth of the kingdom.

And so, currently Randell was spending every day immersing himself in study for his enthronement.

Even now he was receiving lecture from his instructor in his room.

「Randell. It's me. Do you have time right now?」

When Liliana knocked the door and asked, a dubious sounding voice replied back from inside the room.

Elder sister

「Ane-ue? Of course I don't mind but.....」

Randell was suspicious because even though the "bell of gate opening" had rang out, and yet Liliana came to his place not so long after that. Because when the bell rang, then that "hateful son of a bitch" was undoubtedly here.

That "son of a bitch", basically if he didn't have business he wouldn't come visiting Randell by his own initiative. Most of the time it would be Randell who go to where he was to snarl and curse at him.

And so, surely Randell was thinking that this was unusual. Such feeling was oozing from his voice.

In the place of Randell, the old instructor who served as his private tutor opened the door.

And then Hajime's group came into view. The old instructor's eyes opened wide and Randell who was sitting at the back raised a shocked voice 「Bya!?!」 and his body leaped up.

「Randell, and then Sagesse-sensei too. Forgive me to disturb in the middle of the lesson. The families of Hajime-san and everyone are coming to play so I'm thinking to introduce them.」

「Wha-, the parents of the bastard!?!」

「Truly! Then I have to give my greeting by all means.」

Sagesse-sensei showed pure surprise and delight, but Randell was obviously showing vigilance other than surprise. It seemed that his agitation was great that the way he called Hajime inside his heart came out from his mouth carelessly.

Hajime and co entered inside Randell's study room in groups.

There was nothing particular inside the room, even so Sumire and co ran their gaze inside the room curiously. And then, Randell's state that was like a completely vigilant cat for some reason caused interested attention to gather on him.

Perhaps because he was in the middle of studying, Randell's outfit was casual and simple. He didn't look formal at all, so he only looked like a cheeky rascal. His look was that of a pretty boy just as expected from Liliana's little brother, that he gave off a striking impression.

Yue came forward like usual.

「.....Everyone, the one you can see here is the next king of this country, the little brother of Liliana, Randell-kun. She was head over heel toward Kaori for a period of time, but the king of insensitivity Kaori unhesitatingly ignored him, and in the end without any awareness she stabbed him messily with blades of words, reducing his first love into misery.」

「Yue!?!」

While Kaori quickly turned toward Yue and raised her voice, Randell-kun who got various thing about himself exposed got stabbed by Yue's blades of words. His hands pressed his chest, he groaned 「guhah」 while falling on all fours.

Shizuku and others who knew about the time that Yue mentioned smiled wryly, but the mothers went 「My!」 with their eyes sparkling from hearing the

prince's first love story.

「Geez-, Yue, don't say strange thing! That's impolite toward his highness Randell! Even though she was only looking up to me and Shizuku-chan who were close with Lily. Even I wouldn't do anything terrible like ignoring him or anything! I thought of him like a cute little brother who is a bit naughty!」

「Kufuuh」

「Your highneeees! Get a hold of yourself! It's something that is over already isn't iiit!」

A further blow at this late from Kaori who still didn't notice Randell's feeling yet.

Everyone there thought. In various senses, it was you Kaori who was being rude.

「Hmmm. Should I be happy that a prince of a country fell in love with my daughter..... Or else, should I feel indignation that pest will appear no matter where it is.....」

「Dear. Before that we have to apologize to the prince first. If the situation was always like that while he was taking care of everyone in this world here..... it's just too much for the prince.」

Shirasaki married couple. Although it was from different angle but they were also made to worry about their daughter.

「Mu, Kaori's parents..... There is no need for concern.」

Prince Randell. Even though he was trembling like a baby deer that only just got born, but he stood up by his own strength!

「Let me introduce myself once more. I am a man who won't look back to the past! Randell S B Heiligh! The next king of this Heiligh Kingdom!」

「No, your highness. I always taught you to please properly reflect on your past.」

Prince Randell threw out his chest proudly with a triumphant look. Something like the accurate tsukkomi of Instructor Sagesse didn't mean anything for him.

Anyway, Sumire and co read the mood and gave applause 「Oo~」.

The old instructor Sageesse also introduced himself, after that Sumire and co also introduced themselves. When the introduction was over, Sumire raised her hand 「Question!」 energetically asking for permission to ask something.

Prince Randell's vigilance was heightened. Somehow, it looked like his silky blonde hair was standing on end.

「A, a question to me? Bri, bring it on. I won't run away! Come at me!」

「Kufuu! Prince Randell is adorable——cough. Honorable prince! What do you think about my son?」

It seemed that the voice of heart that leaked out at the first half was small and didn't reach Randell. Randell didn't look particularly offended and his expression became really complicated hearing the question at the later half.

「The basta——cough. Na, Nagumo, do-do-dono-, what do I think about him, is it.....」

‘He don't want to call his name by that much.....?’ While everyone was thinking that, Randell was oddly sweating while desperately searching for words.

And then, his gaze glanced at the Hajime in question——

「Myu?」

「Myu, Myuu! So you also came.....」

It seemed that the shock and agitation from the arrival of Hajime and Kaori's parents caused him to not notice Myuu who was behind Hajime. The prince's cheeks were dyed red for some reason after seeing Myuu who showed her face suddenly from behind Hajime.

「Randell~, long time no see nano~」

「Yo, you are still, talking like that toward meee~. I am the next king you know!?!」

Myuu waved her hand repeatedly with friendly smile. In respond Prince Randell was surprised again for some reason. His gaze darted around while he

spoke frankly.

Myuu tilted her head cutely and asked.

「It's no good, nano?」

「Eh!? I, it's not no good but.....」

「Then it's fine nano.」

「Bu, buuut, like it's too candid, or it cannot be shown in front of other people.....in the first place, I am the older one!」

It was common knowledge that Myuu was the beloved daughter of the demon king, so hiding behind his position could be said as strange. And so, by making the fact that he was older by four years old as good excuse, he used it as reason and spoke mumblingly but.....

「But, Lily-oneechan told Myuu, “Myuu-chan is more adult than Randell mentally aren't you”, you see nano.」

「Ane-ueee!?!」

Liliana-san averted her gaze aside.

The other people somehow guessed what kind of feeling Randel harbored toward Myuu from his attitude, so the mothers got sparkling eyes once more from the premonition of the prince's love, but other people were making pitying expression that said 「Again, really what a hardship he got」.

Since just now Myuu was staring at Randell with head tilted in puzzlement 'Just what do you want to say?', Randell's calm was gradually disappearing against such Myuu. *Fidget fidget, fidget fidget.*

Perhaps unable to look on quietly, this time Kaoruko who loved shoujo manga and love story asked a question with the intention of giving timely help to Randell.

「Say Myuu-chan. Is Myuu-chan close with his highness Randell?」

「Yep. We are friend nano!」

「Fri, friend.....I'm a friend.....」

Randell looked happy, or unsatisfied..... *Fidget fidget, fidget fidget.*

「I seee, you two are friend. Your highness Randell, he look kind, and his age is also close to Myuu-chan.」

‘As expected from Kaori’s mother! Are you a goddess!?’ Randell’s gaze seemed to want to say that.

As though in agreement, Myuu grinned cheerfully while nodding. ‘Good. My time has come!’ His expression also seemed to want to say that too.

Kaoruko who still only knew about Myuu from her daughter’s hearsay knew that Myuu was a child who loved her papa.

But, she didn’t know as far as the *depth of that love*. She was thinking that it was like 「When I’m older, I’ll become papa’s wife~」 the a little child would often say. She was thinking with common sense.

And so, imagining the love between a little girl in the city with a young prince, she spoke with sparkling eyes.

「I seee. Ufufu, could it be, perhaps there will be a future where Myuu-chan become a queen. That’s if you get even closer with his highness Randell, right?」

Randell’s cheeks became bright red. He was about to say 「Kaoruko-dono! Mo, more than that is——」, but.....

Myuu who seemed to guess the meaning of Kaoruko’s words spoke as though to pour cold water on it.

「There ain’t such a future nano.」

「Eh?」

「Eh?」

Kaoruko and Prince Randell, their eyes turned into a dot together. Hajime and co covered their eyes as though to say 「Oh dear~」, while the parents other than Sumire and Shuu gazed in wonderment.

That was understandable.

After all, Myuu who was always full of energy with wide smile on her face was now making a terribly serious face.

Kaoruko added on her words even while feeling shaken.

「Bu, but you are close with his highness Randell——」

Kaori tried to stop with 「O, Okaa-san, let's stop there」, but it was already too late. The blades of words were fired once more.

「Myuu will marry papa.」

「You really like your papa aren't you? but, his highness Randell is also——」

「It's impossible.」

The serious faced Myuu. The serious heart that was conveyed to everyone whether they wanted it or not.

And then the resounding scream of heart.

「GOD DAMN IT ALLLLLLLLLLLL-」

「Your highneess! Don't do anything rash!」

Randell-kun, he fell on all fours and said 「Again! It's you agaiiiinn! I realized it a bit though!」 while hitting the floor repeatedly.

A really complicated atmosphere drifted inside the room.

Perhaps feeling responsible for that, Kaoruko was all flustered.

Here there was one thing. It was a well-known fact how Kaori had natural airheaded characteristic inside her. It was her forte to drop explosive words without any awareness, and she was also a maiden who just charged ahead.

Now then, there was one question. Who in the world she got those from?

The answer was simple.

In trying to help the completely dejected prince somehow, Kaori's mama merciless stepped forward!

「Myuu-chan. Don't you think that his highness Randell is a cool boy? Perhaps——」

Kaoruko desperately tried to encourage Randell but,

「Cool?」

Myuu bluntly asked back. Her face was absurdly puzzled!



*Crack*, there was a sound like a crack entering a glass. The sound came from around Randell's chest.

Myuu glanced at the wincing Kaoruko, then her gaze turned toward Hajime, after that her gaze returned to Randell,

「Cool?」

Myuu tilted her head and spoke once more.

Inside Myuu, the definition of “cool person” had been fixed along with the person for it. When she used that as the standard, the prince crumbling down before her gaze was.....it seemed her evaluation became something like 「Somehow, he look unreliable, just what is cool from him?」.

A painful silence descended.

Kaoruko was going ‘Awawah’ while turning a gaze that seemed to say 「Kaori, what to do? Okaa-san has really done it now」 toward her daughter. Certainly, it seemed she had totally killed the prince's heart.

Randell stood up while kept looking down.

And then, while everyone was watching over him, he was walking with brisk steps until the door and he suddenly stood still. He opened his mouth without looking back.

「Sumire-dono, about your question before this.....」

「Eh? Ah, yes.」

Sumire's gaze was unusually swimming around. ‘I cannot find any word to say to this young prince! I cannot endure being here!’ Her state was like that.

While everyone was focusing on Randell with the same state, the young prince glared rigidly at Hajime across his shoulder.

「OBVIOUSLY I HATE HIIIMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMMM-!!!」

‘Reach until the heaven!’ A yell that seemed like it was let out with such intention resounded inside the room. And then he ran out of the room.

Behind him, Instructor Sagesse suddenly returned to his senses with ‘hah’ and chased behind 「YOUR HIGHNEESSSSS-! WE ARE STILL IN THE MIDDLE OF

LESSON YOU KNOOOOOWWW-J. With amazing agility. Like *shutatatatatata*-.

Odd atmosphere was drifting inside the room as expected. The color of Kaoruko's face was bad from feeling responsibility.

But, it seemed Randell too had grown.

After a while, from the other side of the corridor, 「But, not yet! It's still not over yet! I swear, I'll win without fail next time! I'll beat up that bastard for sureeeeeeee-J such yell could be heard.

It seemed that his fighting spirit hadn't been broken yet.

「In a sense, your little brother is an interesting guy huh.」

「Haa, that child, geez. The way he fall in love, or something.....」

Hajime grinned in amusement hearing Randell's war proclamation (?). Beside him, Liliana thought of her little brother 's suffering disposition or nature. She was massaging her head as though she got a headache.

In the end, Hajime and others left the study room that was left alone by its owner and they headed to the next place.

# Arifureta Chapter 299

## Arifureta After III Tortus Travel Journal ③

—

After Randell burned his fighting spirit toward his second springtime of life while running away to somewhere, Liliana showed around the group inside the palace.

Luluaria who was making preparation in great hurry would also finished soon around this time, so they didn't go as far until the capital.

Hearing that the knights were doing morning training in this timing, right now they were heading to the training ground especially because of the request from Shuuzou and Koichi knowing that they would be able to see real knights of another world.

「The army of the kingdom in general is classified into soldier division, knight division, and magician division. Among the knight division, there is even more classification into kingdom knight order and imperial guard knight order. Right now it's the kingdom knight order that is practicing in the training ground.」

Liliana was talking about such thing while on the way. The tour guide Yue was resting. The reason was because she had no knowledge at all about something like the organization of the kingdom's army. She had zero interest about it.

The parent~s were listening to the story with deep interest while going 'I see I see'. Their digital cameras were already standing by. They were fully motivated to take photo together with the knights.

Sumire was asking Liliana with a gaze that was strangely filled with

expectation.

「Lily-chan, is there female knight too ? Or perhaps, it's completely a male occupation as expected?」

「Of course, there are also a lot of female knights. Or rather, the current knight order's captain is a woman.」

「Myy-! Is that so!」

「Hou, a female knight order captain huh.....hmm」

Sumire's eyes were shining extraordinarily with expectation. After her Shuu was also making an expression that was excessively filled with expectation.

Hajime was turning a ve~ry exasperated gaze at his parents who were like that. He was their son so he understood what they were thinking. They must be wanting to make a female knight said 「Kuh, just kill me!」 anyway.

Kirino was opening her mouth with a voice that was filled with expectation, but from different point of view.

「As the captain, her strength must be number one in this country too isn't it? Amazing. ....I wish to have a bout with her by all means.」

「Okaa-san. Restrain yourself okay? If not I'll cut you down you know?」

Shizuku was directing a ve~ry exasperated gaze at her mother who served poison when Hajime came to play at their house (at least, it was nonlethal) or trapped him with a lot of playfulness. She understood what she was thinking because she was her daughter.

Hearing Kirino's words, Liliana made a bit of wry smile.

「The person herself is frustrated that her strength still hasn't left the immature level though. In the first place, she was the head of my exclusive royal guard, so her strength is more than enough but.....her predecessor might be just too great.」

「Hou, so the predecessor is that strong? I wish to meet that person too by all means.」

Shuuzou spoke his hope in the same line like Kirino. But hearing that, the

expression of Hajime and everyone immediately clouded.

Especially Liliana and Kaori, and then Shizuku and Aiko. Their expression looked sad, lonely, or perhaps nostalgic.....many emotions were contained complicatedly within their expression that couldn't be expressed by few words.

Starting from Shuuzou, the parents who didn't know about the circumstance made dubious face. But, they immediately guessed it somehow.

In order to change the atmosphere that became slightly tense, Hajime opened his mouth while getting a slightly distant look.

「Meld Logins. The previous captain of the kingdom knight order. The man who worried himself sick almost as much as Lily, no, in a sense it was even more than Lily, he was thinking of us students who were summoned here. In the term of pure sword skill, until the very end even Amanogawa whose spec as hero was cheat level wasn't a match for him. He was a man who was authentically the kingdom's strongest.」

He was a splendid man without compare whether in spirit, personality, or strength.

Those words of praise were without exaggeration.

Even Sumire and Shuu were holding their breath in surprise at Hajime's rare words and attitude.

Kaori and Shizuku continued after him while immersing themselves in memory.

「For us, he was a person who was like a big brother whose age was slightly separated from us. He was reliable, and when he was at our side we could feel really assured.」

「For us who didn't know left from right after getting summoned here, he was our heart's support. Not just Kouki, I too am wondering whether I can match him in pure sword skill even now..... I wanted him to see, just how strong we have become.」

Aiko looked up to the ceiling while speaking with a small smile tugged on her lips.

「I was a bit jealous toward that person. It was like all the students were relying on Meld-san rather than someone like me.」

And then, Liliana added more words while looking straight forward.

「He was without a doubt, this country's pillar. Unfortunately, he lost his life in the middle of the terrifying scheme that assaulted this kingdom.....even now, there are a lot of people who idolized him, the man called Meld Logins. He is the one who is "a knight among knights", "the symbol of kingdom knight" they said. Even Kuzeri who was the present knight captain idolized him very much.....」

She compared her current self with Meld. Because she knew about how large he was.

Shuuzou spoke his request once more with a quiet expression.

「If it won't be a problem, I wish to be allowed to offer a prayer in front of his grave by all means.....」

Looking closer, the other parents also asked for the same thing if it was for the person who had done that much for their children.

Liliana's expression became a bit troubled.

「There is a hero memorial monument. But, previously the monument was in the style of being engraved directly onto the rock surface of god mountain but, it was lost because the mountain was destroyed like that, so right now a new hero memorial monument is in the middle of construction at the center of the capital. The name of Meld Logins has been inscribed there at the very least, will everyone be fine with that?」

「Mu? Is there no custom of cemetery or erecting individual gravestone in this world?」

「There is. Rather, that is the norm. In fact, the cemetery that got dragged into the capital's destruction has been repaired to a certain degree. We cannot neglect it after all.....」

Shuuzou and everyone's expression turned dubious once more hearing Liliana explaining with hesitant tone.

They could guess that Liliana surely attended to the maintenance of the

cemetery in really early stage in consideration for the emotion of the living and their feeling that was grieving for the dead.

And yet, why was she unable to guide them to the graveyard of the people who sacrificed themselves for the country.....

Shuuzou and everyone tilted their head in puzzlement. The one who gave them the answer was Hajime, the cause of it.

「As expected, there is still not enough leeway for them to repair the graveyard that has no bodies in it while putting off the reconstruction of the capital. When the reconstruction of the capital has progressed to a certain degree, the gravestones for those people should be next in line.」

「No bodies? That's.....I see, so their body still hasn't been found. The removal of the rubbles is still——」

「No, it's because I turned their body into mince meat with gatling railgun.」

「「「「「「「「.....」」」」」」」」」

A painful silence descended. Even Sumire and Shuu gulped their saliva 「Nnguh」 hearing that.

The hearts of the parents were as one.

That was, 「Just now, you praised him as a great man right!? What do you mean you turned such person into mince meat!?!」.

The parents were staring hard at Hajime hearing the shocking truth that was spoken casually.

Hajime went 「Aa~」. He was a bit at loss for words while speaking out the insufficient words——the shocking truth part II.

「Including Meld, a lot of the kingdom's knights and soldiers were already died and turned into manipulated puppets. The culprit was a girl from our class. Ah, Meld was killed by god's apostle though. Then, they were tenacious because they were already dead, so turning them into mince meat was the quickest and surest way. After all, that time Shizuku and others were attacked and fell into a pinch. So, well, the biggest reason was because Kaori got killed and I snapped though.」

「Wait a secooondd!? What do you mean that my angel got killed!?!」

Tomoichi-san's eyes opened wide.

It was already shocking enough that a girl classmate killed a lot of soldiers and turned them into puppet, but getting told that 「Your daughter died once」 was a shock that Tomoichi couldn't overlook. Of course, Kaoruko was also losing her self-control, saying 「I, I've never heard of that! Kaori!」.

Kaori's gaze was darting around.

「Eeerr. I didn't say it because I thought that you two would just worry, but actually my heart got stabbed, like 'pusu-」

The light Kaori-san who apologized 「Sorry I didn't mention it」 with an embarrassed laugh 'tehe-'. Kaoruko staggered on her feet before Sumire supported her.

Tomoichi's gaze was directed to Hajime, questioning him just what happened.

Hajime nodded deeply as though to say 'That's exactly like I feel'.

「Please rest assured, Tomoichi-san. Whether it's the god's apostle, or the guy who killed Kaori, I had properly murdered them.」

「Thank you very much! But, that's not what I want to ask right now!」

His beloved daughter who grew angel wings after missing for a long time before returning home. 'Don't tell me, she became angel because she had ascended to heaven once!? Any side effect!? Will she go back to heaven!?' Tomoichi demanded for explanation while getting half-panicked.

「Ca, calm down Otou-san! Okaa-san too, hang in there! I'm all right! See, it was Hajime-kun and others, they revived me back to life. Look, it was soul magic that I had showed before. Using that you see, certainly I got only my soul transferred into the body of god's apostle, but right now I'm living inside my authentic body, that's why, okay?」

「Bu, but there is actually angel wings growing.....」

「That's from metamorphosis magic. I got Yue to cooperate to make it so I can turn into apostle even in my original body, that's all.」



「I, I see.....」

After Shizuku and others also explained together about the detail of the situation of that time, the shock from the incident “Hajime-san turning someone he respected into mince meat” somehow got settled down too.

Sumire and others looked at each other’s face, their expressions were clouded from realizing anew that the situation was just that terrible at that time.

「However, Hajime-kun. From Shizuku’s story, at that time that devil race army were invading in great number right? It’s amazing that this kingdom was safe while the classmates were in such situation, where even Kaori-chan was in that kind of danger.」

‘I had heard the story to a certain degree but.....’, Koichi groaned while stroking his chin.

After going back to earth, Shizuku talked about Hajime in order to narrate the heroic tale, so he had learned of the method that Hajime took, but when the story of a person that actually died got mixed into it, it felt even more real. Because the feeling of realness was appearing like that, the story about how Hajime repelled an army of ten thousands felt even more unreal instead.

「Hmm, then how about thou hath a look?」

Tio took out some kind of small crystal plate from her Treasure Warehouse. Its size was exactly the same like an SD card, but its material was an ore that was like water colored crystal.

This was a medium artifact that recorded the image of the past that was projected using regeneration magic.

Tio set it into her own smartphone. And then, she operated it with a practiced hand movement and projected the image into empty air like a hologram.

「The image of the training ground at that time wouldst be a bit too stimulating, so I will project it from when Goshujin-sama repelled the devil army.」

The projected scene——the orb that Hajime lifted up shined brilliantly, then

right after that, a pillar of light was fired from the sky. The world was dyed white. The impact shook the atmosphere, it felt like it could be felt even from through the image.

The monsters running about in panic. The devils who were looking dumbfounded at the approaching light pillar.

Everything got *chudon* altogether.

The devil army was vanishing, as though an eraser was rubbed on a paper that was lightly painted out using pencil. Everyone's face was twitching watching that.

「I, it's truly a magnificent CG huh?」

Tomoichi-san tried to escape reality.

「It's live filming though?」

Tio-san thrust the reality forward.

The parent~s leaked out weird moan 「Uboa」 altogether.

「Hajime! Don't use it on earth okay! Absolutely don't! Promise Tou-san! You absolutely, absolutely must——」

「Nagumo Shuuu!! That's why I'm telling you to stop speaking jokingly! It's seriously not funny at all!!」

As expected from the demon king's papa-sama. Even after seeing a scene of nearly ten thousand monsters and devils got erased with his own eyes, he was a man who would still run a gag. It wasn't funny just as Tomoichi said, so he grasped Shuu;s collar and shook him back and forth.

The atmosphere that was stiffening from the continuous shock was slightly loosened by such act of the two.

Hajime gazed at Shuu and Tomoichi who were quarreling and he made a slightly grateful smile. It was a faint smile, but it seemed it was enough for Shuu and Tomoichi who glanced aside at him.

Shuu winked slightly, while Tomoichi snorted slightly and continued the quarrel.

「.....Nn. Hajime.」

「Ou. Tio too, thanks.」

「I think it's also not something to be intentionally showed though, Goshujin-sama.」

Hajime smiled at Yue who was looking up fixedly at him and he also thanked Tio who was acting just like he instructed through telepathy.

Yes, Tio showed the recording just now was from Hajime's instruction. As expected, he avoided showing the gruesome actual scene as it was in consideration of everyone's degree of mental tolerance, but he wanted to show Sumire and Shuu what he did even if just a part of it.

Because even though they were making ruckus of 'erlf, erlf', it should be certain that the two of them wanted to know about the path Hajime had taken.

And then, Shuu's speech and conduct was an implied message of 「It's all right」 to his son. It was the expression of his feeling as a parent, that he would accept his son properly and that he was glad his son would show that to him.

What was unexpected, was how Tomoichi too seemed to understand and got onboard with Shuu's conduct.

That must be the implicit declaration of his intention that said 「I won't reject you」.

Thinking normally, even if it was in an unique situation of being in the middle of war, putting aside the monsters, a lot of "people" were killed there.

No one would be able to blame Tomichi even if he showed even stronger refusal.

Looking closer, it wasn't just Shuu and Tomoichi, even Kaoriko, everyone of Yaegashi family, and Akiko didn't show anything like refusal.

Even if they showed him feeling of terror or refusal, Hajime wouldn't feel regret or necessity to change what he had done, he didn't even intend to, so he planned to silently accept it in case that happened but.....

「Let me say my gratitude once more. Hajime-kun. I'm thankful that you brought Shizuku home. In that kind of situation, without you there, whether our

daughter could be here at our side like this right now or not is.....」

Following Shuuzou's words, Koichi and Kirino nodded at Hajime. Kaoruko and Aiko also seemed to feel the same.

「.....No. I was only doing what I want to do.」

Hajime only answered like that with few words. Hajime wasn't an ally of justice. He didn't fight for any reason like "to save his classmates".

Everything was for the sake of forcing down all the unreasonableness this world thrust before him right from the front. Merely for the sake of showing that he wouldn't bend his knee or pull back even for an instant.

And so, being thanked for saving their child felt really uncomfortable for him.

「Hmph. What's with that face. ....For us, our child is the most important thing. The child of our family, Kaori, you brought her back home for us. That's why, I'm thankful as a parent. Just accept it honestly.」

——Rather than other people's death, our son's safety is far more important.

The words that Shuu once said right after Hajime went home were resurrected in his mind. Perhaps parent was that kind of person in the end.

Hajime thought that when he saw Tomoichi's displeased look that might be him hiding his bashfulness.

When his gaze looked around, whether it was Kaoruko, or Akiko, or Shuuzou, Koichi, or even Kirino, they all nodded with gentle expression.

Hajime awkwardly scratched his cheek while he answered「.....Yes」 to Tomoichi's words.

A quiet, gentle atmosphere filled the area.

Their legs had stopped moving, so they resumed walking without anyone in particular prompting it. And then, Liliana opened her mouth to tell everyone that they would soon arrive at the training ground. She was going to speak with bright voice to change the atmosphere a bit, it was then,

「Everyone, over there is——」

「UoOOOONEeEEEE-SAMAAaAAAAAAAAA-」

A scream that sounded like it was piercing from the bottom of earth to the heaven resounded! It was a joyful yell that was like a beast overflowing with delight and zeal!

Shizuku leaked out「Ugeh!?!」voice that was unbecoming for a young lady.

Right after that, someone broke through the corridor's window and sprang out in front of the group. Even though that silhouette was wearing knight helmet and armor, it leaped up with unbelievable agility. That figure was exactly that of a Lupio Dive!

「Onee-samaaa! I wanted to meet y——」

「Sei-」

A single shout. Shizuku also leaped toward that person who was coming in Lupio Dive. And then, she rotated midair and caught the head of the diving person between both her legs, then without pause Shizuku twisted her body to knock the person onto the ground.

Martial Art

「Hou! That's Yaegashi-style Taijutsu – The Third Secret Technique——  
Dragon Fang Fall  
Ryuugatsui!」

「Maginificent, Shizuku! Your skill improved again!」

「Oh my. Shizuku, since when!」

Her family was joyful. Even though this was where they should worry about the opponent who got her head struck on the hard stone floor with a force that cracked the surface.

「Hah!? Oh no. I unconsciously shot her down..... Wait you, are you okay?」

Shizuku was a bit flustered while addressing that person whose forehead was pushed down on the floor with her butt stopped moving in the pose of pointing to the ceiling.

Then,

「But of course-, Onee-sama! To be able to receive affection the first thing right after our reunion, it made me completely wet from the happiness!」

「Ah, right, as expected you're all right. ....I wonder why there is no

damage.....」

The female knight stood up in a flash as though nothing had happened. Her temple was just turning a bit red, but there was no sign that she was even concussed.

‘This is only natural for those who are worthy to become a step little sister of the secret society “Soul Sisters”!’ She was making a face that seemed to express that, but if it was ordinary person their consciousness would undoubtedly get sent to dream land, or perhaps their forehead would split and blood would go *spurt*~.

‘Just who in the world this girl is?’ While the parents were puzzled like that, tour guide Yue-san whose turn finally arrived stepped forward.

「.....Even this world is infested by the self proclaimed “stepsisters” who idolized Shizuku as “Onee-sama”. This is one of those vermins. Or rather, she is their representative.」

Just from that explanation, everyone immediately got it saying 「Aa, a stepsister girl huh」. Shizuku was bewildered saying 「You all get it with that explanation!?!」.

「Muh, so Hajime-sama is also together like usual. ....Tonight is a night of new moon I believe.」

「Oi, rotten knight. So what if it’s “a night without moonlight” huh?」

The female knight whistled *pyu~ pyupyu~* while facing aside. Hajime sighed at the assassins stepsisters who existed everywhere, watching vigilantly for an opportunity to prey upon his life no matter in which world he was.

Tour guide Yue-san gave supplementary explanation of the female knight’s career history.

「.....She was once a royal guard of Lily, but when there is a man who approach Shizuku, ‘then it ain’t matter whether they are his majesty the emperor or whoever!’ She would attempt to cause abnormal status effect using darkness element magic as though to declare that. Demotion upon demotion was piled up on her, however, she is a valorous person with nonexistent sign of

introspection. By the way, her prank magic is truly excellent.」

It was an unexpected praise from the prodigy of magic Yue. And then, everyone let out a dry laugh at such personality that was beyond help and her expertise in such good-for-nothing magic.

junior

A certain kohai-chan at earth was also like this but, it was a wonder why Shizuku's self-proclaimed little sisters were all nothing but people with strong peculiarity like this.....

「Sheesh Shizuku, there are nothing but funny kids who idolized you isn't it?」

「Kaori-chan is also a funny kid in a sense after all.」

「Eh!? Koichi-ojiisan!? You thought of me in the same category with that person!? I'm plainly shocked here!」

「Oi Koichi! Don't lump my angel together with this kind of strange creature!」

「Just now, I got a feeling that I was disrespected very naturally by Kaori-sama and an unknown gentleman though.....」

The female knight was slowly, gradually approaching Shizuku even while saying such thing. 'It ain't matter who is watching! I will dive into Onee-sama's chest no matter what!' Such desire wasn't hidden at all.

Naturally, Shizuku was also slowly backing away, trying to hide behind Hajime.

'Kuh, as expected there is no other choice but to bring carnage here huh', thinking that, the female knight glared at Hajime while entering battle preparation. She was going to activate a darkness element magic to make it so that a lot of flies would fly around annoyingly around the eyes, it was then,

「YOUUUUUUUUUUUU-, WHAT ARE YOU DOING THEREEEEEEE-!!」

「Gee!? Captain!?!」

The one who came running in full speed with a look that resembled Hannya noh mask was the present captain of kingdom knight order who was mentioned in the topic before this——Kuzeri Rail, that person.

From her intelligent eyes, her tight eyebrows and lips, she was undoubtedly a beauty. Her straight blonde hair was let down freely while it was slightly split to

the left side from the center, but her figure when she brushed up her hair with one hand often fascinated the knights.

The demonic look of such woman gave a lot of impact. It was to the degree that Liliana who should be used to seeing it unconsciously raised a scream 「Hiih!?!」.

The female knight immediately attempted an escape. But, the captain-sama showed an astounding acceleration! The female knight's escape route was cut off!

The female knight tried to further struggle in vain, but Captain Kuzeri launched a magnificent body blow without hesitation!

*Zudon*- Along with a sound that was like a cannon firing, the female knight's body floated. 「Uboa」 Such groan leaked out. Looking closer, the knight armor that should be of the highest quality was dented with a fist shape.

The female knight fell on her knees on the spot. Ignoring her, Captain Kuzeri faced Hajime and co with a pale expression. And then, she bowed her head in a flash with a vigor that made one wonder whether she planned to even head butt the floor.

「Everyone! My subordinate has been extremely disrespectful!」

The captain-sama looked as though 'I'm not gonna raise my head no matter what until I'm forgiven!'.

「Aa~, it wasn't like she did actual harm, and even if she tried there won't be any problem so don't mind it.」

'That's why you can raise your head', Hajime said as in the place of everyone else who was still looking with wide open eyes at the sudden happening.

Captain Kuzeri timidly and slowly raised her head.

「However, this is this fellow we are talking about. If Shizuku-dono is present with Hajime-dono beside her, without a doubt she would try to attempt some kind of magic.....」

「Well, you stopped her just before she could.」

「My deepest apologies!」



The head that was almost lifted up moved toward the ground once more in a standing dogeza posture. It was amazing flexibility she got there.

At this rate, it felt like the captain-sama who didn't do anything bad would continue to lower her head forever, so the other people also called out encouragingly to Captain Kuzeri unanimously.

Captain Kuzeri kept shrinking down in shame. Different from the broadminded Meld, it seemed she was a diligent and worrywart type of a person.

This time too, Kuzeri received a notice from Hellina about the arrival of Hajime and co along with their family to play. As the knight captain, she came here to give them brief greeting, but when she arrived, she found a subordinate who shouldn't be here, so then she charged forward while feeling stomachache.

After Captain Kuzeri who was pardoned greeted them respectfully, she faithfully asked for permission 「Please allow me to take a bit of time」, then she glared fiercely at the female knight who had recovered without anyone noticing.

「You, why are you here!?!」

「Because Onee-sama is here!」

The female knight saluted smartly while sending a gaze that seemed to say 'Why are you asking such an obvious question?'. *Biki*- Blood vein emerged on Captain Kuzeri's forehead.

「I'm not asking that kind of thing! You, what about Kouki-dono!?!」

Hearing that Liliana raised her voice 「Ah, now that you mentioned it!」. Hajime and co made a questioning expression, wondering what was the relationship between the female knight and Kouki.

Liliana explained it simply. So to speak, while Kouki was being active in Tortus, in order to silence the people who said various things about it, a knight would accompany him as an observer as well as support, and this female knight was the one who received that duty.

Everyone looked at the female knight, thinking that perhaps Kouki was also

returning to the capital. But for some reason she looked triumphant and,

「I got the hunch that Onee-sama would be summoned soon, so I returned here independently!」

She said that. While sending a gaze that seemed to say 「I want to be praised, Onee-sama!」 toward Shizuku. An illusion of dog tail wagging around could be seen behind her.

「This stupid idiot!」

*Zudon-*, Kuzeri Blow exploded once more. This time it was a splendid heart break shot. A fist shaped dent similar like before was made in the armor at the heart position.

The female knight said 「My, my heart.....it, feels like it will stoopp」 with pale face and staggered feet. The impact of the heart break shot seemed to cause irregular pulse in her heart.

「In other words, you left Kouki-dono behind! The current him will immediately act recklessly! I should have commanded you to support him attentively on top of observing him!」

「E, err, ca, captaiiin. My, my heart is.....」

「Listen here, your duty this time was something Liliana-sama decided in consideration of you who kept causing nothing but trouble, so that you who are actually skilled and also accomplished won't need to quit being a knight!」

「I, I am thankful.....bu, but, before that, my, my heart is.....sto, stopp——」

「Even I don't actually want to fire your or anything. I know you very well since you still belonged to the royal guard. You are someone who can do it if you try. I thought that if you leave the capital to travel together with Kouki-dono and work for the sake of society and people, you will recover back yourself slightly. Even you yourself, weren't you brimming with motivation before departing, saying "I will bloom the second time at the central for sure!"? That's why I——」

「.....」

The female knight's face was pale. Foam was bubbling from her mouth, and light was vanishing from her eyes.

‘Eh? Could this be something plainly bad?’ Liliana and others were flustered. Even Hajime was saying 「I, is she okay?」 while looking alternately at the captain and the female knight.

「Eei! What are you doing sleeping like that! Listen to what I’m saying properly!」

*Zudon*- A second heart break shot for today. The fist shaped dent on the heart position became deeper.

At the same time, 「Gahah!？」 the female knight breathed again. 「Eh? Just now, I thought I saw Captain Meld desperately telling me to go back from the other side of the river.....」 She then murmured something terrifying.

The captain-sama who could freely move and stop the heart of her subordinate cleared her throat once and then gave an order once more.

「Anyway, this duty is something important even for you too. If you understand, then quickly return to where Kouki-dono is!」

「I firmly protest, captain!」

「What!？」

「Because that bastard, he was loitering at the north mountain range area for three days without eating or sleeping you know! I cannot accompany that kind of man whose thought is filled with “holy precinct’s monster absolutely kill”!」

「You, do you understand the meaning of order? No one will recognize your rejection!」

「Respect of fundamental human right! It will!」

「Annoying! Who cares just go back! I’ll fire you for sure this time if you don’t!」

「Bring it on! I have resolved myself to follow Onee-sama from here on!」

‘No, even if you resolved yourself like that I won’t accept it you know?’ Shizuku immediately insisted that, but the female knight only showed an unshakeable determination.

Seeing her like that, something sparkling was starting to gather at the corner

of Captain Kuzeri's eyes.

「.....I can't do this anymore.」

The dignified and strong knight order captain-sama's spirit was in the verge of breakin!

The female knight who threw out her chest stubbornly, and the completely exhausted captain-sama.....

While a really odd atmosphere was ruling over the place, Hajime moved while letting out a sigh.

He confirmed something with the compass in one hand, then he approached the female knight briskly.

「Mu? What is it, Hajime-dono?」

「For now, not just the captain but Shizuku is also troubled with you being here, so go back to the mountain.」

A gate was opened. Hajime grasped the female knight's collar violently.

And then, the female knight who was bewildered 「Wha, what are you doing!？」 was tossed away by Hajime into the other side of the gate——thrown away at the air above the place where Kouki was at, the “north mountain range area”.

From the other side of the closed gate, 「ONEe-SAMAAaAAA-, II'LL BEe~ Baa~~CK!」 such shriek could be heard. But, it immediately became quiet.

「Anyway, I sent her to Amanogawa's place. Even if she returns here it will take a while. Well, look, those soul sisters bunch, I think you will be quite used to them if treat them while thinking that they are that kind of creature. So get a hold of yourself okay?」

「Ha, Hajime-donooo. I'm grateful for your consideratiooon」

As fellow people who were similarly troubled by soul sisters, Hajime spoke to Kuzeri with a bit of sympathetic feeling. For some reason Kuzeri spoke her thanks to him with tears of gratitude.

In front of Hajime and co who thought that she was a bit exaggerating, Kuzeri

started talking while making eyes that looked like dead fish.

「Really, I really don't know anymore, just what should I do with her..... A knight captain who is toyed by a single subordinate, in the end can someone like that be called as captain? Besides, the reconstruction is currently going on so I have anticipated it but, dispute keep happening without end..... Besides my subordinates were also frenzied as though they were triggered by those, perhaps they were venting their emotion that they cut loose while in their day off, but they did it too much that complaints came from the people..... If they wouldn't change after I talked to them, I would beat them up thoroughly but, for some reason recently there were several people who got happy from that treatment instead..... How can they translate getting punched as “reward” in their mind? It's impossible for me to comprehend. Vice Captain Komold too, he would try to cut corners when I took off my eyes from him just for a bit..... And yet that guy only has popularity..... As I thought it's impossible for me to succeed after Logins-sama——」

「I, I see. I understand that you have been piling up various stress, so calm down a bit. It's no good if the knight captain cry in front of people right?」

「My apologies. I received kind words and consideration after so long so I unconsciously.....」

Captain Kuzeri wiped her eyes clean with her sleeve.

Everyone's gazes were filled with a lot of sympathy. And then, Hajime naturally turned from Captain Kuzeri toward Liliana.

「Say Lily.」

「To, to think that Kuzeri's stress is accumulating by this much.....」

Liliana was letting out cold sweat saying 「Perhaps I worked her too much」.

Certainly, at the present situation where the reconstruction was going on, there was a mountain of problem even just within the kingdom.

And then, the knight order was dispatched to take care of a lot of those problems. Certainly it would be very difficult for Captain Kuzeri who was taking supreme command of the knight order. Simply beating up everyone just like in war time also wasn't a good thing to do. Especially when it was a problem

related with the beastmen who they were finally able to start the process of tying friendship with, she would have to act considerately to deal with that.

「What about the bunch in the church? The new pope should be handling the situation well right?」

「.....Right now he is in the middle of provincial tour. The lightness of his footwork, it's as expected from his excellency the pope of the reborn holy church but.....」

「It's a bit too light huh.....」

The pope whose role wouldn't be an exaggeration even if it was called as governing over the peace of people's heart was in the middle of a trip. Surely the pressure on Captain Kuzeri doubled from that. Perhaps her subordinates consisting of only broken people was also a factor that drove her to the wall.

Kuzeri who took command while fighting in the front line at that legendary decisive battle wasn't getting looked down by her subordinates by any means. Rather, they trusted her at the same level like Meld or perhaps even more.

In contrast of the macho "big bro" Meld, Kuzeri should be called as "big sis" who gave heartfelt consideration instead. A part of her subordinates was consisted of broken people perhaps could be said as similar like the soul sisters' attitude toward Shizuku.

Naturally, such captain that had attained deep trust like that from the subordinates was an existence that they kingdom couldn't continue without, especially right now when the kingdom's foundation wasn't solid.

Captain Kuzeri was too overworked in various meaning that she almost broke down, but if she actually broke down for real, then Liliana would have her soul slipping out from her body after that without doubt.

Seeing Captain Kuzeri who looked somewhat down and Liliana who was in a dither wondering what to say to such Kuzeri, Hajime scratched his head.

「Captain. I'll give you this. Even in this work environment that is like a black company, it should become a bit better with this. Don't lose against the soul sisters and the deviants.....live strong.」

What Hajime offered was a broach with crimson jewel fitted into it.

Captain Kuzeri instinctively accepted it, then immediately after, her eyes snapped wide open because she felt her body getting light as though she was floating.

「It's an artifact filled with things like regeneration magic, soul magic, well, there are various things. Exhaustion recovery, mind stabilizer, limit break, regeneration acceleration, beautiful skin effect.....there is no harm in wearing it.」

「I, I cannot receive such amazing thing!」

「It will be a disaster if captain snap and stop functioning right now. Just accept it without reservation. You can just think of it as the husband of your black hearted boss sending you refreshment in her place.」

‘Who are you calling a black hearted boss!’ Liliana almost raised a protesting voice, but she was the person in charge of the work environment that driven the knight captain that she almost burst into tears, so she held her tongue ‘muguu’.

And then, the captain-sama who was gifted with a healing artifact.....

She casted her gaze down while her hand kept grasping the broach tightly, and somehow her body started trembling slightly, then

「I offer my sword to you-! My lord!」

She said such thing unexpectedly while kneeling. Her eyes that were clouded from anxiety were sparkling bright.

Liliana complained 「Offering your sword like that is no good right!? Your lord is me you know!?!」, but Captain Kuzeri's gaze didn't leave the demon king.

While everyone's gazes were concentrated to Hajime, Hajime showed a pondering gesture for a bit, then he suddenly took out the list he received from Hellina before this and began to jot down some kind of memo.

And then, he cracked a smile,

interview

「Let's have talk slowly next time. But for now, do your best in your job as

captain.」

「My lord!」

Kuzeri bowed her head happily, then she said 「Then I will return to my work! About the training, please, watch to your heart's content!」, gave a bow with briskness that was incomparable to when she first arrived before returning.

The dumbfounded Liliana suddenly returned to her senses with 'hah'.

「Eh, what's this? What is the talk that Hajime-san mentioned!? Don't tell me, you aren't satisfied with just Hellina, now you are planning to reach your hand to even Kuzeri!?!」

「That sounds bad to other people's ear. I was just thinking to have conversation with her about change of occupati—cough-. About improvement of her work environment, that's all.」

「You said change of occupation just now! Where is Hajime-san planning to transfer her!?!」

「You are misunderstanding I'm telling you. Well, it won't be anything bad for Liliana so it's fine.」

「For some reason I feel worried though.....」

At this time Liliana didn't even dream that a few years later Kuzeri would change occupation into the demon king's maid at earth.

「Even at another world, black place will be black huh', Shuuzou and co made a bitter expression toward the tough world, while Tomoichi sent a sharp gaze to Hajime that said 「Are you planning to add more woman!?!」, Sumire and Shuu were saying 「Damn it! We forgot to ask her to say 『Kuh, kill me!』 just now!」 in vexation, and Yue and co were sending puzzled gaze at Hajime wondering just what he was scheming this time. Amidst all those,

「Everyone, Luluaria-sama's preparation is finished.」

Hellina who came beside them unnoticed told them that.

「Nn-. Hajime-san, I will have you explain in full later okay? Well then everyone, I will introduce you all to Okaa-sama. Please come over here.」



After reminding Hajime firmly, Liliana guided the group toward where her mother was.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'm sorry to those who is holding hope for Lord Aby.

Please wait for one more week, for now I post the Tortus Travel Journal ③.  
Pardon me with this!

—

PS

It was announced in Overlap-sama's homepage but, the comic version of [Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou Zero] will start getting serialized next month in Gardo. The illustration is over here ↓



The one in charge of it is Kouchi Ataru-sensei. I received wonderful illustration from the very beginning.

Thank you very much!

Like, that annoying personality of Miledy is drawn like this!

Or like, the name of Oscar's "Orcus" is actually from here~,

Or like Nize is being targeted by little girl sisters, or the roots of god crystal that Hajime obtained when he fell into abyss,

The tale of Miledy and others, the liberators will be connected like that with the now, I'll be happy if you readers can also feel it.

Even you who are thinking 'I don't think I'll buy this novel', if it's at Gardo the comic version will be free so you will be able to read it,

That's why please, please go take a look!

Please take care of Arifureta and Shirakome in this 2018 too!

# Arifureta Chapter 300

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Prologue

—

A voice could be heard.

Inside the darkness where one couldn't even see an inch ahead, a repulsive voice was resounding.

That voice felt slimy, like a sticky sludge.

It was already heard for several thousand, several tens of thousand times.

I also know about the development ahead of here. The same like the voice. I have seen it continuously repeating for several thousand, several tens of thousand times.

No. To be more accurate it wasn't seeing, yes, it was remembering.

A memory that couldn't possibly be forgotten. A memory that mustn't be forgotten.

The repulsive reason of me being alive. It was the earliest scene my heart remembered.

*Gou-* The wind was blowing.

Darkness that was like black ink which painted over anything it touched was swept away. What appeared in its place was crimson flame— the fire of hell.

Inside the world that was dyed red, "it" was there.

The figure that was like condensed darkness, or perhaps shadow. Red flame

that was like blood was gushing out from the countless cracks running on its surface, frying the surrounding to ash without pause.

The two hands that were clad with hell fire were carelessly holding *things that were once my parents*, the eyes and mouth that were colored by flame warped like a mocking sneer.

“Its” mouth moved slightly.

A voice could be heard.

The voice of “it” that I had heard several thousand, several tens of thousand times.

I who could do nothing except trembling was impaled by “its” sneering laugh.

Flame was gushing out.

My important people were disappearing without even leaving ash behind, “its” hand was reaching forward.

The hand that was created from hell fire ad shadow completely filled my sight that was blurred by tears.

And then, hope and future, warm thing.....as though to crush all of those things fully within its grasp——

—  
—  
—

「aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH」

A scream echoed inside a bedroom at midnight.

The soft blanket was brushed aside, and a young woman around the age of twenty lifted up her body like a released spring.

Looking normally, she was a woman with good-looking and well-ordered appearance, but right now her expression was warped in grief with terror. Her blond hair that normally was wavy and looked soft got stuck on her cheeks and nape of the neck from sweat in an unsightly state.

There were only the sounds of rough breathing and rustling clothes resounding inside the room.

There, *knock knock* the room's door was knocked.

「Claudia-sama?」(TN: Do you guys think I should use Miss Claudia here or keep using Claudia-sama following the raw?)

「——」

A worried voice called at the name of her, the owner of this room——Claudia Barenberg. Her body twitched in surprise.

But, she immediately let out a large sigh, wiped the tears blurring her jade pupils with her sleeve, and then she calmed down her breathing with her hand on her chest before replying.

「I'm fine, Wynn. I only got a bit of nightmare. I'm sorry for the ruckus I caused.」

She endeavored to make her voice as calm and bright as she could. However, from the view point of the person guarding the room in front of the door, it was clear as day that the girl was only trying to not make other worried.

After all, this was something that had continued for several years. At the very least this would happen once or twice a week. It would even happen three or four times a week sometimes, when Claudia would spring up from her bed while screaming in midnight.

The cause was a common knowledge. Therefore, the people who idolized her also understood that it was something that couldn't be solved that easily.

That was why, “at the very least”, the person who served as guard tonight spoke just like usual.

「If you like Claudia-sama, how about I brought something to drink for you? Luckily, Anna is brewing herb tea along with the change of shift, so how about Claudia-sama have some together?」

Surely that herb tea was also undoubtedly the kind that used a herb that would stimulate restful sleep.

Claudia made a warm smile at the consideration of them who were her guard,

her comrade, and also her family. She felt like the coldness that was blanketing her heart, the emotion that she should reject were softening.

「It's a coincidence that my throat is dry right now. Please let me drink it if you will be so kind. Thank you, Wynn.」

「It's nothing.」

After that, Claudia put her disarrayed attire in order and lightly wiped her hair and sweat. Then she invited Wynn along with Anna who came at that timing to enter the room.

Wynn——Wynn Keyman was a lean young man with swept back blond hair. His age was 28 years old. He had rare grey colored pupils, and his look was gallant and stern. His personality was also serious. From his way of living that prized virtue, he was called as “knight” by his comrades.

Anna who was brewing the tea——Anna Folk was a girl with chestnut braided hair as her trademark. Her age was fifteen years old. Her pupils that were similarly brown like her hair were always shining with liveliness as though to represent her personality.

For a while they were amusing themselves with idle talk where Anna would be the one who did most of the talking while Claudia and Wynn would throw in appropriate comment.

Feeling her heart warmed by the warm tea and the harmonious interaction with her comrades, Claudia felt her eyes getting drowsy.

In the first place her drooping eyes and gentle gaze were her characteristic, her personality and her look also didn't go against the impression as a gentle big sister that she gave off. Even her speaking tone was relaxed and calm, so when sleepiness was added there, it was even said that the synergy of her appearance and voice would exert special ability of powerful sleep encouragement.

When such girl got drowsy eyes, naturally anyone who saw it would understand 「Ah, she is sleepy」.

Right now it would be less than an hour before the sun rose, but Wynn and Anna recommended Claudia to sleep once more. After all looking closer, even

Wynn and Anna who were her guard were also visited by sleepiness. She was plainly obstructing their duty.

Claudia was hesitating because when thinking of the morning prayer, then it felt like it would be better to keep awake like this. It was then, Wynn's mobile phone suddenly started vibrating to inform that it was receiving a call.

Wynn confirmed the caller before picking up the call.

「Wynn here.」

『.....This is Aziz. Mission complete. I will board the plane after this.』

「Thanks for your hard work. Was there any problem?」

『.....None.』

「I see. Tell me the detail after you come back, but from your tone it seem that the ruin and relic aren't it huh?」

『.....Yes. But, it's dangerous. I sent you the data. Ask the management to deal with them.』

「Acknowledged. I'll report it as soon as I confirm the data.」

Hearing the safety of a comrade who went in a mission to steal information from a corporation in a certain country, not just Wynn, Claudia and Anna also let out a faint sigh of relieve.

Wynn's tone became somewhat gentle and he asked 「Is there anything else?」. There, the man who was called Aziz whose voice sounded like a young man faltered slightly in hesitation, then he spoke with low voice.

『.....There was, the returnees' data.』

「! .....How much?」

『Members and their family structure. Also the detail from Britain.』

Wynn spontaneously groaned.

The previous information was an information that even Wynn's group had collected to a certain degree. But, regarding the latter, currently the information gathering wasn't really progressing due to the obstruction from the intelligence department of the country in question.

He didn't know how the aforementioned corporation obtained the information, but he guessed that it must be obtained from a route that was peculiar to corporation while inside his heart he rejoiced from being able to obtain the unanticipated data.

「Aziz, you did well. We are going to scrutinize the information here right away. Their strength and also the authenticity of it are unknown. Be very careful in your return.」

『Acknowledged.』

After that Wynn cut off the call after talking about two, three more matters.

「So we obtained the information about them.....let's pray that this will lead us to a better future.」

Claudia muttered with her characteristic leisurely tone. An earnestness was hidden inside her tone.

After that commotion, it was an information that Claudia and others couldn't stop wanting. However, even after they poured all their strength, not only they were unable to disclose the whole picture, they couldn't even come into contact with them. Far from that, damage even reached their important comrades as the end result.

It became prohibited to come into contact with them until a definite measure could be obtained. And now they had obtained information about them. Claudia couldn't suppress her feeling of exaltation.

「Wynn. This is a most important subject. Please be very careful in handling the obtained information okay?」

「Understood. I will immediately report to the director. At the same time, I will also increase the alert level. We wholly don't know their hand. It's unknown when they will notice that this information has leaked. And after they know, if they followed it until even us.....」

Wynn shook his head. He was recalling what happened to their comrades when attempting to come into contact with them. Anna was making the same expression as though she was feeling headache and continued.



「I don't want to do it anymore you know? Work like returning the sanity of our comrades who were working hard to dig up well in a developed country, or changing job into mercenary as killing maniac who was obsessed with murdering terrorist, or joining some animal protection group and running around to search for anyone to adopt stray dogs, then bringing them back here. I thought I would get mad myself doing that.」

Anna was scrunching her face with an expression that looked like she was really hating it, or perhaps dreading it was more accurate. Her words naturally caused Claudia and Wynn to also get a faraway look from recalling their comrades who were overflowing with volunteer spirit and sense of justice in various senses at that time.

Claudia drank the herb tea to calm down her heart, then she opened her mouth 「Even so」 with a sorrowful face.

「Recently, the movement of “them” is getting increasingly active. That's why it's necessary for us to ascertain it. Just who are they. And then, whether they are the “same” with us. Perhaps there is some meaning that we obtained their information in this timing. That's what I believe. Perhaps.....」

Claudia smiled faintly and spoke.

——this might be the guidance of the Lord you know?

She said.

‘Perhaps that might be so’, Wynn and Anna also nodded with a smile.

In the end, at that day her sleepiness was cleared up. Claudia dressed up herself, then together with the other two she began her activity in order to accomplish her duty today.

Without knowing, that unexpectedly one of “them” had already started moving.

—  
—  
—

A really normal house in Japan. It was a residential area, so there were a lot of

similar house at the surrounding. The two vehicles lined up on the parking place in front of the house were a family car and a compact car of the types that were often seen.

That house didn't have anything particularly standing out, so it was blending well with the scenery of the residential area. However, regarding the house's residents, there was something a bit peculiar about them.

Or more accurately, it was the family's second son.

The family name written on the nameplate was— —Endo.

Yes, it was the house of one of the returnees, the man who was praised by his comrades with various saying like “nonchalantly one the mankind's strongest”, “recently automatic door won't react at all against that guy seriously”, “you bastard, even though you already got a rabbit eared Onee-san lover, what are you doing laying your hand to a blond haired beautiful girl too huuuh, I'm gonna kill you”, and so on— —the home of Endo Kousuke.

Currently Kousuke was inside his room at the second floor. He was stuffing his travel baggage into his favorite rucksack that he received at the same time when he enrolled into middle school.

His personality wasn't particularly methodical, so he was only carelessly tossing in things like change of clothes and so on without folding them first.

「Ee~rr, something like this I guess? The rest can just be entered into Treasure Warehouse.」

Kousuke talked to himself while showing a thinking gesture for a bit.

The important luggage could be entered into the Treasure Warehouse that Hajime gave him, so originally he didn't even need the rucksack, but it would be odd if he was empty handed despite going abroad. There was no doubt he would get stared suspiciously by the airport staff when in the emigration and immigration check like that.

He would also need to be careful of the surrounding's attention when getting out the item he wanted from the Treasure Warehouse, so it was necessary to put some things into a rucksack to a certain degree.

「Even so, Vatican huh.....first I'll enter Italy's Rome, but it will be the first time I go there, I'm feeling a bit excited.」

He recalled several things that he forgot and tossed them into his rucksack carelessly again.

「It helps that I won't meet language barrier when going abroad but.....I want to go sightseeing if I'm going there anyway. ....With Rana.」

Thinking of his older lover who was an adorable rabbit eared beauty, Kousuke's expression broke into a wide grin slovenly.

Instantly, he felt a chill and his body shivered. At the end of the view that he shared with his clone, the figure of Emily-chan staring unblinking at him with pupils of just monochrome color was.....

「Cough-. Now then! I finished my preparation already! Let's depart!」

He cut! Cut! CUUT! the shared field of vision. I didn't see anything at all!

Under the thinking 「Kou-kun who is the right hand man of boss also need at least seven wives who are somewhere around the world!」 of the first wife (according to the person) Rana Hauria, Emily-chan was more or less put into the position of the second wife. Such Emily-chan was really troubled sometimes.

The incident that occurred just a little while ago——the Berserk incident.

The girl who walked the path of research wholeheartedly since her childhood until now as a genius unintentionally caused that incident that was related with monster. Through that incident, the girl harbored a strong emotion of love toward Kousuke. Furthermore it was her first love.

Her feeling was strong and undoubtedly the real thing.

Thus, even after it came to light that the target of her first love Kousuke had a lover named Rana, in the end she was unable to give up. There was also how Rana herself welcomed her, and how Kousuke's clone was living together with her in the Grant family home to protect her, where the interaction between the two was deepening. Day by day her feeling was growing stronger and deeper.

The level of her worry was also increasing in proportion to that.

There was also the self-proclaimed third wife, perhaps there would really be

seven people in the end.....thinking a bit of his own future that he had never even imagined, Kousuke shivered slightly.

He had no self-confidence at all that it would go well like a certain demon king.

Though that demon king told him 「You can make clone, so rather you will all right even more than me right?」 while laughing loudly at him.

Kousuke thought. ‘That bastard, it’s completely no good to consult about love relationship to him’.

「Now then, there is also the flight schedule, let’s depart soon.」

He shouldered his rucksack and exited his room. Then, at that moment,

「Wah!? Kou-nii, you were there!?」

A thin petite girl jumped from surprise.

「I’m here. I have been here all the time since morning. We ate breakfast together just now right?」

「? Did we? Well, doesn’t matter.」

The petite girl who finished the talk with a practiced gesture——Endo Manami. She was Kousuke’s little sister who was wearing glasses with her hair worn in braids. Her age was thirteen. A first year middle schooler and a member of literary club.

While she gave off a plain impression, she was a lively girl who would talk briskly.

「Or rather, Kou-nii. What’s with that luggage?」

「Aa, I’m thinking to go to Italy for a bit.」

「Aa, that’s so. To Italy——wait why!? Why Italy!? Isn’t that too far to say it in that tone as though you are only going for a bit to mini market!? Isn’t it too sudden!?」

Manami-chan made a splendid tsukkomi while fixing her glasses’ position.

There, the door of a nearby room opened and the face of a glasses young man popped out.

「Manami? What are you doing getting noisy by yourself?」

「She ain't alone. I'm here. I'll punch you, you know, Aniki.」

big brother

‘Ah, so you're there.....’ The one who was making a face like that was Endo Sousuke. The big brother of Kousuke who came of age this year. A university student who belonged to law school.

When going in a family trip or the like, Endo family was often thought to only have an older brother and a younger sister, but that was surely the fault of the glasses without a doubt, Kousuke thought.

As a test, Kousuke tried buying fashion glasses from a 100-yen store and put it on, and it wasn't like he didn't feel that the rate of him getting perceived by the surrounding was higher than usual. But he was loudly laughed by his little sister that the glasses absolutely didn't suit him in destructive level, so since then he stopped wearing it.

Kousuke's little sister and big brother were conversing 「Kou-nii said that he is going to Italy!」 「Eh? When?」 「Now!」 「Haa!? That's too far when the mood is like 'I'm going to mini market for a bit!' isn't it!? Isn't that too sudden!?!」 that caused déjà vu feeling to appear. Kousuke was listening to it while coming down to the living room.

「Tou-san, you've time?」

「H~mm♪ Hm hm~m♪」

A middle-aged man was lining up a set of fishing rod on the floor of the living room while maintaining them in a good mood——Kousuke Eiji. His age was 49 years old. A father who was working at the city hall's population department. By the way, his hobby was fishing, and he had suntan like a certain swarthy actor Osuo-san who got mentioned a lot in a certain gag. (TN: I don't get the gag reference at all here. But about the actor, search Tatsuo Umemiya)

Tatsuo-san——not, Eiji didn't even notice he was called by his son and continued to diligently maintenance his fishing rod.

It was always like this, so Kousuke shook his father's shoulder and called to him once more.

「Oou!? What is——wait, Kousuke huh. What's up, why are you carrying luggage like that? Are you going out?」

Even though he twitched from surprise, seeing his son standing beside him, Eiji tilted his head in puzzlement as though nothing happened.

Kousuke also didn't really say anything about it in a practiced response and continued his words normally.

「Yep. I'll go until Italy for a bit, so I want Tou-san to take me until airport by car.」

「Aa, until Italy huh. Got it, got it. Wait a bit——wait, really wait!? Italy!? You mean Italy, that country with delicious pizza!? Isn't it too far when your tone feel like you are just going to mini market!?!」

The father got into the talk following the mood the longest, but the content of his tsukkomi also caused déjà vu.

Hearing Eiji's voice, the mother of Kousuke who was glaring at the household account book on the dining table——Endo Misato raised her face abruptly.

「Dear, don't speak loudly so suddenly like that. You will cause me to make a mistake in calculation here. Something like Italian or pizza.....something like pizza is no good. Even just medium size is more than 2000 yen you know? Recently there is a lot of promo of buy one get two, but even so I won't allow such luxury in an ordinary day where we aren't celebrating anything!」

Misato-okaasan (49 years old) sharply pushed on her glasses while showing a firm rejection. She was working in the municipal tax of the city hall. She was strict with money.

「That's not it, Misato. It's Kousuke you see, he said that he is going to Italy right now.」

「Eh? Kousuke? Rather, Italy!? Right now!? What are you saying as though you are just going to a nearby mini market!? It's just too sudden right!?!」

Perhaps Endo family had extraordinary interest to mini market.

Around that time Sousuke and Manami also came down to the living room. The whole family pressed the question of what Kousuke was planning to do.

Kousuke often got forgotten, but his family's love to him was genuine. Even though they were getting used of him repeatedly going afar unexpectedly, but he had already got missing once in the past. They would worry of him no matter what.

Kousuke smiled wryly while explaining that he would go to investigate something for a bit because of the demon king—Hajime's request. Like usual, the request fee had already transferred to him to a certain degree, no, for Kousuke who had the sensibility of a common folk, it was an amount that made him shudder. Anyway, he told his family that there was no worry about the travel expense.

「Nuu, so it's Nagumo-senpai again.....」

Manami let out a conflicted groan with a somewhat conflicted expression. For her, the demon king Hajime was her sworn enemy.

Why?

Changing the topic slightly, Amanogawa Kouki had a little sister. She was close with Shizuku since her childhood. She was idolizing Shizuku very much.

In other words, she was a soul sister.

And then, that little sister was the same age with Manami. They were friends that went to the same school.

In other words, she was a soul sister.

But, why was Manami only showing a conflicted expression instead of a clear hostility like a certain kouhai-chan? That was because she had seen the sight of that certain kouhai-chan recklessly charging at the demon king Hajime when he would be thoroughly getting affectionate with her before carelessly tossing her away like an empty can or tying her on something.

.....It was a secret that she felt her heart beating slightly faster seeing such sight. Manami-chan of Endo family might have the same disposition like a certain disappointing dragon.

Sousuke was also making similar conflicted expression like Manami and spoke.

「.....That's, will you be all right? Before this too, there was a major disaster at Britain right?」

「Yes, well, it was terrible though. At that time because of Nagumo's request I destroyed an occult organization that tried to lay their hand on us. But after that I poked my nose into Berserk incident by my own decision, so it was me reaping what I sow about the terrible experience.」

「But still. ....Tou-san is grateful to Nagumo-kun but.....even if this is his request.....Kousuke, even though you finally came home safely, aren't you getting involved with dangerous things a bit too much?」

As a father, such opinion was only natural. Although she wasn't saying anything, it was clear from her expression that Misato was also thinking of the same thing.

Kousuke loosened his expression slightly seeing his parents worrying for him. However, he spoke with a determined tone.

「Certainly, I also thought just what I'm doing after I finally came home and have even decided my future aim. But, I have learned from Tortus. ——The unreasonableness won't give a second thought about our convenience or anything. If you want to have your own way in your own convenience, you mustn't back away.」

「Kousuke.....」

While he was their own child, Eiji and Misato were always worrying about Kousuke whose inconspicuousness and thin presence reached to a pitiful degree, thinking 「Why?」 their son had to be like that.

Even them, his own family would sometimes put him outside of their own awareness. For a time they wondered if it was something like a curse and even made Kousuke to receive exorcism. They were grasping at straws then.

But, when they were looking at the figure of their child who was gazing at them with a strong gaze that caused them to spontaneously hold their breath, it caused them to think that perhaps Kousuke was already independent from his parents.

No, actually, they had understood it since he came home.



That the fierce experience in another world had turned their son into an adult. Even if it was something that their hand couldn't reach, Kousuke alone, or perhaps together with his comrades had already become able to accomplish anything.

Eiji and Misato's atmosphere became somewhat solemn. And then, seeing his big brother would go far away, Manami who was making a slightly lonely expression closed her mouth. The living room became quiet, however, the eldest son broke the silence 「Keh」 somehow peevishly.

「It doesn't really matter anyway where will Kousuke go and what he do. After all he is just going to cajole some beautiful girl or woman again anyway!」

「A, aniki? Are you, sulking?」

「Shut up! Don't you understand your Nii-chan's feeling!? My feeling when my little brother introduced to me his lover, a transcendently beautiful Onee-san and a genuine bunny girl! What's more this bastard! A few months after that introduction, the next time it were a younger blond haired beautiful girl and a cool beauty who is an active duty investigator!? Is it harem!? It's harem isn't it, this bastard!」

「N, no, Emily and Vanessa are, still not like.....」

「Still! You said still just now, this damn asshole-. Even this time, it will be just like Rana-san said anyway, you are going to get one of your seven wives who are somewhere in the world right!? Nii-chan will breakdown mentally if I don't prepare my heart beforehand, so you can leave and don't go home for at least half a year!」

The glasses university student Sousuke-niisan who even now looked like he was going to cry with tears of blood.

Due to Kousuke and Rana's request, before this Hajime had called Rana to earth several times when it was time for "gate opening".

In preparation for the meeting with Kousuke's family, Rana learned Hauria-style secret skill "The – Normal Behavior That is Typically Japanese" with desperation and she safely got herself accepted as the fiancée of Endo family's second son, but.....

To be to the point, Rana was a beauty. She had a style that was genuinely well-proportioned (body 8 times longer than head), she had splendid twin hills, and while she had the look of a beautiful woman, she also possessed the cuteness of someone playful, and then there was her wagging rabbit ears and rabbit tail.

Her age was 22 years old, so even from Sousuke's view point Rana was a "rabbit eared Onee-san",

eighth grade syndrome

Such girl was repressing her Hauria's nature (chuunibyou) and greeted Kousuke's family with a graceful atmosphere like a Yamato Nadeshiko.

Naturally,

「The history of not having girlfriend = the age. Sou-nii is jelly.」

「You shut up there, little sis!」

「Last week too he confessed to a senpai in his circle and met honorable defeat. How sad~」

「How did you know!?」

Like that Sousuke-niisan sunk into jealousy and sadness.

Of course, he understood that his little brother reached where he was as the result of a fierce experience. He properly felt happy for his brother.

But, however, still.

If it was just a rabbit eared Onee-san as a lover, he could still bear it.

But of all things, his little brother, the damned bastard further brought home a blonde haired beautiful girl and a cool beauty, and in the end even the rabbit eared Onee-san also recognized the two as second and third wives.

Putting aside the cool beauty who was a bit strange, the lovable and wholehearted appeal 「I love Kousuke!」 of the blond haired beautiful girl, and the appeal of her wish to be accepted by Kousuke's family too.....

Surely that girl was desperately learning Japanese language, she was desperately appealing with Japanese language that was still choppy and awkward, in the middle she would also add body gesture and hand gesture with

great fluster, however, she would get teary eye because she felt that what she wanted to say didn't really get conveyed to the other party, even so, she wouldn't give up and bravely continued. For Sousuke-niisan, such girl was exactly in his strike zone.

Naturally, the source of motivation for such effort of the girl was wholly because of the depth of her feeling toward her little brother Kousuke though.

Because of that, the honest and unvarnished feeling of the university student who was unable to make a girlfriend would be 「DAMN IT ALLLLLLLLLLL-, I'M DEATHLY JEALOUS HEREEEEEEEE-」 in respond.

By the way, Eiji and Misato were possessor of extremely normal Japanese sensibility where it was hard to accept something like having multiple lovers. In addition they were also extremely pleased with Rana, so it was thought that they would surely show disapproval toward the existence of Emily (+Vanessa), but.....

It seemed Emily's panicked figure that was desperately appealing to Kousuke's parents shot them right in the heart, and at the end they completely accepted her.

Of course, Manami was also accepting the situation. For Manami who loved reading book and light novel and could be somewhat categorized as an otaku, the real harem of her actual big brother seemed to be a target of her excitement.

She was especially attached with Vanessa who was an active duty investigator of the national security bureau. It seemed she felt sympathy and admiration to her.

Kousuke would feel a touch anxious when he saw the figure of his little sister whose eyes would sparkle brightly for some reason each time Vanessa whispered sneakily into her ear. If by any chance his little sister received bad influence from Danessa.....he was resolved with the preparedness to use even the "Staking the Pride of Villager".

No good-Vanessa

Back to the topic.

Kousuke was smiling wryly at the conversation of his big brother and little

sister. He then turned his gaze back to Eiji.

「Well, anyway, it'll be great if Nagumo take care of everything, but if that guy told me “do it”, furthermore if it's something related to me and my friends, then I've gotta act.」

Kousuke acted like it really couldn't be helped, but pride and self-confidence could be peeked somewhere in his expression.

——The right hand man of the demon king

It was unknown who was the one who started saying that, but it was one of the title that his comrades fixed on Kousuke. The man who that Nagumo Hajime relied on the most other than his wife's, because in reality, no matter what kind of situation it was he would come out with result before anyone knew it.

The trust from his comrades and the achievement he accomplished himself gave self-confidence and pride to Kousuke. His face was without a doubt not that of a child but the face of a competent man.

With a small voice Manami muttered 「If Sou-nii can also make that kind of face, he would be able to make at least a girlfriend, and yeet」, 「I can hear you, you know? .....Whe, when I become a working adult, even I can」 while Sousuke muttered such thing. Eiji and Misato glanced at the two briefly before they looked at each other with a wry smile. They then nodded to each other.

「Got it. Airport right? Let's go right away. You already got a plane?」

「I ordered from internet already. There are still three hours, so we will make it if we depart now.」

Eiji asked while tidying up his fishing set. Kousuke thanked his father while answering.

「If that's the case then Okaasan will also go to see you off.」

「Ah, then me too! Kou-nii is going to Italy alone, so let's go somewhere too when we go home!」

「Kousuke. Give some pocket money to your pitiful Nii-chan.」

Misato and Manami immediately started preparing. And then, Sousuke-niisan who immediately threw away his pride and pestered for a pocket money.

Kousuke had already left some money for his family from the payment he earned from the demon king's request, so he ignored his big brother.

Like that, Endo family that finished their preparation together boarded their family car that the loan they still hadn't finished paying, then.....

*kyuru kyuru kyuru kyuru-*

「Eh? Strange.....」

The engine of Endo family car wouldn't start. Sousuke-niisan pondered and spoke.

「Perhaps the battery ran out? It got used a lot for the light and heating when fishing yesterday.」

「H~m, I think that it should be fine though.」

The engine wouldn't start no matter how many times Eiji tried to turn the key. Eiji came down from the car and opened the car hood. Manami who also came down suddenly turned her gaze up after hearing a sound that pierced the ear and she got taken aback.

*Kaaa! Kaaa! Kaaa!*

「Wai-, isn't there a lot of crows there? It's scary.....」

「Uwah, it's unpleasant.」

When Kousuke also looked up like the others, he saw there a lot of crows flying around. Even though the weather wasn't cloudy and it also still wasn't evening, but the sky looked somewhat gloomy.

「Hey, dear. How about trying to charge the battery from my car?」

「I guess..... Wait for a bit. I'll bring the cable now.」

Eiji walked to behind the Endo family car to take out the tool box. There, when he was traversing there.....

*Nyaa~~*

「.....A black cat.」

A black cat was staring fixedly at Endo papa, then it purred once more before

running away.

「Say, how about we just go using Kaa-san's car? It will be a bit cramped but, I won't be there at the return trip anyway.」

Kousuke did his best to calm his heart while giving suggestion to depart quickly.

Thinking that his suggestion had merit, Eiji looked toward Misato. Misato nodded and put her hand on the door of her compact car. And then,

「Eh? No way-, the wheel is deflated!」

Looking closer, one of the front wheels had become flat. It seemed it had stepped on something and throughout last night the air was coming out from it.

「Ee.....wait a second. Why are all our transportation methods are getting total annihilation——」

‘At this timing!’ Surely Kousuke was going to say that.

However, his words were interrupted.

By the sound of *snap*-.

Everyone's gazes were directed at the source of the sound——at the feet of Kousuke.

They splendidly snapped. The shoe strings. Both of the shoes.

「「「「「.....」」」」」

——\*Kaaaa! Kaaaa! Kaaaa!\*

——\*Nyaaa~~~\*

Manami spoke to Kousuke with a relatively grave expression.

「.....Kou-nii. Are you going to die?」

If Kousuke departed like this...

Cold sweat was trickling from Kousuke's forehead.

Eiji, Misato, and then Sousuke too, they were sending him expression that seemed to want to say 「As expected, just cancel it!」.

Kousuke silently made his Treasure Warehouse shined. What came out were his spare shoes. This time it wasn't the type that used shoestring, but belt type shoes.

「Hey, Kousuke——」

「Don't say it, Tou-san. Unreasonableness, has to be fought without backing away!」

——\*Kaaaa! Kaaaa! Kaaaa!\*

——\*Nyaaa~~\*

——\*Gurururururu-\*

No, this wasn't a talk about unreasonableness anymore.....

Ignoring his family who seemed to want to say that, Kousuke straddled Misato's granny bike with a severe expression.

And then,

「Then, I'm going!」

Kousuke dashed on granny bike while doing a wheelie from the momentum. While the countless crows and black cats, and then some stray dogs that were there when they noticed were crying out, a strangely sticky wind was blowing with Kousuke's departure.

Most likely, by making use of his thin shadow that wouldn't be perceived by anyone, midway Kousuke would surely rampage by doing "E.T" and the like, so even though he wasn't using car he would make it just barely in time to the airport.

「Kou-nii, will he be really fine?」

The hero who started his excessively ominous journey on a granny bike.....

In respond to Manami's anxious voice, Eiji and Misato and Sousuke nodded in agreement.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This is the beginning of Abyss Lord's Vatican chapter.

Although, honestly I have no confidence that I will be able to write it strongly like the previous times.

And so, I'm thinking to write the story about ten chapters in the shape of a long part within the After.

Best regards!